From the Library of
Samuel Miller, LL.D.
In Memory of
Judge Samuel Miller Breckinridge, LL.D., '50,
Presented by
Samuel Miller Breckinridge Long, '03.
THE DIVINE RIGHT
OF S. W. HILL
Church-Government
AND
Excommunication:

OR
A peaceable Dispute for the perfection of the holy Scripture in point of Ceremonies and Church Government;
IN WHICH
The removal of the Service-book is justifi'd

The six Books of Erasmus against Excommunication are briefly examin'd with a Vindication of that eminent Divine Tho. Beza against the Aspersion of Erasmus. The Arguments of Mr. William Pryn; Rich. Hooker, Dr. Morton Dr. Jackson, Dr. John Forbes, and the Doctors of Aberdeen; Touching WILL-worship, Ceremonies, Imagery, Idolatry, Things Indifferent, An Ambulatory Government; The due and just Power of the Magistrate in matters of Religion; and The Arguments of Mr. Pryn, in so far as they lied with Erasmus, are modestly discussed.

To which is added, A brief Tractate of Scandal; with an Answer to the new Doctrine of the Doctors of Aberdeen, touching Scandal.

By SAMUEL RUTHERFURD,
Professor of Divinity in the University of St. Andrews in Scotland.

Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts, Zach. 4:6.
Veritas claudit e ligatis potest, vinci non potest. Hieronymus comment. ad Ieron in Prefat. ad Eusebium.
Occultari ad tempus potest veritas, vinci non potest, florere potest ad tempus iniquitatis per manere non potest. Augustinus ad Psal. 61.

Published by Authority

London: Printed by JOHN FIELD for Christopher Meredith at the Crane in Paul's Church-yard. MDCXLVI.
TO
The Right Honorable and Noble Lord,
The Earl of
LOVDEN,
Chancellor of Scotland;
AND
Chancellor of the University of St. Andrews,
Grace, Mercy and Peace.

RIGHT HONORABLE,

Jesus Christ the wonderful, the 16. 9. 6. Counsellor, the mighty God driveth on his great State-design in the whole Earth, and now in these Kingdoms, to to save an afflicted people, to dye his Garments in the blood of his Enemies, and to build
The Epistle Dedicatory.

build the Tabernacle of God amongst men, and
cause the wilderness blossom as a Rose, that the
glory of Lebanon, and the excellency of Carmel
and Sharon may in a spiritual manner be given to Zi-
on; So he still acteth in his own sphere of Righteousnes,
and all inferior wheels in their revolutions move toward
his most eminent end; for the Courtiers and Royal At-
tendants of his Throne are Righteousnes and Judg-
ment. And be desireth that the motions and wayes of
his people may be concentrick to his own heart, and
move in the same Orb with himself; we must either
walk, or be drawn to the end of Jesus Christ, his end
cannot come down and comply with our policy. When
men go with one head, and two faces, and two hearts,
Providence can beguil them: we are then safe, and do
fail at the Haven of the Sea when we walk with God,
and our way draweth a straight line to the heart of Je-
sus Christ. These two Kingdoms have before them
an end, the Covenant to be a people to God; this we did
Swear with our Hands lifted up to the most
High; the stones of the field shall witness against us, and
the Sword of the Lord avenge the quarrel of his
Covenant, if we dally with the Lord, as if the Vow
of God, that the Lord may be one, and his Name
The Epistle Dedicatory.

One in both Kingdoms had been on us, when we were low only, and our Oath had a date only till the Year 1645. And then our Vow must expire, as did the Law of Shaddows, when the Body Jesus Christ came. As success is a poor and waxy Kalender for Religion, so the low condition of our Kingdom, I hope, shall not move us to forswake the Lords cause, or to blame God, because good causes have sometimes sad events; for beside that Heathens said, that God cannot erre, because Marius ex culpâ gloriam reportavit, Marius was made glorious by ill-doing, and one hath a Cross, another a Kings Crown for a reward of wickedness; we know that God, however it be, is good to Israel. If that which was intended for Union, shall hymns wickedness, turn to a sad Division between the Kingdoms, I shall believe, that the truly Godly of either Kingdoms, can scarce be capable of such bloody intentions, as shall leave a Legacy of perpetuated blood to the Posterity; and sure, though for the present guiltiness, strength prevail, yet habent Deum ulterior, men on Earth cannot long be strong against Vengeance from Heaven. As success doth inebriate, so extremity of a low condition is a wicked Counsellor, and evil jealousy, as Hell, thinketh always evil. All whose bowels
bowed are moved for the Desolation, Graves, multiplied Widows and Orphans of both Kingdoms will not dare (Judgement from the Almighty being a terror to them) to add affliction to the people of God already afflicted. Blessed shall they be of the Lord, who meditate for preventing of National ruptures, and for the continuance of the Brotherly Covenant. Christ Jesus is a uniting Saviour, one God, one Faith, one Lord Jesus, one Religion should be, and I beseech the God of Peace, they may be Chains of Gold to tie these two Nations and Churches together in unio tertio, that they may be concentrated and united in one Lord Jesus. O that that precious Dew of Heaven, that showers of Love and Peace may lie all the night upon the Branches of the two Olive Trees, that the warmness, heat, and influence of one Sun of Righteousness with healing in his wings, may make the Lilly amongst the Thorns, the Rose of Sharon, that is planted by the Lord, the Spouse of Jesus Christ, in both Kingdoms to spread its Root, and cast its Smell, so green and flourishing to all the Nations round about. The Kingdom of God is Peace. The Lord is about a great work in Britain, why should Divisions that proceed from the lusts of men, and the enemies of the Lord re-
tard the wheels of the Chariot of Christ? Let us not water the Lilly with blood again. The Sons of Babel have shed our blood in great abundance, for the which doth the Church of God in the three Kingdoms stand, and Pray and Prophecy in sackcloth. The violence done to me and to my flesh be upon Babylon, shall the Inhabitants of Zion say: And my blood upon the Woman arrayed in Purple and Scarlet, the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth, shall Jerusalem say. Happy we, if we could see the second Temple builded, and the Lord repairing the old waste places, and the Gentiles beholding the Righteousnesse of the Elder Sister the Church of the Jews, and both as a Crown of Glory in the hand of the Lord, and as a Royal Diadem in the hand of our God.

I shall not need, I hope, either of an Apology for Instituting this Piece, such as it is, (others can, and I hope will add ripper Animadversions to Erastus) to Your Honours Name, or of a word of incitement, that Your Lordship co-operate with Your serious Endeavours, for a right understanding between both Kingdoms, and for the carrying on the work of the right arm of the Lord,
The Epistle Dedicatory.

the Lords creating of glory on every Assembly on Mount Zion, (for we are witnesses of Your Honours Travels for both) that glory may dwell in our Land.

Your Honours at all respective observance in the Lord,

S. R.

To
To the Ingenuous and Equitable Reader.

It lieth obvious to any ordinary understanding (worthy Reader) that as alwayes we see a little portion of God; so now, the Lord our God in his acting on Kingdoms and Churches, maketh Darkness his Pavilion, to finde out the 9th and the Demonstrative Causes and true Principles of such bloody conclusions and horrible vastations, as the Sovereign Majesty of Heaven and Earth hath made in Germany, Bohemia, and the Palatinate, as if they were greater sinners then we are; and why the windows of Divine Justice have been opened to send down such a deluge of blood on Ireland; and why in Scotland the Pestilence hath destroyed the City, and the Sword of the Lord, not a few in the fields; (their Lovers and Friends standing aloof from their calamities) is from the Lord who is wonderful in Counsel; but to finde reasons to quiet the understanding, is not an easie scrutiny: matters are rolled on invisible wheels. It is enough to us. 

Iob 37.23. Iob 33.13.

no men, no Angels can hunt out the tracings of Divine Providence; Nor can we set a day of Law, nor erect a Court to implead this Lord, who is not holden in Law, to answer for any of his matters: It were our wisdom to acknowledge that the actions of our Lord, ad extra, are so twitted and interwoven thred over thred, that we can see but little of the walls and our-works of his unsearchable coun-
counsels; sure, Divine Providence hath now many iron wheels in one fire, and with one touch of his finger he moves all the wheels in Heaven and Earth.

I speak this, if happily this little piece may call itself in the eye of the Noble and Celebrious Judges and Senators, who now wear the Helm, for I hope they consider, it is but a short and sorry Line, or rather a poor Circle, Job 1. 21. Gen. 3. 19. between the Womb and the Grave, between Dust and Dust; and that they then act most like themselves (Psal. 82. 6. I have said ye are Gods) when they remember they are sinful men, and when they reckon it for gain, that the King of Ages gives them a Diurnal of 24 hours to build the House of the Lord, to cause the heart of a Widow Church (though her Husband live for evermore) to sing for joy, and are eyes to the blind, and legs to the lame; and withal do mind, that when the Spirit is within a half cubit, or the sixth part of a Span to Eternity, and Death cannot adjourn for six hours, to repent, or do any more service to Christ in the Body, the welcome testimony of God, shall be incomparably above the Holumens of men. Undeniable it is, that we destroy again what we have built; if we believe the Pope, and divide him of his Vicarious Supremacy, and foader the Map of Sins board, in the Ecclesiastical Government, to the shoulders of any Man, or Society of men on Earth. It is not an encreasing spoyle to pluck a Rose or Flower from the Crown of the Prince of the Kings of the Earth, Diamonds and Rubies picked out of the Royal Diadem of Jesus Christ, added but a poor and sorry Lustre to Earthly Supremacy; it is Baldness in stead of Beauty.

An Arbitrary power in any, whether in Prince or Priest, is intolerable. Now throw out Domination in these...
The Epistle to the Reader.

and to take it in in another, is not to put away the Evil of our doings, but to Bitter and Exchange one Sin with another, and mockingly to expiate the Obligation of one Areat to God, by contracting new Debt. Again, how glorious is it, that Shields of the Earth lay all their Royalty and Power Level with the dust before him that sitteth on the throne, and to make their Highness but a Scaffold to heighten the Throne of the Son of God: Yea, if Domination by the Sword be the Magistrates Birth-right, as the Word of Truth teacheth us, Luke 22. 25, 26. Psal. 82. 1, 6. Rom. 13. 4. and the Sword can never draw blood of the Conscience; It is evident that the Lord Jesus alloweth not Carnal weapons to be used within the walls of his Spiritual Kingdom; and if Power be an enchanting Witch, and like strong Drink, which is dolosus industria, a cozening Wrestler, we are to be the more cautious and circumspect, that it incroach not upon Jesus Christ, for fear that we provoke the eyes of his glory, and cause Jerusalem to be plowed, and Zion become heaps, and many houses great and fair, desolate.

Let the Appeal be to the Spirit that speaketh to the Churches in the Word: The Golden Reed can measure every Cubit of the Temple, as well the outer Porch, as the Holy of Holies, and all the dimensions, the length and breadth of the City which is named The Lord is there. If the Scripture be no Rule of Church Government, but the Magistrates Sword be upon the shoulders of Christ, as the prime Magistrate, we come too near to the Jewish, Earthly, and Temporary Messiah. And if Excommunication and Censures, and that Ministerial Governing which was undeniably in the Apostolick Church, be Fictions, we are in the dark. I confess, we know not whether the Vessels of the House should be of Gold and
The Epistle to the Reader.

Silver, or if they should be but Earthen Pitchers.
It is said, That all this is but a Plea for a Dominion of an higher Nature, even over the Consciences of men by Censures. But why a Dominion? Because a power of Censures: Surely, if they were not Spiritual Censures, and such as hath influence on the Conscience, we should yield a Domination were the business. But this power of Censuring Spiritually, is as strong as Authoritative in Dispensing Rebukes, Threats, Gospel-charges and Commands in the Word Preached, as in Censures: The power is Ministerial only in the Word, not Lordly; and why should it be deemed a Dominion, and an Arbitrary power in the one, and not in the other?

If the will of the Magistrate may carve out any Government that seems good to him, and the Word of God in this plea be laid aside, as perfect in Doctrine, but imperfect and useless in Government, we fall from the Cause. But if the Word of God stand as a Rule in matters of Church-Government, then the Question is only, on whose shoulders the Ark should be carried; and by whose Ministry doth Jesus the Lord, and King of the House punish (if I may use this word) Scandalous men? And whether doth the Head of the Church Christ, in laying Judgement to the Line, and Righteousness to the Plummer, use the Magistrates Sword for a Spiritual and Supernatural end of the Service and Ministry of his Church; or doth he send Pastors and Teachers as his Ambassadors for this end? But if you were not Disputing your self, and not Christ (lay some) to make Preachers the Alpha and Omega of mens Consciences, and the Circle which beginneth and endeth at it self; you would be satisfied, if Scandals be punished by the Magistrate: Is not the Magistrate a Christian as you are? Paul was glad that
that the Gospel was Preached, he made no account by whom. But I should be grieved that such a hard conclusion should be drawn out of such innocent Principles: This were to extract Blood out of Milk, a Domination out of a meer Ministry; and I confesse, Self is a great Sophist in Debates, and that any man is inclined to miscount himself, and to think he may stand for an hundred, when the product is scarce one, if not a cypher. I conceive nothing is here taught, that may reach a blow to the Honour and Majesty of the Godly Magistrate. The Magistrate is a Christian as well as the Preacher; and in some sense, so all the People were holy, as were Moses, Aaron and the Levites. Uzziah who burned Incense was a Member of the Church of the Jews, and Circumcised no lesse then the Sons of Aaron: Yet I hope these stretched themselves beyond their line, when they usurped what was due to the Priests and Levites. Its another thing to punish evil doing with the Sword, the Magistrate is to do this. But there is a Spiritual removing of Scandals, by the saving of the Spirit in the day of the Lord, 1 Cor. 5. 5. Matth. 18. 15. 2 Cor. 10. 8. and a gaining of the Soul of an Offender. This Spiritual removing of Scandals, doth only bring Christ and the Gospel in request, in the hearts of both such as are within and without the Church; as Scandals raiseth up an evil report of Christ and the Truth. Now the Sword can never this way remove Scandals; and because Christ hath appointed Spiritual means, and Spiritual Censures, to restore the Lord Jesus to his Honour, 2 Cor. 2. It is presumption (with all submission I speak it) for men to horse out, and decourte such Censures Spiritual as the Apostles in the Spirit and Wisdom of Christ used as most suitable to that end, and which the Lord commandeth in the second Command, and to substitute in
in their room, nothing but a sword void of all activity on the Conscience.

I do also here plead for the perfection of the Word of God against Humane Ceremonies, which are deservedly by the Honorable Houses of Parliament, and Reverend Assembly laid aside, Religion needeth not any such Ornaments; except men would make the Worship of God, when naked, under shame, and so under sin (for Justice Married shame and sin once.) But as Roses, Lilies, the Sun, and other glorious Creatures, are most beautiful without Garments, and not capable of shame; so is the Worship of God. I confess, Ceremonies were the Seas and Rivers that Prelats delighted to swim in; and if their Element be dried up, they have the lese pleure to live: But if they would repent of their bloody Persecution, that their Souls might be saved, no matter. Ceremonies, as they have nothing of Christ in them, so have they been injurious to Magistrates. It is but a Ceremony that the Emperor kiss the sole of the Popes foot, because there is indented on it a curious Crucifix. And when Prelacy was yong, and its beard not grown, a Deacon was sent to Theodosius the Emperor by the Prelats to chide him, because he presumed to sit in the Chancery, a place too holy for Lay-men.

What I have here said against Erastus, a friend too dear to worthy Bullinger and Rodolph Gualther, (often we love both the Friend and his Error) I humbly submit to the Judgement of the Godly and Learned: But I conceive, I am unwilling that Error should lodge with me willingly; and I profess I am afraid, that wrath is gone out from the Lord against the Rulers, if they had after a Reformation obtained with the Lives, Blood, Tears and Prayers of so many of the Saints, whereof a great num-


be at a sleep in the Lord, rear up a building to the Lord's name and lame, as Jesus Christ shall say, Offer it now your Governor, will he be pleased with you, or accept your persons?

But it is a Controversie (say some) whether the Government of the Church of the New-Testament belong to the Magistrate or to the Church? to which I say; 1. It was a Controversie created by men willing to please Princes, with more power in the Courts of Christ, then ever the Lawgiver and Apostles gave them, and that against the minde of glorious Lights, the first Reformers, and the whole Troops of Protestant Divines, who Studied the Controversie against the usurped Monarchy of the Man of sin, more exactly then one Physician, who in a cursory way, divered off his road of Medicine of which he wrote Learnedly, and broke in on the By upon the deepest Polemicks of Divinity, and reached a Riders blow unawares to his friends. 2. In things doubtful, Conscience hath refuge to the surest side: Now its granted by all, and not controverted by any, That in the Apostolick Church, the Government of the Church of the New Testament was in the hands of Apostles, Pastors, Teachers; and therefore Conscience would sway to that in which there can be no Error, except on supposal of abuse; and Christian Rulers would not do well to venture upon Eternity, Wrath, the Judgement to come, confiding on the poor Plea of an Erastian Distinction, to incroach upon the Prerogative Royal of Jesus Christ. This very God of Peace build Zion, and make her an Habitation of Peace.

Yours in Jesus Christ,

S. R.
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

Introduction, Sect. 1. Christ hath not instituted a mutable Church-Government, Page 1,2. Some things moral, some things natural, in God's worship, Ibid. Physical Circumstances are all easily known and numbered, p. 2. Circumstances, and such and such Circumstances, p. 3. Time and place of Ceremonies need not be proved by Scripture, as being supposed, p. 4, 5. Argument to prove, that the platform of Church-govern't is not mutable at mens will, p. 7. The Scripture way of teaching that indifferent things are alterable, is it self unalterable, p. 8. Argument, p. 9. The Scripture shall not teach us, when we sin, in Church-policy, when not, if the platform be alterable at mens will, Ibid. There is no reason why some things positive are alterable in Church-policy, some not, p. 10. Argument, ibid. The place Titus 6.13, touching the unviolable command given to Timothy discussed, p. 10, 11, 12. Paul's doctrine of lese-majesties, then Politions of Policy, Widows, p. 11. Sect. 2. Argument, p. 12. Christ is the head of the Church, even in the external policy thereof, p. 13, 14. A promise of pardon of sin made to the right use of the Keys, proveth Discipline to be a part of the Gospel, p. 15, 16. The will of Christ as King, is the rule of the Government of his house, p. 17, 18. Things of policy, because lese majesty then the greater things of the Law, are not therefore alterable at the will of men, p. 19, 20. Order requireth not a Monarchical pretence, p. 21, 22. How the care & wisdom of Christ hath left an immutable platform of Discipline, p. 22, 23. Christ the only immediate King, Head, and Law-giver of his Church, without any de-

5. Argument, p. 24, 25. Moses and David might not alter or devise any thing in Worship or Government, nor may the Church now, p. 27, 28. Two notes of Divinity ought to be in the New Testament Ceremonials, as were in the Old, p. 29, 30. How Moses his doing all according to the pattern, proveth an immutable platform. The Objections of Mr. Hooker and Mr. Pryn answered at length, p. 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, &c. God's care to us leadh us to think he hath given us a better guide the natural Reason in all morals of Church-Discipline, p. 33, 34. The occasional writing of things in Scripture, no reason why they are alterable, p. 35, 36. Papists pretend, as Formalists do, that things are not written in the Word, because of the various occurrences of provision, p. 36, 37. That there was no uniform platform of Government written in the time of Moses and the Apostles, is no Argument that there is none now, p. 39, 40. Fundamentals, because successively delivered, are not alterable, p. 41, 42. The Church of Jerusalem, as perfect in Doctrine and Discipline, is our pattern, p. 42, 43. The indifferency of some things in the Apostolick Church, cannot infer that the Government is alterable, p. 45, 46. The Argument of Moses his doing all in the Tabernacle, to the least pin, according to the special direction, further considered, p. 47, 50. The Ark of Noah proveth the same, ib. Formalists acknowledge Additions to the Scripture, contrary to Deut. 4.2. & 12.32, the same way that Papists do, p. 51, 56, &c. Moses and Canonick Writers are not Law-givers under God, but Organs of God, in writing, and meet reporters of the Law of God, p. 62, 63. Papists say that the Church is limited in the making of Ceremonies, both in the matter and
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

and the number; and so do Formalists, p. 61, 63, 64.

Four ways Positives are alterable, but by God alone. p. 64.

All things, never so small, are alike unalterable, as they be stamped with God's authority, speaking in the Scripture, p. 64, 65.

By what authority Canonical Additions of the Prophets and Apostles were added to the Books of Moses, p. 65.

Canonick Writers how immediately led by God, p. 65.

The Characters of Formalists Ceremonies & Papists Traditions one and the same, p. 67.

What is in to be contained in Scripture, and how far it maketh any thing lawful, according to Hooker, p. 68.

The Fathers teach, all things are to be rejected that are not in Scripture, p. 69, 70.

It derogeth nothing from the honour of God in Scripture, that he be consulted in the meanest things, p. 70.

How things are in Scripture, p. 71.

Some actions are supernaturally moral, some naturally or civilly moral, some mixt. p. 72.

Some habitual reference to Scripture is required in all our moral actions, p. 73.

Works of Supererogation hold by Hooker, p. 77.

Whether our obedience be resolved, in all Church policy, in this faith the Lord in his Word, or in this faith the Church, p. 79.

Two thing in the external worship, 1. Substantials. 2. Accidents or Circumstantial, p. 80.

S E C T. 5.

The question who should be judge of things necessary or indifferent, in Church-policy, not so purposely, in this question. p. 82, 83.

S E C T. 6.


Two acts of Religion imperated and eleict. p. 83.

Honouring of holy men is not Worship. p. 84.

The Religious object with the act of revere.
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

The will of created Authority, cannot create goodnesse in things. p. 204, 205

Humane Laws oblige only in so far as they agree with the Law of God. p. 206

A twofold consideration of Humane Laws. p. 208

How Rulers are subordinate to God in commanding. p. 209

Humane authority is not the nearest, nor the instrumental cause of Laws. p. 208, 209

A double obedience due to Rulers, objective, and subjective. p. 210

Objective obedience no more due to Rulers, than to equals. p. 210, 211

False Rules of obedience to Rulers, proposed by D. Tuckerman, refuted. p. 212

The goodness of supposed obedience to Rulers, cannot countervalue the evil in the sinful manner of doing, with a doubting confidence. p. 214

Other arguments for the obligation of humane Laws answered. p. 216

What it is to refund to Ruler. p. 217

Why men cannot make Laws that layeth a lie on the conscience. p. 219

That Christ hath a spiritual Kingdom, not only in the power of Preaching, but also in the power of the Keys, by censures. p. 220

That there is such a divine Ordinance as Excommunication. p. 223

Objections against Excommunication removed. p. 224

How we are to rebuke our Brother. p. 225

The Church, Matt. 18. is not the civil Sanedrim. p. 226, 227, 229

How Heathen and Publicans were excluded from the Church. p. 230

Blinding and loosing are judicial. p. 233, 234

Excommunication is a divine Ordinance, proved by 1 Cor. 5. p. 238, 239.

To deliver to Satan, is not miraculous killing. p. 238, 239

The essentials of Excommunication, 1 Cor. 5. p. 238, 239, &c.

Whether the Word doth warrant censures, and exclusion from the Seals. p. 238

Cutting off, not always: killing. p. 241

Moral scandals excluded men from holy things, amongst the Jews. p. 243

The prophecy, Ezek. 44. 12. 14. 16. to be fulfilled under the New Testament. p. 244, 245

Ceremonial exclusion from holy things under the old, did typifie exclusion for moral uncleanness under the N. T. p. 247, 248

The Church's exclusion from the Seals declarative, non coercive by violence. ibid.

Censures applied to some by name. ibid.

Excluding the society of scandalous Church-members, must be a Church-censure. p. 249

The hindering of Jesus by preaching, not sufficient. p. 251

Debaring of the scandalous from the Seals, proved. p. 251, 252

It belongeth not to the Magistrate to debar from the Seals. p. 253

Erasbus against exclusion from the Sacraments refused. p. 253, 254

By Erasbus his way, we cannot deny the Seals to a Turk. p. 253, 254

To exclude from the Kingdom of Heaven not one with Excommunication. p. 260

Excommunication is no real separation of one from Christ's invisible body. p. 261, 262, 264

Though Excommunication be onely declarative, yet its not empty. p. 266

Putting out 1 Cor. 5. p. 269

Whether Erasbus doth prove, that none were excluded amongst the Jews, for moral uncleanness, from the holy things of God. p. 271

A twofold forgiveness. p. 273

All are invited to come to the Sacraments, but not that they come any way. p. 274

The question whether all should be admitted to the Lords Supper, perverted by Erasbus. p. 275

Two sorts of Sins amongst the Jews, some purely holy, some partly holy, partly necessary for the bodily life; the latter clean and unclean might eat, but not the former. p. 277

All are commanded to hear, but not to come to the Supper. p. 280

Whether
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

Whether Erastus doth justly deny Excommunication to be typified of Old, p. 281
Ceremonial uncleanness typified exclusion out of the visible Church for scandals, not out of the Kingdom of Heaven, p. 287, 288
Vulgar uncleanness was sin, p. 289
The scope and sense of Mat. 18. perverted by Erastus, p. 290
Our Saviour speaketh of all, not of private or secret scandals only, p. 291
By the word (Brother) is not meant a Jew only, ib.

Christ's speaking in the second person, argueth not the privacy of the scandal, p. 294
A twofold forgiving, ib. 295
Christ speaketh not of such sins as private men may forgive, as Erastus dreameth, p. 297
Christ's scope spiritual, Erastus his way carnal, p. 298

A Publicke most odious to the Jews, p. 305
It's not private forgivenesse which is holden forth, Mat. 18. 17, p. 308

Binding and loosing proper to Stewarts, p. 309
To excommunicate is not formally to debar from the Seals, p. 311
Christ might well give directions touching a Church not yet created, p. 314, &c.
The place 1 Cor. 5. vindicated from Erastus his gloss, p. 316, 317, &c.
The prayers of the Church intervene not for this particular miracle, p. 318, 319

Faith of miracles not in all the faithful at Corinth, p. 320
Delivering to Satan not miraculous, p. 321
The Church, not Paul alone, had hand in delivering the man to Satan, p. 326
What delivering to Satan is, p. 327
The destruction of the flesh, what it is, p. 328
Hymenæus and Alexander not killed by Satan, p. 332
Delivering to Satan not miraculous, p. 335
Excommunication, to put away, not always to kill, p. 337
To excommunicate the scandalous, a mean to save them, p. 339
The similitude of a cut off member to hold forth Excommunication vindicated, p. 340

No warrant that the Apostles killed any, by the ministry of Satan, p. 341
No miracle: us faith required in the Corin-thian, to pray for the killing of the man, p. 343, &c.

Of the Leaven, 1 Cor. 5. p. 344
What it is to purge out the Leaven, none killed for eating Leavened Bread, p. 346
To eat the Passover with Leavened Bread, a violation of the Sacrament, p. 348, &c.
Putting away of Leaven, p. 349
What is meant by the whole lump, and what by leaven, p. 350, 353

Hymenæus and Alexander, not miraculously killed by Satan, p. 354, 355
Erastus his expulsions, all without ground in Scripture, p. 354
Withdrawing from scandalous Brethren, argueth Excommunication, p. 357

How eschewing intimate fellowship with a scandalous Brother is a Church's Censure, p. 357, 358, 359
Sacraments, though helps of piety, yet not to be given to all, p. 361, 362
Erastus his contradiction in excluding both some, and none at all from the Sacraments, p. 363

How withdrawing from scandalous Brethren, may infer Excommunication, p. 365
The scandalous are forbidden to come to the Sacraments, p. 368

An evident contradiction in Erastus thorough his whole Book, p. 369
Whom Erastus excludeth from the Sacraments, p. 370
Some on earth must try who are to be admitted to the Sacrament, who not, p. 371

Other arguments for Excommunication vindicated, p. 372
The place Gal. 5. 12. vindicated, p. 373
Paul did not judicially condemn the incestuous man, 1 Cor. 5. p. 374
To excommunicate the scandalous is materially to excommunicate them, p. 377
What Presbyteries Erastus yieldeth, p. 379
A Presbytery at Corinth, p. 380

Erastus is not an Examinator of such as
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

- The places Deut. 17. and 2 Chron. 19. do prove two different Indicatures, p. 383. 384.
- How the Kingly and Priestly office are different, p. 384. 385.
- Erastus denyeth the Ministry to be peculiar to come, but proper to all under the New Testament, p. 384. 385.
- Two distinct Indicatures, 2 Chron. 19. page 386. 387.
- The Magistrates are not to dispence the Word and Sacraments, as Erastus faith, p. 391. 392.
- The Magistrate is not to judge who is to be admitted to the Sacrament, who not; nor hath he power of Church Discipline, p. 394. 395.
- How Erastus confuseth a Presbytery, p. 398.
- A Church Judicature in the Jewish Church, Deut. 17. ibid.
- The Priest put no man to death, p. 401.
- Teaching and Judging not one, p. 406.
- The Civil Judge as a Judge, cannot teach, p. 406. 407.
- Erastus maketh the Magistrate or Priest, and Pastor, formally one, p. 406.
- What are the Matters of the Lord, and of the King, 2 Chron. 19, p. 411. 412.
- Levites sometymes employed in civil businesse, p. 414.
- The power of the civil Magistrate, p. 417.
- Men have need of two sort of Governours, ib. Magistracy and Ministry both Supreme in their own kinde, p. 417. 418.
- Erastus alloweth no Government, but Pope, p. 418. 419.
- Christ's kingdome, how not of this world, p. 421.
- Moses, David, Solomon, appointed to the Priests nothing as Kings, p. 423.
- The Priests onely judged de iustitie, juris, of the question of law in matters of death, p. 424.
- The Priests and Levites had no Law-power, by Gods Law, or from Cesar, to put Christ to death, p. 426. 427.
- The Sanedrim had no Law-power against Steven to stone him, p. 427.
- The like of their dealing with Paul, true, ib.
- How the Christian Magistrat is to be acquainted with Excommunication, p. 429. 430.
- The place, 1 Cor. 5. against vindicated, no malicious killing, 1 Cor. 5, p. 435. 436.
- Cap. 19. Quest 15.
- Of the use of Excommunication, p. 437.
- Erastus yeeldeth there is a Presbytery, p. 438.
- The Magistrate under Churche discipline, ib.
- The Magistrate not a Church-officer, p. 440.
- A Judicature proper to the Priest as Priest, ib.
- The Magistrate under Ch. discipline, p. 441.
- How the Magistrat's content is requisite in Excommunication, ib.
- The Magistrates Sword no kindly mean of gaining fouls, p. 445.
- The Scandalous are forbidden to partake of holy things, p. 448.
- The morally unclean debarred out of the Temple, p. 452. 453.
- No price of a Whore to be offered to God, and what is meant, p. 454. 455.
- Our chief Argument for Excommunication not answered, p. 456.
- The place, Matt. 5. When thou bringest thy gift, &c. discussed, p. 457.
- How men do judge of inward actions, p. 460.
- A frequent contradiction in Erastus, p. 462.
- What it is to be cast out of the Synagogue, p. 464.
- Christ and the Apostles not cast out of the Synagogue that we read, as Erastus dreams, p. 471. 472.
- Ministers subject to the Magistrate, p. 471. 472.
- Morally unclean debarred from the holy things, p. 476. 473.
- Tell the Church discussed, p. 476. 473.
- Though there was no Christian Church, yet Christ might say, Tell the Church, p. 480.
- There was no more a right constituted Sanedrim in Christ's time then a Christian Church, ibid.
- External Government of the Church not in the hands of the Magistrate, p. 481. 482.
- Rebutting of Princes argue no lese Jurisdiction then all that the Presbytery doth, p. 484.
- Who Erastus excluded from the Sacraments, ibid.
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

Magistrates, if scandalous, are to be debarred from the Sacraments, p. 487
Every profession maketh not men capable of the holy things of God, p. 492
All fins punished with death in the Old Testament are not therefore so punished under the New Testament, p. 493
How great sins debar men from the Sacrament, p. 497
The Scandalous among the Jews, debarred from the holy things, p. 498
The Magistrate cannot admit to, or debar from the Sacraments, p. 499
The word no ministerial and kindly mean of gaming fools, p. 500
Of the power of the Christian Magistrate, in Ecclesiastical Discipline, p. 503, &c.
Idiots and Apostates are to be excommunicated, as Erentius faith, ibid.
The Church as the Church, not subordinate to the Magistrate, ibid.
Government peculiar to Church-officers, as to Princes and Levites, p. 506
The Epistles to Timothy & Titus must chiefly be written to the Emperor and Magistrate, if they be but servants of the Magistrate, p. 507, 508
Civil and Ecclesiastical powers immediately from God, p. 510, 511
The Magistrate not subordinate to Christ as Mediator; ibid.
The power of the Church of the Apostles, not ruled by the Magistrate, p. 513
Epistles and Mr. Prym grant there is such an ordinance as Excommunication, ibid.
Suspension, ex natura rei, may be where there is no Excommunication, ibid.
Offices admitting judicatures to the Supper no rule to us, p. 516, 517
The Gospel preached to those to whom the Sacraments cannot be dispensed, ibid.
The Sacrament a confirming ordinance, p. 518
We partake of the sins of many, in dispensing to the unworthy the Sacraments, and not in preaching the Word to them, p. 520
We know no extraordinary conversion by miracles, without the Word, p. 522
The Sacrament not a first converting ordinance, yet a confirming one, ibid.
The Lords Supper presupposeth Faith and Conversion in the worthy Receiver in a Church-profession, p. 523, &c.
The Magistrate subject to the Church, p. 528
The Church a perfect society without the Magistrate, p. 529, 530
God efficacious by Preachers, not by Magistrates, p. 532
Differences between the Preachers, and the Magistrate, p. 532, &c.
The Magistrate cannot limit the Parlers in the exercise of their calling, p. 535
That Magistrates are more hot against the Churches punishing of sin, then against sinful omissions, argue that they are impatient of Christ's yoke, rather than that they desire to vindicate the liberty of the Subject, p. 536, &c.
Of the Reciprocity of the Subordinations of Magistrates and Church-officers to each other, ibid.
Not any power or office subject to any but to God immediately subject is properly of persons, p. 538
A Magistrate and a Christian Magistrate, different, p. 539
Two things in a Christian Magistrate, just authority; providence, inability, p. 539, &c.
Christianity maketh no new power of Magistracy, p. 542
A twofold consideration of the exercise of Ministerial power most necessary, upon which, and the former distinction followeth the very considerable alterations, p. 542, &c.
The Magistrate as the Magistrate, commandeth the exercise of the Ministerial power, but not the spiritual and sincere manner of the exercise, p. 544
Magistrates, as godly men, not as Magistrates, command sincerity and zeal in the manner of the exercise of Ministerial power, p. 545, &c.
A twofold goodliness in a Christian Magistrate, essential, accidental, p. 548
A Table of the Contents of the Book.

The Magistrate as such, commandeth only in order to temporary rewards and punishments, not holdeth he forth commands to the conscience. p. 549, &c.

Magistrates as Magistrates, forbid not sin as sin, under the pain of eternal wrath, p. 550.

Two sorts of Subordinations, Civil, Ecclesiastical, p. 553.

Subordination of Magistrate and Church, to each others, p. 554, &c.

Church Offices as such, not Subordinate to the Magistrate, ibid.

What power Earlists give to Magistrates in Church matters, p. 557.

The mind of Arminians touching the power of the Magistrate in Church matters, ibid.

A threefold consideration of the Magistrate in relation to the Church, p. 558.

Reciprocation of subordinations between Church and Magistrate, p. 560.

The Ministers as Ministers, neither Magistrates nor Subjects, p. 564, &c.

The Magistrate as such, neither manageth his office under Christ as mediator, nor under Satan, but under God as Creator, ibid.

The Prince as a gifted Christian may Preach, and spread the Gospel to a Land where the Gospel hath not been heard before, p. 570, &c.

The King and the Priest kept the Law, but in a far different way, p. 572, &c.

The Pastors and Judges do reciprocally judge and cenzure one another, p. 574, &c.

God hath not given power to the Magistrate and Church, to Judge contrary wayses justly and unjustly in one and the same cause, p. 577.

Whether Appeals may lie from Church-assemblies to the Civil Magistrate, p. 578.

Of Pauls appeal to Caesar, ibid.

Divers opinions of the Magistrates power in Causes Ecclesiastical, p. 579, &c.

It is one thing to complain, another thing to appeal, p. 580.

What an appeal is, ibid.

Refuge to the Magistrate is not an Appeal, p. 581.

A twofold appeal, The Magistrates power of punishing or his interest of faith proveth him not to be a Judge in Synods, p. 585, &c.

Pauls appeal proveth nothing against appeals for appeals from the Church to the Christian Magistrate, p. 587.

Paul appealed from an inferior Civil Judge, to a superior Civil Heathen Judge in a matter of his head and life, not in a controversy of Religion, p. 588.

What power a conqueror hath to set up a Religion in a conquered Nation, p. 590.

There were no appeals made to the godly Emperours of old, p. 594.

To lay bands on the conscience of the Magistrate, to try him to blind obeidence, the Papists, not our Doctrine, p. 595.

Submission of Magistrates to the Church, no Papal tyranny, p. 600, &c.

The Magistrate as a Magistrate, cannot forbid, p. 601.

The Magistrate promoteth Chrifts mediatory Kingdom, ibid.

The Magistrate as such, not the Vicar of the mediatory Christ, ibid.

The Adversaries in the Doctrine of the Magistrate Popish, not we at all, ibid.

Pastors are made inferior Magistrates in their whole Ministry, by the Adversaries, p. 603, &c.

Christian Magistracy no Ecclesiastical Administration, p. 604.

The Magistrate as such, not the Vicar of the mediatory Kingdom, ibid.

Heathen Magistrates as such, are not obliged to promote Christs mediatory Kingdom, p. 606.

Magistrate from the Law of Nations, p. 608.

The Adversaries must teach universal Reformation, p. 610.

Magistrates as such, not members of the Church, p. 613.

Chrift mediator not a temporary King, p. 614.

The Magistrate not the servant of the Church, p. 616.

The adequate and complete caufe why the Magistrate
\[\begin{align*}
\textit{A Table of the Contents of the Book.} \\
\textit{Magistrate is subject to the Church, p. 617} & \quad \text{That the Magistrate is subject to the Reuakes} \\
\textit{and censures of the Church, is proved from} & \quad \text{p. 618, \\c.} \\
\textit{The supreme and principal power of Church-} & \quad \text{That the Magistrates punisheing with the} \\
\textit{affairs not in either Magistrate or Church,} & \quad \text{sword scandalous persons, should be a part of} \\
\textit{p. 620} & \quad \text{Church-government, a reasonalle conceit.} \\
\textit{Though the Magistrate punishe} & \quad \text{There is neither coaction nor punishment} \\
\textit{Ecclialistical scandals, yet his power to judge and} & \quad \text{properly so called in the Church, p. 632} \\
\textit{punish is not Ecclesiastical and spiritual, as the} & \quad \textit{Bullinger not of the minde of Erasius, p. 634} \\
\textit{Church confineth breaches of the second} & \quad \text{The Judgement of Wolfang, Musculus, Aretius, and Gualther, p. 634, \\c.} \\
\textit{Table, and yet the Churches power, is not} & \quad \text{The Error of Gualther to please the usurping} \\
\textit{Civill for that, p. 622} & \quad \text{Magistrate, p. 638} \\
\textit{People as people may give power to a Magi-} & \quad \text{Their minde different from Erasius, p. 639} \\
\textit{strate to use his auxiliary power to defend} & \quad \text{The Christian Magistrates sword cannot sup-} \\
\textit{the Church, to judge and punish offenders} & \quad \text{ply the place of Excommunication in the} \\
\textit{therein, p. 623} & \quad \text{Church, p. 640} \\
\textit{A Governor of, or over the Church, a Gover-} & \quad \text{The confessions of the Protestant Church for} \\
\textit{nour in the Church, a Governour for the} & \quad \text{this way, p. 642, \\c.} \\
\textit{Church, different, p. 618} & \quad \text{The testimony of Salmasius, p. 644} \\
\textit{The definition of a Doctrinal or Declara-} & \quad \textit{Of Simlerus, p. 645} \\
\textit{tive, and of a Punitive part of Church-} & \quad \textit{Lavater, Joan. Wolphins, ibid.} \\
\textit{Governments, of which, the former is given} & \quad \textit{Of Rob. Burhius, 646} \\
\end{align*}\]

\begin{itemize}
  \item The Contents of the Tractate or Dispute touching Scandal.
  \item Whether things indiffernt, can be command\d. \textit{Introduction, p. 1}
  \item Indifferent things as such, not the Matter of a Church-constitution. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item Actions are not indifferent because their circumstances are indifferent. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item Marrying not indifferent. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item Indifference Metaphysick and Theological, \textit{Introduction.}
  \item Necessity of obeying the Church in things only necessary for the Churches Commandment, is neither a lawful nor obliging necessity. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item Actions merely indifferent cannot be done in faith. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item The unlawfulness inseparably adhering to actions indifferent, maketh them unlawful. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item How the supererogation of goodness is to sway the will of Rulers and people. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item The will of Rulers not a law to us, in things indifferent. \textit{Introduction.}
  \item The definition of a Scandal, \textit{p. 3}
  \item Propositions touching Scandal from Rom. 14, \textit{p. 4, 5, 6}
  \item Propositions and Rules touching Scandal, from 1 Cor. 7, and 8, and 10, \textit{p. 7, 8, 9}
  \item An object scandalous two ways, \textit{p. 9}
  \item Four things may be scandalous objects. \textit{Ibid.}
  \item What is \\textit{maturum} apparent, appearance of evil, \textit{p. 11}
  \item Rules touching Scandal, \textit{p. 12, 13, 14}
  \item Whether or no we may deny obedience to the Laws of Superiors for fear of Scandal carelessly taken, \textit{p. 15, 16, 17}
  \item Whether Information can remove Scandal from things not necessary, but only through the necessity of mans commandment. \textit{p. 20, 21}
  \item Whether the precept of obedience to Superiors, or
\end{itemize}
A Table of the Contents of the Book

or the precepts of eschewing Scandal be more obligatory.
The essence of an active Scandal. p. 36. 37
How the fifth Commandment is more obligatory than following precepts, and how not. p. 46. 47. 67
Whether or not in every indifferenct things we are to eschew the Scandal of all, even of the malicious? p. 56. 66
Occasions of sins as occasions, are forbidden. p. 56
What is Christian Liberty in things indifferent. p. 57. 68
A further consideration of things not necessary, how they be scandalous. p. 58. 68
Of the necessity of things which answer Scandal. p. 64. 65
Some things necessary from the only positive Will of God, some things necessary from something in the things themselves. p. 69. 70
Two sorts of monuments of Idolatry. p. 64. 65
We cannot devise the use of any thing in worship, when we cannot devise the thing itself. p. 63
The place Deut. 7. 5. The greater judge of their gods, shall return with fire clear. p. 64
How Houses and Temples builded to seats, are not to be demolished. p. 65
Temples and Houses have a like physical use in God's worship, as out of God's worship. p. 65. 66
No Houses, no Temples, no Creatures, no now unclean under the New Testament. p. 67
How things not necessary to be obtained from or used, in the case of Scandal. p. 63. 67
Things scandalous under the New Testament are forbidden in a far other sense; than meat, days, and other things in the Ceremonial Law. p. 73
How for a Moral, and perpetual reason, both a Law present, p. 74. 75
Dissuasion of Houses because abased to idolatry, a Judging. p. 74. 75
Hells for converting of the people to publike worship, not to be abolished, though they have been allowed to superstition. p. 27. 65
A most necessary rule to be observed in the doctrine of Scandal. This emergent necessity, and us in places of divine command, in some cases. p. 84, 85
Light considerable Rules touching the kindes and degrees of necessity in eschewing Scandal. p. 82, 83, 84
The s. g. g. 5. Rule, p. 84, 85, the 6. Rule, p. 86
A stop to every flow from ignorance, and corruption, and to be taken, when it is kindly disjunct from the sinfull or unreasonable fact of another, and so is also kindly given. p. 84, 85. the 9. Rule p. 84
A solemn rate of Papists, that may not co-operate in a sinfull act, and be free of scandal. Because of some necessity. p. 87, the 1. Rule, p. 87
No relation of servant or captive may agree in laws to cooperate with them. p. 86
What things not necessary are to be removed from the worship of God in scandalous. p. 87, the 1. Rule, p. 87
Ceremonies not so much as necessary by way of disjunction, which necessity agree to many circumstances of worship in the Directory. p. 87
Religious monuments of Idolatry are to be removed. p. 89. 90. 91
Conformity with Idolaters is unlawful. p. 89. 90. 91
Conformity with Idolaters in things in God's worship not necessary, unlawful. p. 94. 95.
The same Ceremonies in idolatry, and in the same Church, may be judged the same three ways.
Formall and great conformity with Heathen and Idolaters in Ceremonies, closing with spiritual signification. p. 96. 97. 98
How the Scripture is in a Rule. p. 99
Church Government properly an Instrument. p. 100
The worship of God needeth no different Ceremonies, but what God himself hath prescribed. p. 101
We need not to eschew conformity with [illegible] was the only good way we had. His people heathenish rites. p. 101. 102
A Table of the Contents of the Book

or the precept of eschewing Scandal be more obligatory, p. 46, 47
The essence of an active Scandal, p. 56, 7
How the fifth Commandment is more obligatory than following precepts, and how not, p. 46, 47, 48
Whether or not in every indifferent things we are to eschew the Scandal of all, even of the malicious? Affirmative, p. 57, 63
Occasions of sins as occasions, are forbidden, p. 56
What is Christian liberty in things indifferent, p. 57, 64
A further consideration of things not necessary, how they be scandalous, p. 58
Of the necessity of things which remove Scandal, p. 59, 62
Some things necessary from the sole principle
Will of God, some thing necessary from something in the things themselves, p. 60
Two sorts of monuments of Idolatry, p. 61
We cannot devise the use of any thing in worship, when we cannot devise the thing itself, p. 62
The place Deut. 7: 25. The graven image of their gods, shall ye burn with fire burnt, p. 63
How Houses and Temples builded to Saints, are not to be demolished, p. 64
Temples and Houses have a like physical use in God's worship, as out of God's worship, p. 65, 66
No Houses, no Temple, no Creatures are now unclean under the New Testament, p. 67
How things not necessary are to be obtained from, or used, in the case of Scandal, p. 67, 68
Things scandalous under the New Testament are forbidden in a far other sense, than meats, days, and other things in the Ceremonial Law, p. 73
How far a Moral, and perpetual reason with a Law perpetual, p. 74, 75
Disturbing of houses because abused to idolatry, a Judaizing, p. 79, 97, 98
Bells for convening of the people to public worship, not to be abolished, though they have been abused to superstition, p. 79, 97, 98
A most necessary rule to be observed in the doctrine of Scandal, That eminent profaneness of moral necessity, are to us in cases of divine commands in some cases, p. 81
Eight considerable Rules touching the kinds and degrees of necessity in eschewing Scandal, p. 81, 82, 84
The 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 Rule, p. 82, 83, the 6. Rule, ibid.
A scandal may flow from ignorance and corruption, and so be taken, when it also kindly illiberal from the sinful or unseemly act of another, and so is also kindly given, p. 84, 85, the 7. Rule, ibid.
A false rule of Papists, that men may so operate in a sinful act, and be free of scandal, because of some necessity, p. 85
No relation of servant or captive can render it lawful to operate with him, p. 88
What things not necessary are to be removed from the worship of God as scandalous, p. 87, the 8. Rule, ibid.
Ceremonies not so much as necessary by way of disjunction, which necessity agreed to many circumstances of worship in the Directory, p. 88
Religious monuments of Idolatry are to be removed, p. 89, 90, 91
What conformity with Idolaters is unlawful, p. 93
Conformity with Idolaters in things, in God's worship not necessary, unlawful, p. 94, 95
The same Ceremonies in Idolaters, and in the true Church, may be judged the same three ways, p. 96
Formalists grant conformity with Heathen and Idolaters in Ceremonies, cloathed with a scriptural signification, p. 96, 97, 98
How the Scripture is a Rule, p. 99
Church Government properly an Institution, ibid.
The worship of God needeth no religious Ceremonies, but what God hath himself proscrib'd, p. 100, 101
We need necessity, that conformity with Idolaters, was the only cause why God forbade his people heathenish rites, p. 102, 103
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ch. Ver.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gen. 6: 14</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7: 11-12</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9: 13 ibid.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lev. 32: 22</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20: 4</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24: 22</td>
<td>380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Num. 5: 7</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21: 10</td>
<td>470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deut. 21: 2</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23: 27-29</td>
<td>286</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Sam. 1: 1</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7: 20-3</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8: 13</td>
<td>453</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9: 13-14</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Kings 5: 6</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17: 35</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Kings 18: 18</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Chron. 26: 1</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36: 16-18</td>
<td>413</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Places of Scripture cleared in both these Treatises**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ch. Ver.</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>16.</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>308, 309, 310,</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>311, 235, 236,</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>295,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.5, 6, 10</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>518, 519</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12.</td>
<td>5, 51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18.15, 16</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>290, 291, 292,</td>
<td>8, 845, 251, 252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24, 25, 581, 9, 826, 92</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.476, 477, 478,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>479, 480, 482,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>223, 224, 225,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>226, 127, 128,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>129, 465, 466,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>467, 396, 397,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61, 612, 635,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60, 637, 638,</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23.</td>
<td>3, 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28.18, 19</td>
<td>393, 396, 397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mark.</td>
<td>7, 6, 7, 8, 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137, 138, 139</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke.</td>
<td>1, 12, 3, 361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12, 13, 14, 428, 602, 603,</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>392, 393,</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14, 15, 20, 8, 1</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14, 15, 22, 22, 23, 24, 29,</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>298,</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22.</td>
<td>21, 197, 198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24, 428, 420, 603,</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26, 617,</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John.</td>
<td>1, 2, 4, 461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46, 465, 466,</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>467,</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5, 1, 2, 3, 23, 239, 240,</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>250, 252, 255, 256,</td>
<td>250, 252, 255, 256,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5, 12, 21, 22,</td>
<td>250, 252, 255, 256,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24,</td>
<td>250, 252, 255, 256,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18, 31, 36</td>
<td>25, 426, 421,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>422, 420, 501, 511,</td>
<td>25, 426, 421,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>603,</td>
<td>25, 426, 421,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.</td>
<td>23, 235, 236, 293,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>375, 380, 380, 3, 14, 15, 250, 256, 258,</td>
<td>250, 256, 258,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ERRATA.

Page 32. Line 34. for purging, read purim, p. 37. read nullis in Marg. p. 46. 1. 1. 12. patrons, p. xi. 1. 1. r. Answetred, p. 96. r. A Deo in marg. p. 117. 1. 5. for religiously r. religious, p. 121. 1. for antecedent r. assumption, p. 139. 1. 1. defend, p. 146. 1. 34 for 37. r. 33. 1. dele they are to believe and obey me, p. 131. 1. 23. for are as, p. 237. 1. 10. for or r. are, p. 257. 1. 2. for 25, 20, 15. 8. p. 274. 1. 1. dele, p. 289. 1. 1. 1. for 29 r. 8, 9, p. 286. 1. 1. adde be, p. 399. 1. 6. 1. 19. p. 351. 1. 1. for 5. r. 7. 1. 33. 1. 1. for 3. 1. 1. for 3. 1. 1. r. in. 7. 1. 32. dele r Tim. 5. 19. Matt. 20. 10. p. 591. 1. 16. for Walens r. Waleus, p. 588. 1. 34. for of life and death r. the matter of religion, p. 633. 1. 31. r. rebuke.

In Treatise of Scandal, p. 15. 1. 19. for scandally r. cautelously, p. 23. 1. 1. r. also, p. 78. 1. 1. 1. for 10. 1. 1. not for 10.
SECTION I.

Certain Introductory Conclusions, tending to clear the perfection of the Scriptures in all things, as well Ceremoniall, as Non-Ceremoniall.

1. Conclusion.

Christ hath set down, and established a perfect Plat-forme of Church-Government in all Morals, not only both for the inward, but also for the outward, and externall Government of his House, that he hath left no Liberty or Latitude to Magistrates, or Churches whatsoever to choose and settle such an orderly Forme of Church-Government or Discipline, as is most suitable to their particular Civill-Government, Laws, Manners, and Customes, so this Forme be not repugnant to the Word of God.

I shall first explaine the Tearmes of the Conclusion: 2. Confirm it: 3. Vindicate it from the objections of Adversaries.

1. The Church-Government of which I here speak, is a Church-Government in its Morals: To exclude those things that are meerely Physical and Humane in this Government, as a Pulpit of this or that matter, Stone or Timber, or of this Timber, or of any other kind: a Communion-Table of this, or that forme; a Cup of wood, or of metallic, as Silver, Tin. &c. It is a Morall thing, either Morally good or evil, that there be an Officer in the Church that Christ hath not appointed, or that there be none but such as Christ hath appointed: yet is it not Morall that a Pastor be such or such a

Coun-
Country man, so he be apt to teach, and holy; Crossing, signifying
the dedication of the Baptized Child to the service of Christ must
be Morall, but what sort of River the water of Baptisme be, is
merely Physicall, not Morall.

So there be two sort of things in Gods Worship, things either
merely Morall, or merely Naturall.

And here also we consider things Circumstantiall, as Time, Place,
&c. And circumstances are either merely Physicall, or 2. merely
Morall, or 3. mixt, partly Morall, partly Physicall; Circum-
stances merely Physicall are such adjuncts of divine worship, as are
common and unseparable concomitants of both civil, naturall, and
Religious or Sacred actions performed by men, and as they are such,
contribute no Morall goodnesse, or badnesse to the action or Agent
in the performance thereof, such as I take to be the seven individuall
proprieties of every man; Forma, figura, locus, tempus, spiss,
patria, nomen, under Forme and figure: The first two, I compre-
heed, such a proportion of body, a man of a high stature, or low;
a man beautiful, or not beautifull, to which I crave leave to reduce
all externall Formes of habites, as cloathes, the head covered, or
not covered, the situation of the body, as as they are in them-
selves, meer Physicall acts; kneeling, sitting, standing; the eyes
cast down to the earth, or lifted up; the hands lifted up, or
not lifted up, the knocking on the breast, or not knocking,
motions of the soul, that are naturall Time, Place, Family,
Country, Name, as such a person, Thomas, not John: the son
of such a man, not of such a man; 1. All these are common con-
comitants of Civill, Naturall, and Religious actions, for all actions
performed by man of what kinde soever, as naturall, to eat, sleep;
or, civill, to declaine an oration before the people; or religious, to
preach or pray, must be done by some persons, John or Thomas, men
of some Family, in some time, in some place; for they are not actions
eternal, and so must be done in time and place. So the Agents must
have some habite, some gesture in the doing of all these actions, and
they are unseparable Adjuncts of all these actions because neither
actions naturall, civil, or Religious can be performed, but by some
persons, in some habite and action, in some time, in some place: and
lastly, they are meerely Circumstantialls, and contribute no Morall
goodnesse or badnesse to the actions, as they are but common and
unsepa-
unseparable circumstances; for because he preacheth in time, or in place simply, the preaching is neither Morally good, nor ill, better or worse, because Thomas prayeth in Gown or Cloak in this place, rather than that place, as it be not, Locus ut sic, of intention, such a Religious place, before the Image of Christ, or the Father, or the Virgin Mary: the praying is neither the more, or the less acceptable to God because of these common and unseparable adjuncts: Hence there can be no such force in these circumstances, as to make the actions indifferent: Such as contend for the lawfulness of Ceremonies, say our circumstances of time, place and the like, is nothing but a meer blinde, for we cannot (say they) enumerate all these circumstances, for habitation, gesture, person, are not mere circumstances and they must come in under the lap of this general, &c. or the like: To which I answer, that to my knowledge all these that are mere Physical circumstances, are particularly enumerated, such as are, 1. Time, 2. Place, 3. Person, or Agent, 4. Name, 5. Family, 6. Condition, as Country, Family, House, 7. Habits or Garments, 8. Gestures, as sitting, standing, lifting of the eyes or hands, knocking on the breast, kneeling, and there is no blinde in this enumeration, for there be no other particulars that can be enumerated, except this time of the day, eight or ten of clock, this place, not any other, this person, not another, and these are only considered here as circumstances, not as such and such circumstances, but the truth is, the enumeration of Symbolical Rites, as Cross, Surplice, and the like, is really a blinde, and is an enumeration with a wide belly, and includeth species, and not individuals only, as Symbolical Ceremonies, such as are Crossing, Bells, Oyle, Salt, Spittle, Milk, turning to the East, toward the people, from the people, toward the Altar, with a high voice, with a low voice, and a thousand the like; yes, all the old Ceremonies of Moses with a new face, all the toys of the Maske, of the Dedication of Churches, which would fill a Volumne like the Rationale of Durandus: 2. Some circumstances are merely Morall, for as Divines distinguish Time and Place, in Time as Time, and as such a Religious Time, the Lords Sabbath, Tempus, et tempus ut sic, and Place as Place, or such a Religious place, Locus, et Locus ut sic. So we may distinguish here, between circumstances in common or in grosse, and such and such circumstances. As time is a common adjunct of Divine Worship. But such a time, to wit, the Lords-day, our Physical circumstances are all easily known and numbered.
day, is both the time of Worship, and Worship itself. So there is place of Worship, and there is such a Religious place, The holy of holies, the Temple. A habit is a meer accident of Worship, the person, John or Thomas, is also an accident; but if God command such an Ephod as Aaron and the Priests were to wear; this is not a meer circumstance; that the person who administreth the Lords-Supper, be John or Thomas, is a meer circumstance; but that this person be a called Pastor, not a private man, is more then a circumstance. And therefore these circumstances, taken in common and their Universall nature, are meerly Physical circumstances; but taken in their particular and determinate restrictions; as such circumstances, they may be meerly Morall circumstances, such as are the common adjunct of the time of Worship, the place, and the Sabbath time and the Temple for Jewish Worship. The former are circumstances meerly Physical, the latter meerly Morall; I mean, as they are restricted other ways; The Temple of Jerusalem served as our meeting places do, to fence off the injuries of Heaven and Sun; but that is as a place, not as such a place.

3. There be some mixt circumstances, as these same Physical circumstances, clothed with their own seasonable conveniences; so time for Worship, and due and convenient time is required, there may be some Scandalous and Superstitious time for Worship. A habit in the Preacher is required, and that a grave one; a place is required for private Worship, and a fit place, such as is not the Market-Street for private Praying; the inconveniency of the circumstance may vitiate the Worship.

I did say that Christ Jesus hath set down in the Word, a perfect Platform of Church-Government, in all Morals; I say in all Morals, because the Word doth not teach us any thing of circumstances, Physical as Physical. Scriptura talia non ponit, sed supponit: The Scripture faith not, That the Worship of God must have a time, a place, when, and where its to be performed, a person, who is to perform it, a habit, or garments on the person that Worship; the Scripture teacheth none of these, but supposeth that they are and must be; because nature teacheth, that without time, place, person, habit, gesture, its unpossible that these or any humane actions can be; and therefore Pratical! Formalists, do without all sense or reason, require that we should prove by Scripture, the lawfulness.
fulness of time, place, person, habit, gesture in God's Worship; for these are presupposed in all actions, natural, civil, religious, private, public, lawful, unlawful, in acts of arts, sciences, of moral conversing and all; yea, there is as good reason, that they demand Scripture to prove he must be a living man, who hath a reasonable soul, and senses, and is born of a woman, who preacheth and administrateth Sacraments, which is presupposed by nature.

When the Heretic will eth me to prove from Scripture that Christ is very man; it is a vain thing he should demand of me besides to prove by Scripture, that Christ is such a one also as can laugh, weep, admire, sing, sigh, &c. for these are presupposed to follow man's nature; and if Scripture prove Christ to be a true man, it presupposeth by nature's light, that he can laugh, he can weep, and that in some time, some place, in some habit, in some gesture, so he be a man; for that is presupposed by the light of nature, and known by the most barbarous who never heard of Scripture; and therefore there is no greater reason to put us to prove all the natural and inseparable circumstances of Worship, such as time and place, without which it is impossible any action at all can be performed; then that we should preface Prelats to prove by Scripture, that James Usher is born of English or Irish Parents, for sense and nature can prove all these without Scripture: But because their Ceremonies of Crossing, bowing to Altars, Festivall days, Oyl, Salt, Spittle, Masse clothes, are nothing warrantable by nature's light, and must have Morall and Symbolical influence in Worship, as positive Religious observances, having some spiritual signification and use, (except they be reasonless fancies) we have just reason to demand a warrant and speciall Charter for all Morals, and so for their Ceremonies in the Scripture, and to call their &c. humane Ceremonies and the like a blind: For if Prelats can prove these Ceremonies to be from Christ, and warranted by his Testament, we shall yield that their natural circumstances of time, when you should Bow to Altars, and Cross a Baptized Infant, and where, or in what place, you should wear Surplice; and that the person that useth Oyl, Spittle, Salt, in Baptism, must do it in some habit, and with some gesture, either sitting, standing, lying, or kneeling, are all warrantable and lawful from the light of nature: for, if God's light of Scripture, warrant wearing of a Surplice, as it doth warrant.
Sacramental eating and drinking, the light of nature must warrant these concreted, natural, and inseparable circumstances of time, place, person, habit, gesture used in both the former and the latter.

But because I said that circumstances of time and place have a threefold consideration, Physical, Morall, and Mixt: and I have spoken onely of these circumstances in a Physical or natural consideration; therefore in the other two considerations there being involved some Morall goodnesse, and because there is no Morall goodnesse imaginable, but it must have its essential form and being from a Law or word of God; therefore all the former circumstances, as they are clothed with either moral conveniency and expediency, or with some Religious positive goodnesse, must be warranted by the Word of God, or the Rules of sinlessse and spiritual Prudence, which cannot deviate from the word of God: For circumstances clothed with Religious Positive goodnesse, such as are the Sabbath day, the holy of Holieft, the Temple, these are not mere circumstances, but worship itself: So a Religious habit, as an Epbaed or a Surplice, is not a mere circumstance, or a mere habit, but a worship, or such a part or limb of worship as must be warranted by the word of truth, else it is nothing but a will-device, and a forgery, and so to be rejected: And as touching things of Prudence, they are things properly mixt, as at what hour Sermon shall begin in such a Church, at eight, or nine, or ten of the clock; how the worship shall be ordered, whether you should begin the Worship with a word of Prayer, or a word of Praising, or a word of Exhorting to stir up for the duty of the day, is a matter of Prudence; and because God hath not laid the band of a Precept on us, to begin with either of the three; therefore it would seem, that though the things themselves be Morall, and must be warranted by a Word of God; yet the order is not Morall, but Prudentiall, and so cannot fall under a command of the Church; for to me it is hard, that men and the Church should lay on a tie or bond of a Precept where God hath laid on no such bond; The Church, in these mixt things, where the Morality is not clear, at farthest, can but go on to directive advices, as Paul doth, 1 Cor. 7. 6. 12. Not to imposing of Laws, nor to injunctions or Commandments under the pain of Church-cessures; for Christ must bind and ratifie in Heaven, all Church-cessures on earth, and so the Church cannot command nor censure, but as Christ himself would command or censure.
Section I. Church-Government in Scripture.

Now because the rest of the conclusion shall be farther proved, I prove that Christ hath so far forth set down a perfect Platform of Church-Government in the Scripture, as he hath not given any to Rulers, Prelates, or to the Church itself, to set up a various Platform suitable to their particular Civil Government, Laws, Manners and Customs.

1. Arg. Whatever maketh the man of God perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works, and is written for this end, that any Timothy or Faithful Pastor, might know how he ought to behave himself in the House of God. That must make the man of God perfect in this good work, of holy walking, as a perfect Governour, or a perfect Church-member, to be governed in all moral acts of discipline and godly behaviour, according to the spiritual policy of the Lords house, and so must hold forth a perfect Platform of Discipline, which doth not varie, ebbe and flow, and after according to the Civil Government, Laws, Manners and Customs of men: but the Scriptures of God doth to instruct all Members of the visible Church, both Governors and governed, 2 Tim. 3. 15, 17. 1 Tim. 3. 14, 15. Ergo, the Scripture must hold forth a perfect form of Discipline which doth not varie, ebbe, flow, and alter according to the Civil Governments, Laws, Manners and Customs of men. The Proposition is made good: Because, 1. to walk according to the spiritual Policy of the Lords house, must be a good work, and so a moral and lawful work, and a due conversing in the spiritual Society of the Church, according to the Rule of the Word. 2. If this moral walking be according to a Rule that may crook, bow and varie according as Civil Customs of men and Cities alter and varie at men's pleasure, it is a moral walking, no more according to the Rule of Scripture, then the contradictory thereof is according to this Rule, but falleth and riseth, hath its ups and downs at the mere nod and pleasure of men, who may change Customs and Manners every year twice, if so it please them. For what Scripture teacheth me a Civil Custom of a City, as not to carry Armor in the night, to take up the Names of all between sixteen years of age and sixty? Or what Scripture teacheth me, a Bishop may be above the Pastors of the Church, or a Bishop may not be? Surplice, Cross, Bowing and Bending to wooden Altars, may be or may not be? Deacons may be, or may not be? even as Customs and guises of the
the Civil State, appear as Meteors in the Aire, and in the fourth part of a night, disappear and vanish to nothing; to say, that the word teacheth the Church to abstain from blood, is a part of the perfection of the Scripture, and yet the Scripture teaches that abstinence from blood, not as an eternal, and unalterable Law, for we are not now tied to abstain from blood, therefore the Scripture may make the man of God perfect in some works that are alterable and changeable: This (I say) is no Answer, for saying that God should now make abstinence from blood, and things strangled, indifferent, as he made them in that interval of time, Acts 15. When the Ceremonies were mortall, but not deadly and unlawful, as is clear in that Paul, Acts 16.1,2,3. circumcised Timothy, that Rite being then indifferent; and yet he writeth in another case, when the Gospel is now fully promulgated, that be circumcised maketh a man a debtor in conscience, to keep the whole Law of Moses, and so to abstain from eating of blood, and things strangled, must be a falling from the Grace of Christ, and an Apostacy from the Gospel, Gal. 5 1,2,3,4,5,6,7. The like I say of observing of dayes, which, Rom. 14:5,6. were indifferent, and in another case, Gal. 4:9,10. Col. 2:16,17. Deadly, unlawful, and not necessary, so the matter, Acts 15. which in the case of excusing the weak, is abstinence from things indifferent, say that they are indifferent, bindeth as a perpetuall Law to the end of the world, and bindeth us this same very day, Rom. 14:20. In the Morality of it, as abstinence from murthering, One for whom Christ died, Rom. 14:15. 1 Cor. 8:12,13. 1 Cor. 10:26,27,28. And upon the ground laid by Prelates, which is most false and untrue, to wit, that many Positive things in Church-Government, such as are Prelats deemed to be warranted by Apostollke, though not by Divine right: Ceremonies, and Crossing, kneeling to bread, Altars, Surplise, Roche, corner-Cap, ye, and Circumcision, a Pascover-Lambe, and all the Jewish Ceremonies, though with another spirit and intention, then to shadow forth Christ to come in the flesh, imagined to be indifferent, and alterable things, we hold that all these are to be abstained from, as eating of blood, and things strangled of old were, if you say they are as indifferent, as blood, and some meats were in the case, Acts 15. Rom. 14. 1 Cor. 8. 1 Cor. 10. It is a most false principle as we shall hear, and therefore the Scripture, if it make the man of God perfect so e-
good work, as the Apostle faith, it must teach us to abstain from all these as scandalous, and must set down as perfect and particular directions for Church-Government, as Paul doth, Rom. 14. Set down a particular Platform, how we shall eschew Murther; for scandalizing our Brethren in the use of things indifferent, is spiritu- all Murther, Rom. 14. 15. 20.

Arg. That which is a lamp to the feet, and a light to the path, Phil. 119. 105. And causeth us understand Equity, Judgement, Right- 
uesse, and every good way, Prov. 2. 9. And to walk safely, so that our feet stumble not, Prov. 3. 25. Prov. 4. 11, 12. Prov. 6. 23. That must be a lamp and light to our feet, and walking in a Platform of Church-Discipline, so as we shall not erre, sin or stumble therein: But if the light be so various, doubtfull, alterable, as we may walk this way, or the contrary way, according to the Civill Laws, altera- ble Customes and Manners of the people, we shall not be guided in our path, as our feet shall not stumble; the Church might then suf- fer Jezebel to Prophecy, and these that hath the Doctrine of Ba- laam, or not suffer them, as the Civill Laws, and alterable Customes of the people should require: Now the Scriptures doth clearly inti- mate, that the Law and will of God revealed in the Word, is a Rule of walking straitly and of declining sin, and any stumbling in our way, which deserveth a rebuke and a threatening, such as Christ uttereth against the Church of Pergamos, Rev. 2. 14, 15, 16. And of Thyatira, v. 17, 18. Now if these Churches had no certain Rule or Word of God, from which they shou'd deviate and err in their path of Discipline, but the Customes and alterable Civill Laws and Manners of men, they were unjustly rebuked by Christ, which to avert were Blasphemy.

Prelats say, Some things in Church-Policie, are Fundamentals, not to be altered; but there be other things alterable. And of things of Policie of the former notion, we have a certain Platform in Scripture; but of the latter, not any at all is necessary; and the not suffering of false Teachers in the Church, is of the former sort. But I Answer, some Scripture or reason ought to be given of this distinction: If all be Morall and unalterable that are necessary to Salvation, its good: But to suppress Jezebell and false teachers, is not necessary, Neces- sitate mediis; for then the Salvation of that Church were desperate, and past remedy, which should suffer false teachers; surely then

E Perga-
There is no reason why some things fit.
For example...
longing to feeding, by both Word and Discipline, which is enough for the perpetuity of all Positive precepts of Discipline and Police, even till Christ’s appearance to judge the world; and I wonder that Hooker expoundeth this by 2. Tim. 4. 1. As if Paul did mean the precept of Preaching only, and that soundly and without mixture; and yet passe by the Parallel place, 1 Tim. 5. 21. Almost in the same rule of Language, in which place he speaketh of many special Positive precepts and Rules of Police, as of poor widows, the Almes to be given to them; the not rebuking of an Elder, the office of Elders Governing, and of Elders labouring in the Word and Doctrine, the not receiving an accusation against an Elder, but under two or three Witnesses, the publike rebuking of those who offend, publikely, the not admitting to the Ministry raw and green soouldiers not tried, and many other particulars of Police, of all which he faith gravely, v. 21. I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Elect Angels, that thou observe these things &c. Certainly, saith, these things was not one Commandment, but all the precepts of Faith, and of Church-Government spoken of in this Epistle; and truly I shall think that Paul who particularizeth that Timothy should not drink water, but a little wine because of his infirmity, and of bringing with him the cloak that he left at Troas, and the parchments, 2 Tim. 4. doth far more specify all the positives of police, and writ, how all the Timothy and Pastors are to behave themselves in the Church of God: If Ceremonies and all these alterable titles had not been excluded out of the Platforme; for a Religious Masse-Surprice, is of far more conquence then Pauls old cloak, and yet Paul spake of the one in Canonick-Scripture, never of the other; and Oyle, Spittle, Salt, Cross in Baptisme being positive significant Rites, and having continued in the Church so many hundred years, should far rather have been specified in Scripture then Timothy drinking of water: yea, and if all the alterable positive things of Policy, as Cross, Surprice, be commanded as necessary in the general, though not in this or that particular, as Hooker and other Formallists do teach, then sure the meaning must be: I give to thee, O Timothy, charge in the sight of God who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, &c. That thou keep this Commandment of Crossing, Surprice, bowing to Altars, of corner-Cap, or of the equivalent of these, without spot irreproveable to the appearance of Christ;
Christ; for the precept of feeding the Flock, must include all these; and though Ceremonies in particular be alterable, and not commanded in Hypothese; yet that in generall there should be such positive Ceremonies is necessary, and the Apostle (say they) commandeth them, 1 Cor. 14:40. Yea, (as Dunam faith) humane Holydays, are commanded in the fourth Commandment, and Burges faith; all the Ceremonies are commanded in the third Commandment, and Formalists; who denied the Prelate to be of Divine institution, made a Ceremony of him, and made him a decent and orderly thing; which as the Poet said, to me is like the act of death, that brought Great Alexander, to whom the whole world was not sufficient, in small bounds, in the Grave under two foot of earth, and this maketh the great Pope, the Catholick Bishop of the earth, a little Ceremony: But this little Ceremony hath these many hundred years infestted the whole earth. 2. If this precept be not a perpetuall binding precept till Christ's second appearance, but only rewarded with life eternall at Christ's appearance, yet shall it follow that all things included in the precept of feeding the flock, and so all the Surplice, Crosting, Will-worship or their equivalent, without which feeding cannot be in a decent and orderly way (as they say from, 1 Cor. 14:40.) must be rewarded with life eternall; let Formalists wait at the day of judgement for a reward, of a Garment of glory for wearing a lining Surplice, my faith cannot reach it.

3. For the choosings of Widows that are poor to take care of the poor and sick in Hospitales; we think it just as necessary now as then, though no ways, if there be none sick, and poor in the Church: But that Widows were Church-Officers ordained, as were Deacons, Acts 6:6. we never thought, and therefore we do not see that the wanting of such Widows, is the want of a Positive institution of Church-Policy; for other positive things of policy that should be of perpetuall use, and not all of the same kinde, and of equall necessity: I see no reason (which I speak for Apostles) which were necessary then, and not now; But if from thence Formalists infer, that many positive things of policy are alterable, I can infer with equall strength of reason, that then Pastors, and Teachers are alterable by the Church, for if the one have a Divine institution to warrant it, Eph. 4:11, 12, 13. so hath the other; and if Prelates may come themselves into the Church without any warrant but this, that
that Apostles are alterable, and may put out Pastors and Teachers, because God hath put out Apostles; we have a new world of alterable Church-Policy. 5. Reverent Beza referreth the Commandment to the Platforme of Discipline: So Ambrose in Loc. and Chrysostome Homil. 18. So Diodat. This Commandment which is, ver. 11, 12. Or generally all other Commandments, which are contained in this Epistle; Poppin Writers confesse the same, though to the disad-\text{vant}age of their Causae, who maintain unwritten Church-Policy and Ceremonies: So Lyra and Nicol. Gorran. Mandatum quod Deus, & ego mandavimus, the Commandment of the Lord, and of me his Apostle, Corne. a lapide: Quicquid tibi, O Episcop, haec Epistolâ prescrips, & demandavi, hoc serva: Salmeron, alii per mandatum intellegunt, Quocunque mandavi spectancia ad minus boni Episcopi.

**Sect. II.**

THE Adversaries amongst these things of Church-Policy, do reckon such things as concern the outward man, and externals only; and therefore Bilson, Hooker and the rest, as Cameron and others, will have Christ's kingdom altogether Spirituall, Mystical, and invisible, and Christ to them is not a King to binde the externall man, nor doth he as King take care of the externall government of his own house, that belongeth (lay they) as other externall things to the Civill Magistrate, who with advise and counsell of the Church, Bishops and their unhallowed Members, may make Laws in all externals, for the Government of the Church, and all these externals though Positif, are alterable; yea, and added to the word, though not as additions corrupting, but at perfecting and adorning the word of God and his worship.

In opposition to this, our fourth Argument shall be, he who is the only Head, Lord, and King of his Church, must governe the politick, externall body his Church, perfectly by Laws of his own spirituall policy, and that more perfectly then any earthly Monarch, or Statedoth their subjects, or any Commanders, or any Lord or Master of Family, doth their Army, Souldiers, and members of their Family.

But Christ is the head and only head of the Church, for by what title Christ is before all things, he in whom all things consist, and is the beginning, the first borne from the dead, and hath the preheminence in all.
all things; and he is onely, solely and absolutely all these, by the
same title he is the Head, and so the onely Head of the Body the
Church, Col. 1.17,18. And he is the head of his Politick body, and
so a head in all externals, as well as of mysticall and invisible body,
for if his Church be an externall Politicall body, and ruled by Or-
gans, Eyes, Watchmen, Rulers, Feeder, and such as externally
guide the flock, as it is, Eph. 4.11,12,13,14,15,16. i Cor.12.28.
Matt. 16.17,18. A society to which Christ hath given the keys of
his House, and so externall power in a visible Politick Court on
earth to bind and loose, to take in and put out, to open and shut
the doors of his visible Politicke house; then this Politick body must
have a head in externall policy, and this head in externals must as
a head governe by Laws all the members in their externall society;
for a body without a head is a monster, and a Politick body, with-
out a head Politick, and one that ruleth Politically, is a Monster.
And Christ is the King, yea the only King of his own Kingdom, ei-
ther as this Kingdom is mysticall and invisible, or as it is Politick,
externall, and visible on earth, as these Scriptures proveth. i. Mat.
28.18. Jesus saith unto me, is all power given in Heaven and in earth;
I hope this power is only given to Christ, not to Pope or earthly
Prince: It is the name above all names, Phil.2.9. King of Kings,
Rev.17.14. And upon this Kingly power, Christ doth an externall
A great of Royall power, and giveth not only an inward but also a
Politickall, externall power to his disciples, ver. 19. Go Teach, and
Baptize all Nations: Is this only inward and heart-teaching, and
inward Baptizing by the spirit? I think not, God hath referred
that to himself only, Isa. 54.13. Joel.6.44,45., Joel.1.3. and Joel.20.21.
22. Upon this the Father sent Christ, and so for him his King
upon his holy hill of Zion, Ps.2.6. Christ performeth an externall
Politick mission, and sendeth his disciples with power in a Politick
externall way to remit and retain sins, in an externall way, for there
is clearly two remittings and retaining of sins in the text: None
can lay of the Church, its my Church, but he who is King of the
Church; and Christ faith, Matt. 16.18. that it is his Church, and up-
on this it is his Kingdom, and the keys are his keys, and they are
keys of a Kingdom visible and Politick on earth, as is evident, ver.
19. I will give unto thee, the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and
whosoever thou shalt bind on earth, (in an externall Politicall court of
of Church Rulers, as it is differenced from an internal, and mysticall binding in Heaven) shall be bound in Heaven, &c. For it is clear that there is an internall binding in Heaven, and a Politicall and externall binding on earth, and both are done by the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: But Christ can have or give no Politicall or externall keys of an externall and Politicall King, but as he is a King: Yea, and Excommunication doth not only binde the inward man in Heaven, but also the externall man on earth, excluding him from the Society of the Church as a Heathen, and a Publican, and purging him out from the externall communion of the Church, as if he were now no brother, Matth.18.17,18. 1 Cor. 5.7,10,11,12. Now this externall separating and judging of an offender by the Church is done by the keys of the Kingdom; Ergo, by Christ as a King, ruling the externall man Politically, and so by the key of the house of David, which is laid upon Christ's shoulder, Isa.22.22. And by a Royall Act of him, upon whose shoulder is the Government, Is.9.6. Who sitteth upon the throne of David to order the kingdom, &c to establish it with judgement & justice. For the Church doth bind and loose in the externall Court, either by a Commission from him who as head of the Church, and who as King gave to her the Keys of the Kingdom; or by a generall Arbitrary power given to the Magistrate and Church, to do in these things as they please; so they do nothing contrary to the Word, though not according to the Word, as they are to do in Doctrinals; if the former be said, then must the externall Government be upon the shoulder of Christ as King, which is that which we teach: If the latter be said, then might the Magistrate & Church appoint such an Ordinance as excommunication, and so they may by their Articular power, make a Gospel Promise of ratifying an Ordinance in heaven, and of pardoning sins in heaven; for he that can make the ordinance, can make also the Gospel Promise, and he that can by an Arbitrary power make one Promise or part of the Gospel, may make all. And if either Magistrate or Church can appoint such an Ordinance as hath a Promise of binding & loothing made good in heaven, they may also take away such Ordinances and Gospel Promises; for it is the same power to make and adde, to unmake and destroy Ordinances. Hence also I argue for the Immutability of a Scripturall Platform, that the Church cannot alter at her will: thus, That must be of Divine Promise of Pardoning of sin made to the right use of the keys proved discipline to be a part of the Gospel.
vile institution which is an essential part of the Gospel; but the Platform of Church-Government in the word is such, and so must be no less Immutable than the Gospel. I make good the major Proposition thus: That which essentially includeth a Promise of the New Testament, that must be a part of the Gospel which consisteth especially of Promises, Heb. 8.6. 1 Cor. 7.1. Gal. 3.17. Gal. 4.23, 24. But there's a Promise of forgiving sins in Heaven made to the Church, using the Keys aright, and of Christ's presence in the exercise of the Keys, as walking amongst the golden Candelsticks, Matt. 18. 18, 19. 20. Matt. 16. 18, 19. 10. 20. 23. Rev. 2.1. Now if any shall object, this Argument proveth only that which is not denied, to wit, that some part of Discipline only, is of Divine institution which is not denied, for a power of binding and loosing, of remitting and retaining sins, is of Divine institution: But hence it is not concluded that the whole Platform and all the limbs, joynts, bones, and toes are of Divine institution, they being matters of smaller concernment. I answer, As from a part of the Doctrine of the Law and Gospel that is of Divine institution; for Example, that I keep, observe and do the Law, that I believe and repent, which are things of Divine institution: I infer that the whole Platform of Law and Gospel, is of Divine institution, and the particulars of Obedience and Faith, are not Arbitrary to the Church; just so in Discipline, I say the like, there is no more reason for one part written by God, then for another.

Farther, if the Church be a visible Politick Kingdom, as it is, Matt. 13. v. 45, 46, 47, 48. Matt. 16. 19. Matt. 8. 12. And if the Word be the Word, Scepter and Law of the Kingdom, as it is, Matt. 6. 10. Matt. 13. 11. Luke 4. 43. Matt. 4. 23. Mark 13. 8. Luke 21. 10. 14. Luke 8. 10. Yea, the Sword and Royall power of the King, Rev. 1.16. Rev. 19. 15. By which he Ruleth and Raigneth in his Church, Isa. 11. v. 4. Psal. 110. 2. Heb. 1. 8, 9. Psal. 45. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. Isa. 61. 1, 2. 2 Cor. 10. 4, 5, 6. 1 Pet. 2. 4, 5, 6, 7. And if this Word the King Raigneth, bindeth, looseth, and conquereth souls and subdueth his Enemies, Matt. 18. 18, 19, 20. Matt. 16. 19. Rev. 6. 2. Then certainly Christ must Raign Politically, and externally in his Church, and walk in the midst of the golden Candelsticks, Rev. 3. 1. And if Christ Ascending to Heaven as a Victorious King, Leading Captivity Captive, gave gifts to men, and appointed an external Policie,
policie, for the gathering of his Saints by the Ministry of certain officers of his Kingdom, as it is, Psal. 68.18. Even that the Lord God might dwell amongst them, Eph. 4. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16. Then he must Raign in the externall Policie of Pastors, Teachers, Elders, by Word, Sacraments, and Discipline. Now the King himself, the Lord who Raigneth in this externall Policie, must be the only Lawgiver, Lam. 4. 12. Isa. 33. v. 22. There can be no Rabbies or Doctors on earth, who as little Kings can make Laws under him, Matt. 13. v. 8, 9, 10. Yea, not Apostles who can teach how the Worship should externally be ordered, but what they receive of the King of the Church, 1 Cor. 11. 23. Acts 15. v. 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. How the house should be Governed, Heb. 3. 1, 2, 4, 5. Yea, nothing more reasonable, then that whatsoever is commanded by the God of Heaven, should be done in, and for the house of the God of Heaven, under the pain of his Wrath, Ezr. 7. 23. 1. That there should be Officers in a Kingdom, and Laws to Govern the Subjects, beside the will of the Prince or Judges of the Land, or that the Members of a Family, or Souldiers in an Army should be Governed by any Rule, Custom, or Law, beside or without the will of the Master of the House, and of the Generall & Commanders, is all one, as if Subjects, Families and Souldiers, should be Ruled and Governed by their own will and wisdome, and not by their King, Judges, Masters and Commanders; for the question is upon this undeniable supposition, that Christ is the only Head and King of his Church, and to the Head and King of Prelats (if they be of the body) and of the Rulers, Guides, and Pastors of the Church, which are to be Governed and Ruled by certain Laws, no lesse then the people, whether or no this Representative Church of Rulers, being Subjects and Members of the Head and King of the Church, are to be Ruled by the wisdome, Laws, and Commandments of this King the Lord Jesu; or if they have granted to them a vast Arbitrary power to Govern both themselves and the people, by adding Positive Mandats of Arbitrary Commanders, such as Prelats are (in the minde of those who think they have no patent of any Divine right) and of Surplice, Crossing, kneeling for reverence to wood, to bread and wine. The matter cannot be helped, by saying that Christ is the Mystical, Invisible King, (some doubt if he be the only King of the Church, which is too grosse to be reluted) of the Church in things

The will of Christ as King, is the Rule of the Government of his house.
things spiritual, and in regard of the inward operation of the Spirit; but he is not a Politicall and visible Head in regard of external Policie; this distinction must hold also in regard of the people, who as Christians and believers are rather under Christ as a Mystical and invisible Head, then the Rulers who are not as Rulers, but only in so far as they are believers. Mystical Members of the Head Christ; for Christ exercizeth no Mystical and Internal operations of saving Grace upon Rulers as Rulers; but upon Rulers as believers, then he cannot be the Mystical and invisible King of Rulers as Rulers, to give them as a King, an Arbitrary power to be little Kings, under him, to Govern as they please; and the truth is, Christ is a Politicall Head and King of his Church, not properly a visible Head, 2 Cor. 5:16. Except that he is a visible Head in this sense, in that he Reigneth and Ruleth, even in the external visible Policie of his Church, through all the Catholick visible Church, in his Officers, Lawfull Synods, Ordinances, giving them Laws in all positive externals; which place the Beast, the King of the Bottom of the Pit, the Pope usurpeth: But I would gladly be informed of Formalists, how the King is the Head and Vicegerent of Christ over the Church; if Christ's Kingdom be only spiritual, Mystical Internal, not Politicall, not external; for sure the King as King, exercizeth no internal and Mystical operations upon the consciences of men under Jesus Christ, his power is only Politicall and Civilly Politicall, about, or without the Church; not properly within the Church: Surely if Rulers be Subjects and Members under Christ the Head and King: I shall believe that Christ must in all positive things of external Policie, give to them Particular Laws in the Scripture, and Rule them; and that they being Members, not the Head, must as particularly be Ruled in all externals Positive, by the will and Law of the Head Christ, and that they are not Kings, Heads and Law givers, and Rulers to themselves; And especially upon these considerations. This King and Head must be particular in an immutable, perpetual, and unalterable Platform of Church Government. 1. Salomon for wisdom in the order, degrees, number, attire of his servants and Policie of his house to the admiration of the Queen of Sheba, in this we conceive was a type of a greater then Salomon. 2. The Positives of the policie of Christ's house, must be congruous to a supernaturall end, the edification of souls, and that Sym-
Symbolical Rites of men's devising, speak supernatural duties, that Christ hath already spoken in the Scripture, as that Crossing spell out Dedication to Christ's Service, Surplice, pastorall holiness, which both are Gospel truths. 1 Pet. 1.18. 1 Pet. 2.24. Isa. 52.11. Is as supernatural a mean for edification, as that bread and wine signify Christ's body and blood; & therefore the one more then the other ought not to be left to humane reason, but must be expressly set down in Scripture. 3. All these must lay a tie upon the conscience; but if they have their rise from the vain will of Prelates and men, they can never bind my conscience; for how can they bind my conscience as the Scripture bindeth them on me, and yet Rulers as Rulers in the name of Christ the King, cannot press them upon me? Formalists give divers Replies to this: As, 1. Hooker: You are constrained to say that of many things of Church-Policie, some are of great weight, some of lesse, that what hath been urged of immutability of Law, it extendeth in truth no farther then only to Laws, wherein things of greater moment are prescribed; as Pastors, Lay-Elders, Deacons, Synods, Widows; else come to particulars, and show if all yours be perpetual, and our particulars unlawful. Ans. 1. Things of greater and lesse weight, we acknowledge in Church-Policie, and in Doctrinals too; but in this sense only: 1. That they be things Negative. 2. They be both things that are unchangeable by any, except by God himself, and oblige us Necessitate precepti, by the necessity of a Divine Commandment, as Matth. 23.23. To pay tythe of Mint, Annise, and Cummin, is a lesse matter then the weightier duties of the Law, Judgement, Mercy, and Faith: But there is nothing so small in either Doctrinals or Policie, so as men may alter, omit, and leave off these smallest Positive things that God hath commanded; for Christ faith, Paying of tythe of Mint, ought not to be omitted, though the Church of Pharisees should neglect it, and command some other petty small things in place thereof: If therefore Prelats should obliterate the Office of Ruling Elders which Christ the Lord instituted in his Church, and put themselves in as Governors in their Room, they may put our Pastors and Sacraments, and take in for them, Turkish Priests, and Circumcision, with a signification that Christ is already come in the flesh: We urge the immutability of Christ's Laws, as well in the smallest as greatest things, though the Commandments of Christ be greater or lesse in regard

Hooker,
Eccles.
Policie, l. 3.
123, 124.
regard of the intrinsical matter, as to the water in Baptism, or to Baptise is less then to Preach Christ, and believe in him. 1 Cor. 1. 17. Yet they are both alike great, in regard of the Authority of Christ the Commander, Matt. 28. 18, 19. And its too great boldness to alter any Commandment of Christ, for the smallness of the matter, for it lieth upon our conscience, not because it is a greater or a lesser thing, and hath degrees of obligatory necessity, lying in it for the matter; but it tyeth us for the Authority of the Law-giver: Now God’s Authority is the same when he faileth, (You shall not Worship false Gods, but use the only true God) And when he faileth, (You shall not add of your own one ring or pin to the Ark, Tabernacle Temple) yea, either to break or teach others, to break one of the least of the Commandments of God, maketh men the least in the Kingdom of God, Matt. 5. 18. And to offend in one is to offend in all, Isa. 2. 10. 2. That our things of Church-Policy are perpetually, we prove, and that what we hold of this kind, we make good to be contained in the Scripture, either expressly, or by due consequence; and so the Church and their Rulers, act nothing in our way, but as Subordinate to Christ as King and Head of the Church, and Superficial, humane Prelate, Crossing, we hold unlawful in the house of God, because they are not warranted by the King and Head Christ’s word; and because the devisers and practisers of these do neither devise nor act, in these, as Subordinate to Jesus Christ as King, Priest, or Prophet, by the grant of our Adversaries.

Hooker, l.3. Eccle. Pol. pag. 1. 24. The matters wherein Church-Policy are conversant, are the publick Religious duties of the Church, as administration of the Word, Sacraments, Prayers, spiritual censures of the Church and the like, to these the Church stand always bound; and where Policy is, it cannot but appoint, some to be leaders of others, and some to be led; If the blind lead the blind, they both perish: and where the Clergy is any great multitude, order required that they be distinguished by degrees, as Apostles and Pastors were in the Apostolick Church: And number of specialities there are which make for the more convenient being of these principal parts of Policy.

Ans. 1. If Christ as King have appointed word and Sacraments in general, and Censures; he hath appointed the Word, Sacraments and Censure in special; to wit, such a word, such Sacraments,
That which the holy Scripture hath not said, by What means should we receive, and account it amongst these things that be true? Cyrill would deny all your Ceremonies to speak any thing, but lies; and so would I. Yes, to bring in any thing that is not written, Basilius faith, it is comparative naivety, a demonstration of Pride, and Origen in Levit. Hom. 5. Si quid autem, superfluus, quod non Divina Scriptura decernat, nihilam aliam debere tertiam Scripturam ad autoritatem scientiae suscipi (licet) I think some third Scripture which is neither the old or the New Testament must be sought to make good the Doctrines, that dumbe humane Ceremonies teach us: 2. That the blind lead the blinde is not safe; but it is no Argument to prove that this is an immutable thing in policy, that there should be Leaders, and some that are led, except you suppose the Prelates to be the leading men, and the Pastors and People to be blinde. 3. I utterly deny this consequence: The Clergy is a great multitude; Ergo, order necessarily requireth, that by degrees they be distinguished in Prelates and Pastors; for the Prelats are a multitude; Ergo, order requireth that one be Pope to command all the rest: The Apostles were a multitude; Ergo, There was a necessity of a Monarch-Apostle, the Prelatricall Government is Monarchicall; doth not order require in all multitude no Government but a Monarchy? Nor do we finde any warrant that Apostles had jurisdiction over Pastors in the Scripture, nor in any Ecclesiasticall Records; but where Papacy was working; Paul, as if he had been to go out of this life, and never to see the faces of the Elders of Ephesus, A. I, 20, 25.
Left unto them as Elders all of equall degrees of power of jurisdiction, the Feeding and Governing of the Church of God, Acts 20. 28, 29, 30. 4. The particulars of Policy, as Surplice, Closing are no more circumstances of Worship then Aaron's Ephod, a vesture is a circumstance, but a Religious vesture teaching us of Pastoral holinesse, is worship, not a Circumstance: Men can place no Religion in Circumstances.

Hooker, Eccle. Poli. l. 3. p. 125. It is in vain to argue from Christ's office, if there be an immutable Platforme in Scripture, it is as if one should demand a Legacy by vertue of some written Testament, wherein there being no such thing specified; be pleadeth that there it must needs be, and bringeth Arguments from love and good will, which awayes the Testator bore him, imagining that these or the like proofs will convict a Testament to have that in it, which other men can no where by reading finde, its our part to admire what he hath done, rather then to dispute what he in congruity of reason, ought to do: how unsearchable are his judgments?

An. 1. It is very true, a Platforme of discipline is quodum facti, A question of Fact, rather then Law; we hear nothing in this comparison, but what Papists with equall strength of reason do bring for their unwritten Traditions; for they say Protestants are to prove a fact and deed of Jesus Christ, that he hath left in his written Testament a perfect and immutable Platforme of Doctrine and manners, to which nothing can be added; and this they prove from the care, wisdom and love of Christ to his Church, for he ought to reveale his will perfectly, and compleatly in his Scripture, otherwise he hath not the love, care, and wisdom of a Law-giver to his own people, if he leave them in the mist, and in the dark, and write not down all things touching Faith and manners: Now we can no where finde by reading Scripture, anything for the Baptizing of Infants, or a remedy for women to be cured of Original Sin in the Old Testament in lieu of circumcision; we finde no warrant for the Feast of Dedication, in the Law of Moses, nor for the days of puring, observed by the lowes, nor for Images, invocation of Saints, Prayer for the dead, the perpetuall Virginity of the Virgin Mary, and many such Doctrine which the Church believeth. But we answer, because these vain doctrines (we except the Baptizing of Infants, warranted by
perfectly formed Church in the Apostles times, who had power even, in all exercise, of Discipline and Church-worship, and the Apostles mention things of an inferior nature: How is it that we have no hint of Crossing, Kneeling, Surplice, corner-Cap, nor any such, like unto these? And yet they were as necessary for decency then, 1 Cor. 5. Col. 2.5. 1 Cor. 11.20. &c. Rev. 2.1.2.14.1.18.20. 21. 1 Cor. 14.40. as now.

Others of great learning reply, that Christ is not the only immediate Head, King, Law-giver, and Governor of the Church, for that is quite contrary to God's Ordinance in establishing Kings, Magistrates, higher powers, nurse-Fathers, Pastors, Doctors, Elders; for by this, there should be no Kings, Parliaments, Synods, no power of jurisdiction in them to make Laws, to suppress and punish all manner of Idolatry, Superstition, Heresies. But I answer, that Christ is the only immediate Head, King, Law-giver, and Governor of his Church, as upon his shoulder only is the Government, Isa. 9.6. And the key of the house of David, Isa. 22.22. And by what right he is the head of all things; and let all above all principalities and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come; He is the head of the Catholick Church which is his body, Eph. 1.21, 22, 23. And he is such a head even in externals, in giving Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers, who for the work of the ministry, perfecteth the Saints, in whom the whole body (of the Church) is fitted together and compacted by that which every joins supplieth, according to the effectual working, in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, to the edifying of it self in love, Eph. 4.11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16. Now these places maketh Christ the only immediate head in externals, and internall operation of that body which is the fulness of Christ: Let any of the Formalists, if Christ be not the only immediate Head, shew us of King or Bishop who is the Mediate, Ministeriall, inferior Head of the Catholick Church, even in externall Government: For John Hars in his conference with D. Roinald, faith, Christ is the only principal, imperial, and invisible Head; but the Pope (faith he) is the visible and Ministeriall Head; So do all Papists say; but our Protestant Divines Answer, That it is a repugnancy that a Subject or a Member of the King and Head, should be in any sense both a Subject and a King, a part or Member and a Head;
Head, and Raynald Faith, This name to be Head of the Church is the Royal Prerogative of Jesus Christ; Yea, the head, in externals, must be with the Catholick body, as Christ hath promised to be with his Church to the end of the world; neither King nor Pope can in the external Government be with the particular Churches to the end; It is true, the King may be with his Church by his Laws and power; yea, but to may the Pope be, if all Pastors on earth be but his Deputies, and if Pastors be but the Kings Deputies, and sent by the King, so is the King the Head of the Church; but then the Catholick Church hath as many heads, as there be lawfull Kings on earth; But we desire to know, what mediate acts of Law-giving which is essential to Kings and Parliaments in civil things, doth agree to Kings, Parliaments, and Synods; Christ hath not made Pastors under Kings to create any Laws morally obliging the conscience to obedience in the Court of God, which God hath not made to their hand; if the King and Synods only declare and propound, by a power of jurisdiction, that which God in the Law of nature, or the written word hath commanded; they are not the Law-makers, nor creators of that morality in the Law, which layeth bonds on the conscience; yea, they have no Organically, nor inferior influence in creating that morality, God only by an immediate act as the only immediate King, made the morality, and if King, Parliaments, and Synods, be under Kings and under Law-givers, they must have an under-action, and a Ministerial subservient active influence under Christ in creating as second causes, that which is the formal reason, and essence of all Lawes binding the conscience, and that is the morality that obligeth the soul to eternal wrath, though King, Parliament, Pastors or Synods, should never command such a Moral thing: Now to propound, or declare, that Gods will is to be done in such an act, or Synodical Directory or Canon, and to command it to be observed under Civil and Ecclesiastical paine, is not to make a Law, it is indeed to act authoritatively under Christ as King; but it maketh them neither Kings, nor Law-givers, no more than Heralds are little Kings, or inferior Law-givers, and Parliaments, because in the name and Authority of King and Parliament they Promulgate the Lawes of King and Parliament; the Heralds are mere servants, and do indeed represent King and Parliament, and therefore to wrong them, in the promulgation of Lawes, is to wrong King and Parliament; but the Heralds
Heralds had no action, no hand at all in making the Laws, they may be made when all the Heralds are sleeping, and so by no propriety of speech can Heralds be called mediators Kings, under-Lawgivers, just so here, as touching the morality of all humane Laws, whether Civill or Ecclesiastical, God himself immediatly; yea, from Eternity by an Act of his free-pleasure made that without advice of men or Angels, for who instructed him? neither Moses, nor Prophet, nor Apostle; yea, all here are Merci precones, only Heralds; yet are not all these Heralds who declare the morality of Laws, equals may declare them charisimatic, By way of charity to equals, but these only are to be obeyed as Heralds of Laws, whom God hath placed in Authority, as Kings, Parliaments, Synods, the Church, Masters, Fathers, Captains; And it followeth no ways that we disclaim the Authority of all these, because we will not inthrone them in the chaire of the Supreame and only Lawgiver, and head of the Church, they are not under-Lawgivers and little Kings to create Laws, the morality of which bindeth the conscience (for this God only can do) Ergo, there be no Parliaments, no Kings, no Rulers, that have Authority over men, it is a most unjust consequence; for all our Divines against Papists, deny that humane Laws as humane, do binde the conscience, but they deny not, but assert the power of jurisdiction in Kings, Parliaments, Synods, Pastors.

5. Arg. As Moses and David were not to follow their own spirit, far less is the will of the Church a rule to shape an unalterable Government.

If Jesus Christ be as Faithfull as Moses and above him, as the Lord of the house above the servant, Heb. 3. 1. 2. 3. 4. Then as Moses was admonished of God, when he was about to make the Tabernacle, for (saith he) See thou make all things according to the pattern shewed unto thee in the mount, Heb. 8. 5. And was not to follow his own spirit, but was to follow the pattern that God shewed him in the Mount, then far less hath Christ the Apostle and high Priest of our Profession giving us a Platforme of the Church and Government of the New-Testament variable, & shaped according to the aterable laws, customs & manners of divers nations, for as Moses though a Prophet was not to make one pin of the Tabernacle, but according to the sampler & pattern that God did shew him, so Christ manifested to his Disciples all that he had heard, and seen of the Father, John 15. But it is not to be supposed, that the Father shew to Christ an alterable tabernacle in the new Testament, that men might alter, chop and change at their pleasure, as the custumes of Nations are changed:
If God thought Religion should run a hazard, if the greatest of Prophets (except Christ) might have leave to mold and shape all the Levitical Service, and Ceremonies, (for as the judicious and Learned Interpreter Mr. David Dickson faith, all the Levitical Service is comprehended under the name of the Tabernacle, Exod. 25, 40,) according as he pleased, far more should all be corrupted, if erring men, far inferior to Moses, Prelats and Pastors, should have the power to change the Law. Da. Dickson, Exposition of the Psalm.
Pagni, Ari. Mont. Vatab. in notis, Tostatus in Chron. 18. 19. 2. 7. Ista Scriptura sum po teras fieri per Angelos quam per de um Tostatus. Q. ibid. Cornel., a Lapide, Lyra, is meant, not Davids spirit, but the Spirit of Revelation from the Lord; and Lyra faith, on v. 12. Per hoc designatur, quod demus pariet dedid hominum Christo notitiam omnium agendorum in ecclesiis. And Pet. Martyr, our own Doctor faith, on 1 King. 8. It cannot be told how unpleasant the institution of new worship is to God: And, there should be nothing in Baptism but the Word and the Elements; any thing added (as Cursing, Oyl, Salt,) came from the Prelates: Lavater, in 1. Par. c. 28. ver. 14. condemneth all additions, even though Solomon should have added them, Ezek. 43. 11. Thou Son of man, shew the house to the house of Israel.—v. 12. And if they be ashamed of all that they have done, shew them the form of the house, and the fash ion thereof, and going out thereof, and the coming in thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the Ordinances thereof, and all the forms thereof, & all the Laws thereof; And write it is in their sight, that they may keep the whole form thereof, & all the Ordinances thereof, and do them. Now it is most considerable, that the Form, Fabric, and Structure of the Temple, Ezek. c. 40. In the visions of God, is shown to the Prophet by a man, by Christ the great Angel of the Covenant; who with a measuring reed of six cubits, measured the Temple; and in these chapters, ch. 40, 41, 42. Christ sheweth to Ezekiel all the pattern and form which evidently typifieth the Church of the New Testament, the Bride the Lambs Wife in the Kingdom of Grace, and glorified in Heaven revealed by the Angel to John, Rev. 21. 9, 10, 11. It may be thought that the Porches, Chambers, length and breadth of them East, West, South, and North, the Laws about the Priests, their linnen garments, sacrifices, washing and the like, are of less concernment then the Doctrine of Christs nature, person, offices of Faith, Repentance, Judgement.
Judgement, Heaven &c. And therefore being not so necessary, nor so weighty; there was no necessity that all the like Positive external members of Church-Policy, written to a rude and carnall people, should be written to us, who are now more spiritual, and upon whom the day-spring from above doth shine, the shadows now being past; and who have greater liberty then they had, who were as children under Tutors. Anf. 1. I do not deny, but all Ceremonials are of lesser weight then the Morals; but the question is, if they be of lesser Divine authority, so as we may devise of our own Spirit such Ceremonials, and may alter, omit, or remove them; or any new Ceremonials in the Sacraments under the New Testament; for New Testament Ceremonials, as to take Bread, Eat and drink, are not so necessary, nor so weighty to us under the New-Testament, as the precept of believing in Christ, and of repentance from dead works, yet I hope it shall be a weak inference, from thence to infer, we may therefore alter and change any thing of the Sacrament, for the same Christ who commanded us to believe in him, said also, Drink ye all of this; and if we may not remove drinking from the last Supper, because enjoined by Christ upon the authority of the Law-giver, as signifying the spiritual drinking of Christs Blood, how can any dare to add Crosting to Baptisme, which signifieth the dedication of the Baptized to Christs service? But 1. Divine Ceremonials, and positives which were to be changed, have these notions and impressions of God, which Surpliss, Crosses in Baptism, Corners, (which by Analogy answere to Moses his Ceremonies) hath not; and yet if they be of the New Testament, and so of a more excellent spirits devising then the people of the Jews were capable of, in regard of their Bondage under Carnall Precepts, they ought to have them in a more excellent manner. As 1. In regard of the manner of Revelation; all the Laws and Ceremoniall Ordinances were revealed to Moses when he was forty dayes in the Mount with God, and was in Heaven and above men, Exod. 25. 40. Heb. 8. 5. The length measure and pattern of the Temple was revealed to Ezekiel when he was in the spirit, and saw the Visions of God, Ezek. 40. 2. 3. And a writing of the form of the Temple by Gods hand, was delivered to David, 1 Chro. 28. 19. Now if a more free and glorious spirit teach the Positives of policy, under the New-Testament, such as Surpliss, Crosting, then Prelates...
lates must be in a higher mount with God, then Moses was, and in a deeper extasie of the visions of God, then Ezekiel was in, Ezek. 40.1,2,3. When they are in the childe-birth pain of devising, and bring forth such defaced and dirty whelps, as Surplice, Crossing, Altars, &c. I should think it blasphemy so to think: 2. In regard of the Doctrine revealed: When I read the 40,41,42.Chapters of Ezekiel touching the forme of the Temple, and the Antitype, Chapters the Revelation, c.21. c.22. Yea, and the very Ceremonial Laws of Moses, as the scape-goats going to the wilderness with the sins of the people of God, and all the rest of the Lawes that pointeth at Christ to be flain for us, and the heavenly mysteries of the Gospel explained especially in the Epistle to the Hebrews: when I read these, I finde a strong smell of the ointments of a precious Redeemer, the extrem love of God to man: the Majesty, the divinity and efficacy of divine power in these, as in other Scriptures: But should our Prelates, put in Print by the spirit of the new Testament, some Epistles touching Ceremonies in Generall, or of Surplice, Corner-cap, Crossing, and their heavenly relation to the mysteries of the Gospel in particular, I should not think men would dare to say a nobler spirit speaketh like God and heaven in these then in the other.

It is without all Warrant to expound Christian Liberty of a power of devising a mutable Church-Policy, and Lawes not warranted in Gods word, seeing Christian Liberty expressly exempteth us altogether from obedience to mens Laws not warranted by Christs word, Gal.5,1. Col.2,20, &c.

Let us hear what Hooker faith, for his mutable Policie under the New Testament: Christ is not lesse faithfull then Moses, because Moses delivred to the Lawes some Lawes that were durable, and Christ some Lawes that are changeable, otherways by this reason Christ shall be lesse faithfull then Moses; for Moses erected in the wilderness a Tabernacle, which was moveable from place to place; Solomon a stately Temple, which was not moveable: Therefore Solomon was faithfuller then Moses, which no man indured with reason will think: Christ was faithfull, and faith, I have given to them the words that shew gavest me; He conceaute not any part of his Fathers will: But did any part of that will require the immutability of Lawes concerning Church-Policy?

Ans. I
Answ. I answer, as Christ did to the Jews in another case, Ioh.6.
32. Moses gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you that true bread: So in this, neither Moses nor Solomon erected either that Tabernacle or Temple, as Law-givers, but the Father of our Lord Jesus, as the true Law-giver: Now both were but meer servants and Heralds, in all that they did, for God shewed to Moses the pattern of the Tabernacle, and to David and Solomon
and Surplice, and such like Romish stuffe are pretended to be. 
2. Certain it is, that Christ concealed not any part of his Fathers 
will, Job. 17. 8. But delivered all, and this place, with the place, 
Job. 15. 15. We urge against the traditions of Papists, and say, because 
Christ spake nothing from his Father either in his own person, or 
his Apostles in the New Testament, or in the old by Moses and the 
Prophets, of invocation of Saints, Purgatory, Worshipping of 
Images, and Reliques and the rest of their unwritten Traditions, 
these being positives of worship, and more then unseparable, and 
connatural attendants, such as are common, Time, Place, Person, 
Name, Country, Habite, Gesture, are therefore unlawfull, because 
Christ neither heard them of the Father, nor spake them to the A-
opstles, and just the like say we of Surplice, Croffe, &c. That they 
are no part of the will of God, which the Father revealed to Christ, 
and these same Texts Papists use, to prove that the Scriptures are 
not perfect, because they speak nothing of the Traditions of the 
Church; so Bellarmine, Because the Counsell of Trent, Andradius, 
Stapleton, and all the rest, and they prove as well, if Croffe and 
Surplice, and humane Offices, as Prelates, stand good and lawfull, 
that yet the Scriptures are unperfect: 3. We say that the whole 
will of God, revealed by the Father to Christ, and by Christ to the 
Prophets and Apostles, requireth the immutability of all Laws of 
Church Policy in this sense, that men should not dare to make and 
unmake, erect, command, alter, and injoyne positive Laws, of do-
ctrine or policy at their pleasure.

Hooker, ibid. p. 1. There is more reason to say that God hath a 
lesse care of the Church under the New Testament, then under the 
Old; then a Philosopher had to say, because God hath provided better 
for beasts that are born with bones, skins, hair and garments by na-
ture, then man who is born without these, that therefore nature is a 
carefull mother to beasts, and a hard-hearted Step-dame to man: for 
Gods affection consisteth not in these, for even herein shineth hisWis-
dom, that though the ways of his providence be many, yet the end 
which he bringeth all at the length unto, is one and the self same: yea, 
it should follow that because God hath not prescribed Rites, and Laws 
of civill Policy to us, as to the Jews, that he hath lesse love to us, and 
lesse care of our Temporal estate in the world then of theirs.

Anf. 1. Its true indeed, God should have lesse care of man, who
Church-Government in Scripture.

God for us teach us to think he hath given us a better guide than natural reason for all things. Christ, for whom the church is built, is the only source of spiritual authority. This is not to be sought in the casual order of civil government, but in the divine order of the Church.
such differences. 3. It shall not hence follow God hath a greater love to the Jews than to us, because he gave them Laws, concerning civil policy, which he gave not to us. Except the Lord had given us power to make civil laws, which laid Morall obligation on our consciences, even in civil things, which morality He expressed in particular laws written to them, and not to us, as Formalists teach, for then he hath left us in Morals, to the darknesse of naturall reason, in which condition we could not but erre and sin, and make that morally good and obligatory of conscience, which is morally evil, for reason knoweth not what is positive Morally good, except the light of Gods Word teach us; and in Morals, such as judicil law were to the Jews, the Lord should have been more carefull in his particular directing of them, then of us, and more tender to have them preserved from the sin of will-worship, then us, which cannot consist with the Dispensation of lesser light; greater obscurity in regard of types and shadows toward them, and of the Day-light of the Gospel, and the arising of the Day-star, and the filling of the earth with knowledge of the Lord toward us, under the New Testament: But the comparison must go upon this supposition, that the Lord purposed to make Politick Laws in their Positives, Morall and Obligatory of the Conscience of the Jews, and the Civil law of the Gentiles under the New Testament in their Positives (such as is not to carry Armour in the night, and the like) not to be Morall nor Obligatory of the Conscience. But as touching that which is Morall in all Civil Laws, the Lord is as carefull of our Temporall state, as of theirs, in condescending to particularize all Morals to us, as well as to them.

Hooker, That Christ did not mean to set down particular Positive Laws for all things, in such sort as Moses did; the very different manner of delivering the Laws of Moses and the Laws of Christ, both plainly shew, Moses had Commandement to gather the Ordinances of God together distinctly, and orderly to set them down according to their kinds, for each Publique duty and Law: But the Laws of Christ we rather finde mentioned by occasion in the Writings of the Apostles, then any solemn thing directly written to comprehend them in a Legall sort. 1. The Law Moral and Ceremonial were not delivered one at the same way; the former was uttered by the Voice of God, in the hearing of six hundred thousand. 2. Written with Gods finger. 3. Termes a Covenant.
Church-Policy in Scripture.

uenant. 4. Given to be kept without time, how long, or place where. The law was so, and restricted to the Land of Jury, Deut. 4.5.12. Deut. 5.22. And if God had respect in Positive Laws, to time and place, and the Manners of that Nation, seeing Nations are not all alike, then the giving of one kind of Positive Laws unto one only people, without any liberty to alter them, is but a slender proof, that therefore no kind should be given to serve everlasting for all. Ans. This Argument reduced to form, shall want both matter, and form, and reason. If the Laws of Moses be distinctly and orderly set down, and gathered together according to their several kinds for each Duty; and the Laws of Christ be occasionally only written; then Christ did not mean to set down particular Positive Laws, for all things in such sort as Moses did. But this difference is true, Ergo, &c. Both the Major Proposition and the Assumption are false, and neither of them can be proved: For the occasional writing of some Articles of Faith, and of Dogmatical points, should then prove that Christ meant not to set down all Articles of Faith particularly; but Christ, Matt. 22. upon occasion of the Sadducees tempting; Paul, upon occasion of some at Corinth who denied the Resurrection, 1 Cor. 15. And of some that mourned for the dead, 1 Thess. 4. Set down and proved an Article of Faith, to wit, the Resurrection of the dead: By this Argument the Scripture is not full and perfect, in Fundamentals, as Moses is in Ceremonials, but hath left such and such Fundamentals to be altered, added or omitted by the Church, in that way, that Surplices, Crosses, and Altars, are alterable things. Most of Dogmatical points concerning Christ's sufferings, are occasionall, as his taking, his betraying by Judas, who knew the place he was in, the valuing of him at Thirty pieces, the giving him Gall and Vinegar, a punishment not intended by the Judge; but occasionall, in that Christ said he thirsted; Yea; the Crucifying of him underthen Barabbas, upon occasion of the malice of the people, when Pilate had scourged him upon a Policie, to see if the people would demand he might be released, the casting Lots for his garment, the Crucifying of him between two Thieves, the not breaking of his bones upon occasion he was dead, the piercing of his side; all which in regard of second causes, were occasionall, and so though Dogmatical and Doctrinal, these must be all such alterable and Ambulatory points of Doctrine, as the Church and Prelats may change.
change at their godly discretion, and Christ meant not in these, to set down particular Positive Laws in such sort as Moses did. Yea, the Evangel according to Luke, is set forth occasionally; because many have taken in hand to set forth in order a Declaration of these things which are most firmly believed; therefore it seemed good to Luke also to write, Luk. 1:1,2,3,4. Upon occasion of Onesimus his fleeing from his master; The Epistle to Philemon was written upon occasion of the unconstancy of the Galatians, whose faith was perverted by false teachers, that of Justification by Faith, without the works of the Law: And the Epistle to the Galatians was written, most, if not all the Canonick Epistles were written either upon occasion of false Teachers, or for fear they should be scandalized at Paul's bonds. By this vain Argument, the most part of Canonick Scripture should be alterable, imperfect, not particular in most Doctrinals, no less then in Ceremonials; And so the Major Proposition is most false, for its a vain thing to Collect Christs meaning, to set down particulars of either Doctrine or Ceremonies, from occasions of Providence; for most of the Scripture is penned upon occasions from men, and from second causes, shall these things leave off to be of Divine Institution, that hath their rise from occasions, even sinful occasions? Yea, the death of Christ is occasioned from man's fall in sin. What then? Is it an alterable Doctrine left to the determination of the Church that Christ died? But this is no other then the shift of Papists for their unwritten Tradition. Sanderus de Vilib. Monarch. Lib. 1. c. 5. pag. 13. Si ergo per solas conscriptas leges dei civitas gubernatur in valde magna parte eorum que passim contingunt, quid factum est, necire, quia legem de his loquentem non haberet; impos tantum una Lex toti reipub: necessaria esse posset, eaque ipsa scriberetur a prUDENTissimis viris, ac singulis annis ab orbe condito nova interpretationes eadem addet etiam: tamen nunc quam eveniret, ut ea lex tam plene interpretata faret, quin causa nova possent intervenire, ob qua lex et legis interpretationis novam iterum postularet interpretationem, adeo et fereunda est natura in suis eventibus Angustium ingenii humana num, et varia inquirerum sententia, et verba sumptuosa, sum ambigua. All cometh to this, that this Papist saith, That there cannot be one written unchangeable Law that is necessary for the whole Church, for new events, occasions and occurrences of Providence, should so change the case, that there should be a necessity of a new interpre-
An unalterable Platform of Sect. III.

sorors, Homicide, Polygamy, Incest, Fornication, Oppression, Lying, Equivocating: Then there can be occasions to change the Law of sacrificing, which clearly did adumbrat Christ, who was to be offered as a sacrifice for the sins of the world; yea, all significant Symbolicall Ceremonies have their spiritual signification independent from all occasions of Providence, and depending on the meer will of the Instituter; Surplice, or white linnen, signifieth the Priest's holinesse, without any regard to time, place, or nationall customes; for Christ might have made an immutable Law, touching the Symbolicall, and Religious signification, and use of Saints-dayes, white linnen, Crossing, and all the rest of humane Ceremonies, which should stand to Christ's second coming, notwithstanding of any occurrences of Providence, no lesse then he made an immutable Law, touching the Sacramentall obsignation of water in Baptisme, and of Bread and Wine in the Lords Supper, if it had not been his will never to burden his Churches with such dumb and tooth-lesse mysteries as humane positives: 4. The assumption is false, for divers Ceremoniall Laws now altered were made without any regard to occasions of Providence, and many Doctrinals that are unalterable were made with special regard to such occurrences: 5. If positives of Policy be alterable, because the occasions of such are alterable by God; it shall follow that God who hath all revolutions of his hand, must change these Positives, and not the Authority of the Church: and thus Doctrinals are alterable by God, not by men, which is now our question; for Christ hath given a Commandment; Take ye, Eat ye, Drink ye all of this: Yet hath he not tyed us in the time of persecution to conveen in publick, and Celebrate the Lords Supper; but the Church doth not then change the Law, nor liberate us from obedience to a Command given by God, but God liberateth us himself.

Hooker, 3; Book, pg. 114, 115. The Jews who had Laws so particularly determining, and so fully instructing them in all affairs what to do, were not withstanding continually inured with causes exorbitant, and such as their Laws had not provided for, and so for one thing, which we have left to the order of the Church; they had twenty which were undecided by the express Word of God; so that by this reason, if we may devise one Law, they may devise twenty: Before the Fall of the Sons of Shalomish, there
was no Law that did appoint any punishment for blasphemers, nor what should be done to the man that gathered sticks on the Sabbath. And by this means God instructed them in all things from heaven, what to do. Shall we against experience think God must keep the same, or a course by Analogy answering thereunto with us as with them? Or should we not rather admire the various and harmonious dissimilitude of God's ways in guiding his Church from age to age? Others would not only have the Church of the Jews a pattern to us, but they would (as learned Master Pryme with them faith) take out of our hand the Apostolick Church, that it should be no rule to us; for faith he, There was no Uniforme Church-government in the Apostles times, as at first they had only Apostles and Brethren, Acts 1.13, no Elders, or Deacons: Their Churches increasing, they ordained Deacons, Acts 6. And long after the Apostles ordained Elders in every Church, after that Widows in some Churches, not at all. In the primitive times some Congregations had Apostles, Acts 4.11,12. 1 Cor. 1.15 to 33. Evangelists, Prophets, workers of miracles, Healers, &c. Other Churches at that time had none of these Officers or Members, and all Churches have been deprived of them since those days.

Anf 1. What Hooker faith, is that which Bellarmine, Sandrinius, Horantius, and all Papists say, for their Traditions against the perfection of the word, to wit; that the word of God, for 2373. years between Adam and Moses (faith Horantius) was not written, so Turrianus, Bellarmine, and the reason is just nothing, to say the Jews might devise twenty Laws, where we may devise one, because the Jews were continually inured with causes exorbitant, such as their written Laws had not provided for. This must be said which is in question, and so is a beggins of the controversy, that the Jews of their own head, and Moses without any special word from God, or without any pattern shown in the mount, might devise what Laws they pleased, and might punish the blasphemers, and the man that gathered sticks on the Sabbath, and determine, without God, the matter of the Daughters of Zelophehad, as the Formalists teach, that the Church without any word of God or pattern from the word, may devise humane Ceremonial Prelate, Officers of Gods house shapen in a shop on earth, in the Antichrist's head, and the Kings Court, the Surplice, the Cross in Baptisme, and the like. Now we answer both them and Papists with one answer, that it is true, there was no written

Horantius,
loc. Catho.
Lib. 2. c. 12
Fcl. 131.

Turrian. to.
de fides, spe.
et Chariot.
dif. 20.
duo. 2.
Bellarm. de
verb dei
non script.
l. 4. c. 3.

That there was no V
uniform
Platform
government in
the time of
Moses and
the A
Papists, is no
Argument
that there
is none
now.

Digitized by Google
ten Scripture between Adam and Moses which was some thousands of years: Yea, nor a long time after till God wrote the Law on Mount Sinai: But withall, what God spake in visions, dreams, and apparitions to the Patriarchs, was as binding and obliging a pattern interditing men then to add the visions of their own brain to what he spake from heaven, as the written word is to us, so that the Jews might neither devise twenty Laws nor any one of their own head, without expresse warrant of Gods immediate Tradition, which was the same very will and truth of God, which Moses committed to writing; if then Formalists will assure us of that which Papists could never assure us, we shall receive both the unwritten Traditions of the one, and the unwritten Positive inventions of Crose and Surplice, devised by the other: as 1. Make us sure, as God himself immediatly spake to the Patriarchs, and to Moses, nothing but what after was committed to writing by Moses and the Prophets at Gods special Commandment, as Papists say; their unwritten Traditions are agreeable to the word, and though beside Scripture, yet not against it: And the very will of God no lesse then the written word; and let Formalists assure us, that their positive additaments of Surplice and Crose are the same which God commandeth in the Scriptures, by the Prophets and Apostles, and though beside; yet not contrary to the word: But I pray you what better is the distinction of beside the word, not contrary to the word of God, out of the mouth of Papists, to maintain unwritten Traditions, which to them is the expresse word of God, even out of the mouth of Formalists, for their unwritten Positives, which are worse then Popish Traditions in that they are not the expresse word of God, by their own grant? 2. Let the Formalist assure us, that after this, some Moses and Elias shall arise and write Scripture touching the Surplice and Crose, that they are the very minde of God, as the Lord could assure the Church between Adam and Moses, that all Divine truths which he had delivered by Tradition, should in Gods due time be written in Scripture, by Moses, the Prophets and Apostles: I think they shall here fail in their undertakings. Hence the Argument standeth, the Jews might devise nothing in doctrine, Worship, or Government; nay, neither the Patriarchs nor Moses, nor the Prophets of their own head, without Gods immediate Tradition, or the written Scripture (which are all one).
Sec. III. Church Government in Scripture.

Ergo, Neither can the Church, except she would be wiser than God in the Scripture. 2. Hooker. Various and Harmonious Difficulties of God guiding his Church, is his fancy: This variety we admit, as it is expressed, Heb. i. 1. But Hooker would say, (or he hath reference to that place) God at sundry times, and in divers manners, take in time past unto the Fathers by the Prophets, and now to us by his Son. But last of all, he hath revealed his Will by the Pope of Rome, and his cursed Clergy, that we should Worship Images, pray to Saints, and for the dead, believe Purgatory, &c. and now by humane Prelates, he hath shown his will to us, touching Cropping, Surplice. Now Papists, as Horsman, Sanderus, Malherbus, Bellarmine, and others say, Most of the points that are in Question between them and Protestants, and particularly Church-Ceremonies, are unwritten Traditions delivered by the Church, beside the warrant of Scripture. 3. We grant that there was no Uniform Church-Government in the Apostles time, Deacons were not as the first, Elders were not ordained yet unwritten, in every Church: But this is nothing against a Platform of Uniform Government, which cannot be altered in God's Word. For by this reason the Learned and Reverend Mr. Prynne, because points of Government did grow by succession of time, cannot infer therefore that Government which the immediately inspired Apostles did obtain in Scripture, is alterable by men; then because, 1. Fundamentals of Faith and Salvation, were not all delivered at first by God, there is no Uniform, no unalterable Platform of Doctrinals and Fundamentals set down in Scripture. For first, the Article of Christ's death and incarnation, was obtrusively delivered to the Church in Paradise: Sure the Article of Christ's making his Grave with the wicked, of his being put to death for our Transgressions, though he himself was innocent, his justifying of many by Faith, were after delivered by Isaac, Chap. 52. And by succession of time, many other Fundamentals, as the Doctrine of the written Moral Law, in the Moral Positives thereof, were delivered to the Church: But I hope from this successive Addition of Fundamentals, we cannot infer, 2. There is no Uniform Platform of the doctrine of Faith, set down in the Old Testament. 2. None can hence infer, because all points Fundamental were not delivered to the Church at first; therefore the Church, without any express warrant from God, may alter the Platform of Fundamentals of Faith, as they take
on them to add _Surplice_, _Crosing_, &c. and many other Positives to the Government of Christ without any express warrant of the Word. 2. Our Argument is close mistaken, we argue not from the Pattern of Government, which was in the Apostles times, at the laying of the first stone in that Church; then the Apostolike Church had indeed no Officers, but the Apostles and the Seventy Disciples we reason not from one piece, but from the whole frame, as perfected by the Ministry of the Lords Apostles. 3. We argue not from the Apostolike Church, as it is such a Church; for Apostles were necessary then, as was community of goods, miracles, speaking with tongues, &c. but we draw an argument from the Apostolike Church, as the first Christian Church, and since the Law was to come from Zion, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem, Isa. 2. 3. And the Lord was to reign in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem before his Ancients gloriously, Isa. 24. 23. And the Lord was to reign over his people in Mount Zion, from henceforth and for ever, Micah 4. 2, 7. And Christ for that gave a special command to his Disciples, not to depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which they had heard from Christ; therefore this Church of Jerusalem was to be a rule, a pattern and copy to the Government of the Visible Kingdom and Church of Christ, in which Christ was to reign by his own Word and Law, Mic. 4. 2, 7. And so the Spirit descended upon the Apostles in the framing and Governing of the first Church, in so far, as it was a Christian Church, and they were to act all, not of their own heads, but as the Holy Ghost led them in all Truth, in all things that are of perpetual necessity; and in such as these, the first Church is propounded as imitable: Now we do not say in Apostles, which had infallibility of writing Canonick Scripture, in Miracles, speaking with Tongues, and such like, that agreed to the Apostolike Church, not as a Church, but as such a determinate Church in relation to these times, when the Gospel and Mystery of God, now manifested in the flesh, was new taught, and never heard of before, did require Miracles, gift of Tongues, that the Gospel might openly be preached to the Gentiles, we do not (I say) urge the Apostolike Church, and all the particulars for Government in it, for a rule and pattern to be imitated. And if Master Prynn deny, that there is an Uniform Government in the Apostles times,
times, because God himself added to them Deacons & Elders, which at first they had not, & removed Apostles, miracles, gifts of healing, and tongues; then say I; First, the Canonick Scripture is not Uniform and perpetual. Why, for certainly once there was no Canonick Scripture but the Books of Moses, and after the holy Ghost added the Book of the Psalms, and the Prophets; and after the Nativity and Ascension of our Lord to Heaven, the Apostles did write Canonick Scripture: I hope, this is but a poor Argument to infer, that there is no Uniform and unalterable Platform of Divinity in the Old and New Testament, and yet the Argument is as conclusive the one way, as it is the other: 3. We do not so contend for an Uniform and unalterable Platform of Church-Government in the Word; as it was not free to the Lord and Law-giver to add, and alter at his pleasure, only we hold it so Uniform and unalterable, that this Platform is not shaped like a coat to the Moon, or alterable at the will of men, without express warrant of the Lords Word: and to rise and fall with the climate, and the elevation of National customs; and therefore the Argument is nothing conclusive, and judge what can be made of these words of the learned Mr. Pryme: The Government and Officers of all Churches, not being De facto, one and the same in all particulars in the very Primitive times, as well as since, it can never be proved to be of Divine right, and the self-same in all succeeding Ages, without the least variation, since it was not so in the Apostles days: For this is all one as to say, the Canonick Scripture was not one and the same, in the Apostles and Prophets times, but admitted of divers additions; Ergo, now in our days Canonick Scripture is not one and the same, but may also suffer the like additions: 2. Because God himself added to Canonick Scripture, and to the Government of the Church in the Apostles days; Ergo, men may without Warrant from God, adde in our days to Canonick Scripture, and to the Government and Officers of the Church: 3. The Government and Officers in the Apostles time were not of Divine right, but alterable by God; Ergo, Apostles, Evangelists, Pastors, Teachers, Workers of miracles were not of Divine right in the Apostles times, but might have been altered by men, without the express Warrant of God: But will any wise man believe that Paul's Apostleship was alterable, and might be changed by the Church? Since he saith, Galat. 1. Paul an Apostle,
not of men, neither by men, but by Jesus Christ, and 1 Cor. 12.28.
When Paul saith, And God hath set in the Church; first, Apostles, secondly, Prophets, thirdly, Teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healing, &c. and Eph. 4.11. When Christ ascended on high, he gave some Apostles, some Prophets, and some Evangelists, and some to be Pastors and Teachers, 12. For the perfecting of the Saints, &c. Can it enter into the head of any man to say, some Churches had Apostles and Evangelists, and Pastors, and miracles, and some not; Ergo, Apostles, and Pastors, are not by Divine right; Ergo, because they were not in all Churches, therefore they were alterable at the will of men? and a Surplice, and Crosse in Baptism hath as much of Divine institution, as the calling of the Apostle, or of a Pastor, and truly to me, it is bold Divinity to say, that Pastors set over the flock by the holy Ghost, Acts 20. 28. and whose due qualifications are specified, 1 Tim. 3. and Elders, 1 Tim. 5.17. and Teachers placed by God in the Church, 1 Cor. 12.28. may be all turned out of the Church, by men, as having no Divine right to be there, and that men may set up other alterable Officers in their place; for by this reason the Apostles, by that ordinary spirit, that is now in Church-Rulers, might without their Apostolick Spirit, or any immediate Warrant from Christ, have altered the whole frame of Apostolick-Government, and Church-Officers, as the Church may upon motives from themselves not warranted from the word, turn out Surplice, Crosse, and all such stuffe out of the Church.

Mr. Pryme, Truth Triumphing, p. 128.

Master Pryme. The Apostles speech, 1 Cor. 12.4.5.6. There are diversities of gifts, but the same spirit, there are diversities of operations, but the same God, compared with chap. 8. to 13. and c.9.v.19. to 24. I made my selfe a servant to all, that I might gain all, &c. paralleld with Acts 15.1, 2, 5, 6, 10. to 32. and chap. 21.18. to 30. The Churches of Judea did retain the use of Circumcision, Purification, and other Jewish Rites, which the Gentiles by the Apostles resolution were not to observe, and Acts 2.22. The Apostles frequented the Jewish Temple, and Synagogues (conforming themselves to the Order and Discipline thereof) and their own private Christian Assemblies; all this will clear, that all Churches had not one and the same Church-Government. Ans. If diversity of Gifts, as to be a speaker with Tongues, a Prophet, a Pastor, will prove the Discipline to be alterable at the Churches
Churches will, as are Surplice, Crosse, &c. I shall think men may infer any thing they please out of the Scripture; and that to be Apostles, Pastors, are as indifferent and variable as eating of meats, 1 Cor. 8. and Pauls taking of wages at Corinth, 1 Cor. 9. Which none can say; for if the Church should now command us to abstain from such and such meats, as the Apostle doth, 1 Cor. 8. We should call that, and do call it, in the Romish Church, a Doctrine of Devils, 1 Tim. 4. 1, 2, 3. All brought for this, from Acts 15. Acts 21. tendeth to this, the Lord himself for the then weakness of the Jews, of meer indulgence appointed some things to be indifferent, and abstained from, in the case of scandal: Therefore Circumcision, Purification, Sacrifices of Bullocks, and Sheep; And all the Ceremonies of Moses his Law, may be commanded by the Church, so they have another signification then they had before, and shadow out Christ who is already come: But because God hath made some things indifferent, shall it follow that the Pope, yea, or any Church on earth can create an indifferency in things? they must then take from things their Morall goodness or conveniency with Gods Law, and take from them their moral badnes, & disconveniency to Gods Law, which to me is to change the nature of things, and to abrogate and change Gods Laws: it is true, P. Martyr, 1 Cor. 9. 19. faith, Paul was made all things to all men, Quoad Ceremonias, & res medias, in that he Circumcised Timothew: The Law (faith he) was abrogated Verum id non adhibit, Judaeus legisbat: The Jews were to be spared for a time, but only for a time, and therefore when the Gospel was sufficiently promulgated; Paul said, Gal. 5. to be Circumcised was to lose Christ, and he refused to be a servant to Peter in his sinful Judaizing, Gal. 2. And withstood him in the face: Now, certain it is, Peter knew Christ was come in the flesh, and that his Judaizing did not lay bands on his conscience, he preached the contrary, Acts 11. And if Peter did Judaize, as Formalists observe Ceremonies, and the Galatians were Circumcised the same way (for they knew Circumcision had no Typicall Relation to Christ to come, they believed he was already come) then without cause, Paul, Gal. 2. and 5. did rebuke, and argue either Peter or the Galatians of sinfull Judaizing; which to say, were to speak against the Gospel. But certainly the Uniformity, and immutability of all these Ceremonies was, that then when the Gospel was sufficiently Proclaimed to all,
to be under the Law of Ceremonies in any sort was damnable, and so is it now: And as the Apostles and Church then set up no Ceremonies, no Surplice, no Cross, because they had no word of Christ to warrant them, neither can we do the like now; and they complied for a time with the Jewish Ceremonies, being yet indifferent, but not but by warrant of the commandment and resolution of the Apostles, and the like are we obliged unto now; had we a Warrant of the like indifference of Prelates, Surplice, Cross, and that we were obliged to use them to gain the weak, in regard:

1. They were once obligatory Ordinances of God: 2. And if the day light of the Gospel were not yet sufficiently risen to shine upon those who are not wilfully ignorant, and had not yet acknowledged the Gospel to be God's word, we should also be obliged to Ceremonies; yea, we durst not yield to any Law to lay them aside, as many Formalists, who hold them lawfull, have done.

Ibid. Mr. Pryme. From the Creation till Moses there was no one Universal set Form of Church-Government, so to be observed in all the World: Nor one Form of Discipline under the Tabernacle, another under the Temple.

Ans. All this concludest not what is in question; its but the Papish Argument: This is to be concluded, that Noah, Seth, Noah, Abraham, the Patriarchs and Moses did set up a Church-Government of such timber as Humane Prelates, Cross, Surplice, without any express Warrant from God's mouth, and which they might alter by their own Spirit; for this Argument is, God might alter; Ergo, The Church now may alter without a Warrant from God. And shall we believe that the Patriarchs and Moses by their own Spirit without any Commandment of God, might at their pleasure set up, and put down Prophets, Circumcision, Tabernacle, Temple, Laws for Sacrifices, Priests, Levites, Arke, putting the Leaper in, or putting him on the Campe, cutting any soul off from the Congregation of the Lord, as our men will cry up, and down Ceremonies, and put on them the weight of a Talent, or a Feather, without any word of God? The Scripture cryeth the contrary so often, saying, And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, speak thou unto the children of Israel: Could Formalists say that, and Christ spake unto the Prelates, and the Church, and said, Command the Pastor to crosse the Infant, and appoint unto your selves a Prelate over the Pastors? I should gladly agree
gree to the mutable frame of humane Government.

Mr. Prynne. *There are but for the most part, generall rules prescribed to us for the very ordering and regulating of our thoughts, words, actions, lives, apparel, Children, servants, families, calling, &c. in the Word; Ergo, there be but generall rules for Discipline and Church-Government, which admit variety; the former do more immediately concern every man, the other more remotely.*

Ans. If the Word of God do not more particularly regulate our thoughts, as, *Psal. 10.4. Psal. 5.9. Isa. 55.7. Jer. 4.14. All. 8.22.* And our words and actions by which we must be judged, *Isa. 3.8. Jer. 8.6. Mal. 3.13. Jer. 9.3. Matth. 26.36.37. Rev. 22.12. Rev. 20.13. 2 Cor. 5.10. Prov. 5.21. 1 Sam. 2.3. Psal. 119.9. Prov. 3.23.24.* Then the Scripture doth warrant Surplice, and Crossing, and kneeling to Creatures, and humane Prelats, which are changeable, and alterable circumstances and adjuncts of Worship, that may be, and may not be, and things indifferent; it shall follow, that for the most part, it is indifferent to do evil or well, sin or not sin, in thought, word and actions; and we have no warrant in Scripture for eschewing sin, or not eschewing it in the most of our actions. I confess there is little need to walk, *ad eundem accurately,* Eph. 5.15. And to cleanse our wayes, *Psal. 119.9.* according to the Word; If words, thoughts and actions, may go at random, as if they were variable and indifferent Ceremonies, God throweth not men in hells torments, to be eternally miserable, for circumstances. 2. For the acts of our calling, if they be Morall, they are regulated as particularly by the word, as to believe, love and fear God, or the creature; if artificiall, they are not of our consideration. 3. That Morall acts of decent usage of the Ordinances, do not immediately concern men, is admirable to me.

Mr. Prynne. *To the Argument of Moses his doing all according to the pattern shown in the Mount, It is Answered: 1. The Tabernacle was no part of the Church of the Israelites; but only the place of meeting for Worship, answerable to our Churches and Chappels, and so was the Temple; But I pray you, God prescribed the height, length, breadth, form of Tabernacles, Ark, Altar, of every Pin, Ergo, Hath Christ as punctually prescribed to all Christians, and Nations, in express words, the form, matter, dimensions of all Christian Churches, Temples, Chappels, Tables, Challices, Pulpits, Pews, not varying in one pin.*
pin. 2. God named the men, Bezalel, and Aholiah, who should make
the Tabernacle and all the implements thereof. 3. God expressed the
frame, fashion, colours, of the holy Garments of Aaron and his sons:
shall it follow, Ergo, only the Artificers whom God namebeth, immediate-
ly, and none but Embroiderers, Goldsmiths, Carpenters, &c. Not
Pastors and Elders are to build up the Spirituall Churches of Christ.
Ergo, the form, matter and colour of Ministers, and Elders garments
are particularly set down in the New Testament. 4. The Taberna-
cle and Temple were corporall things made by mens hands, not Spiritu-
all buildings of mens spirits. 5. All these of the pattern were delivered
to Moses the Temporall Magistrate, not to Aaron the Priest; Ergo,
the Church under the Gospel is not a Spirituall building, whose maker
and builder is God; and all is to be ordered by the Civill Magistrate,
and Lay-Artificers, not by Pastors: I wonder also you allledge not Noahs
Ark; And all in the New Testament are not so particularly set down, as
in the Old. Ans. The Tabernacle was no part of the Church;
but being a Type and the implements of it, to the least pin, particu-
larly expressed by God to Moses; far more must we have from God
an expresse for every Ceremony, not to retort this also, that a Cor-
ner-Cap, or a Surplice, is no part of the Church, and is indeed a
Teaching sign, and so should not be counted a Positive of Church-
Policy. 2. Most false it is that the Tabernacle and Temple were
nothing but a meeting place of the people for Worship; as our
Churches or Chappells, are. 1. Because it is to argue the Holy
Ghost of want of wisdom, to spend so much Canonick Scripture in
setting down things idely, not tending, at all to edification, and teach-
ing us nothing of God, and in specifying the Form, Height, Length,
Breadth, Curtains, Candlesticks, Sockets, Rings, of naturall places
that contained their bodies; for what should it edifie us, if God
should describe so particularly all the Churches and meeting places
of the people under the New Testament? Now certain it is, Whate-
ssoever things were written afore time, were written for our Learning,
Rom. 15.4. 2. Many things in the Tabernacle, as Candles in
day light, Rings, Sockets, Shew-bread, belonged nothing to a na-
turall place, as our Chappells, or Meeting houses do. 3. Expressly
the Scripture maketh them more then places; to wit, Holy, Religi-
ous, and Typical signs of Divine institution; as the Tabernacle
was a Type, Heb. 8.2.5. Heb. 9.1.2. &c. Heb. 10.1.2,3. And the
Temple
Temple a Type of Christ's body, Heb. 2. 19. 1. 14, 15. And all these were Types and Shadows of Heavenly things, Heb. chap. 8, 9, 10. Gal. 4. 1, 2, &c. Col. 2. 16, 17. Which our Churches and Chappels are not, being only places common to sacred and Civil actions.

1. God therefore can no more in express words set down, the form, matter, dimensions of Christian Churches and Chappels, than of the Synagogues of the Jews which had no Moral use for education and instruction. 3. Yea, because the Tabernacle and Temple and their implements, were teaching shadows of good things to come, and our Churches and Chappels are not so, nor have they any Moral or Religious use or influence on our spirits as the Tabernacle and Temple had; therefore the Lord, who is express in all Morals, which of their own nature do teach and edify; he behoved to name Bezaliel, and Abiob, and the form and colour of the Priest's garments, which also are Typical, and could not name our Elders, or the colour or form of their Garments. 4. All these weak retortions, suppose that the Tabernacle and Temple were types of our meeting houses for Worship, which is a meer conjecture; they were no more types of our Chappels, then of the Jewish Synagogues; we may not expound types at will, but as the Holy Ghost expoundeth them to us in the New Testament; And this is a conjectural Exposition, and a dream to make Bezaliel and Abiob, types of Embroiderers and Tradesmen.

5. We know the Tabernacle and Temple were corporall things made with hands, and that they are things different from the spiritual things that they signifie; as the sign and the thing signified; as therefore the Lord is express in the elements and Rites of the Supper of the Lord, because all of them, Bread, Wine, taking, eating, breaking, pouring out the Wine, drinking, are teaching and edifying signes; and our Lord never left it to the wisdom of men, to devise signes to teach themselves: so in like manner, should the Lord expressly specify all the teaching and signifying signes in the Old Testament; and as Moses might devise none of his own, but was tyed to follow the pattern, which the Lord himselfsteweth to him in the Mount: So are we now under the New Testament, tyed to the pattern of that same will revealed in the Word; and it is laid on us, Not to be wise above that which was written; and it is of perpetual equity: The supreme Law-giver, never left it to the wisdom.
of Angels, or Men, or Prophet, Apostle or Church, to serve and Worship God as they thought good: But he himself particularly prescribed the way, signs, and means: And because God hath not been pleased in the New Testament to specify types of Christ incarnate, and come in the flesh already; therefore are we obliged in Conscience to believe, and practice no more, either in Doctrinal, or teaching types, or Positives of Church-Policy, then our Pattern in the Mosaic, the Scripture hath warranted to us, to be the will of God, and in this and this only, standeth the force of the present Argument unanswered by patterns of unwritten Traditions, and not in these loose consequences, that we under the New Testament should have these types and Policy that the Church of the Jews had, which is the Doctrine of Papists and Formalists following them not ours; for they prove their Pope and Prelat from the Jewish High Priest, their Surplice, from the linen Ephod of Jewish Priests; their Humane Holidays, from the Jewish days; their kneeling to bread, from their bowing toward the Ark. 6. It is not true, that the Tabernacle and Temple were mere corporall things, no more then bread and wine in their spiritual relation, are mere corporall things: The Lords end, use and intent, in the Tabernacle and Temple, was, that they should be to the people Images, and shadows of heavenly and spiritual things; Heb. 8: 5. Heb. 10: 1. 7. That all the things of the Tabernacle, were delivered to Moses as a King, and not as a Prophet and writer of Canonick Scripture, Heb. 3: 5. Heb. 8. Luke 24. 44. 27. Luke 16: 31. is an untruth, except Formalists make the King to be the head of the Church, in prescribing Laws for the Policy thereof, as they make him a Canonick writer, as were David, Moses, Solomon, from whose example they would prove the King to be the head of the Church: But I judge Moses saw the pattern in the Mount, and God face to face, as a Prophet whose words are Scripture to us. Deut. 34. 10. And there arose not a Prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face. And as a Prophet, not as a King, his face did shine, Exod. 34: 27, 28, 29. And he was commanded as a Prophet, to write the Law, not as a King, Num. 12: 6, 7. Moses is made the most eminent Prophet that was in the Old Testament. And why? Because God spake to other Prophets by Dreams and Visions: But he spake the Law and written Scripture to Moses, mouth to mouth: This should
should not be a comparison between Prophet and Prophet, but between Prophet and King, by this learning. 8. We judge Noahs Ark doth prove the same, it being a speciall type of the Church, 1 Pet. 3. 20, 21. And he built it by Faith, Heb. 11. 7. And so by a Word of God, and at Gods speciall direction, in all the length, breadth, formes of it, and not of his own head, Gen. 6. 14, 15, &c. And is commended by the spirit of God for so doing, Gen. 6. 22. Thus did Noah according to all that God commanded him, so did he. And Formalists should deserve the like Testimony, if it could be said of them, And as the Lord commanded the Church, in creating Prelats, Surplice, and all the positives of Church-policy; so did he. And so faith Calvin, on Genesis. 6. 22. And P. Martyr, and Musculus piously on this place: and with them, Vatablus. Hence I judge all other things in this, and the following Arguments Anwser.

Calvin, Com. in Gen. 6. 22. Quare dicimus pere omnem geneti uim impietici rae perum percere, nec locum dare pravis cogitationibus qua fecit Deus

Sect. IV.

Any Positives not warranted by some speciall word of God shall be additions to the word of God: But these are expressly forbidden, Deut. 4. 2. Deut. 12. 32. Prov. 30. 6. Rev. 22. 18, 19. To this Formalists answer: 1. They have a generall Commandement of God, though not a speciall. Ans: So have all the unwritten Traditions of Papists; hear the Church, she is Magistra fidei; so doth the Papist Horatius answer Calvin, That the spirit of God hath given a generall and universal knowledge of mysteries of Faith and Ceremonies belonging to Religion, but many particulars are to be receiued by traditions from the Church: but of this hereafter. 2. Master Prima answere that is a wresting, These Texts (faith he) speak only of additions to books or doctrines of Canonical Scriptures then written, not of Church-Government or Ceremonies; yea, God him-
self after the writing of Deutonomy caused many Canonicall books of
the old and New Testament to be written. Many additions were made
to the service of God in the Temple not mentioned by Moses. Another
answer R. Hooker giveth, teaching with Papits, Bellarmin (as
in another place after I cite) with Cajetane, Tannerus and others;
That additions that corrupt the word are here forbidden, not additions
that expound and perfect the word: True it is, concerning the word of
God, whether be by misconstruction of the sense, or by falsification of
the words, wittingly to endeavor that any thing may seem Divine, which
is not, or any thing not seem, which is, were plainly to abuse even
so falsethe divine evidence: To quote by-speeches in some Historical nar-
ration, as if they were written in some exact form of Law, is to add
the Law of God. We must condemn (if we condemn all adding)
the Jews dividing the supper in two courses: their lifting up of hands
was vaunted to God in Prayer, as Aristaeus faith. Their Fasting every Fest-
ival day till the sixt hour. Though there be no expresse word for every
thing in speciell, yet there are general Commandments for all things;
say the Puritans, observing general Rules of 1. Not scandalizing: 2. Of
decency: 3. Of edification: 4. Of doing all for Gods glory. The Prelate
Vulgar, in the question touching traditions: We speak not of Rites & Ce-
monies, which are left to the disposition of the Church, and be not of
Divine, but of Positive and Humane right. But that traditions should
be obtruded for Articles of Religion, parts of Worship, or parcels of
Gods word beside the Scriptures, and such Doctrines as are either in
Scriptures expressly, or by good inference we have reason to gainsay.

Here is a good will, to make all Popish Traditions that are only
beside, not contrary to Scripture (and in the Popish way all are only beside Scripture) as Lawfull, as our Ceremoinall additions, so
they be not urged as parts of Canonicall Scripture: Well, the places
Deut. 4, & 12. Prov. 30. Rev. 22. (lay our Masters of mutable Po-
licy) forbid only Scripturall, or Canonicall additions, not Ceremonial
additions: But I wonder who took on them to adde additions
Scripturall: if BaalsPriests should adde a worship of Ichovah,and
not equall it with Scripture, nor obtrude it as a part of Moses
Books, by this means they should not violate this precept: That
soalt not adde to the Word, &c. 2. Additions explaining the Word,
or beside the Word, as Crossing the bread in the Lords Supper are
Lawfull, only additions corrupting, or detracting from the word, and
everting
and equally forbidden, Deut. 4.

Everting the sense of it, are here forbidden, and in effect these are detract ons from the word, and so no additions at all by this distin ction are forbidden, but only detract ons: The word for all this will not be mocked; it saith, Thou shalt not add, Thou shalt not diminish.

But the truth is, a Nation of Papists answer this very thing for their Traditions. 1. Bishop Anf. to the 2. part of Refor. Catho. of Trud. §. 5. pag. 848. The words signify no more, but that we must not either by addition, or subtraction, change or pervert Gods Command ments, be they written, or unwritten: Else why were the Books of the Old Testament written afterwards, if God had forbidden any more to be written or taught, beside that one Book of Deutonomy? Shall we think that none of the Prophets that lived and wrote many Volumes after this, had read these words, or understood them not, or did wilfully transgress them? D. Abbot an swereth, What the Prophets wrote, serve to explain the Law, they added no point of Doctrine to Moses Law, for Exod. 24. 4. Moses wrote all the words of God, Deut. 1. 9. 10. Moses wrote this Law, then he wrote not a part of the Law, and left another part unwritten. The Jesuit Tannerus ans wereth the same in terminis with the Formalists: Colloquio Ratis bonensi, fol. 11. & 13. D. Gretserus, ad dicta, Resp. Prohiberis additionem quae repugnes vero scripto, non autem illam, qua vero scripto est consensu eon judicis easce traditiones—Post pentateuchum accedere libros jujue, Prophe catarum, &c. Tamen nemo reprehendit, quia illi libri fuerunt consensu eon Scripturae; Additions contrary (say they) to the word, are forbidden, not such as agree with the word, such as are all the traditions of the Church; for after Deutero nomy were written the Books of Iohhua and the Prophets; so Cajetan. Coment in Loc. Prohibetur ne jujamus censeri in leges, quod in ea non censetur, nec subjungamus, quod in ea censetur, Gloss. Interline: Now prohibits veritatem veritati addere, sed falsitatem omissionem. Lira. His prohibetur additio depravans intellectum legis, non autem additio declarans aut clucidas, Tolstaus in Loc. Q. 2. Ide (pera) qui addit addit tanguam aliquam de tractuum, vel necessarium, sicut alia quae sunt inter textum veliat dictum a spiritu sancto, & hoc vocatur proprius addere. Formalists (as Dr. Morton say) It is sin to add to the word any thing, as a part of the written word, as if Ceremo nies were a part of the written Scripture, and spoken by the im medi ate inspir ing spirit that dyeth Canonick Scripture, they come only as
Arbitrary and ambulatory adjuncts of Worship from the ordinary Spirit of the Church, and are not added as necessary parts of Scripture, or as Doctrinals; so Papists say, their traditions are not additions to the written word, nor necessary parts of the written Scripture, but inferior to the Scripture. 1. They say, their Traditions are no part of the written word or Scripture; for they divide the word of God in two parts, as Bellarmine, Terrion, Tannerus, Stapleton, Becanus, all of them say, Alin est verbum dei scriptum & dictur Scriptura sacra, alin est verbum dei non scriptum, & dictur ecclesia traditio; There is one word of God written called the holy Scripture; And there is another word of God not written, and it is called the Tradition of the Church.

Now their Tradition is no more a part of the Scripture (but another part of the word of God contradistinguished from Scripture) then the body is a part of the soul, or Scotland a part of England, for both England and Scotland are collateral parts of great Britain; the Scripture (say they) is the unperfect rule of Faith, and not the compleat will of God, as touching Faith or manners, but Scripture and Tradition together, are the perfect and total rule: so say Formalists, that Scripture is the compleat and perfect rule of Faith and manners to regulate all our Morall acts; But the other part of the distinction is, that Scripture is not a compleat and full rule to regulate all our Morall Acts whatsoever, whether of Faith or manners or Church-Policy, as it is no rule to my conscience and practice to believe, for orders, cause and obedience to my Superiors, and for decency that I am to wear a Religious significant linnen creature called a Surplice, or not to wear it, or that I am to execute or not exercise that grave action of drawing my thumb Crosse the Air above the face of a Baptized Child, while I baptize, to betoken his dedication to Christ's service: And hitherto neither Traditions, nor Positives of Church-Policy are added, as necessary parts of written Scripture: 2. Traditions are not added to the Scripture, by Papists, as coming from the immediately inspiring spirit that dyed and wrote Scripture, more then our Ceremoniall Positives of policy: Its true, Papists say they come from an infallible spirit. But Formalists (I hope) refer not their unwritten Positives to so noble blood; yet in this, they agree that Traditions are not added by them, as descending from the immediate inspiring
ring spirit of written Scripture: Therefore Cornelius a Lapide faith, Non addiru ad verbum quod vobis loquor, aliquid, scilicet tanquam mensem, vel ame dictum aut suum, nulli enim homini lices prescripta aut precepta fuisse pro preceptis a deo (a spiritu sancto immediate inspissa) dictas, aut pro Scripturis (acris addere); It is not lawful for any man to add to the word any thing of his own, as his own, or as spoken and commanded by himself: For no man may broach his own injunctions and precepts, as if they were the precepts taught by the immediate inspiring spirit, speaking in the Scriptures. Hence Papists teach that their Traditions flow from a little lower Spring, then from the immediately inspiring Scriptureall spirit; So I make this good from famous Iesuites; Cornelius a Lapide, in Deut. 4. 1. 2. faith, Sed et ipsi iudaëi multa addiderunt legi, ut celatuarum, omnemque ornatum templi; ut festum sortium sub Ecester, fes-
tum datiginis, fesitum Eneanorium &c. Hec enim non a deo, sed a iudaic sancta et instituta sunt, denique nec non sunt addita, sed potius inclu’re legi dei: Quiis lex jubet obedire parentibus, Magistratibus, possicibus eorumque legibus. The Jews (faith he, objecting the instances of Formalists) added many things to the Law, as the ingraving and adorning of the Temple, the feast of Purim, of Dedication &c. And these traditions were not ordained and instituted by God (Ergo, not by the immediate inspiring spirit, as is the Holy Scripture) but by the Jews, and they were not added to the Law, but included in the Law, because the Law biddeth obey Superiors and their Laws; whence it is evident, that these very Ceremonial traditions of Papists, for which Formalists contend, are not added to the word as coming from God, or the immediately inspiring spirit that itch scripture; but from the Church, without warrant of Scripture, just as Popish traditions, which we count unlawfull additions to the word. And Tannerus the Iesuit faith, Tom. 3. in 22. de fide, fpe et cha, dif. 1. de fide Q. 1. Dub. 8. That the assistance of the spirit that the Church hath in proposing and written traditions, requireth no positive inspiration or speech made by God to the Church; but it is enough that the Church have a very negative help of God only, by which she is permitted not to err: His words are these: Nam assentientia illa dei, qua ecclesia adest, nec Jesu modo rebus fidei (in traditionibus non scriptis) proponendis erret, per se non dicit, nec requirit positivam inspirationem, sed locutionem Divi-
Divinam ipsi ecclesia faktum, sed contenta est quovis auxilio dei etiam mete negativo, quod fit ut ecclesia ys in rebus non sintur errare: Cum tamen nova revelatio utique novam inspirationem seu Locutionem dei aliquud positum notificantem significet. And the like faiith Malderw, in 22. de virtu. Theolog. That though traditions come from an infallible Spirit, no lesse then Scripture; yet traditions are the Word of God, because they are heard and constantly believed: But the Holy Scripture is the Word of God, because written by the inspiration of the holy Spirit. Q. 2. Art. 1. Dub. 4. pag. 23. And therefore he maketh two forts of traditions, some meerly Divine, which the Apostles received either immediately from the Holy Ghost, or from the mouth of Christ, as those touching the matter and form of the Sacraments: Others (faith he) are properly Apostolick, as those touching the Lent Fast, instituted by the Apostles, ib. tra. de trad. Q. Vnic. Dub. 1. Tradisones (inquit) per apostolos tradita, alia sunt Divina, quae immediate ipsi a Spiritu Sancto distan. Vel ex ore Christi acceperunt; alia de materia et potissimum de formis sacramentorum; alia autem proprie discurrerunt Apostolicae, ut de lejungo Quadragesimali, quod Apostoli Instructerunt. Hence it is eviend, it Papists cannot but be condemned of impious additions to the Scriptures, by these places, Dentr. 4. Dentr. 12. Formalists are equally deep in the same crime: and the same is the answer of Malderw, ibid. Dub. 2. vetat. Apoc. 22. Ne quis audeat Divinam prophetiam depravare, assundo aliquid aut abradendo. Turrianus, tom. de fide. spec. et cha. de tradition. disp. 20. Dub. 2. pag. 255. Respondet Ioanem plane prohibere corruptionem Libri illius, non tamen prohibet ne alij Libri scribantur, vel alia Dogmata tradantur. Stapletonus, Relect. Prin. fidei Doct. Contaver. 4. q. 1. Art. 3. Sed non prohibet vel legis interpretationem per sacerdotes faciendam (imò hoc desist. prescribit, Dentr. 17.) Vel aliquid aliud in fideis admissendum quod lege Scriptarum non contentur. Aliqui quicquid postea prophetæ predicaverunt, et Divinis Scripturiis adjetum est, contra hoc de mandatuum factum cesseri debet.

Learned D. Reynald Answereh, Apolog. Theel. de fac. Scripri. pag. 211, 212. and faih. This very Law of Moses promiseth life Eternall to those that love the Lord with all their heart, and, that the Prophets added to the Writings of Moses, no Article of Faith necessary to be believed; but did expand and apply so the use of the Church
Church, in all the parts of piety and Religion, that which Moses had taught. Lorinus, followeth them in Deut. 4. 1. Christus (inquit) et Apostoli potentemcho, plura adjecerunt, immo et veteri Testamento, Iohue, Prophetarum, Regum, Christ (faith he) and the Apostles added many things to the five Books of Moses; yea, in the Old Testament, Iosue, the Prophets and the Kings, David and Solomon, did also add to Moses. But the truth is, suppose any should arise after Moses, not called of God to be a Canonick writer, Prophet, or Apostle, and should take on him to write Canonick Scripture, though his additions for matter were the same Orthodox and found Doctrine of Faith and manners, which are contained in the Law of Moses and the Prophets; he should violate this Commandment of God: Thou shalt not add. For Scripture containeth more than the sound matter of Faith; itcontaineth a formal, a heavenly form, style, Majesty and expression of Language, which for the form, is sharper then a two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discoverer of the thoughts and intents of the heart, Heb. 4. 12. If therefore, the Prophets and Apostles had not had a Commandment of God to write Canonick Scripture, which may be proved from many places of the Word, they could not have added Canonick Scripture to the writings of Moses. But the Answer of D. Roynald, is sufficient and valid against Papists, who hold that their Traditions are beside, not contrary to the Scripture; just as Formalists do, who say the same for their unwritten Positives of Church-policy: But our Divines Answer, That traditions beside the Scripture, are also traditions against the Scripture, according to that, Gal. 1. 8. But if we or an Angel from Heaven preach any other Gospel, nay, beside that which we have preached unto you, Let him be accursed: And Papists more ingenious than Formalists in this, confess, That, if that of the Apostles, Gal. 1. 8. be not restricted to the written Word, but applied to the Word of God in its Latitude, as it comprehendeth both the written word or Scripture, and the unwritten word or Traditions; then beside the word is all one with this, contrary to the word, which Formalists constantly deny. For Lorinus the Jesuit, in Comment. in Deut. 4. 2. Quo pacto Paulus Anathema dicit, Gal. 1. 8. isi, qui alius Evangelizant pretex id quod ipsi Evangelizaverint, id est, adversum et contrarium. So doth Cornelius a Lapide:
pide, and Estius expound the place, Gal. 1. 8. And they say, that
Paul doth denounce a curse against those that would bring in a new
Religion and Judaism beside the Gospel: But withall, they teach,
that the Traditions of the Church are not contrary to Scripture, but
beside Scripture; and that the Church which cannot erre, and is
led in all truth, can no more be accused of adding to the Scripture,
than the Prophets, Apostles and Evangelists who wrote after Moses,
can be accused of adding to Moses his writings; because the Pro-
phets, Apostles and Evangelists, had the same very warrant to write
Canonick Scripture, that Moses had; and so the Church hath the
same warrant to add Traditions to that which the Prophets, Evan-
gelists and Apostles did write, which they had to add to Moses;
And therefore the Council of Trent faith, S. 4. c. 1. That, unwrit-
ten traditions coming either from the mouth of Christ, or the disem-
ment of the holy spirit, are to be received and Religioufly Reverenced with the
like pious affectiok and Reverence that the holy Scriptures are received.
Pari pietati affectiun ac Reverentia; And the truth is, laying down
this ground, that Scripture is unperfect, and not an adequate
rule of Faith and manners, as Papists do; then it must be inconse-
quently, that because Traditions are beside the Scripture, which is to
impose half the Word of God; Yea, it followeth not,
this Popish ground supposed, that Traditions are therefore contrary
to the Scripture, because beside the Scripture, no more then it
followeth that the Sacraments of the New Testament, Baptisme, and
the Supper of the Lord, in all their positive Rites and Elements are
not ordained and instituted in the Old Testament; and in that
sense as, beside the Old Testament; that therefore they are
against the Old Testament; though we should imagine they
had been added in the New Testament, without all warrant of
special direction from God, by the sole will of men; or because
some Ceremonials commanded of God, are not commanded in the
Morall Law or Decalogue, either expressly or by consequence; and
so those Ceremonials, though instituted by the Lord, be beside the
Morall Law; that therefore they are contrary to the Morall Law:
Yea, to come nearer, because the third Chapter of the Book of Ge-
nesis, containing the Doctrine of mans fall and misery, and Redemp-
tion by the promised seed, is beside the first and second Chapters of
the same Book, it doth not follow that it is contrary, or that Moses
adding
Papist and Ceremoniall Traditions Sect.IV.

Vnum fidei articulorum condere, communiter eam docent Scholastici in 3. dit 25. & he subscribeth to that truth of Vincentius Lyrinensis c. 17. In ecclesia nulla nova Dogmata procedi, sed pretiosam divini Dogmatis Gemmam exculpit, fideliter cooptari, adornari sapienter, ut intelligatur illius trium, quod ante obscurius credebatur: No new points of faith, or manneres are forged in the Church, but the precious pearl of divine truth is in it polished, faithfully applied and wisely illustrated, that they may be more clearly understood, which before was more obscurely believable; So that to say, the perfection of scripture consisteth not in particularizing all the small positives of policy, is no more then Papists say of the perfection of the scripture in their traditions. 2. Moses speaketh both of the Morall and Ceremoniall Law, called by the names of הָעֵצֶת Statutes rights, and בְּעֵבְרֹות Judgements and Laws whatsoever extolled by David, Ps.119. As his delight, his joy, his heritage, his songs in the house of his pilgrimages, and of both he faith, that there is life in keeping them: Now the Ceremonies of Moses had an exceeding great excellency in looking to Christ, and being shadows of good things to come, Heb.10. 1. And our Ceremonies have the same aspect upon Christ: Why? but the day of the commemoration of Christ's Death, Nativity, Ascension; Dedication to Christ, by a Cross in the Air, should have the same influence and impress on our hearts (if they be lawfull) that the like Ceremonies and Laws had upon David's spirit, Christ being the object and soul of both? 2. Of these Ceremonies and Laws, Moses faith, שְׁלֹשׁ כָּלָה כְּלָה דַּעֲעַת. For this is your wisdom, and your understanding in the sight of the Nations: Why? but these Ceremonies looking with a broader and fuller face on Christ already come (if Christ have any life of lawfulness in them) then their dim shadows of old, should also be our wisdom in the hearing of Pagans, who know not God? 3. It is a wonder to me that the learned Master Prynne should say that the place, דִּבְרֵי תְקֻנָּת תְּרוּמָת, speaketh nothing of Church-Government and Ceremonies, but only of Doctrines of Canonical Books: For that is as much as to say the place speaketh nothing of Divine Ceremonies, but only of divine Ceremonies, for what a number of Divine Ceremonies and Laws are in the Law of Moses, which were given by the Lord himself? as is clear by the words, ve. 1. Now therefore hearken, O Israel, and do the Statutes and judgements that I teach you, that ye may live, and ve. 3. Behold I have taught you Statutes and judgements, which the Lord
my God commandeth, v. 8. And what nation is there so great, that hath statutes and judgments so righteous, as all this Law which I set before you this day? Now of all this Law the Lord faith, v. 2. Ye shall not add unto the Word which I commanded you, Neither shall ye diminish. The Learned and Reverend Mr. Pryme, must restrict this word of the Law, which can admit of no addition, to some special Law, either the Morall only, or the judiciall and Ceremoniall only; not to the former; for then additions to the Decalogue only, should be forbidden; this never man taught; Stapleton, indeed, Relect. Prin. 4. Q. 1. Art. 4. restricteth it to the Ceremoniall Law only; but Moses maketh it a Law as large, v. 2. as the word which God Commandeth: And, as (faith he) v. 5. the statutes and the judgements which the Lord Commanded me, v. 8. All this Law, Deut. 31. 9. This written Law delivered to the Priests and kept in the Ark, the Law that all Israel heard read, v. 11. Of which it is said, v. 24. When Moses had made an end of writing of the Words of this Law in a Book, until they were finished. Now this was the whole five Books of Moses: And were there nothing of Church-Government in Moses Law? What shall we then say of the High Priest, his calling, Office, habit, of the Priests, Levites, their charge, calling, attire, of the Law of the Leaper, his healing, his extrusion out of the Camp, of the Law of those that were defiled with the dead, of their qualification who were to be Circumcised, who were to eat the Passover, or who not, who were to enter into the house of God, and Congregation, who not; not a few of these, touching Church-Government, are included in the Law that God Commanded Israel, as their wisdom. 4. That there were many additions made to the service of God in the Temple, not mentioned by Moses, is nothing to purpose, except it be proved that these additions were made by the Church, without any word of God, the contrary whereof is evident, for the Temple and whole pattern thereof, was delivered in writing by the Lord to David, 1 Chron. 28. 11, 19. If Formalists will have no Laws made but by Moses, as the only Law-giver, they have as good reason to say, That Moses was the only Canonick writer, and none but he, which is absurd. Or, 2. That Moses by his own spirit was a Law-giver, and had active influence in excogitating the Law; We conceive that Protestants are to own this Doctrine, which Tostaths imputes to us as Horesicks, Com. in Loc.
Moses and
Canonick
writers, are
not Law-
givers un-
der God,
but organs
of God in
writing, &
mother reporters of the
Law of
God.

Loc. Q. 2. Quasi Moses nudus minister & relator verborum (dei)
esse, & non legem conderet: As if Moses were a meer servant, and a
naked reporter of the Lords Law and Words, and not a Law-maker.
For in the making of Laws and Divine institutions, we judge that
all the Canonick writers were meer patients, as the people are;
for God is the Commander, and Moses the person Commanded, and
a meer servant, Deut. 4. 5. Mal. 4. 4. Heb. 3. 3, 4, 5. And Moses and
all Canonick writers were only to receive the word at Gods
mouth, and to hear it, Ezek. 3. 8. As meer servants; and in this
the Church of Prophets and of Apostles, and the Church that now is,
were alike: I know no Authority of the one above the other. In
Indeed, in writing and relating to the Church, the will of God, and
the Scriptures; Canonick writers are agents inspired with the Ho-
ly spirit, immediately breathing on them in Prophecying and in
writing Scripture. But the Proclaimer of a Law, as such hath no
influence in making the Law: Let it be also remember'd, that as Pa-
pists say two things to the place, so do Formalists. 1. That it is
not against Ceremonies. 2. That the Church is limited in making
Ceremonies beside the Word, that they may not make them too
numerous and burdensome: This I make good in the words of a
famous Jesuit, who citeth the words of a Learned Papist, approving
them.

Lorinus, Coment. in Loc. Refellit idem Oleaster Hereticos hinc
inferentes institui, non, posse Ceremonias ac ritus novos circa cul-
tum dei: Quam vis ipse optat moderationem in preceptis ac censuris,
nt faciunt & suavire possint servari: To whom I oppose that gol-
den sentence of a man, ended with the spirit of God above any Pa-
pist. Calvin. Com. in Deut. 4. v. 2. Insignis locus, quo apertè dam-
natur quicquid hominum ingenio escogitari potest. Ibid. Quoniam
proposerat a lae civitati auperit lucus serè mundus ad cultus fictitos, qui
tamen precise una verbo damnantur, ubi deus ina iubes suos acuise-
re posita legi, ne justiores esse apparet, quam illic docentur. All Wor-
ship is precisely condemned here, or any thing devised about the Wor-
ship by the wit of men. I would here meet with a Grand exception
of Mr. Hooker, Eccles. Polic. 3. Book, pag. 111. Their distinction of
matters of substance, and of circumstance, though true, will not serve;
for be they great things, or be they small, if God have Commanded them
in the Gospel, and (if) his Commanding them in the Gospel do make
them
cannot make us change the one more than the other, if the authority of the maker do prove their unchangeableness which God hath made, then must all laws which he hath made be necessary for ever permanent, though they be but of circumstances only, and not of substance.

Ans. 1. Our distinction of matters of substance and circumstance rightly taken, will serve the turn: But the mistake is, in that I. Many things are but circumstances of worship, such as are positives and religious significant ceremonies to formalists, that are not so to us, for to wear a surplice in sacrificing to Jupiter, were to make the act of wearing that religious habit, an act of religious honouring of Jupiter, but to wear surplice and to sacrifice in that habit to Jupiter at eight of clock in the morning, rather than at ten, in this place physique, rather than this, is no worshipping of Jupiter, but a mere physique circumstance, neither up, nor down to the worship, and time and place physique, are neither worship, nor religious means of worship: 2. Time, and place, name, country, form, figure, habit or garments, to hold off injuries of sun and heaven as such are never commanded, never forbidden of God, and therefore the change of these circumstances can be no change of a commandment of God: We never advanced circumstances, as such to the orb and sphere of morals; formalists do so advance their ceremonies, and therefore if God command surplice, though by the intervening authority of his Church, such cannot be altered except God command to alter the religious signification of white linen, but we know not where God hath commanded the alteration of any ceremonies, except that, the Lords coming in the flesh, as a thing to come, must alter all ceremonies which shadow forth Christ to come, when the body Christ is come already: Let us know such a ground for alteration of corner cap, altar, surplice, except to drive such oxen out of the Temple. 3. We hold that the Lord commanding such a thing in the Gospel, is a reason why it should be necessarily permanent for ever, except the Lord hath commanded it should be for a time only, as he commanded Moses's ceremonies, and so God's authority of commanding a thing to be unchangeably in his worship, is a reason why it should be unchangeably in his worship; and his commanding any thing to be for a time only, and alterably in his worship, is a reason why it should be for a time
Four ways po-
sitive are
alterable by
God only.

then are his own Ceremonies altered, and removed by the discretion of Peter and Paul, or the Church, but by God only.

3. When God commandeth such Offices to be in which dependeth immediately upon his own immediate giving gifts essentially required to these Offices, then these so long in his Church, as God is pleased by his immediate to give these gifts; and when God denyeth these gifts essential requisite, sure it is, his immediate will hath altered and removed the will of the Church, so the Lord hath altered and removed these Offices and gifts of Apostles, who could speak with seals their doctrine with Miracles, Evangelists, Prophets, Naturally inspired, gifts of healing, &c.

4. Some things are not of worship at all, but of goods, as the community of goods, Feasts, matters of civil conversation, these are only in the society, as touching distribution to the necessities of the Society, brotherly kindnesse, unalterable, and no otherwise.

Now for these things that are smaller or weightier, we are not in their weightiness or smallness of importance considered, but as the Authority of God hath imprinted a necessity in them, so are they obligatory to us: I am obliged to receive the Scripture, that Paul left his cloak at Troas; no lesse then when he came into the world to save sinners, in regard of Canonicall authority stamped upon both: R. Hooker with other Formalists,
the tightness of matter to make the Law alterable: Truly to eat of the Tree of knowledge of good and ill, being put in the balance with the love of God in it fell, is but a light thing; yet the breach of that Law involved all the world in condemnation.

And what else is this, but that which Papists say, that there be two sorts of things in scripture? So faith Cornelius a Lapide Comen. on 2 Tim. 3. 16. 1. The Law and the Prophets, these God revealed and dyed to Moses and the Prophets; but there are other things in Scripture, as Histories and moral exhortations, which Canonick Writers learned either by hearing, seeing, reading or meditation; there was no need these should be dyed, by the inspiration of the holy Spirit, for they know them themselves, though they were assisted: 2. Excited by the holy spirit to write; Conceptum, & memoriam eorun qua scribent, non suscepsit spiritus sanctus sed inspiravit ut hunc potius conceptum, quam illum scriberent, & omnes eorum sententias & conceptus ordinavit, digestit, & diexit spiritus sanctus, v.g. Ut hanc sententiam primum, illam secundo, aliam tertio collocarent: Yet Etsius faith on the place, The Scriptures are given by divine inspiration, in ut non solum sententias, sed & verba singula & verborum ordo, ac tota dispositio sit a deo, tanquam per sepsum loquente ac scribetae: So as not only the sentences, but every word, and the order and disposition of words is of, or from God, as if he were speaking and writing himself.

Now for the additions Canonickal, that the Prophets and Apostles made to the writing of Moses: I hope Papists and Formalists cannot with any forehead alledge them, to prove that the Church may add Traditions, and alterable Positive of Church Policy to the written word of God, except upon the same ground, they conclude, that the Church now hath the same immediately inspired spirit, that the Prophets and Apostles had, and that our Prelats saw the visions of God, when they saw but the visiones aulae; the visions of Court, and that their calling was, as Paulus was, Gal. i. 1. not of men, neither by men, but by Jesus Christ: When as it is not by Divine right, and was both of the King, and by Court: 2. Except they infer that the Church that now is, may add Canonickal and Scriptural additions to the Scripture; for such additions the Prophets and Apostles added to the writings of Moses: and 3. that that precept, Thou shalt not add, &c. was given to the Lord himself to bind on his hands, that no Canonick Scripture should ever be, but
but the only writings of Moses, which is (as some write) the dream of Saduces, whereas inhibition is given to the Church of God, not to God himself, for what the Prophets and Apostles added, God himself added; yea, to me it is a doubt (while I be better informed) if the Lord did ever give any power of adding to his Scripture at all, without his own immediate inspiration, to either Prophet or Apostle; or that God did never command Moses, or Prophets or Apostle to write. Canonick Scripture of their own head, or that his Commandment to write Scripture, was any other than an immediate inspiration, which essentially did include every syllable and word that the Apostles and Prophets were to write: For I do not conceive, that 1. God gave to Apostles and Prophets power to devise a Gospel and write it: I suppose Angels or men could not have devised it; yea, that they could no more have devised the very Law of nature, then they could create such a piece, as a reasonable soul, which to me is a rare and curious book, on which essentially is written by the immediate finger of God, that natural Theology, that we had in our first creation. 2. I do not conceive, that as Princes and Nobles do give the Contents, or rude thoughts of a curious Epistle to a Foreign Prince, to their Secretary, and go to bed and sleep, and leaves it to the wit and eloquence of the Secretary, to put it in forme and title, and then signes it, and seals it without any more ado; so the Lord gave the rude draughts of Law and Gospel, and all the pins of Tabernacle and Temple, Church-officers, and Government, and left it to the wit and eloquence of Shepherds, Heardsmen, Fishers, such as were the Prophets, Moses, David, Amos; and Peter and divers of the Apostles, who were unlettered men, to write words and title as they pleased, but that in writing every jot, title, or word of Scripture, they were immediately inspired, as touching the matter, words, phrases, expression, order, method, majesty, title and all: So I think they were, but Organs, the mouth, pen and Amansfen; God as it were, immediately dyting, and leading their hand at the pen, Deut. 4.5. Deut. 31.24, 25, 26. Mal. 4.4. 2 Pet. 1.19, 20, 21. 2 Tim. 3.16. Gal. 1.11, 12. 1 Cor. 11.23, &o Luk. 4.70. God borrowed the mouth of the Prophets; As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which hath been since the world began: Now when we ask from Prelates what sort of additionall, or accidenstall worship, touching Surplise, Cross, and other Religious Positives
The characters of Fomalifts, Ceremonies, & Papists Traditions one and the same.

Frives of Church-Policy, it is, that they are warranted to add to the word, and how they are distinguished from Scriptures, Doctrinals: They give us these Characters of it, 1. God is the Author of Doctrinals, and hath expressed them fully in scripture: But the Church is the Author of their Accidentals, and this is essential to it, that it is not specified particularly in scripture, as Bread and Wine, Taking and Eating in the Lord's Supper is; for then it should be a Doctrinal point, and not Accidentall. 2. It is not in the particular point of faith and manners, as Doctrinals are: But hear the very Language of Papists; for Papists put forth this essential Character on their Tradition, that it is not written, but by word of mouth derived from the Apostles, and so distinguished from the written word; for if it were written in scripture, it should not be a Tradition.

So the Jesuit Malderw, in 22. tom. de virtur. de obj. fidei Q. 1. Dub. 3. Pro Apostolica traditione habendum est, quod cum non inveniatur in Divina literis, tamen Universa tenet ecclesia; nec consilis instituatur sed semper retentum 2. That the Traditions are necessary, and how far Papists do clear, as I have before said; for the Church may coin no Articles of faith, these are all in Scripture. For the Jews two Suppers, and their additions to the pasleover, as Hooker faith, and their fasting till the sixth hour every Feast day, we reject as dreams, because they are not warranted by any word of institution; not to add, that the Church of the Jews never took on them to command the observation of these forgeries, under the pain of Church-censures, as Papists and prelates did their Crossing and their Surplice.

Hooker's faith, A Question it is, whether containing in Scripture, 1 Book, do import express setting down in plain terms, or else comprehending ecclesi. Pol. in such sort, that by reason, we may thence conclude all things which are necessary to salvation. The Faith of the Trinity, the Co-eternity of the Son with the Father, are not the former way in Scripture; for the other, let us not think, that as long as the World doth endure, the wit of man shall be able to sound to the bottom of that which may be concluded out of Scripture.—Traditions we do not reject, because they are not in Scripture; but because they are neither in Scripture, nor can otherwise sufficiently, by any reason, be proved to be of God. That which is of God, and may be evidently proved to be so, we deny not; but it
Scripture the only Rule

What is it to be contained in Scripture, and how far it maketh anything lawful according to Hooker.

Anc. I. The consequences of Scriptures are double; many, and more than are known to us; and the particulars of that Government, that we contend for, are in Scripture, that is, there should be no Government, but what is either expressly in Scripture, or may be made out by just consequence, we believe, if they cannot be proved from Scripture, let them fall as men's hay and stubble. But in the mean time, these are two different questions: Whether there be an immutable Platform of Discipline in the Word? Or whether ours be the only Platform and no other? If we carry the first, Cremes must fall. And certainly, in all reason, we are on the surest side: If we cannot observe all that is written, it is not like that God hath laid upon us unwritten burdens. 2. Hooker doth not reject all the Popish Traditions, as our Divines Reformed do; because they are not warranted by the Word; so that, if the Images of God and Christ, and the Worshipping of them, and Purgatory, and the Supremacy of the Pope, can be proved to be of God, though they be no more in Scripture, then Croffing and Surplice; then would we receive all these, as Having the same force and authority with the Written Laws. Now we know no other weightier Argument to prove there's no Purgatory, but because the Scripture speaketh of Heaven and Hell, and is silent of Purgatory. 3. That natural reason can warrant a positive instituted Worship, such as Surplice, beseeching Pastoral Holiness, without any Scripture, is a great untruth; for natural reason may warrant new Sacraments, as well as new Sacramentals. 4. If Traditions have their force and credit from God, not from the manner of delivering them, that is, from being contained in Scripture, or not contained in it; then certainly they must be of the same Divine necessity with Scripture: For Whither Christ Command that the Bureaus believe in the Messiah, by the Vocal Preaching of Paul, or by the written Scriptures of the Prophets and Apostles, it is all one, it is the same word, and coming from Christ, must be of the same Divine authority. But this is to beg the question, for that we are to believe no unwritten traditions; because
because it is unwritten, to have the self same force and authority with the Written Laws of God. For Lorinus, Cornelius a Lapide, Com. in 4. Deuter. Etsius, Com. in 2. Thes. 2. 15. Bellarmine, Tannerus, Malcherus, Becanuus, say, Whether the Lord deliver his minde to us in his Written Scripture, or by Tradition, it is still the Word of God, and hath authority from God. But the truth is, to us it is not the Word of God, if it be not a part of the Counsel of God written in Moses, or the Prophets and Apostles; for though the Word have authority only from God, not from the Church, nor from men, nor the manner of delivering of it, by word or writ; yet we, with the Fathers and Protestant Divines, and evidence of Scripture, stand to that of Basiliius, Homil. 2. Advers. calumniantes. S. Trinit. Tōs ζητούσιν πηγάς, ἵνα μὴ γεγραμμένα μὴ γίνοι; Believe what are written, which are not unwritten seek not after: And so, seek not after Surplice, Cross, and the like. And that or dei τὸν θείον ἄρθρον ὁ πατὴρ τῆς εὐργείας τῆς σεσπερίματος οὐκ ἔχοι διενέργεια συνέφρυτον ὅπως ἀποκτησάτω εἰς τὸ πνεύμα; Every word (and so this, That Cross, Surplice, are Religious signes of spirituall duties) and every thing or action, must be made good by the Testimony of the heavenly inspired Scripture: these things that are good (and so Religious, decent and signifcant) may be fully confirmed, and those that are evil, confounded. And to us, for our Faith and practise, is it notLaw and Testimony, it is darknes, and not light. And as Gregor. Nyssen, the Brother of Basil, in Ethicis, Reg 26.

The Fathers teach that all things in Worship, are to be rejected that are not in Scripture.

Cyril Alex. Glaphyro in Gent. 1. 2. οὐ οὐκ εἰς εἰρετικόν ἐν ὧν ἔρημη ἡ πνεῦμα τῆς ἀληθείας, πίνακος ἡ ὑπόπτων προτεστασίας μεσα, καὶ εἰ τοῖς ἀληθινοῖς ἐκχοροηγεῖται, καὶ συνφορή την καταλειτουργίαν μεσα.
Some, — And he is a Thief that taketh another unlawfull way then the Scripture. And by what Argument can reason without Scripture prove that Crose and Suplice are of God: But by that same reason, Papists without Scripture, can, and may prove their Traditions to be of God? And if we admit reason, and exclude Scripture, it is as easy to prove their Traditions, as our Positive additions to Worship: And what Answers Papists give for their Traditions, to elude the power of Scripture, and evidence of Testimonies of fathers, all these same are given by Prelats for their additions; to say nothing that Hooker affirmenteth unwritten Traditions to be Gods Word; and in the very state of the Council of Trent, we are to acknowledge Traditions, though unwritten, yet to have the self same authority and force with the Written Laws of God. And that the Surplice and Crose and such stuff, be of the self same force and authority with the Evangel according to Luke and John: But what wonder? For Hooker holdeth, that we have no other way to know the Scripture to be the Word of God, but by Tradition, which Popish Assertion holden by him and Chillingworth, to me, is to make the Traditions of men the object of our Faith.

Hooker: About things easie, and manifest to all men by Common sense, there needeth no higher Consultation, because a man whose wisdom is for Weighty affairs, admired, would take it in some disdain to have his Counsel solemnly asked about a toy; so the meanness of some things is such, that to search the Scriptures of God for the ordering of them, were to derogate from the Reverend Authority of the Scripture, no lesse then they do, by whom Scriptures are in ordinary talking very idly applied unto vain and Childish trifles.

Ans. 1. It is a vain comparison to re semble God to an earthly wise man in this; for a King of Kings, such as Artaxes, if he were building a stately Palace for his Honour and Magnificence, would commit the drawing of it, the frame, the small pins, rings, bowles, to the wisdom of a Master of work, skilled in the Mathematicks, and not trouble his own Principally head with every small pin; but this is because he is a man, and cometh short of the wisdom, skill, and learning of his servants. 2. Because, how his Honour and Magnificence be declared in every small pin of that Palace, is a business that taketh not much up the thoughts of a stately Prince. The contrary of both these are true in the Lord our God, his wisdom is
is above the wisdom of Moses, and Moses cannot frame a Tabernacle or a Temple for God's Honour in the least pin or snuff-box, with such wisdom as the only wise God can do. 2. The Lord is more jealous and tender of his own Honour, in the means and smallest way of Illustrating of it: Yes, in the smallest Pin, then earthly Princes are, for earthly Princes may Communicate with their inferiors the glory of curious works set forth, as speaking monuments of their honour; the Lord who will not give his glory to another; never did communicate the glory of deviling worship, or the Religious means of worshipping and honouring his glorious Majesty to men. 2. God hath thus far condescended in his wisdom, to speak particularly in written Oracles of every Pin, Ring, little Officer of his house, of every Signe, Sacrament, Sacramental never so mean and small; Er go, It is no derogation from the dignity of Scripture, to have a mouth to ask counsel, where God hath opened his mouth to give Counsel in written Oracles: 3. There is nothing positive in God's worship so small, as that we may dare to take on us to devise it of our own head. 4. Hooker contradiceth himself; he said the Ceremonies have their authority from God, and though unwritten have the self-same force and authority with the written Laws of God, pag.44. Here he will have the unwritten positives so small and far inferior to written Scripture, that to ask for Scripture to warrant such small toys, is to derogate from the reverend Authority and Dignity of the Scripture: To Ceremonies pag.46, are but Toys, unworthy to be written with Scripture, but p.44. They have the self-same force and authority with written Scripture.

Hooker. It is impossible to be proved, that only the Schoole of Christ in his Word is able to resolve us, what is good and evil; for what if it were true concerning things indifferent, that unless the Word of the Lord had determined of the free use of them, there could have been no Lawful use of them at all, which notwithstanding is untrue; because it is in the Scriptures setting down things indifferent, but their not setting them down as necessary, that doth make them to be indifferent.

Anf. Then because the Scripture hath not forbidden the killing of our children to God, as a fall of worship against the second Commandment, but only as an act of Homicide against the sixth Commandment, and hath not forbidden all the Jewish Ceremonies, so they have

Anf. How things are in Scripture.

Hooker 1.2. p.60.
have a new signification to point forth Christ already come in the flesh, these must all be indifferent. For let Formalists give me a Scripture to prove, that Circumcision, killing of Children, sacrificing of Beasts, are any ways forbidden in this notion, but in that they are not commanded, or set down in the Word as not necessary? 2. Such Divinity I have not read; That only the Schoole of Christ is not able to resolve us what is good and evil: I mean Morally good and evil. For Hooker pag. 54. Book 2. Faith. The controversy would end, in which we contend, that all our actions are ruled by the Word: If 1. We would keep our selves within the compass of moral actions, actions which have in them vice or virtue: 2. If we would not exact at their hands for every action, the knowledge of some place of Scripture, out of which we must stand bound to deduce it. Then it is like the School of Christ, the word can and doth teach us, what is a Moral action good or ill, an action in which there is virtue or vice; and to me it is a wonder, that the Old and New Testament, which containeth an exact systeme and body of all Morals, whether naturall or Civil, or supernaturall, should not be the only rule of all Morals.

Now I finde that Mr. Hooker faith two things to this; 1. That Scripture doth regulate all our moral actions, but not Scripture only, for the Law of nature, and the most concealed instinct of nature, and other principles may warrant our actions: We move, (faith he) we sleep, we take the Cup at the hands of our friend; a number of things wee often do, only to sattisfie some natural desire, without express and actuall reference to any Commandment of God; unto his glory, even these things are done in which wee naturally perform, and not only that in which naturally and spiritually wee do, for by every effect proceeding from the most concealed instincts of nature, his power is made manifest. But it doth not therefore follow, that of necessity we shall sin, unless we expressly intend the glory of God, in every such particular.

Some actions supernaturally moral, some moral naturally or civilly, others are.

Ans. I speak of these more distinctly hereafter, here I answer, that as there be some actions in man purely and spiritually, but supernaturally moral, as to believe in Christ for Remission of sins, to love God in Christ: These the Gospel doth regulate. 2. There be some actions naturally moral in the substance of the act, as many things commanded, and forbidden in the Morall Law; and these are to be regulated by the Law of nature and the Morall Law; 3. There be some
some actions mixed, as such actions in which nature, or concealed instincts of nature are the chief principles, yet in, and about these actions, as in their modification of time, place, and manner, and measure, there is a speciall morality, in regard of which they are to be ruled by the word, such mixed actions as these, that are mentioned by Hooker. As to move, sleep, take the cup at the hand of a friend, cannot be called simply moral, for to move may be purely natural, as if a man against his will fall off a high place, or off a horse, to start in the sleep are so natural, that I know not any morality in them; but sure I am, for Nathaniel to come to Christ, which was also done by a natural motion, is not a mere natural action, proceeding from the most concealed instincts of nature; to sleep hath somewhat natural in it, for beasts do sleep, beasts do move; I grant they cannot take a cup at the hand of a friend, they cannot fail one another: (It is Hooker's instance) but fancy sometimes in men do these, whereas conscience should do them: What is natural in moving and sleeping, and what is common to men with beasts, I grant, Scripture doth not direct or regulate these acts of moving and sleeping; we grant actions natural and common to us, with beasts, need not the rule of the Word to regulate them: But this I must say (I speak it, my Record is in Heaven, not to offend any) Formalists, as such, and as Prelaticall, are irreligious and Profane: One of them asked a godly man, Will you have Scripture for giving your horse a peck of Oats, and for breaking winde, and easing or obeying nature? And therefore they bring in these instances to make sport: But I conceive, sleeping moderately, to enable you to the service of God, as eating, drinking, that God may be glorified, 1 Cor. 10:31. are also in the measure, & manner of doing, Morall, & so ruled by Scripture, and Scripture only, and not regulated by natural instincts: But what is all this to the purpose? are Surplice, Crossing, Saints-days, such actions as are common to us with beasts, as moving and sleeping are? Or is there no more need that the Prelate be regulated in wearing his corner-Cap, his Surplice in Crossing, then a beast is to be ruled by Scripture in moving, in sleeping, in eating grassle?

2. Express and actual reference and intention to every Commandment of God, or to God's glory in every particular action; I do not urge, a habituall reference and intention I conceive is hol-
den forth to us in Scripture: 1 Cor. 10. 31. 3. God by every effect, proceeding from the most concealed instinct of nature is made manifest in his power. What then? the power of God is manifest in the Swallows building her nest; Ergo, neither the Swallow in building her nest, nor the Prelate in Crossing an Infant in Baptism to dedicate him to Christ, have need of any express or actual reference to any Commandment of God or Gods glory: Truly, it is a vain consequence in the latter part, except Hooker make Surplice, Crossing, and all the mutable Frame of Church-Government to proceed from the most concealed instincts of nature, which shall be new Divinity to both Protestants and Papists: And I pray you, what power of God is manifest in a Surplice? I conceive it is a strong Argument against this mutable frame of Government, that it is not in the power of men to devise, what Positive signs they please, without the word to manifest the power, wisdom and other attributes of God: For what other thing doth the two Books opened to us, Psal. 19. The Book of Creation and Providence; and the Book of the Scripture, but manifest God in his nature and works, and mans misery and Redemption in Christ?

Now the Prelates and Papists devise a third blanke book of unwritten Traditions and mutable Ceremonials: We see no Warrant for this book: 4. Hooker maketh a man in many Morall Actions, as in wearing a Surplice, in many actions flowing from concealed instincts of nature, as in moving, sleeping, like either the Philosophers, Civilian or Morall Atheist, or like a beast to act things, or to do by the meer instinct of nature. Whereas being created according to Gods Image, especially, he living in the visible Church, he is to do all his actions deliberate, even naturall and morall in Faith, and with a Warrant from scripture, to make good their Morality, Ps.: 119.9. Prov.3:23,24. 2 Cor.5:7. And truly Formalists give men in their Morals to live at random, and to walk, without taking heed to their ways, according to Gods Word.

Hooker. It sufficeth that our Morall actions be framed, according to the Law of reason, the generall axioms, rules, and principles of which being so frequent in holy Scripture, there is no let, but in this regard, even out of Scripture, such duties may be deduced by some kind of consequence (as by long circuit of deduction it may be, that even a truth out of any truth may be concluded) howbeit no man be bound to
such sort to deduce all his actions out of Scripture, as if either the place he is to him unknown, Whereon they may be concluded, or the reference to that place, not presently considered of, the action shall in that be condemned as unlawful.

An. 1. The Law of reason in Morals (for of such we now speak) is nothing but the Morall Law and will of God, contained fully in the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament; and therefore is not to be divided from the Scriptures; if a man be ruled in that, he is ruled by Scripture: for a great part of the Bible, of the Decalogue, is Printed in the reasonable soul of man: As when he loveth his Parents, obeyeth his superiors, saveth his Neighbour in extreme danger of death, because he doth these according to the Law of Reason, shall it follow that these actions which are expressly called be to yous, Rom. 2. 14. the things or duties of the Law, are not warranted by express Scripture, because they are done according to the Law of natural reason? I should think the contrary most true.

2. Such duties (faith he) Morall duties (I hope he must mean) to God and our Neighbour, may be deduced by some kind of consequence out of Scripture: But by what consequence? Such as to Argue, Quidlibet ex quolibet. The Catechisme taught me long ago of duties to God and my Neighbour, that they are taught in the ten Commandments. Now if some Morall duties to God and man be taught in the ten Commandments, and some not taught there: 1. Who made this distinction of duties? None surely but the Prelats and the Papist. If the Scripture warrant some duties to God and our Neighbour, and do not warrant some, the Scripture must be unperfect.

2. The warranting of actions that may be service to God, or will-worship, or homicide by no better ground then Sulpice and Crosse, can be warranted, or by such a consequence, as you may deduce all truth out of any truth, is no warrant at all; the Traditions of Papiists may thus be warranted. 3. Nor is the action to be condemned, as unlawful in itself, because the agent cannot see by what consequence it is warranted by Scripture, it followeth only to him that so doth, it is unlawful, Rom. 14. 14. In that he doth, Bonum non bene, a thing lawful, not lawfully. 4. It is impossible to deduce all truth out of any truth: For then because the Sun riseth to day, it should follow, Ergo, Crosse and Sulpice are Lawfull: I might as well deduce the contrary, Ergo, they are unlawful.

N 2  Hooker:
2. Book.p. Hooker: Some things are good in so mean a degree of goodness, that men are only not disproved, nor disallowed of God for them, as Eph. 5. 20. No man baseth his own flesh, Matth. 5. 46. If ye do good unto them that do so to you, the very Publicans themselves do as much: They are worse then Infidels that provide not for their own, 1 Tim. 5. 8. The light of nature alone, maketh these actions in the sight of God allowable. 2. Some things are required to salvation by way of direct, immediate and proper necessity final, so that without performance of them, we cannot in ordinary course be saved.—In these, our chiefest direction is from Scripture, for nature is no sufficient director what we should do to attain life Eternall. 3. Some things although not so required of necessity, that so leave them undone exclueth from salvation, are yet of so great dignity and acceptation with God, that most ample reward is laid up in Heaven for them, as Matth. 10. A Cup of cold Water shall not go unrewarded: And the first Christians sold their possessions, and 1 Thess. 2. 7 9. Paul would not be burdensome to the Thessalonians: Hence nothing can be evil that God approveth, and be approved much more then be doth Command, and the precepts of the law of Nature may be otherwise known then by the Scripture, then the bare mandates of Scripture is not the only rule of all good and evil, in the actions of Morall men.

Ans. 1. The Popery in this Author (in disputing for a Platform of Government) that is up and down, and changeable at the will of men, made me first out of love with their way: for his first classe of things allowable by the light of Nature without Scripture, is far wide; for Eph. 5. 20. That a man love his own flesh, is Commanded in the sixth Commandment, and the contrary forbidden: otherwise for a man to kill himself, which is self-hatred, should not be forbidden in Scripture, the very light of naturé alone will forbid ungratitude in Publicans, and condemn a man that provideth not for his own: But that this light of nature excludeth Scripture and the Doctrine of Faith, is an untruth: for Hooker leaveth out the words that are in the Text, and most against his cause: He that provideth not for his own, is worse then an Infidel, and hath denied the Faith: Ergo, the Doctrine of Faith commandeth a man to provide for his own. What Morall goodness nature teacheth, that same doth the Morall Law teach, so the one excludeth not the other.

2. It is false, that Scripture only as contradistinguishing from the Law
Law of Nature, doth direct us to Heaven: for both concurrth in a special manner, nor is the one exclusive of the other. 3. For his third class is expressly the Popish Works of Supererogation, of which Hooker and Papists both give two Characters. 1. That they are not Commanded. 2. That they merit a greater degree of glory: Both are false: To give a Cup of cold water to a needy Disciple, is commanded in Scripture, Isa. 57. 9, 10. Matth. 25. 41. 42. And the contrary punished with everlasting fire in Hell: For Paul not to be burdened to the Thessalonians, and not to take Stipend or wages for Preaching, is commanded, for considering the condition that Paul was in, was, 1 Thess. 2. 6. To seek glory of men, was a thing forbidden in Scripture, and so the contrary cannot be a thing not commanded; and not to be gentle, v. 7. As the servant of God ought to be, even to the enemies of the truth, 1 Tim. 2. 24. Not to be affectionately defrived to impart soul & Gospel and all, to those to whom he Preached, as it is v. 8, is a sin forbidden, and for the merit of increase of glory, it is a dream. Hence I draw an Argument against this mutable form of Government: The changeable Positives of this Government, such as Crossing, Surplice and the like, are none of these three enumerated by Hooker. 1. They are not warranted by the Law of nature, for then all Nations should know by the light of nature, that God is decently worshipped in Crosses and linen Surplice, which is against experience. 2. That these Positives are not necessary to salvation, with a proper small necessity, as I take, is granted by all. 3. I think Crosses and Surplice, cannot deserve a greater measure of glory: for Formalists deny either merit or efficacy to their Positives. The J. in Tannem. confirmeth all which is said by Hooker, as did Aquinas before him: And Ekins in his conference with Luther, and Oecolampadius, who say, for imagery and their Traditions; that it is sufficient that the Church say such a thing is truth and to be done, and the scripture doth not gainsay it.

Aquinas

Sect. IV. of our Morall Actions

Works of Supererogation held by Hooker.

Tanner. in 22. to 3. disp. 5. de Relig. q. 2. Dub. 3. Aquinas

SECT. V.

Morall Obedience resolved ultimately in Scripture.

For farther light in this point, it is a Question: What is the formal object of our obedience in all our Morall actions? That is, Whether is the Faith practicall of our obedience, & the obedience itself, in all the externals of Church Government resolved in this ultimately and finally. This and this we do, and this point of Government we believe and practice; because the Lord hath so appointed it, in an immutable Platform of Government in Scripture; or because the Church hath so appointed, or because there is an intrinsicall convenience in the thing itself, which is discernable by the light of nature? Ans. This Question is near of blood to the Controversie between Papists and us, concerning the formal object of our faith: that is, Whither are we to believe the Scripture to be the Word of God, because so faith the Church: or upon this objective ground, because the Lord so speaketh in his own Word: Now we hold, that Scripture it self furniseth light and faith of it self, from it self; and that the Church doth but hold forth the light: as I see the light of the Candle, because of the light itself, not because of the Candlestick; Hence in this same very Question, the Jews were not to believe, that the smallest pin of the Tabernacle, or that any officer, High-Priest, Priest or Levite, were necessary, nor were they to obey in the smallest Ceremoniall observance; because Moses and the Priests or Church, at their godly discretion, without God's own special warrant said so: But, because so the Lord spake to Moses, so the Lord gave in writing to David and Solomon, 1 Chron. 28. 11. 19. And so must it be in the Church of the New Testament, in all the Positives of Government; otherwise, if we observe Saints-days, and believe Crossing and Surplice, hath this Religion signification, because the Church faith so; then is our obedience of conscience finally resolved in the Testimony of men so speaking, at their own discretion without any warrant of scripture. 2. To believe and obey in any Religious Positives, because it is the pleasure of men so to Command, is to be servants of men, and to make their will the formal reason of our obedience, which is unlawful. If it be said, that we are to believe and Practice many things in natural necessity, as to eat, move, sleep, and many circumstantial of Church-Policy, because the Law of natural reason faith so; and because there
is an intrinsicall convenience, and an aptitude to edifie, & to decorse
and beautifie in an orderly and a decent way the service of God,
and not simply, because the Church saith so, nor yet because the
Lord saith so in the Scripture, and therefore all our obedience
is not Ultimately and finally resolved into the Testimony of the
Scripture. I answer, That there be some things that the Law of
Nature commandeth, as to move, eat, sleepe; and here with leave
I distinguish Factum, the common practice of men from the jus,
what men in conscience ought to do, as concerning the former, mo-
rall and natural men's practice is all resolved in their own carnal
will, and lusts, and so they eat, move and sleep, because nature, and
carnal will, leadeth them thereunto, not because God in the Law
of nature (which I humbly conceive to be a part of the first ele-
ments and principles of the Morall Law, or Decalogue, and so a
part of Scripture) doth so warrant us to do; and therefore the
moving, eating, drinking of natural Moralists, are materially
lawfull and conforme to scripture, for God by the Law of nature
commandeth both Heathen men, and pure Moralists within the vi-
sible Church, to do natural acts of this kind; because the Lord
hath revealed that to be his will in the Book of nature: But these
Heathen do these acts, because they are suitable to their lusts and
carnal will, and not because God hath commanded them so to do
in the Book of nature; and this is their fin in the manner of doing
though materially, Et quod substantiam afferat, the action be good,
and the same is the fin of natural men within the visible Church,
and a greater fin; for God not only commandeth them in the Law
of nature, but also in Scripture to do all these natural acts, because
God hath revealed his will in these natural acts, as they are mo-
rall to natural men within the visible Church, both in the Law of
nature, and in the Scripture, and De jure they ought to obey, because
God so commandeth in both, and in regard all within the visible
Church, are obliged to all natural actions in a spiritual way, though
their eating, moving, sleeping be lawfull materially, Et quod substan-
tiam afferas, yet because they do them without any the least habituall
reference to God, so commanding in natures Law and scripture,
they are, in the manner of doing, finstull; otherwise Formalists go on
with Papists and Arminians to justify the actions of the unregeren-
rated, as simply Lawfull and good, though performed by them with
no
no respect to God or his Commandment: 2. As concerning actions of Church-Policy, that cannot be warranted by the light of nature, and yet have intrinsically a convenience and a tendency to edify and decently to accommodate the worship of God. I conceive these may be done, but not because the Church so commandeth, as if their commandment were the formal reason of our obedience, but because partly the light of the Law of reason, partly scripture doth warrant them; but that Cross and Surplice can be thus warranted is utterly denied: Again I conceive that there be two sorts of positives in the externals of Government or worship: 1. Some Divine, as that there be in the Public Worship, Prayers, Praising, Preaching, Sacraments, and these are substantials; that there be such Officers, Paltors, Teachers, Elders and Deacons; that there be such censures as rebuking, Excommunication and the like, are morally Divine, or Divinely Morall: and when the Church formeth a Directory for worship and Government, the Directory itself is in the form not simply Divine. And if it be said that neither the Church of the Jews, nor the Church Apostolique had a written Directory, nor they had a written Leiturgie or book of Common Prayers or Publick Church-service: I answer, nor had either the Jewish or Apostolick Church any written Creed or systeme, written of fundamentall Articles, such as is that, which is commonly called the Apostolick Creed; but they had materially in the Scripture the Apostolick Creed; and the Directory they had also in the same way, for they practised all the Ordinances directed, though they had no written Directory in a formal contexture or frame: for Prayers, Preaching, Praising, Sacraments and Censures never Church wanted in some one order or other, though we cannot say that the Apostolick Church had this same very order and forme: But a Leiturgie which is a commanded, imposed, stylized Form, in such words and no other, is another thing then a Directory as an unlawful thing is different from a Lawfull: 2. There be some things Positive humane, as the Ordering of some parts, or worship, or Prayer, the forme of words or phrases, and some things of the Circumstantial of the Sacrament, as what Cups, Wood or Metal, in these the Directory layeth a tie upon no man, nor can the Church in this make a Directory to be a Church Compulsory to strain men: And this way the Directory is not ordered and commanded in the frame and contexture,
Sect. V. Resolved in Scripture.

as was the Service-Book; and the Pastor or people in these, are not properly Morall Agents, nor do we pretend scripture should regulate men in these. But sure in Supper, men must be Morall Agents, no less then in eating and drinking at the Lords-Supper, and therefore they ought to be as particularly regulated by Scripture in the one, as in the other.

Quest. But who shall be judge of these things which you say are Circumstantialls only, as time, place, &c. and of these that Formalists say are adjuncts and Circumstances of worship, though also they have a Symbolicall and Religious signification: must not the Church judge, what things are indifferent, what necessary, what are expedient, what Lawfull? Answer, There is no such question imaginable, but in the Synagogue of Antichrist: For as concerning Norma judicandi, the Rule of judging, without all exception, the scripture ought to be the only rule and measure of all practical truths; how Formalists can make the Scripture the rule of judging of unwritten Ceremonies which have no warrant in Scripture, more then Papists can admit scripture to regulate and warrant their unwritten Traditions; I see not, we yield that the Church is the Politick, Ministeriall, and visible judge of things necessary and expedient, or of things not necessary and expedient: But we know no such question in this Controversie, as who shall be judge; but supposing the Church to be a ministeriall judge, and the Scripture the infallible Rule, the question is, whether this judge have any such power, as to prescribe Laws touching things indifferent, and to injoyne these, though they have no warrant from Scripture, as things necessary, and to binde where God hath not bound.

Quest. But doth not the Church determine things, that of themselves are indifferent; as whether Sermon should begin at nine of clock, or ten in the morning, and after the Church hath past a determination for the dyet of ten a clock, the indifferency of either nine or ten is removed, and the practice without any warrant of Scripture restricted to one, for order and peace sake; and why may not the like be done in Positives of Church-Government? Answer: The truth is, the Church by her will put forth no determination on the time, but only ministerially declareth that which Gods providence accommodating it self to the season, climate, the convenience of
of the congregation as they lie in distance from the place of meeting, hath determined already: But neither Providence, Scripture, nor natural reason hath determined, that there should be in every Diocesan Church a Monarch-Prelate, Pastor of Pastors, with majority of power of jurisdiction and ordination over Pastors, more then there should be one Pope, Catholick Pastor of the Catholick visible Church, or that Croffing should betoken Dedication to Christ's service, only will as will must determine positive Religious observances, such as these are.

**SECT. VI.**

*What Honour, Praise, Glory Veneration, Devotion, Service, Worship, &c. are.*

For the more clear opening of the ensuing Treatise, it is necessary to speak somewhat of Worship and Adoration, and especially of these: 1. Honour. 2. Praise. 3. Glory. 4. Reverence. 5. Veneration. 6. Devotion. 7. Religion. 8. Service. 9. Worship. 10. Love.

11. Obedience. 12. Adoration. 1. Honour is a sufficision of the excellency of any, Arist. Ethic. i. 8. e. 8. Aquinas. Honos est signum quoddam excellitiae. Honour is a sign or expression of Excellency in any; it doth not import any superiority in the party whom we honor, as Adoration doth. Praise is a speciall honouring of any, consisting in words. Glory is formally the effect of Honour, though it be taken, Pro claritate, for the celebrity or renounedames of any; yet glory seemeth to be founded upon celebrity, as its foundation. Reverence is a sort of Veneration of a person for excellency connotating a sort of fear. Veneration is a sort of fear, and reverencing of a person: I see not well any difference between Reverence and Veneration, except that Veneration seemeth to be some more, and cometh nearer to Adoration. Devotion is the promptitude, cheerfulnesse, or spirituall propension of the will to serve God; Religion is formally in this, when a man subjecteth himself to God, as to his supreme Lord, and thence atiseth to give him honour, as his God, and absolute Lord. The two integral parts of Religion, are the subjection of the reasonable creature to God. 2. An exhibition of honour; if any object that the subjection of the creature to God is humilit, not Religion, Raphael de la Torres in 22. tom. i. de obj. adorat. q. 81. art. 1. dif. unic. n. 8. answereth that subjection to God, as it influeth from a prin-
a principle of rendering due Honour to God for his excellency, its Religion; but as it abandoneth the passion of hope in 'the way of attaining honour, it is an act of humility to God, as the giving of money for the paying of debt, is an act of justice; but as it is given to moderate the desire of money, it is an act of Liberality. The acts of Religion are of two sorts, some internall and elicite, as to Adore, Sacrifice, Pray, by these a man is rightly ordered toward the Honouring of God only: But there be other acts imperated and Commanded by Religion, which flow immediately from other virtues, as it may be from mercy and compassion to our brother, but are Commanded by Religion, as Jam. 1. 27. Pure Religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, to visit the fatherless and the widows, &c. Service is from the bond of subjection, to reverence God as an inferior or servant, doth his Lord and Master: A servant doth properly do the will of his Master, for the gain or profit that redoundeth to his Master; but, because we cannot be profitable to the Almighty by way of gain; therefore we are to serve him in relation to an higher end, then accession of gain (of which the Lord is not capable, Psal. 16. 2; Tob 22. 3.) For the declaration of his glory: For Worship formally is to give reverence to God for his excellency; in one and the same act we may both Worship God and serve him. Only Service doth include the obligation of a servant to a Lord. As concerning Love, Faith and Hope, they are internall Worship, not properly Adoration: Love as Love doth rather import an equality with the thing loved, and a desire of an Union, rather than a submission. It is true, there is a perfection in that which we Love, but not essentially to perfect the Lover, that possibly may agree to the Love between man and man, but not to Love as Love: for the Father Loves Christ his Son, and did delight in him from eternity, Prov. 8. 30. A superior Angel may Love an inferior; yet the Father cannot be perfected by Loving Christ; nor a superior Angel, by Loving any inferior; Faith and Hope may suppose a resting on a helper as a helper, and so are internall Worship; if they be adoration formally may be a Question.

It is an untruth which Raphael de la Torres, with other schoolmen lay. That with the same Religion by which we Honour holy men, we Honour God, upon this reason, because holiness in them is a participation of the Divine Nature, therefore God must be the intrinsically O 2
Honoring of Holy men is not worship.

end, and formal reason, for which we have apprehended Saints. For He is in Saints, is a participation of the Divine nature; but it is a temporary and created participation, it is not the same very holiness that is in God; but the created effect thereof: and so the Love I bear to any Creature, because there is somewhat of God in every Creature; And the Love to our Neighbour, Commanded in the second Table of the Law, should be the Love of God, Commanded in the first Table of the Law. 2. When I bow to the gray-haired, and to the King; I then do an act of obedience to the fifth Commandment. No man can say, that when I bow to the King, or to an holy man, that I am then loving to the God of heaven, and Worshipping God: No acts terminated upon Saints living or dead, are acts of Worshipping God; yes, reverencing of the Ordinances of God, as the delighting in, or trembling at the Word, are not properly acts of adoring God.

Obedience. Obedience is founded, not formally upon God's excellency, properly so called; but upon his jurisdiction and Authority to Command.

Adoration. Adoration is the subjection or prostration of soul or body to God in the due recognition and acknowledgement of his absolute supremacy. There is no need, that Valesius should deny, that there is any internal Adoration, for that Adoration is only an external and bodily Worship of God, can hardly be esteemed; for there may be, and is Adoration in the blessed Angels, as may be gathered from Is. 6. 1-3, Heb. 1. 6. And it is hard to say, that the glorified spirits looked out of the body, and received by Christ, Acts 7. 59, Ps. 73. 27. Into Paradise, Luke 23. 43. And so with him, Philippi 3. 23. And Praying under the Altar, Rev. 6. 9. 10. And falling down before the Lamb, and acknowledging that he hath Redeemed them, Rev. 5. 8, 9, 10. do not Adore God and his Son Christ; because they have not bodies and knees to bow to him, and yet they Adore him, Phil. 2. 7, 9, 19. in a way suitable to their spiritual estate; It is an untruth that Raphael de la Torres, in 22. ref. 84. Art. 3. disp. 2. n. 1. faith, That Prosthetics deserve all external Worship now under the New Testament, as contrary to Grace, and Adoration of God in spirit and truth. For things subordinate are not contrary; we should deny the necessity of Baptism, and the Lords Supper, and of vocal praying and praying under the New Testament, which are in their externals,
The most
good: of
object,
with
act of
returning,
which
solution
to be
Religion,
true
death,
except
inconven-
conceal
not
Religious
education
of a
effect.
though there be no intention to bow to God; for bowing to God hath from the object, that it is a Religious bowing, though you intend not to direct that bowing to God, as bowing to Jupiter's Portrait, is a Religious Worshipping of that Portrait; though you intend, not to worship the Portrait: for the act and Religious object together, maketh the act of prostration or kneeling, to be essentially Religious, though there be no intention so; bow to thee; indeed the intention to bow to God, maketh kneeling to God to be more Morally good, laudable and acceptable before God, then if there were no such intention, but the want of the intention, maketh it not to be a Religious worship, nor can it make it to be civil worship. Hence let this be observed, that intention of bowing can, or may change that bowing which otherwayes were but civil (if there were no such intention of over-esteeeming the creature) into a Religious bowing, but neither our over or under-intention can change a Religious kneeling to God, or to an Image into a civil kneeling, because civil or natural bowing to creatures, is more under the power of an humane and voluntary institution of men, then Religious bowing, which hath from God without any act of man's free will, its compleat nature. When we kneel to Kings, we signify by that gesture, that we submit our selves to higher powers, not simply (saith P. Martyr.) but in so far, as they Command not things against the Word of the Lord. When we adore God, we adore him as the Supream Majesty, being ready to obey him in what he shall Command, without any exception; the Adoration of men, signifies a submission limited, if it go above bounds; it is the full intention of the Adorer, who may change the civil Adoration into Religious, and may ascend: But the Adoration of God cannot so descend, as it can turn into Civill Adoration, only keeping the same object it had before.

What worship is?

Worship is an action, or performance, or thing, by which we tender our immediate honour to God, from the nature of the thing itself: 1. I call it an action, because the passion of dying or suffering, is not formally worship; but only dying comparatively, rather then denying of Christ, or dying so, and so qualified, dying with Patience and Faith, may be called a worship. 2. I call it not an action only, but a performance of thing; because an office, as the Priesthood, the Ministry is a worship, and yet not an action; Sometimes,
time, Time it self, as the Sabbath Day is a Worship; yet it is not an action: So the Lord calleth it His Holy Day: and undeniably the Jewish days, the High Priests garment, and many things of that kinde, were Divine or Religious performances, things or adjuncts of Divine Worship, but so, as they are not meerly adjuncts of Worship, but also Worship: for the High Priests Ephod was not only a civil ornament, nor was it a meer Physicall or natural means to fence off the injuries of sun, and Heaven, we do not think that the Lord in all, or any place of the Old or New Testament setteth down any Laws concerning garments simpely, as they do fence off cold or heat, that belongeth to Art, only he speaketh of garments as contrary to gravity, as signes of vanity and lightnesse, Isa. 3. 16, &c. Zeph. 1. 8. 1 Pet. 3. 3, 4. And of garments as Religious observances, of which sort was the attire and garments of the Priests and High Priests in their service, in which consideration the Religious times, holy places, and Mosaicall garments were Divine Worship, by which God was immediatly honored, but not adjuncts only, or actions; but Religious things or performances. 3. It is such a performance, as from thence honour doth immediatly redound to God, but that this may be the clearer; I conceive that there is a twofold immediate honouring of God, in the worship of God: 1. An honouring of God lefse immediatly, as hearing of the word, is an immediate honouring of God, because honour floweth immediatly from God, both Ex conditione opera, and Ex conditione operatoris; from the nature of the work, and intention of the worker: yet it is a lefse immediate honouring of God, in regard, that I may also hear the word even from the condition of the work, and so from the intrinsically end of the worker, that I may learn to know God, and believe, for thus far I am led to honour God immediatly in hearing the word; that action of its own natures conveying honour to God, there interveneth also a medium amidst between me and the honouring of God, to wit, the Preacher, or the Bible; to which no externall adoration is due: There is another more immediate worship, to wit, praising of God, from which by an immediate result, God is honoured, and in worship especially strictely immediate, God is immediatly honoured both in the intention of the work, and the intrinsically end of it, and the intention of the worker; though no other thing be done, and others be not

Worship is an immediate honouring of God, but some worship hono- rath him more immediately, some less.
not edified either in knowledge, increase of Faith, or any other ways: And in this, duties of the second Table, of mercy and justice, differ from worship, in that such acts of love and mercy, as to give alms to save the life of my brother, or of his beast, are not acts of worshipping God: their intrinsicall end, and the nature of the work being to do good to the creature, principally, Ex natura, & conditions operis, though God also thereby be honoured; yet in a more secondary consideration: For I praying to God, do immediately from the nature of the act, honor God, though no good should either redound to myself, or to the creature; thereby, it is true, God, by acts of love and mercy to our neighbor, is honored two ways: 1. In that men seeing our good works do thence take occasion to glorifie our Heavenly Father, whose truth teacheth us by the grace of God, to do these works, but the intrinsicall and proper use of these, is to do good to our selves, as in works of sobriety, and to our neighbour, as in works of righteous dealing, but not immediately; and in the first and primary consideration to honor God, as in works of Piety, holiness and worship, the honouring of God by secondary resolute, both issue also from these duties of righteousness, but not as from the acts of praying, praising, Sacramentall eating, drinking. 2. The doer of these acts of mercy, may, and is to intend the honouring of God.

There is a twofold intention in worship, one formal and properly Religious, and is expounded Morall, Ex natura rer, to be Religious, it being such an intention, as can have no other state in worship, but a Religious State, as if the three Children should bow at the Commandment of the King of Babylon, though intending to worship the true God. Here should be an intrinsicall intention, Ex natura, & conditions operis, to worship, and that from two grounds conjoined together: 1. Here is bowing down: 2. Bowing down to a Religious Object, commanded by a Prince, and so cometh under the Morall notion of the command of a Judge. When the object of bowing down is Religious, the signification that we give divine honour to God by kneeling is as inseparable (faith, Raphael de la Torres) from kneeling or bowing down, as a bearing testimony by word, that God is true, and knoweth all secrets, and will be avenged on perjury, is inseparable from vocal swearing by the name of God, or as any man should be an Idolater, who
the Jews, being made a visible Church, shall receive the Lords Supper, and Pray and Prophecy with covered heads, men would judge it no dishonouring of their head, or not of dis-respect of the Ordinances of God: Though Paul having regard to a Nationall Custome in Carinath, did so esteem of it.

Antonius Corduba a Franciscan, enumerateth nine externall acts of Adoration, but speaketh nothing of uncovering the head; as 1. Sacrificing. 2. Martyrdome. 3. Giving and Receiving the Sacraments. 4. Suiting of Pardon. 5. Suiting of Grace. 6. Smilitating the breast. 7. Building of Churches. 8. Institution of Feasts. 9. Vows and Oaths. Prelaticall Formalists hide with them, in Building and Consecrating of Churches, and Holy-days, which are but will-worship, as used by them: And for Martyrdome, it is formally an act of Christian fortitude, not worship, the confession of Gods truth a Concomitant of Martyrdome, is indeed worship. How suitting of Pardon, and suitting of Grace are two externall acts of Adoration, I see not: for by this way, if we regard the multitude of things that we suit, there should be more then two: Consecrating of Churches is taken two ways: 1. For a meer dedication or Civill destination of any thing to its end and use: As when a house is builded, a garment is first put on, when we refresh our selves with a draught of water, we may pray for a blessing on these, and on all the Creatures for our use, and the very habituall intention of the builder of an house to dwell in, is a Civill dedication of it to that use for which it is ordained. Prayer added to it for a blessing of it in the use, makest not a Consecrated thing; for then my clothes every day put on, my sleep, my dayly walking in and out, my Physick, my meals, my horse, my ship I sail in, should all be Holy, Consecrated, and Religious things, which I were to Reverence as Religious things; for all these may be blessed in their use: But here is that we condemn in Religious dedication of Churches: 1. That the end being sacrificed, to wit, the habituall worshipping of God in that place. 2. The praying for the Church or house of worship, to say nothing of the vain Ceremonies used in the dedication of Churches: These two are applied to make the Church holy, and to denominate it the home of God, and capable of Religious veneration, and salutation: Then certainly, all the Synagogues of Judea, should be Religiously holy, as was the Temple. 2. And Prayers should be more acceptable
No place holy under the New Testament.

able to God in the Synagogue for the houses fake, then prayers in any other place. 3. God shall binde himself by promise to hear prayers in the Synagogue, or made with the face toward the Synagogue, as he did toward the Temple: we were obliged in the New Testament to pray with our faces toward the Churches or meeting places in the New Testament, and we should have one famous and celebrious Church for all Jews and Gentiles, more holy then all the little holy Temples now consecrated as holy places, and where shall this be? And what typicall signification shall it have? It must signifie Christ to come, or already come, both is unlawfull.

2. Again, if habituall Dedication by vertue of Prayer make a place holy, by the same reason actual Dedication should make a place holy; and the belly of the Whale should have been holy because there Jomab prayed, and every place a believer prayeth shall be holy, his closet, a private corner of his Orchard or Garden where he prayeth shall be holy, for these may be habitually designated and appointed (if you call this Dedication) for prayer only, and it shall be unlawfull to do any civil business there, more then it is unlawful (as Formalists teach) to do any other civil business in the Churches, or places of meeting in the New Testament: 3. God himself appointed the place, the Time when it should be built, the person, by whom, by Solomon, not David; the length, the breadth, the Chambers, Porches, Ornaments of the only holy place at Jerusalem; he hath no where appointed and prescribed these for the meeting places of the New Testament, but hath said that all places are alike, as touching any Religious holiness, Job.4.23. 1 Tim.2.8.

4. Shall we think God is not acceptably served, and that the Synagogues of the Jews, of which we read not any pattern or rule for Dedication, are Prophane, because they are not Dedicated by the Bishops laying the first foundation stone of the house? Or because they want the ornaments of whorish Ceremonies, that Duvenius enumerateth? or because they have not the surpassing beauty of admirable Temples, that Christians now a little overswelling with the zeal of prosperity builded for the worship of God, out of superlative detestation of Dioclesian, and Maximinus, who had demolished all the Churches which Christians had leave to build under tolerable Emperors, such as Severus, Gordianus, Philip, and

P 2
Galienus, as Enschius teacheth? Or that we are to give a Testimony of as cheerfull affectation for the beautifying of Temples, void of all typcall relation to the glory of Iesus Christ, as David did shew, 1 Chron. 38, 14. 2 Chron. 2, 5. And that it is Morall and perpetually obligatory under the New Testament; that we bestow charges upon sumptuous Temples, upon these fancied grounds of Master Hooker? For his first Morall ground is, Nothing is too dear to be bestowed above the furniture of God's service: 2. Because sumptuous Temples serve the world for a witness of his almightiness, whom we outwardly serve, and honour with the chiefest of outward things, as being of all things himself incomparably the greatest: 3. It were strange, that God should have made such store of glorious creatures on earth, & leave them all to be consumed on secular vanity, allowing none but the baser sort to be employed in his own service: 4. Rarest and most gorgeous treasures are too little for earthly Kings. 5. If the corruptible Temples of the holy Spirit are to be served with rich alms, what should be done for houses to edifice the living Temples redeemed by Iesus Christ: To all which I say: 1. The Temple of Jerusalem in its glory, proportion and beauty, was a Positive worship, and so must be warranted by the positive Warrant of the Word, and the like Warrant must all our Churches in the New Testament have: 2. If we must extend our liberality and bounty towards God to the highest, and to testify the greatnesse and Almightiness of him whom we serve: then did David and Solomon in both fail, there were more glorious and rich houses on earth, and divers times have been builded to the honour of false gods, and to declare the Royall magnificence of mortall Kings: God never for his own honour appointed such a banquet as Ahaseurus did, to continue for an hundred and fourscore days, Esther 1, 4. More might, and ought to have been done by David and Solomon, if it had been a morall ground to build a house, to be a witness of Almightiness: 3. And God appointed sacrifices, and Sacraments in both Testaments, as Testimonies of the great Lord Iesus; yet in base and obvious creatures; we may not devise Symbols or witnessing Images of the Almightiness of that God whom we serve, at our pleasure: 4. If our Lord love mercy better then sacrifice, especially under the New Testament, when his worship must be more spirituall: Then the Argument may be strongly retorted, we are to bestow more on feeding the
The place, 

1 Cor. 32.
Have ye not houses, &c. 
Make nothing for hallowing of Churches.

In publick meeting places and Churches in

1 Cor. 6. is denied, by all both 
Writers, that they then any consecrate 
the inconveniency of taking their Supper 
and drink in the same where the Lord's Supper 
was. Whereas they began to have suspected that 
the Church is a holier place, then their 
Logick I do not understand. It only con 
houses are estinmated from two sort of dif 
ferences, and no more.

Nor the place, Psl. 74. 6.

The place.

which is said, cor. 6.

Assemblies, or all the Congregations of 

expounded by the Temple, Enne 

1. Or all the question will be why 

the Church is the Lord, and 

where. Psl. 112. 4. 

The house holy to the Lord being 

ground to say, that 5 Fre 

with the church, as it is here in the three 

assemblies, is the House, the 

11. or God as the 

holy books of the New Testament.
The Synagogue not God's House as the Temple was.

faith of Cyrus, He is my Shepherd: and why? He shall perform all my pleasure, so Hos. 2:9. Therefore will I returne (faith God) and take away my corne in the time thereof, and my wine in the season thereof, and will recover my wool and my flax (given) to cover her nakedness. To say nothing that all the holy land was God's land, Hos. 9:3. They shall not dwell in the Lord's land; and consequently all the Synagogues were God's houses; and the enemy of whom the Church complaineth to God in that Psalm, was thus bold, as notwithstanding Canaan was God's Heritage and proper Land in a speciall manner, yet it was destroyed and burnt by the enemies, even these houses that God was worshipped in, not being spared; But how God was so present in every Synagogue, and that even when there were no actuall worship of God in it, as he was in the Temple, and that it was so holy a place, as they were to put off there shoes who came into the Synagogue, God shewing his own immediate presence in every synagogue, as he did, Exod. 3:5. To Moses in the burning bush, Exod. 5:1. v. 12. Is a thing that hath no warrant in the word of God, for if every Synagogue had been thus holy: 1. It should have been a house dedicated to God in a Religious way, as was the Temple: 2. God should dwell in every Synagogue then, & in every Church under the New Testament now, as he said he would dwell in the Temple. 3. Then must Heathens and the uncircumcised be forbidden to come into any Synagogue, or any Church under the New Testament, the contrary whereof was evident in scripture; none were forbidden to enter in the Synagogues, Paul, 1 Cor. 14:23, 24. alloweth that Heathens come into the Churches or meetings where Christians are worshipping God. 4. If either the Temple of Jerusalem was holy for the worship in it, or for that it was a Type of our Material Temples under the New Testament, then our Churches under the New Testament shall be more holy, yea, our private houses in which we may worship God shall be more holy, as our worship is more spiritual than carnall Commandments of the Levitical Law were, and the body must be more holy then the shadow; yea, all the earth now from the rising of the sun, to the going down of the same, in regard of more spiritual worship, even the Stables and Alehouses, where we may offer the Incense of Prayer to God, and offer the sacrifices of praises, Mal. 1:11. shall be alike holy, as either our Churches or the Temple was of old.
Ceremonies we esteem but reject upon these grounds: Our first and most important observance of God's will is universal and universal religion. If God's will is universal, and the same is true of his word, his Spirit, his method, his negative, and his arguments. Every worship held to be of Divine natures is unlawful, to the extent...
Gods Commandments of the first Table (I Command it not.) They Answer, To kill Children, is Man-slaughter; but I Reply: God doth not, Jer. 7. Reason against offering the seed to Molech, as it was murth and forbidden in the sixth Commandment: but a false worship, and forbidden in the second Commandment: Else he proveth not, that it was unlawfull worship against piety; but that it was an act of cruelty: Yea, so it be thought free and bind not the Conscience, it may be Lawfull worship, and is not condemned by this (God Commanded it not.) Ergo, It is not Lawfull.

I Commanded not, (faith (a) Morton, and (b) D. Burges;) that is, I discommanded, or forbade. Ans. So (c) faith the Ieruit Valentina; but so, Circumslicing of women, boyling of the Paschall Lambe, another Ark then Moses made, should not be unlawfull, for these are not expressly discommanded. But Gods Commanding to Circumcise the Male-child, to Roast the Paschall Lambe, to make this Ark: and his silence of Circumcision of women, and boyling the Pasleover, and silence of another Ark, is a Command. 2. The Text, Jer. 7. Is wronged, I Commanded not, neither came it in my heart to Command this Abomination: That is, I never purposed it as worship: else they knew, to kill their Children, except to God, as Abraham was Commanded, was unlawfull, as Isa. 63. 4. The day of Vengeance is in mine heart, 2 King. 10. 30. 1 King. 8. 18. Gen. 27. 41. To be in ones heart, is to purpose a thing. 3. Valentina faith, Exod. 18. 20. I Commanded not the false Prophet to speak; But why? By not sending or calling him: Else God did not say by a Positive Commandment to every false Prophet, Prophecy not; but because God bade him not Prophecy, he was to know God forbade him: Else to speak Arbitrary Doctrines and Prophecies, not obeying the Conscience, were no false Prophecying.

They Object, 1 King. 8. 17. It was well that it was in Davids heart to build a house to God, and yet David had no warrant in Gods Word, for to build an house to God. So Morton (d) Burges (e) Ans. David had a twofold will and purpose to build Gods house: 1. Conditionall: It was revealed to David, that God would have an house built; therefore David might conditionally purpose to build it; so it was Gods will he should be the man. This wanteth not Gods word: We may desire what ever may promote Gods glory conditionally. As that Petition teacheth (Thy Kingdom come,) This was recem-
recommended of God and approved, 12 Kin. 8. 17. 2. A resolute will upon Nathan’s mistake, the blind leading the blind, this was not Commanded, though the desire of the end was good, that is, that a house should be built.

Morton, 16. It was Lawfull upon common equity, considering God’s mercy to him, in subduing his enemies, and that he dwelt in Cedars, whereas God wanted an house, but he could not actually perform it, without God’s word: So Burges.

Ans. 1. The consequence without God’s word, is as good to conclude, that David might actually build God’s house, as to will and purpose to build it: Because the word is a perfect rule to our thoughts and purposes, no else then to our actions; if to build without God’s word was unlawful: Ergo, to purpose this without God’s word was unlawful. A purpose of sin, as of Adultery, is sin, a purpose of will-worship, is will-worship and sin. 2. A man of blood is as unfit to purpose to be a type of a peaceable Saviour, as to be a type of a Saviour, 3. If God reprove Samuel’s light for judging according to the eye, 1 Sam. 16. 7. Far more he rebuketh his purpose to Anoint a man without his word, who gave the Kingdom to whom he pleaseth. Yet Samuel had a good intention, and God’s word in general, that one of Jesse’s Sons should be King. 4. If that good purpose had remained with David deliberately to build the Lord’s house, after the Lord had said, Solomon, not David, must build the house; it would have been sinfull, yet the reasons upon common equity, and a general warrant that God would have an house, had been as good as before; if Morton’s consequence be once good, its ever good. 5. By this, without the warrant of the Word, we may purpose to glorifie God: The Baptist without God’s warrant, may purpose a New Sacrament, Caiphas may purpose that he shall be the man who shall dye for the people; I may purpose to glorifie God, by a thousand new means of worshipping: Papists have good intentions in all they do. 6. A purpose of heart is an inward substantial worship warranted by God’s Word, Psal. 19. 14. Psal. 50. 21. Psal. 74. 11. Jer. 4. 14. Gen. 8. 2. Eccles. 2. 3. Isa. 55. 7. Ergo, The word is not a rule in substantial and Morall Duties; heart-purposes cannot be indifferent heart-ceremonies. 7. David needed not aske counself at God’s mouth and word, for an indifferent heart-purposes, grounded upon sufficient warrant of common
common equity, whether he should act it or not; that which warranteth the good purpose, warranteth the acting of the good purpose. 8. Who knoweth if God rewardeth additions to the word, with a sure house, and all indifferent Ceremonies?

All additions to God's Word are unlawful, Deut. 4. 2. Deut. 12. 32. Prov. 30. 6. Rev. 22. 18. Iob. 10. 31. Luk. 16. 29. 30. 2 Tim. 3. 17. Psalm 19. 7. 8. So, (a) Basilius, (b) Hieron, (d) Cyprian, (e) Chrysostome, (f) Procopius, (g) Tertullian. All the Fathers, all Protestant Divines opposing Traditions, put their Seal and Pen to the plentitude of Scripture: But humane Rites are Additions to God's word. (h) Morton and Burgess say, God forbidden in the foresaid places, additions of any thing, as Divine and a part of God's Word, or additions contrary to God's Word, and corrupting the sense thereof, but not additions, perfecting and explaining his Word, as Commentaries and Annotations of the Text.

So do Papists Answer, Duvallius, (i) a Sarcanist, He forbidden other new Sacrifices, as of the Gentiles, who offered their Sons and Daughters: So (k) Valentin, (l) Vasquez, (m) Bellarmine, (n) Suarez, (o) Cajerian, They are not added which the Church addeth, they are from the Spirit of God: So (p) Bures; but all these do exclude, not expound the Texts: 1. Because, if the Jewish Princes had Commanded Arbitrary and conditionall Arks, Sacrifices, places of worship, so they add not heathenish and wicked, as the Gentiles Sacrificing their Children, they had not failed by this answer; yet Moses the Prince, is Commanded to make all according to the Passover in the Mountains. 2. God speaketh to all Israel, and not to the Princes only; Deut. 4. 1. Hearken to Israel, he speaketh to those who are hidden to keep their soul diligently, v. 6. 3. It is Bellarmine's groundlesse Charity, to think private heads who were not Princes and Law-givers, did not take upon a hairy Manusc to deceive, Zach. 13. 4. And say, Thus finish he Lord, whom God had not spoken to them; 1er. 23. 16. 32. Yes, and Private women added their...
own dreams to the word of God, Ezek. 13, 17, 18. 3. They say Traditions are from God's Spirit: but hath God's Spirit lost all Majesty, Divinity and power in speaking? If the Popes Decretals, the Councils, the ditty Traditions, wanting life, Language, and power, be from God's Spirit: Formalists admit Traditions from an humane spirit, and in this are shamed even by Papists, who say, God only can add to his own Word, whereas they say, men, and the worst of men, Prelates may add to God's word: 4. But that additions perfecting are forbidden is clear: 1. Additions perfecting, as Didoclives (p) faith, argueth the word of imperfection, and that Baptism is not perfect without Crossing. 2. It is God's Prerogative to add Canonic Scripture to the five books of Moses, and the New Testament, and the doctrine of the Sacraments which cannot be Syllogistically deduced out of the Old Testament, Matth. 28, 19, 20, lob. 21, 31, Heb. 3, 2, Rev. 1, 19. and these are perfecting and explaining additions, therefore men may by as good reason add Canonic Scripture to the Revelation, as add new Positive Doctrines like this (The holy Spirit is a sacred signe of Pastoral Holinesse) (Crossing is a signe of dedicating the childe to Christ's service) for Papists say, even Valquez (q) That the Pope neither in a general Council, nor out of it, can ordain any new points of Faith, which are not contained in the principles or Articles revealed, and may not be evidently concluded out of them.

Formalists answere, It is not lawfull to add any thing as a part of divine worship, but it is lawfull to add sometome as an indifferent Rite, coming from Authority grounded upon common equity: And this is the answere of the Jesuite Valquez (r) The Pope and Church cannot make an Article of Faith, for that is believed by divine Faith, to come from God only, but as Lawgivers they may give Laws that bindeth the conscience, and yet are not altogether essentiall in worship. If additions, as divine parts of God's worship (say we) be forbidden; God then forbidding to add such Traditions, forbiddeth his own spirit to add to God's word, for no man but God can add additions Divine; that is, coming from God, but God himself, & by good consequence the forbidding men to add additions, as really coming from God, should forbid men to be Gods, for divine additions are essentiell additions coming from God; but if he forbid additions only of mens divising, but obstruded to
have the like efficacy and power over the conscience, that Canonick Scripture hath, then were it lawfull to adde killing of our children to Molech, so it were counted not really to come from God, with opinion of divine necessity; and by this, God should not forbid things to be added to his Word, by either private or publick men, but only he should forbid things to be added with such a quality, as that they should by Divine Faith be received, as coming from God, and having the heavenly stamp of Canonick Scripture, when as they are come only from the Pope and his bastard Bishops; so all the fables of the Evangel of Nicodemus, the materials of the Jewish and Turkish Religion might be received as lawfull additions, so they do not contradict the Scripture, as contrary to what is written, but only beside what is written, and withall, so they be received as from the Church: Also 3. Additions contrary to the word, are diminutions; to adde to the eight Command this addition (The Church saith it is lawfull to seal) were no addition to the ten Commandments, but should destroy the eight Commandment, and make nine Commandments only, and the meaning of God's precept, Deut. 12. Thou shalt neither add, nor diminish should be, Thou shalt neither diminish, neither foalst thou diminish: And so our Masters make Moses to forbid no additions at all: 6. Commentaries and Expositions of the Word, if sound, shall be the word of God itself; the true sense of a speech, is the form and essence of a speech, and so no additions thereunto but explanations, except you make all sound Sermons, Arbritary Ceremonies and Traditions, whereas Articles of Faith expounded are Sermons, and so the Scripture it self materially taken, is but a Tradition.

Quest. II.

Whether Scripture be such a perfect rule of all our Morall Actions, as that the distinction of essentiall and necessary, and of accidental and Arbitrary worship cannot stand? And if it forbid all worship not only contrary, but also beside the word of God as false, though it be not refused as divine and necessary.

Formalists do acknowledge, as Morton, Burges, Hooker, and others teach us, that Ceremonies which aremeet Ceremonies, indifferent in nature and opinion, are not forbidden; yea, that in the general
8. Matters of moer fact, known by sense and humane testimonie, are to be considered according to their Physicall existence if they be done or not done; if Titus did such a thing or not, such are not in that respect to be proved by Scripture: 2. They may be considered according to their essence and Morall quality of good and lawfull, bad or unlawfull, and so they are to be warranted by Scripture.

9. There is a general warrant in Scripture for Worship and morall actions, twofold: either when the Major proposition is only in Scripture, and the Assumption is the void of men, or when both the Proposition and Assumption are warranted by Scripture; the former warrant I think not sufficient, and therefore the latter is necessary to prove the thing lawfull.

Hence our 1. Conclusion. Every worship, and Positive obser- vance of Religion, and all Morall actions are to be made good, by utui y稻at (according as it is written) though their individual circumstances be not in the word.

2. The offering, for the Babe Iesus, two Turtle Doves, and two Pigeons, are according as it is written in the Law, and yet Ioseph and Mary, the Priest the Offerer, the day and hour when the male childe Iesus for whom are not in the Law, Exod.13.13, Numbers 8. 26. In the second Table Amaziah his Fact of mercy in not killing the children for the Fathers sin is said to be, 2 King.24.6. performed by the King; לונר על ויאשה פוריית יתשון As it is written in the Book of the Law of Moses: yet in that Law, Deut.24.6. There is not a word of Amaziah, or the children whom he spared: because these be Physicall, and not Morall circumstances, as concerning the essence of the Law of God. Hence in the Categories of all Lawfull Worship and Morall actions: both Proposition and Assumption is made good by this, As it is written, even to the lowest specificke degree of morality as all these.

1. The Worship of God. 2. Sacramentall worship under that.
3. Under that, participation of the Lords Supper. 4. Under all, the most speciall participation of the Lords Supper by John, Anna, in such a Congregation, such a day; All these I say, both in Proposition and Assumption are proved by y稻at. And can bid this (according as it is written) the like I may instance in all other Worship, in all acts of Discipline, in all Morall acts of justice and mercy, in the second
v. 105. If the Wisdom of God cause us to understand Equity, Judgment, Righteousness, and every good way, Prov. 2. 9. And cause us to walk safely, so that our feet stumble not, Prov. 3. 25. So that when we go, our steps shall not be straightened, and when we over run, our feet shall not stumble, Prov. 4. 11, 12. If wisdom lead us as a Lamp, and and a Light, Prov. 6. 23. Then all our actions Morall, of first or second Table, all the Worship, and right means of the Worship, must be ruled by this, (according as it is written) else in our actions we walk in darkness, we fall, stumble, go aside, and are taught some good way, and instructed about the use of some holy Crossing, some Doctrine of Purgatory, and Saint worship, without the light of the Word: But this latter is absurd: Ergo, So is the former.


Not all actions in man, but Morall actions one ly are regulated by the word.


It is poor what (c) Hooker saith against us: If Wisdom of Scripture teach us every good path, Prov. 2. 9. By Scripture only, and by no other means, then there is no art and trade, but Scripture should teach. But wisdom teacheth something by Scripture, something by spiritual influence, something by worldly experience, Thomas believed Christ was risen by sense, because he saw him, not by Scripture, the Ieuous believed by Christ's miracles.

Answ. 1. Some actions in man are meerly naturall, as to grow: these are not regulated by the word. 2. Some agree to man, as he liveth, as to sleep, eat, drink, and these are considered as animall actions, Actiones animales, and do not belong to our Question: But as they are in man, they be two wayes regulated by the word. 1. According to the substance of the act, the Law of nature, and consequently, the word of God Commandeth them: If one should kill himself through total abstinence from meat and sleep, he should sin against the Law of nature. 2. These actions according as they are to be moderated by reason, are to be performed soberly, and are in Gods word Commanded. (d). 3. Some actions agree to man, as he is an Artificial, or Scientific agent, as to speak right Latine, to make accurate demonstrations in Geometry, and these are ruled by Art, man in these, as they be such, is not a Morall Agent, but an Artificial Agent, I say as they are such, because while one speaketh Latine according to the Art of Discipiter or Linacer, he should not lie, and all morality in these actions are to be ruled by Gods word, and as actions of Art, they are not every good path, or every good Morall way, that Solomon speaketh of, Prov. 2. 9.

And
and therefore it is a vain Argument against the perfection of God's word.

2. Hooker faith, God teacheth us something by spiritual influence. As without the word, by only influence, spiritual, as he taught the Prophets; it was a vain instance, for influence, visions, inspirations were of old in place of Scripture. If Ceremonies, as Crossing & Surplice come this way from God, they be as nobly born, as the Old and New Testament: If God teach any thing now by influence spiritual without Scripture. Hooker is an Enthusiast, and an Anabaptist: If experience and sense teach many things now, which Scripture doth not teach, and yet is worship, or a Morall Action, we desire to know these: 3. The instance of Thomas, learning that Christ is risen from the dead, by sense and not by Scripture, and of the Jews believing by miracles, and not by Scripture, might make a Jesuit blash, for Christ's Resurrection, and the Doctrine of the Gospel confirmed by Miracles, are not Arbitrary Rites beside God's word, but fundamentals of salvation: Hence the man will have us believe God revealeth Articles of faith to us, by other means then by his word: Thomas was helped by his sense, and some Jews to believe Christ's Death and Resurrection by miracles: But the formall Object of their Faith, was the Lord speaking in his scriptures.

2. Hooker Objecteth: When many meats are set before me in the Table, all are indifferent, none unlawful, if I must be ruled by Scripture, and eat in faith, and not by nature's light, and common discretion: I shall sin in eating one meat before another. How many things (faith (e) Sanderson) do Parents and Masters command their servants and sons? Shall they disobey, while they finde a warrant from Scripture?

Ans. For eating in measure, the Scripture doth regulate us, for eating for God's glory, the scripture also doth regulate us, and the action of eating according to the substance of the action, is warranted by the Law of nature, which is a part of the word, the meer order in eating is not a Morall action, and so without the lifts of the question. If the question be of the order of eating, I think not that

1 Morall action: 2. Eating of divers meats is a mixt action, and so requireth not a warrant in the Morality every way; if you eat such meats (where there be variety to choose) as you know doth ingender a Stone, or a Cholick, you sin against the sixth Commandment.
3. Masters, Parents, Commanders of Armies may command Apprentices, Servants, Sons, Soldiers, many Artificiall actions in Trades, in War, where both Commanders and obeyers are artificiall, not moral Agents, and so they touch not the question, but what is moral in actions of Art, Oeconomy, Sciences, is ruled by the word, except our Masters offend that Paul said, Children should obey their Parents in the Lord: That men are not both in commanding inferiors, and obeying Superiours vexed with scruples, cometh not from the insufficiency of God's word, but from this, that mens consciences are all made of stuffness. But if this be true, Seth, Enoch, Noah, Shem, could not eat nor sleep (faith (f). Hooker) but by revelation which was Scripture to them.

Answer, Supernatural Revelation was to these Fathers the rule of God's worship, and all their actions supernaturall, and of all their actions moral, in relation to the last end; but for eating and drinking, they being actions naturall, they were to be regulated in these; by natural reason, and the Law of nature, which was a part then of the Divine Tradition that then ruled the Church, while as yet the word was not written. Hooker urgeth thus: It will follow that Moses, the Prophet and Apostles should not have used natural Arguments, to move people to do their duty; they should only have used this Argument (As it is written) else they taught them other grounds and Warrants for their actions then Scripture. Ans. None can deny natural Arguments to be a part of the word of God, as is clear.

1 Cor. 15. 36. 37. 1 Cor. 11. 14. Yea, Christ, Mat. 7. 12. teacheth, that this principle of nature (whatsoever ye would men should do to you, do ye so to them) is the Law and the Prophets, because it is a great part of the Law and the Prophets, and therefore they say in effect (As it is written in the Scripture) when they say (as it is written in men's heart by nature.) 2. Principles of nature, are made Scripture by the Pen-men of the holy Ghost, and do binde as the Scripture. 3. It will be long ere the Law of nature teach Crouching, and kneeling to bread, to be good Ceremonie.

They Object. I could not then ride ten miles, to solace myself with my friends, except I had Warrant from Scripture, and seeing the Scripture is as perfect in acts of the second Table, as in acts of the first; I must have a reason of all the businesse celebrat mans and man, of all human and municipal Laws, but it is contriv'd (faith Sanderson) faith,
as certain as Logick can make it, is not required in these, but only Ethical and Conjectural faith, whereby we know things to be Lawfull Negatively: It is not required that we know them to be Positively conform to Gods Word.

Ans. If you ride ten miles with your friend and do not advise with his word, who sayes (Redeem the time) you must give account for idle actions, if Christ say, you must give an account for idle words.

2. Though there seem to be more Liberty in actions of the second Table, then of the first; because there be far more Positive actions, not meerly Morall, which concerneth the second Table, because of Oeconomy, Policy, Municipall and Civill Laws, Arts, Sciences, Contracts amongst men, that are not in the first Table; yet the Morallity of the second Table, is as expressly in Gods Word, as the Worship of the first Table. 1. Because what is justice and mercy, and love toward man in the second Table, doth no more depend upon mans sole will, but upon Gods Morall Law, & the Law of nature, then it dependeth upon mans will or human wisdom, how God should be worshipped according to the first Table. For Gods will in his Word, is called by our Divines, a perfect Canon and rule of Faith, and also of Manners: And as the grace of God, Tit 2. Tit. 2.11: teacheth us what is Piety, so also what is Righteousnesse and Sobriety.

2. Because as Gods Word condemneth will-worship, which is come of no Nobler blood, then mans will, so condemneth it idle words, and idle actions, which are but Will-words, and Will-Words, and deeds of will-justice and will-mercy: and a will-conscience in the second Table, putteth no leffe a rub upon the wisdom of the Lord, the Law-giver, then a will conscience in the first Table. But Formalists say, If mans will and authority cannot appoint Crossing, Holy humane-days, Surplice, and such, the decent expressions and incitements of Devotion, in the kinde of Arbitrary, Mutuable, and Ambulatory Worship; but they must be therein guilty of adding to the Doctrine of Piety and Religion in the first Table: by that same reason they cannot make humane Civill and Positive Laws in War and Peace, to be means of conserving justice and mercy toward humane societies in the kinde of duties of Righteousnesse and sobriety towards our selves and Neighbours; but they must be guilty of adding to the Doctrine of the second Table. 1. Answer: 1. The case is not alike, we cannot be Agents in the performing of any worship to God; nor can we use any rull.
any Religious means for honouring God, which belong to the first Table: But in these we are Morall Agents, doing with special reference to conscience, and to true happiness and the glory of God, as the ends both of the work and workers: and therefore in these we are precisely ruled by the wisdom of God, who hath in his word set down what Worship, and what means of exciting Devotion, and decoring of his Worship pleaseth him, and hath not left men to Lord-will, or Lord-wit; but in many actions that belong to humane societies, we are not Morall Agents, but often Agents by Arte, as in Military discipline, Trades useful for mans life, Oeconomy and Policy in Kingdoms and Cities, in Sciences, as Logick, Physick, Mathematicks, in these Finis operis, the end of the work is operation, according to the principles of Arts and Policy, and we are not in them Morall Agents, and so not to be regulated by Gods Word.

For the Scripture giveth not to us, precepts of Grammar, of War, of Trades, and Arts, teaching us to speak right Latine, to make accurat demonstrations: nor is the end of the work here a thing that pitcheth upon that tender and excellent peace in us, our Conscience, and our Morall duties to God and men, but to make such humane Laws, just and suitable with sobriety and justice, is not left to Lord-will, but right reason, the principles of a natural Conscience, (which are parts to us of Scripture) and the Word of God it self hath determined: whether, so say Armyr in the night, in such a case? Whether to eat flesh in such a season of the year, when the eating thereof harteth the Common-Wealth, and the like belong to works of justice and mercy, or no? Now it is no marvel that in things belonging to our natural life, peace, societies, policy, where the end of the work is natural or civill, and belongeth not, as such, to the Conscience, and Salvation of the soul, that there men be Artificers or Agents according to Art, Oeconomy, Policy, whereas the end of the work, Finis operis, in the Worship of God, is Morall, and a matter of an higher nature; and so the means and manner of Worship here, are determined by Gods Word. But when actions
actions of Arts, Sciences, Trades, Occonomy, Policy, and Laws positive, are elevated above themselves. Ad finem operantium, to the end that Agents are to look unto, as they be Morall Agents; Gods Word is as perfect a rule for acts of good manners in the second Table, as in the first: For example, that I speak good Latine, I am to see to Discourses Precepts; but that I lie not, and speak not Scandal or Blasphemies, while I speak Latine, there I am to look to Gods Law given by Moses. That a Tradesman makes works according to Art, he is to advise with Art, but that he fell not his work at too dear a price, he is to advise with the eight Commandments; and when all these acts of Art are referred to Conscience, Salvation, and the glory of God, as they ought to be respectus finis operis, in respect of the Morall intention of the doer, all their Morality is squared by Gods Word. Hence there be no actions of Worshipping God, but they be purely Morall, Et respectus finis operis, Et respectus finis operantis; but many actions belonging to the second Table, are either purely not Morall, as actions of meer Art, or they be mixed, and respectus finis operis, in respect of the end of the work, they are not Morall, nor to be squared by the Word at all; and in respect of the Morall intention of the doer, they be Morall, and so mixed actions, and partly ruled by the Word, and partly ruled by Art or Policy, according to our seventh distinction.

II. Conclusion: In actions or Religious means of Worship, and actions Morall, whatever is beside the Word of God, is against the Word of God; I say in Religious means, for there be means of Worship, or Circumstances Physical, not Morall, not Religious, as whether the Pulpit be of stone or of timber, the Bell of this or this Metall, the house of Worship stand thus or thus in Situation.

Our Formalists will have it in the power of rulers to Command in the matter of Worship, that which is beside the Word of God, and so is negatively Lawfull, though it be not Positively conform to Gods Word, nor Commanded or warranted by practice; which I grant is a witty way of Romes devising, to make entry for Religious humane Ceremonies.

But 1. Whatever is not of Faith, and a sure perswasion, that what I do pleaseth God, is sin, Rom. 14. 14. 23. And therefore neither can be Commanded by Rulers, nor practiced by inferiour: But things besides Scripture, and negatively Lawfull, are things not of...
What is Negatively pretended

Cap. I. Q. 2.

1. I doubt if Lord-will, be the Lord-carver, of what pleases God.
2. If it may stand with the wisdom of Christ the Law-giver; for no Ceremonies maketh Christ a perfect Law-giver. 3. In things doubt-some, abstinence is the surest side; Ergo, Rulers ought not to command them. 4. Samuel, David, even wicked Saul abstained in things doubt-some, while the Oracle of God removed the doubts, and answered him. 5. Paul in eating or not eating, which are things most-indifferent, requir'd a certain persuasion of positive assurance, Rom. 14. 14. I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself, but to him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, it is unclean.

(a) Sander-son Sermo
(b) Morton Burges Supra.
(c) Paybod. Jackson
(d) D. Jackson on the Creed, l. 3.

An. 1. Let Formalists explain themselves; Doctrinals, Substantials, and essetiall worship, is such as God hath commanded in the Proposition, and in the Assumption, and particularly in Gods word; Accidental are such, as he hath commanded in generall, but left particular to mens will, so they define, like Masters of Arts.

But this our Masters say, in all that Christ hath particularly Commanded, his Testament is perfect, and so I believe, what God hath set down, he hath set down, and so we have Scripture right down as perfect as the Fables of E'op, & Naso's Metamorphosis: what is in E'opes and Naso's books, is in their books, and what they command you, are with certainty of Faith to believe they command, and what the Prophets and Apostles write, that they write, and that is essetiall worship; what they write not, they write not. 2. Mr. Sander-fons lifting up a straw, as straw for an instance; abisions of imagination are not Morall; we give him to leave to rub his beard without Faith, as he weareth white sheets above his garments in Divine service against Faith. 3. To do in Faith, is to know, that, in that I serve Christ, and
Cap. I. Q. 24. To be Lawfull, is unlawfull.

am accepted of God, Rom. 14. 2. To do that which condemneth me, and maketh me happy in the doing thereof, v. 21. 3. It is a Faith that I have before God in my conscience, v. 22. 4. It is a persuasion by the Lord Jesus, that it is clean. 5. It is such, as I know is positively Lawfull by Scriptures express and Warrant, 1 Cor. 10. 26. The earth is the Lords and the fulness thereof; Ergo, I have certainiy of Faith, that it is positively conform to Scripture what I do: but in things negatively Lawfull, as lifting a straw, wearing a Supricle, I have no persuasion by the Lord Jesus, that I serve Christ, and am accepted of God in so doing and know not from Ps. 24. 1. or from any other Scripture, that it is lawfull what I do. 3. A generall warrant is either when the major Proposition only is sure by Scripture, but you must take the Assumption upon the Formalists Merchant Word, or where both Proposition and assumption can induct, ac. 26. 27. or as according as it is written; this latter wee imbace with both our hands, but Formalists deny it to us: The first is their meaning. This, what is decent and not contrary to Gods Word, that the Rulers may command. But Supricle, Crossfing, &c. are decent and not contrary to Gods Words; Ergo, So one Giles Widdow's (c) faith, Man and Wife are one flesh: Ergo, the Ring in Marriage is good. And, Fine linen is the Righteousness of the Saints, Rev. 19. Ergo a Surplice is good. And, Matth. 16. Take up your Cross: Ergo, the Cross in Baptism is lawfull. Enough of this. But to the worship of the Devil is lawfull, and, Aarons golden Calf is lawfull; for I can finde a major Proposition for them in Scripture, of which you have a Faith both Negative and Positive; as this, Whatever God commandeth in his Word, that is lawfull. But God commandeth the Indians Devil worship in his Word; Ergo, &c. I am not holden to give my Faith for the Assumption: Yet it is as good as our Masters reasoning. 4. Jackson is wide in his Lawfull Negatives; for to fight against Roman Catholicks, at our Kings Command, upon good grounds, is not an indifferent thing. Except to kill men, and shed blood, be indifferent and lawfull Negatively: I thought, to make War, had been amongst the Substantial, and Positively conform to Gods Word. 5. The Fathers, as Origen, Ambrose, Chrysestom, Theophylact, Occumenius, Theodoret, Anfelm, and Jerome, upon the place Rom. 14. 23. as Valquez faith (f) from this place, Rom. 14. 23. that What any doth must be warranted by the light of the conscience as lawfull.
full. If Formalists stand to this, they must give us some things against conscience, and something beside conscience, that is morally lawful, and therefore if conscience see not such a thing against Scripture, though it have no warrant in Scripture, yet it is lawful, and done in a certain persuasion of a well informed conscience; but those who eat things thought to be unclean by God’s Law, to the scandall of others, who knew these meats were not against Piety and God’s Law, nor yet that the eating of them was against charity, while Paul delivered the Doctrine of Scandal, yet their eating was unlawful. 6. Formalists say nothing here, but what Papists said before them, they say, Men may go to War, doubting of the lawfulness thereof; and therefore (b) Vasquez, (i) Angelus, (k) Corduba, and (l) Navarr. will us, While the doubt remaineth, to choose the surest side, as conscience ought to do: And (m) Vasquez faith, Manente dubio, &c. To do so long as the doubt remaineth, is so do against the judgement of conscience: And (n) Adrian faith, While they doubt, and yet go to War; they expose themselves to the danger of Man-slaughter, and by not going to War, they should only sin by not obeying. (o) Suarez faith, It is a Speculative doubt, when Superiors commandeth it: And (p) Sylvester faith, Such a doubt should be expelled as the commandment of Superiors. And no marvell the command of Superiors to Papists is an Oracle, and blinde obedience is good meriting; therefore (q) Gratian and the Jesuit (r) Sancho faith, Inferiors are not holden to examine the commandments of Superiors.


5. Jackson faith, This (Whatsoever is not of Faith is Sin) holds not in omission of good, as in commission of evil: Ergo, Your not practising indifferent Ceremonies, is not of Faith, and so Sin. Ans. He that obeyeth doubtingly, is condemned, and he that obeyeth not doubtingly, is condemned; But, Master Dober, your enumeration is not sufficient, and may strike against doubting to worship a Romish Idol, at the command of Superiors; for I shew you a third, and its
its Paul's way, Eat nor, obey not, and abtain with perswation of Faith, that what you do is agreeable Positively to Gods Word.

Yacking Faith, They sin not by doubting, if the fear of evil after ma-

ture deliberation, be not extraordinary, and such as cannot be re-

compenced by the goodness which appeareth in the art of Obedience. Doub-

ting is no internall part or essentiaall cause of sin, vve sin not because

vvve doubt, but because vvhile vve doubt, vve prefer an evil or a leffe

good, before a good, or a greater good. So their sin was not doubting,

but they preferred not eating, which vwas a bodili loste only, to the

evil feared, which vwas to be partakers of the Table of Devils, and

being Apostases from the Israel of God. Ans. Paul expressly faith,

doubting is sin, and condemneth it ver.23, and requireth, ver.5. Let

every man be perswaded in his conscience, v.21. Happy is he that con-

demneth not himself in that which he alloweth, v.23. WHATSOEVER

(more or leffe in Morall actions) is not of Faith, is sin: 2. Internall


And therefore doubting being a sin that condemneth, Rom. 14.23.

must be such a sinfull ingredient, as maketh the action sinfull.

3. We both sin, because we doubt, and also because we prefer a leffe

good, or an evil to a greater good. 4. No feared evil, though never

so evil, whether of sin or punishment if it follow not kindly, but

only by accident, and through the corruption of our nature, should

or can make us do any thing doubtingly or sinfully, for then we

might do evil, that good might come of it. No good of obedience

can warrant me to sin, and disobey God, nor should that be called

obedience, nor is it obedience to men, which is disobedience to

God. 5. It is an untruth that non-eating was only a bodili loste, for

non-eating Physically, is a bodily loste, but Paul urgeth non-eating

morally, to eschew the fall of one for whom Christ died. 6. The Do-

ber faith Ibidem. No power under the Heaven could make a Law o-

over the Romans, injoyning such meats, because Gods law (as they

conceive) condemned them. Now how pleasant are right words? I

assume, we conceive God hath denounced all the plagues written

in his Book, upon practifiers of humane Ceremonies, as upon adders

to the word of God, Rev.22.19. Yea Heresies, to wit, that Christ

is not the consubstantiall Son of God, may seem probable to us; shall

the good of obedience in believing my Pastor, whom God hath set

over me, hinder me to obey? 7. Papists say also, that Scripture is

per-
What is Negatively pretended

Papists say the Scripture in general is perfect, but not in particulars of worship, and so lay Formalists.

(w) Scotus, Prolog. in Senten. q. 3. ad art. 3.

Terminus [Theologia] quantum ad revocacionem Divinarum obviam, quasi sunt in sua Scipstas, sic ut babetur us. Apocalpy: St quoq aposphastra id efs, accordavit Deus plagas quaeratur in Scripture, et quod postes elici de fide (z) Suarez de tripl. viam Theolog. Tract. 1. disp. 5. Sect. Ad perfectionem non est quod anima credente continet explicata, sed est eum quod continet mysteria nostra redominio, &c substantiata fundamenta Ecclesiae, cum medie necessariis ad salutem. (z) Bellar. de Fide. Sacrament. cap. 2. respond. ad Arg. 2. Christus ad plenam non infruxit (in Scriptura) Deo nostra. Bellar. Respondat, ut verum est de instradone generali, non autem de particulari. (a) Vasquez. Tom. 2. in 15. disp. 151. cap. 3. Nihil voluit (proposito) statuere passum, quod non pertinent ad primum statum, cuiusque conservandum— prohibito ferre legem certe non licet. (b) Lannes. to. 3. Art. 10. ad arg. 2. Scripture indica nobis Divina in his quibus non remanet in individuo, et in Ecclesia in conspectu generali quadam ratione. (c) And Devaliuss in 2. Thomas. tract. lexagna q. 5. Art. 1. ad Arg. 2. Scripture est sufficientis, quia ipsa est; hoc credendarum quae agenda implicite continet & propsectu credit ad Ecclesiam sanque ad Cohominum versatil, non in in sine, quam in propsecto bene vescentur, non remissit.

2. What is negatively Lawfull here, cannot be admitted: I Rulers may Command one thing that is negatively Lawfull, they may Command all things, because what they Command under this formall reason, as not against Scripture, they should no adde nor devise new worship, though they Command all of this kind: But the latter is absurd, for so they might Command in God's worship. 1. The actions of false imagination, the lifting a straw, and all idle actions that cannot edifice. 2. They might Command a new Ark to represent Christ incarnate, as the Jews. Ark'di represent him to be incarnate, a new Pascover, to represent of Lambe already slain, and all the materials of the Ceremoniall Law.
with reference to Christ already incarnate, dead, and risen again. For, all these are by Formalists learning negatively Lawfull; Show us a Scripture where they are forbidden, more then Surplice, Crosting, except because they be not Commanded. If it be said, They do not Command things negatively Lawfull, as such, but as they edifie and teach: Well then, 1. As they edifie and teach, they are positively good, and apt to edifie, and so must be proved by the Word as Commanded, and so not negatively Lawfull, and so as besides, but as Commanded in the Word. 2. Yet it will follow, that all these may be used in Faith, that is, out of a sure persuasion that they are not contrary to God’s Word, and so Lawfull. I might dance in a new linen Ephod, before a new Jewish Ark, representing Christ already incarnate, and that in the negative Faith of Mr. Sanderson, Hooker, and Jackson, for this Ark is not against Scripture, yet this Ark is not Commanded, and so not forbidden. 3. Idle actions that have no use or end, might be Lawfully Commanded by this, because they are not forbidden, yet are such unlawful, quia carens justa necessitate et militant, as Gregorius faith: I prove the connexion, because an action Morall, such as (so Sign with the Cross) performed by a Subject of Christ’s visible Kingdom, for God’s glory and edification of the Church, which yet is neither Commanded nor forbidden by God, nor Commanded by nature’s light (for none but those that are beside reason will say this) nor light of God’s word, or the habit of Religion, hath no more reason, then the making or forming a Syllogism in Barbara, which of it self cometh only from Art; and as such hath no Morall use, and by as good reason may the Church Command dancing before a new devised Ark; yea, such an action involveth a contradiction, and is Morall, and not Morall: for of its own nature it tendeth to no edification, for then it might be proved by good reason to be edificative, and an action cannot be edificative from the will of men, for Gods will, not mens will, giveth being to things.

4. What is beside Scripture, as a thing not repugnant thereunto, except that by which every thing is essentially Lawfull: Ergo, It is not Lawfull. The Consequence is sure, I prove the Antecedent: Gods Commanding will, doth essentially constitute a thing Lawfull, Gods Commanding will only maketh eating and drinking bread and wine in the Lords Supper Lawfull, and the Lords forbidding
will should make it unlawful; and God forbidding to eat of the Fruit of the Tree of knowledge of good and evil, maketh the non-
eating obedience, and the eating disobedience. As the killing of
 Isaac by Abraham, is lawful; and that because God Commandeth;
and the not killing of him, again is Lawfull, when God for-
biddeth it. But things negatively Lawfull and beside the word of
God, wanteth Gods Commanding will; for God Commandeth
not the materials of Jewish Ceremonies to represent Christ already
come, and such like: for if He should Command them, they should
be according to the word of God, and not beside the word of God:
If it be said they have Gods Commanding will, in so far that he doth
not forbid any thing not contrary to his own word; but hath given
the Church Authority to add to his worship, things not con-
trary to his word, as they shall see they do promote godliness,
can may edifie the Church: But then if the Church must see by the
light of reason, and natural judgement, aptitude in these to promote
godliness, they are Commanded by God, who hath even stamped
in them that aptitude to edifie, and so are not beside God's word.
4. Our Divines condemne all the Traditions of the Church of
Rome; as Purgatory, Prayer for the dead, Imagery, Adoring of Re-
liques, all the Crossing, Holy water, Chrisme, Oyl, Babies, Bells,
Beads, &c. Because God hath no where Commanded them, and
sancion al and beside the Law, and sins mortall and contrary to the
Law, we condemne; because, as what is capable of seeing, and life,
and hearing, and yet doth not see, live, nor hear, that in good rea-
son we call blinde, dead, and deaf; all beside the word are capable
of Morall goodnesse, and yet not Morally good, because not war-
ranted by Gods word, therefore they must be Morally evil.

III. Conclus. Opinion of Sanctity, holiness and Divine necessi-
ty, is not essentiall to false worship. Formalists will have their
Ceremonies innocent and Lawfull, so they be not contrary to the
word of God. 2. So they be not instamped with an opinion that
they binde the Conscience, and are of Divine necessity, holiness and
efficacy; So (a) Morton their Prelate, for opinion of justice, necessity, effi-
cacy and merity, (faith he) make them Doltrinium and so unlawful:
But this is but that which Papists say: So Suarez. (b) faith, That their
unwritten
unwritten Traditions are not added to the word of God, as parts of the word of God; but as things to be believed and observed by the Churches Commandment; and these who did swear by Jehovah and Malcom, Zeph. 1. esteemed Malcom, and an oath by Malcom, not so religiously and so holy, as an oath by Jehovah and Malcom; and yet no doubt, they ascribed some necessity to oaths by Malcom and Jehovah saying, (Am I Jehovah to kill and make alive) who yet worshipped Ieroobaams Calves, esteemed the worshipping of these Calves less necessary, and less holy and meritorious, than the worshipping of the true Jehovah; yet the Calves called their gods, which brought them out of the Land of Egypt, had some necessity and opinion of holiness.

For 1. Aaron in making a Calf, and Proclaiming a Feast to the Calf, committed false worship; but Aaron placed not holiness, justice, or merit in that worship: Because, Exod. 32. 22. for fear of the people who in a tumult gathered themselves together against him, he committed that Idolatry; Ergo, necessity of Sanctity, Merit, and Divine obligation, is not essential to false worship: Ieroobaams committed Idolatry in saying, These are thy Gods O Israel; but he placed no efficacy or merit therein, because, 1 King. 12. 27. He did it, lest the people going to Jerusalem, should return to Keboobam, and kill him; And the Philistims dis-worship in handling the Ark unreverently, had no such opinion, they doubting whither God or Fortune ruled the Ark, 1 Sam. 6. 9. It were strange if these who say in their heart, There is no God, Ezek. 9. 9, Psal. 94. 6. And to fal against inward worship due to God, should think that the denying of God were service and meritorious service to God; and that Peter denying Christ, and Judaizing, Gal. 2. 12. for fear, thought and believed he did meritorious service to Christ therein; Pilate in condemning Christ; Judas in selling him; the Souldiers in scourging him, did dis-worship to their Creator, the Lord of glory: Shall we think that Pilate, who for fear of the people did this, believed he was performing necessary, Divine and Meritorious worship to God? 2. If opinion of necessity Divine, of Merit and sanctity, as touching the conscience, were essential to false worship; it were impossible for gain and glory, to Commit Idolatry; to preach lies in the Name of the Lord for a handful of barley, as Ezek. 13. 19, Mic. 3. 5. 1 Kin. 22. 6. 1 Tim. 4. 1. 2 Tim. 1. 11. For its a contradiction to
Preach Arrianisme, Turcisme, Popery, against the light of the minde
only for gain; and yet to think that in so doing, they be performing meritorious service to God: Yea, they who devise will-worship, know their own will to be the Lord-carver of that worship, at least they may know it; yet shall we think they hold themselves necessitated, by a Religious obligation so to do? Else it were impossible, that men could believe the burning their Children were will-worship, indifferent and Arbitrary to the worshippers, which is open war against reason: Now a worship cannot be false, wanting that which is essentiall to false worship. 3. False worship is false worship by order of nature, before we have any opinion, either that there is Religious necessity in it, or meer indifferency: Ergo, Such an opinion is not of the essence of false worship. 4. By that same reason, opinion of injustice, or opinion of doing justice, should be of the essence of injustice; of the essence of injustice; the killing of his Brother, should not be Man-Slaughter, except Cain placed some divine Sanctity in that wicked fact, which is against all reason; and the reason is as like in both Gods-Commanding will and his forbidding will. They Answer, Gods will constitutes Lawfulness in essential worship, and mens will in things arbitrary; but this is to beg the question, for when we ask what is essential worship, they say, it is that which God commandeth, and what is accidental or arbitrary, it is that which human authority commandeth, & this is just, Gods will is the essential cause of that worship whereof it is the essential cause, & mens will is the essential cause of that, whereof it is the essential cause. 5. All the materials of Jewish and Turkish worship, might be appointed for right worship, so we held them to be Arbitrary. 6. God cannot forbid false worship, but in that tenure, that he commandeth true worship; but whether we esteem it true, or not, holy, or not; he commandeth true worship, Erg. &c.

The distinction of worship essentiall and accidental of Gods generall and particular will is to be rejected.

IV. Conclusion. It is a vain and unwarrantable distinction to divide worship in essentiall, which hath Gods; 1. Particular approving will to be the Warrant thereof, and worship accidental or Arbitrary, which hath only Gods generall and permissive will, and hath mans will for its father; so Ceremonies (say they) In these, hath Gods generall will, according to their specification, whether a Surplice be decent, or not, is from mans will, therefore they are called wor-ship retractively, because in their particulars, they have no Divine in-stitution, and they tend to the honouring of God, not as worship, but as
in (a) Moxon, &c. (b) 

(b) Burger.

(b) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(a) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(a) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(a) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.

(b) moxon, &c.

(a) burger.

(a) moxon, &c.

(b) burger.
Worship essential from God's approving will, and Cap. I. Q. 2.

lver, goodness of indifferent acts, is, Repugnance in adjective, and a flat contradiction, as who would say, cold fire, indifferent is neither good nor evil, neither lawful, nor unlawful: 2. Then God hath not shewed us all Morall goodness in his word, because he hath not shewed to us the goodness of Ceremonies. 3. Lawfulness is an essential property of Divine worship resulting from God's particular approving will in his word, as is clear; Hosea 8. 15. 13. Lev. 10. 1. 2 Sam. 7. 7. 1 K. 7. 10. Act. 15. 24. Ergo, Arbitrary worship must have God's approving will, commanding it, else it is not lawful: I prove the Antecedent from the causes of worship: 1. The end of worship, which is the honouring of God maketh not worship lawful; Idolaters may intend to honour God in their Idolatry, as well as true worshippers. 2. The matter of worship is not essential to lawful worship; for lawful and unlawful worship may have the same common matter, as Solomon's Calves in the Temple were lawful, because ordained of God; and Samaria's Calves were unlawful, because they were from men, the matter of both might be one and the same matter; Hosea 8. 3. The Form of worship in general, is not the essential and specific Form of lawful worship, as the specific Form of a living creature is not the specific form of a man, the specific form of a man is not the specific form of a just man, as just. Also I may conceive Sacramentall eating in general, and not conceive whether it be lawful or unlawful: For if Lawfulness were the specific form of worship, I could not conceive worship, but I behooved to conceive Lawfulness in it. Now then God's commanding will, being wanting to Arbitrary worship, it cannot be lawful; Ergo, unlawful. If it be answered, Ceremonies are negatively lawful, not positively lawful, and the Argument proceedeth of Lawfulness positive, which is commanded in the word. But this is, 1. a begging of the question. 2. Negative Lawfulness is from man's will, which should not be a Creatrix of the goodness of things or of Lawfulness, nor can it Create goodness, except you make man to be God: 4. Arbitrary goodness and Lawfulness hath either a particular warrant and cause of its goodness, and Lawfulness from God's express Commandment, or 2. From the light of nature, or 3. From the sole will of men, or 4. partly from natures light, partly from man's will, but any of these ways it cannot
not be Lawfull. I prove the Antecedent; for it cannot have its warn-
tant from Gods generall will, whereby the Proposition of a Syll-
gismis warranted, but not the Assumption: for thus the golden
Calf of Ieraham; the worshipping of, Saran should be Lawfull:
for I can forme a Syllogism to it from Scripture (all worship com-
manded in the Word is Lawfull; but Ieraham's golden Calf
is Commanded in the Word; Ergo, It is Lawfull. And if
both Major, Proposition and Assumption be warranted by the
Word, then are Ceremonies essential and not Arbitrary wor-
ship. If Ceremonies be warranted by the light of nature, this
is part of Gods Word, and Rom. 1. 19, 20. God hath shewed it so
us, as Rom. 2. 14, 15. We would see nature's light to prove that
whitenesse of linnen signifieth Pardon all holinesse; rather then white-
nesse in the wall, and that the crose signifieth dedication of a child
to Christ's service, rather then lifting up of the child toward Hea-
ven signifieth the same; and yet Ceremonies must be by this reason
essential worship; yes, to Sacrifice a heep to represent Christ al-
ready Crucified, is as Lawfull this way as all our Ceremonies. If the
third be said, that Ceremonies have their goodnesse and Lawful-
nesse from the sole will of men; then Ceremonies are Will-wor-
ship: for worship instituted by the sole will of men, without light
of Scripture, or nature, is Will-worship. 2. The devisers of them
are either Britsh, or void of reason; and the practicers are ser-
vants of men, because they serve will, or rather lust of men, without
any reason Commanding. 3. If Ceremonies come partly from
mens will, partly from the light of reason; then do they conclude
the Lawfulness of Ceremonies either fallibly or necessarily: If the
former be said, we have little warrant of conscience to practice
them; nor can God be honoured, nor these things Lawfull, good;
and edifying, more then unlawful, evil and unapt to edifi, seeing
there be no light of Scripture, or nature to make them good to us;
and because a fallible and unnecessary conquence, is ever fallible
and unnecessary, and standeth (as Aristoteles faith well) in an in-
divisible point. It is a non-conquence, and so mens will is the
best house that Ceremonies are defended of. If they can be pro-
ved by a necessary and infalible conquence, we desire to hear it,
for it must be thus or the like: Things not contrary to the Word, and
commanded as a piece of edifie, may be Lawfull. Arbitrary Worship: But

Cere-
Ceremonies are such: Ergo, the Proposition is not true, because Rulers judge either such things apt to edifie, because they see them to be so in themselves, or because they judge them to be so in themselves; therefore they are so in themselves: the former cannot be said, because this light whereby Rulers see Ceremonies to be apt to edifie, is either light of Scripture, or nature, or both: If this be said, they can make others see this light. Also, if there be goodnessse and aptitude to edifie souls in Ceremonies by natures light, sound reason, or the Word of God, they cannot be Arbitrary or indifferen't worship: but must be essentiall worship, having warrant and Commandment from God: for what natures light, or Scripture Commandeth, that God himself Commandeth, and what God Commandeth is essentiall, not Arbitrary worship.

2. And secondly, they are not Arbitrary things, but necessary and Lawfull by natures light, by Scripture, or both, which they deny; if the latter be true, then is the will of Rulers, that which maketh Ceremonies good and Lawfull; a vain and blasphemous assertion, for Pope or Prince, or mens pleasure finde pre-existing goodnessse and Lawfulness in things, and they do not make them good: It is proper to God alone, who calleth things that are not, to create both beings and goodnessse of beings.

3. If Arbitrary goodnessse and Lawfulness of Ceremonies be thus warranteable, because not contrary to the word, and esteemed Arbitrary; I might fail against the first four Commandments, by superstition and idolatry: so I esteem these, to win, Idolatry and superstition Arbitrary, and not of Divine necessity, and yet in so doing, I should neither sin, nor commit acts of false worship; because superstition and Idolatry are indeed forbidden, but superstition and Idolatry, with the opinion, that they have neither holinesse, merit, nor Divine necessity, but are meerly Arbitrary, are nowhere forbidden in the word. Let Formalists by their grounds, shew us a Scripture for it; for they cannot by their Doctrine be forbidden as false worship, seeing they want that which essentially constituteth false worship (as they teach) for they (as the Argument supposeth) want opinion of necessity, Divine merit and holiness.

4. If the Churches will, commanding Croosing, and Surplise, make them Lawfull; then their forbidding them shall make them unlawful; and mens will shall be as Pope and God.

5. If Rulers conclude them Lawfull, then either upon National reasons,
reasons concerning Britain rather then other Nations; or upon reasons immutable & eternal: if the latter be said, they be essential worship, not Arbitrary; if the former be said, they be more apt to stir up the dull senses of British men, then others, which is a dream. Dull senses are alike everywhere, an original alike in all places, and God in his perfect word hath provided alike remedies against natural delusion to all mankind; else we in Britain do supererogate, and the word must be perfect to some Nations, in that which is common to all, and not to others. 8. By as good reason, Arbitrary mercy, and Arbitrary justice is holde as Arbitrary worship; for the Lord's word is as perfect in works of charity for the second Table, as in works of Religion for the first, and if to be, then it were in men will to do things conducing for the murthering, or not murthering of our brethren, of their own will and will, without the word of God, and there should be some lawfull acts of will-love, or will-murther. 9. Laws oblige (as Papists grant) as (a) Drédo, and (b) Vasesco say, after Gesfin, Oiscam, Almain, and other Papists from the goodness of the matter commanded in the Law, not from the will of the Law-giver. If then the general will and command of God constitute Arbitrary worship, this worship from God's will layeth a band on the conscience, no less then essential worship; For Hezzebiah is no less obliged in conscience to apply Figs to his boyle, and Moses to make every little ring in the Tabernacle: when God commanded these, then the Prophets are to write Canonicke Scripture; for God's Authority in Commanding, is equall in all, though in respect of the matter, there be great things, and less things of the Law: therefore God's general permissive will, doth no less oblige the conscience, then his approving will. 10. To this Arbitrary worship agreeth all the properties of will-worship; as 1. Cals. 2. 18. It begetteth us of our reward; for no promise of God is made of a Bilhoprick for conformity. 2. It is will-humidity, to be devoutier then God willeth us. 3. It intrudes in things not quitted in the Word. 4. It holdeth not the head Christ, for it maketh him not a perfect Law-giver, if Prelates under him give Laws added to his word, and that after the Traditions of men. 5. It intrudes in things dead with Christ, to a yoak. They object, But we're so yoak upon the conscience. Answer, yea, but we are in Christ freed also from the external yoak, as from the shedding of blood in Circumcision.
sion, removal out of the Campe, seven days; many Ceremoniall Sabbaths, presenting of the male-children, and going up to sacrifice at Jerusalem; yea, expensive offerings, all called burdens. Acts 15, 10. Col.2:20. Gal.4:13,14,15. Col.2:14,15. 1 And multiplied holy days, Surplice, Crosting, keeping us in that same bondage; though such (they may say) Magics, & actions now buried, & chang'd.

6. This Worship perishes with the age. 7. Subject us to the Ordinances of men.

8. Has a few of Wisdom: Mt. Bugets (a) faith, Some will-worship is not unlawful, as where hereabout in one day. The Free-will offerings and, will-worship is for will-worship. The Church as her godly discretion, and will, may approve some Formalities to attend the Worship. Answer, Gregory. Unless faith, that same Idolatry is Lawfull, some unlawful: This man faith, some will-worship is lawfull, some unlawful, that is, some is Lawfull, some unlawful: 3. Three preachings come from zeal, not from will, and is no new worship different from preaching, and there may be reason therefore, where all cannot be present in one day at all the three, there is reason for three preachings, none for Crosting: 3. Will as will, is carver of will-worship. Will carves not the worship, but determineth the circumstances according to the light of reason in Lawfull worship.

But where will, as will, void of reason hath influence in the worship, it is wills brood: 4. The Free-will offerings were determined by God, the poor should offer a pair of Doves, in the Free-will offering: But the rich a Lamb, and it was sin for the rich to offer a pair of doves, and therefore will was not determineth in this: 5. The man jumps with together godly discretion and will, they be much different; but for godliness in Short Sleeuer, and Crosting a finger in the Aire, I understand it not; nor can reason dream of any warrant for it, but will, as will, that is, man's lust made it.

Neither do Formalists go far from (a) Sware, and (b) Borrow, mine, who call that will-worship, which is devised only by a reason wise, and is not conformable to the principle of Faith, and wants to all reason, and she received use of the Church.

But we are disputing here against the Churches use, as if it were not yet a received use. But upon these grounds I go: 1. Reason not binding and strongly concluding, is no reason, but meet will. So Ceremonies have no reason: If the reason bindeth, they are essential worship: 2. Authority is only ministerial in ordering God's worship.
Cap I. Q. 22.

hold Papish Traditions. 125

chip, and hath no place to invent new worship. 3. Authority as Authority specially humane, giveth no light, not no warrant of conscience to obey, and therefore authority naked and void of scriptures-light is here bastard authority. 11. In all this Formalists but give the Papists distinction of Divine and Apostolick Traditions: for power of inventing Ceremonies to them in Apostolick, but not infallible and Divine: (c) Suarez gave the difference: God faith he, is the immediate Author of Divine Traditions, and the Apostles only publishers: But the Apostles are immediate Authors of Apostolick Traditions, God in special manner guiding them. 12. So (d) Cajetan (e) Suarez (f) Beller, Suarez Formalists (g) Duval (h) Hooker (i) Sutulumius: But I like better what (k) Cyprian faith, That no Tradition, but what is in the Word of God, it to be received: But this distinction is blasphemos, and contrary to Scripture, 1 Cor. 14. 57. The things that I write unto you: (even of decency and order, as v. 19 in.) Are the Commandments of the Lord, 2 Pet. 3. 2.

Peter writeth them to be mindes full of the words which were spoken before, by the holy Prophets, and of the Commandments of the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour: Then the Apostles Commandments are equal with the Commandments of the Prophets. But in the Old Testament, there were not some Traditions Divine, but not every way Divine, but Prophetically, for the Prophets were the word of God, as is clear, 2 Pet. 1. 19, 20; 1 Tim. 1. 76. Rom. 1. 2. So 1 Tim. 6. 12: I give thee charge in the sight of God, 14. That thou keep the Commandments without spot, unwrinkle, until the appearing of the Lord De Ex. Now the Commandment (as Beca. (l) notes) Are all that he write of discipline, which Formalists say, are for the most Apostolicks, but not Divine Traditions. 1. If Ceremonies seem good to the holy Ghost, as they say they do from Acts. then they must seem good to the Father and the Son, as the Canon is Acts. 15. But that Canon was proved from express Scripture, as Peter prophet, v. 7, 8, 9. and James v. 13, 14, 15, 16. If they come from the Spirit, inspiring the Apostles, they cannot be in such Traditions; If from the spirit guided by the holy Ghost, they come from Scripture. 3. If these traditions come from no spirit, led by light of Scripture, we shall not know, whether they be lawfull, or not, for the Scripture is a Canonick rule of lawfull and unlawfull. 4. If any Apostolick spirit be given to Authors of Ceremonies, why not also in
in preaching and praying? How then do many of them turn Arminians, Papists, Socinians? 5. The Apostolick spirit leading institutors of Ceremonies, doth either infuse light natural, supernaturall, or Scripturall in devising Ceremonies, and so External, in so far they were essential worship, or the Apostolick spirit doth lead them, with no light at all, which is brutish Enthusiasme: or 3. Gods Apostolick spirit infuseth the general equity, and negative Lawfulness of these truths (Surplus is an Apostolical signe of Pastorall holinesse) and (Crossing a signe of Dedication of a childe to Christs service) Now light for this we would exceedingly have. If this light be immediately infused, then St. Paul, Ceres have are Divine, as if God spake them: for truths immediately inspired lost no divinity, because they come through infallible men; for Balaam, his Prophetes of the Star of Jacob, was as Divine, in regard of Authority, as if God had spoken it, but if these truths came from an inferior spirit, we desire to know what spirit speaketh without the word. But some may object; The preaching of the word is somewhat humane, because its not from the infallible spirit that dited the word; Ergo, Ceremonies may come from the holy Spirit, though they be not as lawfull as Scripture. Ans. Let them be proved to be from the warrant, that the word is preached, and we yield to all. 5. Apostolick Ceremonies, but not Divine have Gods general allowing will for the accepting of them. Now Sampsons mother, Judg. 13. 23. proveth well, The Lord hath accepted our offering, Ergo, it is Lawfull, and he will not kill us. So God accepted Abel, and Noahs their Sacrifices; Ergo, they were Lawfull, and Divine worship. So Gen. 8:2. They sacrifice foist for the sacrifices of my offerings, and they eat it, but the Lord accepteth them not. Ergo, offerings of flesh without offering of themselves as living sacrifices to God are now unlawful. If God accept of Ceremonies, they must be Divineservice, if he accept them not, they must be unlawful. They Answer, He accepteth them as Arbitrary worship, not as essentiall: I Answer, God might have accepted to Sampson's sacrifice, and Noahs, as arbitrary worship; and yet not be gracious to them, nor reward their sacrificing, as good service, contrary to the Texts alleged; but I doubt much, if the Lord be gracious to men and accept in Christ corner Caps, Stipple, Crossing, humane holy days.

They object, Our Ceremoniall of time, place, persons, &c. are
more warranted by the Scripture, then Ceremonies are. And God
might in his wisdom (as I observed already) have calculated the order of
times and places, such climats and seasons; but he hath left these, as
he hath left our Ceremonies to the Churches liberty.

Ans. Time and place (as I observed already) being circumstan-
ces Physicall, nor Morall, nor having any Religious influence to
make the worship new and different in nature, from that which is
commanded in the Law, though they be not expressly in the
Word, do not hinder, but you may say, Such an act of worship is
according as it is written: for as Praying, Preaching, hearing, is
according as it is written: so is Praying and Preaching in this con-
venient place, proved by such Scripture (As it is written) but
one and the same Scripture doth not warrant Order and Surplice.
2. The question is not, what God's wisdom can do, for he could set
down all the names of Preaching Bishops, Doctors, Deacons, Elders,
in the Word; but his wisdom thus would have made ten Bibles
more then there be: But all our Ceremonies might have been
Comprehended in one Chapter of the Revelation; if God had
thought good to Honour them with inferring them in the Canon.
3. He hath determined these by nature's light, and prudence,
which dwelleth with that light, revealed in the Word: That a Bis-
hop be thus qualified, as 1 Tim. 3, is Morall and determined; but
that they call him John, Thomas, and be of such Parents, Country,
Natur of body, is Physicall and in Christ's wisdom, is not deter-
mined, nor could it be conveniently.
Lastly, that generall per-
missive will of God, is good, for all the Ceremonies of Rome, taught
by Papists: As for ours, as Suarez de Triplic. virt. tract. 1. disp. 2.
Seft. 6. n. 3. Dicendum fidei quod substantiam credibilium semper
fuisse eandem a principio generis humani. And so Faith. Alem. 3. p.
q. 69. Lombard. 3. diff. 25, and Durandu. 3. diff. 25. Bonaventu-
ra, 16. Art. 2. q. 1. Hugo de sanfo vitam de sacram. l. 1. part. 10.
cap. 4. This they have from the Fathers, Vincentius Lyrinensis, contr.
prop. voc. nov. cap. 37. freeness, contr. heretics, lib. 3. cap. 2. Hy-
Cypriani de Lazerbo homil. 4. Cypriani sermone de Baptismo. Op-
tau Maius. contr. parmeni. de veto. l. 5. And I might cite many
others, who all affirm, All truth Divine is in Scripture, all not
in Scripture, is to be rejected: So Suarez, de leg. tom. 4. cap. 1.

Hac
Lords of Ceremonies

[Page 188]


V. Concl. Matters of fact are not, and need not be proved by Scripture: 1. Because sense maketh them known to us. 2. Their Morality is sufficiently known from God's Word. 3. In matters of fact there may be invincible ignorance: Christ's Resurrection is not a matter of fact, as (a) Hugo Grosius faith, but also a matter of Law, as all the miracles and Histories in the Word, and to be believed, because God hath so spoken in the Word.

Quaest. III.

Whether Ceremonies have any Divinity in them?

Arg. 4. Against humane Ceremonies, because they usurp the essential properties of Divine ordinances.

A L L means of worship devised by men pretending holiness, by teaching, exciting our dull affections to devotion, as if they powerfull means of grace, and did lay a hand on the conscience, when as yet they be no such thing, and want all warrant from God; and are contrary to devotion; are unlawful:

But humane Ceremonies be such: &c.

The Proposition is certain: I prove the Assumption by parts:

1. Whateuer holiness be pretended to be in Ceremonies; yet God only
only sanctifieth people, offices in his house, as the sons of Aaron, 
Altars, Temples, Vesture, Sacrifices by his expresse institution, as 
we are taught, (b) yet are Ceremonies holy; their Author be the 
Apostles successours. 2. Their end to honour God. 3. Their 
matter is not civil or natural. 4. Their signification mystical, is 
Religious. 2. They be means of teaching and stirring up the dull af 
sessions to the remembrance of duties, by some notable and specifall signi 
fication, whereby the beholders may be edified; and since to stir up the 
minde, as a memorative object be the word of Gods due property, 
or the works of Providence and Creation; would not a Prelar be 
his Epistle to his under-Pastors, speak Peter-like; as, 2 Pet. 1. 
13. I think it meet, so long as I am in this Tabernacle, to stir up your 
dull mindes, by way of remembrance to your Christian duty, by Cro 
sing, kneeling to Gods board and Altar, and Surplice; To be memorials 
were due to Phylacteries Commanded in the Law, to minde 
heavenly duties, Numb. 15. 38, 39. Deut. 22. 12. And the twelve 
stones set up by Gods specifall Commandment; Is. 4, 2, 3. to be a 
memoriall of their miraculoss entry into the holy Land, and Manna 
Commanded to be kept in the Ark, as a sign of Gods feeding his 
people with Christ the bread of life, Job. 6, 48, 49, 51. are Ordin 
nances of God, to call to remembrance duties and specifall mer curies: 
And Sacraments do signify as tokens ordained of God, Gen. 17. 11. 
Gen. 9. 13. Heb. 9. 8. The Holy Ghost thus signifying, that the way to 
the belifes, was not yet made manifext: So Heb. 8. 5. Heb. 10. 1. And 
so must it be here said. The holy Prelats thus signifying, that Cross 
ing should be taken the childe dedication to Chriests service; So (c) 
Hooker: Actions leave a more deep and strong impression then the 
word. What blasphemy? that Crossing and Surplice leave a deeper 
impression in the soul, then Gods Word, the power of God to salvation, 
Rom. 1. 16. And mighty through God to cast down strong holds in the 
soul, 2 Cor. 10. 4. I wonder if Crossing Capping, kneeling to stocks, 
can bring every thought Captive to the Obedience of Christ. 3. It is 
essential to the word to teach, and make wise the simple, Psal. 19. 7. 
Psal. 119. 59. Prov. 6. 23. And Ceremonies are made Symbolicall 
and Religious teaching signes, yet is the stock called a Doctrine of 
lias, Jer. 10. 8. Habac. 2. 18. Though it teach and represent the 
name Jehovah that the Word teacheth, Ita. 40. 18. So it is not a 
living teacher, because it representeth a false god, or not the true 
God;
God: for the true Jehovah faith, To whom wilt ye liken me? But now the stock by man's institution took on it, without a warrant from God, to represent God. Now if God had warranted the stock to be an image representing God, as he warranteth the Temple, the Ark, Bread and Wine, to be images and representations of the true God Jesus Christ, the stock should be a Doctrine of truth, and not of lies; for Surplice is a Doctrine of lies, not because what it teacheth is a lie, for what it teacheth is Scripture, Isa. 52.11. That the vessels of the Lord (that is Pastors) should be holy, but it is a Doctrine of lies, because it representeth Pastorall holiness by humane institution, without all warrant of the Word of God. And when Paul calleth holidayes Elements, Gal. 4.6. He meaneth that they spell to us, and teach us some truth, as (a) Estius faith, That holidayes do teach us Articles of Faith: To which meaning, (b) Pelagius, (c) Cajetan, (d) Vasquez say, God may well be painted in such expressions, as Scripture putteth on God, as in the likeness of a Dove, as a man with hands, eyes, ears, feet, all which are given to God in Scripture. 4. It is essentiall to the Word to set down the means of Gods worship, which is the very scope of the second Commandment; and therefore the Jews washings and Traditions are condemned, because they be Doctrines of men, appointed by men to be means of the fear or worship of God, as Mark. 9. Mar. 7.8. Isa. 29.13. Hence we owe subject of Conscience to Ceremonies, as to lawfull means of Worship. 1. Stirring up our dull senses: And 2. as lawfull signes representing in a Sacramentall signification, holy things: 3. As teaching signes: 4. As means of Gods fear and worship: Whereas God (as (e) Ainworthe observes well) in the second Commandment forbiddeth all images and representations: 2. All shapes, Exod. 20. 4. Temniah. 3. Forms of figures, Tabern, Deut. 4.16. 5. Any type or shadow, Tsclem, Ezek. 7. 20. 16.17. 6. Any pictured shape, Maskib, Levit. 26. 1. Any Statue, Monument, Pillar, Matthesbah, any Graven, or Molens Portrait; Hos. 13. 2. 5. We are obliged to obey the Word, Exod. 20.7. Prov. 3.20, 21. Prov. 8.13. Jer. 6.16. Jer. 5. 7. 2. We owe to the Word belief, Luk. 1.20. Love, Psal. 119.49. 81. Hope: 3. And are to expect a reward therefore, Psal. 19. 11. Rev. 2.7. 10. 27. 28. Gal. 4.11. Rom. 6.23. Coloss. 2.18. Hebrew. 11. 25. Psal. 34.9. Psal. 58.
Then if Decency be commanded, and order, in the third Commandment, Ergo, this, and that orderly mean of Worship, as Surplice; But can we say, I hope in the Surplice? Oh how we love Crossing and Capping? can we believe in Ceremonies, as means of God's worship? 6. The word is God's mean to work supernatural effects, to convert the soul, Psal. 19. 7. To work Faith, John 20. 3. To edifice, Acts 20. 32. To save, Rom. 1. 16. The obedience to God's word, bringeth Peace, Psal. 119. 165. Comfort, v. 50. Gen. 49. 18. Isa. 38. 3. But Ceremonies, being apt to stir up the dull mind, must be apt to remove Naturall dulness, which is a supernatural effect, and so to bring, Peace, joy, comfort: Organs are now helden by the same right, that they were in Moses-Law, then they must stir up supernatural joy: There must be peace and comfort in praising them: Hear how this foundeth, This is my comfort, O Lord, in my affliction, that thy Surplice, Organs, and holy-days have quickened my dull heart. Now what comfort, except comfort in the Scriptures? Rom. 15. 4. Ceremonies be innocent of all Scriptures.

What joy (a proper fruit of the Kingdom of heaven, Rom. 14. 17.) can be in sapless Ceremonies? yea, observe, 1. Who truly converted from Popery, who inwardly humbled in soul, doth not abhor Ceremonies, by the instinct of the new birth? 2. What slave of hell and prophan person call not for Ceremonies? 3. Who hath peace in dying, that Ceremonies were their joy? 7. All Lawfull Ordinances may by prayer be recommended to God for a blessed success as all the means of salvation, Psal. 119. 18. Matth. 26. 26. Acts 4. 29, 30. 2. We may thank God for a blessed success, which they have by the working of the Spirit of Grace, 2 Cor. 2. 24. 1 Cor. 1. 45. 2 Thes. 1. 2, 3. Ephes. 1. 3. 3. We are to have heat of zeal against prophaning of word, Sacraments, Prayer, or other Ordinances of God: But what faith in praying, Lord work with Crossing, Capping, Surplice? For where the word is not, nor any promise, there be no Faith, Rom. 10. 14. What praising can there be for Ceremonies working upon the soul? What zeal (except void of knowledge and light of the word, and so but wilde-fire? Gal. 4. 17, 18. Phil. 3. 6. 2 Sam. 21. 2.) can there be, though the Surplice be imploed to cleanse Cups, and Crossing be scorned? If the subject be nothing, the accidents be lese; if Surplice be not commanded, nor forbidden, the reverent or irreverent usage thereof, cannot be forbidden, nor
commanded, true zeal is incensed only at sin, and kindled toward God's warranted service. 8. I take it to be God's appointment, that the Spirit worketh by a supernatural operation, with his own Ordinances, in the regenerated, but we desire to know how the Spirit worketh with Ceremonies: Formalists are forced by these grounds to maintain the Lawfulness of Images: So they are not adored: 2. If they be reputed as indifferent memorative Objects, and books to help the memory. But 1. It shall be proved that at first, Papists did give no adoration to Images, nor doth Durandus, Hulce, et al. Mirandula acknowledge any adoration due to them, but proper to God, before the Images as objects. 2. We may liken God and Christ to a stock, to we count it indifferent, to make or not to make such an image, yet likening him to any thing is forbidden, Is. 40:18. Also we esteem it Idolatry interpretative, to take God's place in his word, and to make any thing to be a mean of grace, except God's own Ordinances: Against all these Formalists have diverse exceptions.

As 1. Our Ceremonies (say they) do not respect the honour of God immediately, and in themselves, but by accident, and as parts of Divine Worship by reduction, as it contained all the adjuncts of Worship.

Ans. Such Logick was never heard of: 1. If he mean a Surplice in the materials, to wit, Linnen and Crossing Physically considered, as separated from their signification, do not tend immediately to the honour of God, but as an adjunct, he speaketh nonsense, for so Bread, Wine, eating, drinking. Water in Baptisme do not immediately respect the honour of God, but only as they have a Morall consideration and stand under Divine institution, But yet the materiall of Worship is not the adjunct thereof, but the matter, as the body of a living man is not one adjunct of a man. If he mean, that Ceremonies in a Morall (not in a Physicall) consideration do not immediately respect the honour of God, but reducive, and by accident. Let him shew us, if the Surplice doth not as immediately, and without the intervening mediation of any other thing, signify and stir up our minds to the remembrance of Pastoral Holinesse, as eating all of one bread, doth immediately stir up our minds to the remembrance of our Communion of love, that we be all one body in Christ, 1 Cor. 10:16. 2. If he mean Ceremonies as such special
134 The essentiai properties of Word, and Sacraments, Cap. I. Q. 3.

(grace of Royall Majesty, as the Lawfull King, what, is he for that no usurping Traitor? 2. He will not have Ceremonies to be causes of worship, but occasions so do Papists say: Images (faith (c) Vasquez) do only set before us the History and effects of God. Bellarmin, Suarez (as all know) do say, That Images cannot so represent Iochov, as he is in himself, or described in his Word, nor can the Idol or Image of God represent God, as a cause, but only as an object external and occasion, and yet God forbiddeth it, Isa.40.18. Hab.2.19.20.

2. Gods word to the reprobate is a sealed Book, and is, as if you would teach letters, to a new weaned childe, Isa.29.11. c.29.9. It worketh by no inherent verse wrapped in itself, but though it is mighty, yet is it mighty through God, 2 Cor.10.4. Isaues twelve stones, the Phylacteries, the Manna, the Rainbow, did only, (as(d) Aquinas faith well) worke upon the senses and memory. The word it self doth but work morally, or objectively, and is not a cause having the power of God wrapped in it. If Surplice work only as an occasion, the Preachers, Napkin, the bands of women doth so excite the memory and the affection: 3. All our Divines teach, that the Sacraments are exhibitive seals, but not of themselves, or by any virtue inherens in them (as Papists say), but by the power of God, which worketh by the right receiving of the Sacraments, and the Sacraments Ad Primo and essentially are only signs, which worketh objectively and occasionally, as you lay your unhallowed Ceremonies do: because they are Sacraments essentially, whether they be received by Faith or not, and they are exhibitive seals only to believers. 2. Unbelievers should not prophan the Sacraments by their unworthy receiving of them, if they were not Sacraments to them only signifying, and if they were exhibiting seals to them, then should they receive them worthily, which is against what we suppose: 3. The Fathers, as (a) Iustine Martyr (b) Irenius. (c) Epiphanius. (d) Chrysostom. (e) Ambrose prove, that Circumcision, in its nature, except to believers, did only signify Grace.

5. Here be a most wilde distinction, That we owe subjection of conscience to the thing admonished, but not to Surplice, or to such means and particular admonishers, but only collaterally: But 1. is the Church ordaining Ceremonies a collaterall Mistresse over the conscience, & who is the other collaterall judge here? who but Christ? 2. We
things by the Creatures, Rom. i. 19. But Ceremonies are not books of God’s writing, God hath not written nor booked this upon a Surplice (Be holy, ye who bear the Vessels of the Lord) he hath written it in Isaiah’s book, c. 52. 11. And we submit to the teaching of the Creatures, though they work not upon the soul, as the Word and Sacraments do, because God hath appointed such books to teach us; Ergo, we are in no sort to submit to the Devil’s books, printed by Prelats, or to the Ceremoniall Volumes, because God hath written nothing upon them; and here by the way, I say it is unlawful, yes, and Hypocritse to be devouter than God will have us, as to enlarge the Phylacteries, and make them above God’s measure, Numb. 15. 38. To be humble by a mean not appointed of God, Ioh. 13. Or to do what God only should do, as to make Anointing Oyl besides God’s Oyl, Exod. 30. 31. 32. 33. Or to set a threshold and a post, beside God’s own threshold, Ezek. 43. 8. is presumption.

Lastly, God’s spirit worketh not with Ceremonies, and so they are as the offering of Swine’s blood, and the slaying of a man, and to Abomination to God. Isa. 66. 1. 2. The holy spirit is merited to us by Christ, Ioh. 16. 14. He shall receive of mine, and shall show unto you: But who can say that the grace of joy in the holy Ghost, wrought by the droning of Organs, and the holiness taught by Surplice, is a work of the spirit merited by Christ as our High Priest? 3. God hath made no promise that he will work by Ceremonies, for the spirit worketh not without the Word; so then I might reissue the working of the spirit, and not sin against the Word; and this is Anabaptists Enthusiaisme: If God work not by them, they be vain and fruitless; and the Idol is unlawful for this, that it profiteth not. Also, the Spirit’s action is either naturall or supernaturall here: If naturall, it is a naturall work, and a naturall spirit, and to be rejected: If supernatural, we may devise means to produce supernatural effects, mens Ceremonies can produce supernatural joy, comfort, peace, and acts of grace purchased to us by Christ’s merit; this is a miracle.

3. They say, All this may be said against your Circumstances of time and place, for they are appropriated to Religious uses, and not for that made holy parts of Divine Worship. 2. Time and place, are new things as our Ceremonies are. 3. Spirituall signification maketh Ceremon-
Ceremonies so much the better, but hindreth them not, but that they may be Rites of meer Order: Burges.

Anf. Time, Place, Pulpit, Table-cloath, are new, Physically, of-ten, not new Morally, or Religiously, they have no Spiritual influence in worship. A civil declamation hath the same time, place, pulpit with a Preaching; for then, if for application, you call them Religious, as D. Ammes faith well, An hill whereon a Preacher Preachteth, a Judge perswadeth a Law, a Captain speaketh to his Souli-ary, is both a Sacred, a judicial, a Military bill. 2. Signification Spiritual, maketh Ceremonies capable of being ordered: for Sur-vice wearing, and Crossing, being Doctrinall, as teaching signifying, stirring up the dull affections, as doth the Word and Sacrament, they require order and decency: Now things of meer order, requireth no ordering, as time & place require not other time & place to circumstance them right. 2. This is that which Papists say (as(c)Su-arez) that by consequent only, they have signification put upon them.

ut res saeculorum debito honore fiat; consequenter vero interdum habent significationem moration, qua homines existat ad virtutem et eum gloria.

Now fourthly, The place, Matth. 15. where Christ reproveth the Traditions of Pharisees, as Doctrines of men. The Jesuit Vasquez his Answer is their Answer: Vasquez, Tom. 2. in 12. disp. 152. cap. 4. That Christ reproveth them not because they kept the Traditions of the Elders; Sed quod in falsis preceptis Divine Legi contrarius-putant esse summam Religionem: Because they believed all Religion to stand in their Traditions, which were contrary to Gods Law, and for their own, omitted Gods Commandments. And Suarez, Tom. de legib. lib.4. cap.2. He reproveth what they added, Tanquam nova, in new things: Corduba, Ad. victor. rel. 1. de potestate Ecclesiae, q. 3. Prop. 6. But Chrysostom, Hom. 32. in Matth. Thinketh better that they had no power to make Laws; yea, (d) he condemneth the Laws written in their forehead.

The place, Matth. 15. touching Traditions of the Elders dificulted.

g. p. 120. Because the Jesuit, in opusc. to. 2. de Analog. ver. et New Test. cap. 1) q. 7. n. 13, 14, 15. reckoneth out three causes, why Christ reproved all the Traditions of the Pharisees. 1. Because they sought vain glory in some of them, Matth. 23. v. 5. 2. They fought gain of others of their Traditions, Matth. 23. 14. 3. They preferred some of them to weightier matters of Gods Law. Anf. None of these toucheth the point in this text, because the Tradition of washing hands, is reproved by Christ for want of a lawfull Author, and so the matter of it also was unlawfull; for Christ calleth it a Doctrine of men.
But this exposition is false: 1. They brought in Traditions at first for vain glory, so be called Rabbi, Matt. 23. 7, 8. Ergo, they thought them not at first of Religious necessity: 2. Mark faith, cap. 7, 5. Why walk not thy Disciples according to the Traditions of the Elders? Therefore the external practice and not the internal opinion of necessity and holiness is condemned, as is clear. And when the Pharisees saw some of the Disciples not wash their hands, they found faults. The challenge was for an external omission of an outward observance, which may be seen with the eyes: Ergo, these Traditions are not condemned by Christ, because they were contrary to God's Word, or impious; but in this, that they were contrary, because not Commanded: for in the external Religious act of washing hands, there was no other impiety of a wicked opinion objected to Christ's Disciples: for if the Pharisees had been satisfied in that the Disciples should wash before they eat, they would not have contended with Christ's Disciples, about the Piety of these Traditions, nor about any inward opinion, that they added under this Reduplication as new, as Suarez faith: But the Church which cannot err, including the Jewish Pope, the High Priest, can add nothing as new contrary to God's Law; nor is there any question betwixt the Pharisees and the Lords Disciples: Whether the Traditions of the Elders, should be esteemed the marrow and sum of all Religion, as Vasquez faith: But only sent external conformity with walking in the Traditions of the Elders, or not walking, as is most clear in the Text: It is true, Christ objected they accounted more of mens Traditions, nor of God's Commandments, as Papists and Formalists do: But that was not the state of the question betwixt the Disciples of Christ and the Pharisees. 2. Christ rejecteth these Traditions, by an Argument taken from the want of a lawful Author, while he calleth them Precepts of men, opposed to the Commandments of God, and while he faith v. 13. That every plant was rooted by his heavenly Father, shall be rooted out; Yea, and Christ expressly proveth their worship vain, because they taught the fear and worship of God, by the precepts of men, and not by the Word of God; and Ceremonies are the precepts of men. 3. Matt. 7: 10, 11, 12. He allegedeth their corrupt and false exposition of the fifth Commandment, in saying, It is a gift whereby Parents may benefit, which Children offer to God, though they help not their Parents in their poverty.
very, & necessity, & so you free them from obedience to the fifth Commandment of God, by setting up your false glosses (faith Christ) which is a human tradition. Then to Christ this is a good argument, your corrupting of the fifth Commandment with your false glosses is a rejecting of God's 5. Commandment; why? because it is a doctrine of men, and one of the Pharisees Traditions: For whether they placed operative sanctity in preferring men's Commandment to God's or not; none can deny but Christ reasoneth against these evils, because they were men's Traditions, otherwise Formalists shall be forced to say, that if the Pharisees have esteemed them Arbitrary, and of no operative sanctity, men's Commandments had not been vain worship; Christ's Argument from Isa. 29: should prove nothing, for false glosses and corrupting the fifth Commandment is not vain worship, because it is a doctrine of men; for Doctrines of men as only coming from men, and esteemed Arbitrary, are not vain, faith Formalists; yea, except they be contrary in the matter to God's Law, and proffered or equalized in the opinion of sanctity to God's Law, they are not a whit vain, because they come from men, or are doctrines of men.

4. Christ defendeth his Disciples practice in abstaining from externall not-washing; Ergo, he esteemed the externall washing unlawful: But if the Disciples abstinence was because of the impiety of washing, and the opinion of sanctity put upon washing, otherwise Lawfull; he should have defended his Disciples in a thing unlawful; for to disobey the Elders and Church-guides, who sat in Moses's chair, and were to he obeyed, Matthew 23: 2, 3: in an externall indifferent act of washing not contrary to the washings commanded in Moses Law, and so negatively conforme to God's Law, is Lawfull, as Formalists and Papists both teach; but Christ defended his Disciples in their non-obedience externall, for they were not challenged, for denying the opinion of operative holiness to these Ceremonies: Christ who commanded obedience to sitters in Moses's chair in all things Lawfull, would have obeyed himself, and cleared his Disciples in so far, as they ought to obey, or not to obey.

5. Vasquez sayes, These Traditions were unlawful, because they were invented, Sol a voluntate hominum absque ratione, by the sole will of men without reason. But so are Popish Ceremonies, for if they can be proved by the word of God, and the light of nature, they are essentiall parts of God's word, and not accidentall, nor left to the Churches.
Churches will. 2. It is good then the Jesuit confesseth the Church from sole will, and so the Pope and Prelat can make no Laws, but either Scripture or natures light must warrant them, and sole will cannot rule them: 3. They had as good reason in generall from Moses his writings, and the Law-washings, as Pope and Prelats have for their Traditions. But faith Vasquez, Christ complained of these traditions, because they held them to be, Summare Religionu, the marrow of Religion, and took no care of Gods Law. Ans. That will no more prove them to be vain worship, and that the Disciples were to be justified in their non-conformity to these Church washings, then that Gods Disciples, and sound believers under the Old Testament should abstain from keeping Gods Sabbaths, his new-Moons, and from offering Sacrifices, because the people placed all holiness in these of old, and neglected works of mercy and justice, Isa.1.11, &c. Jer.7.4.5.6. But (say Formalists) Christ condemneth them because the Pharisees thought, eating with unwashed hands defiled the conscience, and meat defiled the soul, when the eaters did not wash as the elders commanded: Whereas Christ saith, It is not that which goeth in at the mouth, which defileth the man, but the wickednesse that cometh out at the heart. Ans. It is true, and I think Pharisees believed meat eaten contrary to the Elders Traditions, defiled the conscience, as is clear, Mat.15.16.17.18. And that also Christ condemneth, as a Doctrine of men, and of ignorant men, and so doth non-conformity to your Ceremonies pollute the conscience as a breach of the fifth, and second Command as you say.

**Question IV.**

*Whether humane Ceremonies can consist with Order, Decency, and the sincerity of our profession of true Religion?*

**IV. Arg.**

Ceremonies fight with Order and Decency. 1. These Rites pretended by Gods command, to adde order and decency to Gods worship, and yet deface his worship, and addeth none thereunto be unlawfull: But humane Ceremonies be such; Ergo, That they pretend Order is proved. D. Burges saith, They have no place in all the New Testament, save only, 1 Cor.14.26. Let all things be done in order, and decency, a place as (a) Estius citeth, Magnified by Papists, for all their Ceremonies: The Major is undeniable, I prove the
the Assumption. 1. Because Magick, like Rites honoured with
Gods name as Christian-Masse, Christ's-Masse, an Adored Tree
called God's board, when there is no use for a Table, a Crossing ho-
noured with dedication to Christ's service, is like Gods name used by
forcers in Charming, Spelling, Divining, where vertue is ascrib-
ed to Signes, characters and words, which have no such vertue
from God or nature, and this Valen'tia justly calleth Superstitioin.
(b) So the Jews called the Calfe Jebovah, Papists call a creature of
their making, Agna Dei, a stile due to Christ only, Joh.1.29. 2. All
creatures are means of glorifying God, Rev.4.11. Prov.16.4.Rom.
11.36. And may be invited to praise God, as Psal.148. Now it
were strange bleating, to say, O Crossing, Surplice, Praise ye the Lord,
when things ordained by mans fole will, and so idle and sinfull,are
made mean to glorifie God; with as good reason dancing in the
Church, and blowing feathers in the Aire, which have by nature or
cause, no aptitude for these ends, may be decent means of glorifi-
ying God. 2. Order and decency supernaturall in the Church is
in the Word, Cant.6.4. Clear as the Sun, terrible as an Army With
Banners: Nothing wanting Gods institution can reach a superna-
turall end, as our Ceremonies are: 2. But also Ceremonies relative-
ly fitted in Religious state must be more then civilly decent, as also
right order produceth supernaturall joy, Gal.2.5. Civil order can-
not do this: Or 3. Ceremonies add natural order, but this is not
in colour, Religions colour is supernaturally white, ingenuous, not
whorish: 2. Or then it addeth order of parts, and this is by right,
grave, and convenient circumstantiating of things in Gods wor-
ship, and Paul dreamed never of Crossing to grace baptizing:
3. Or it addeth due quantity, Religious worship hath no quantity
but time. 4. It is against sense, that order is commanded in the third
Commandment, but not Surplice, Crossing, because they are by ac-
cident orderly; what agreeeth essentially to the generall, agreeeth
not essentially and necessarily to the species and particulars which
are by accident under that generall, as what agreeeth to a man, a-
greeth not to white and black men. Decency is commanded, but
by accident, and by mens will Surplice is decent. But then God
commanding Sacraments, should not command Bread and Wine, for
they are by accident, and by Gods will Sacraments, he might have
chaven other Elements, yet the will of God commanding Sacra-
ments,
ments, commandeth this and this Sacrament also: What agreeeth essentially to man, agreeeth essentially to all men black and white. If God will essentially concur to constitute decency in his own worship, then must that same will essentially concur to constitute this decency, in Surplice, Crossing. 2. It supposeth a great untruth, that Crossing is not worship, because not ordained of God, but that proveth it is not Lawfull worship, but not, that it is non-worship, for Crossing used to the honour of Baal, and to edification in performing their duty to Baal, is essentially a worshipping of Baal, otherwise worshipping of Idols is not worship, and yet it is an Act of Religious honouring of the Idol. 3. The Command that commandeth, or forbidden the end, commandeth and forbidden the means (Thou shalt not murder) forbidden the Master, not to command his servant to ride an extremely deep and impetuous River, though the not riding of such a River be not set down in the word, and it is not forbidden as an arbitrary action: If therefore decency bindeth the conscience, then the decency of this River is to bind the conscience; Our Ceremonies are not National; for Crossing being a Religious Rite, in all the world: its alike decent; Ergo, non-Crossing in some Country cannot be indecent. Things merely Religious, as all significant Ceremonies are of alike nature every where, and admit not of heat and cold with divers climates, are of good or evil manners, with divers Nations, therefore they must be determined in the word the man who Prefaced on our Service book said, Without some Ceremonies it is impossible to keep any order or quiet Discipline in the Church. I am sure he must think that Paul preached in some Surplice that he might teach holiness with his garments one way or other, he hath a stronger Faith then I can reach; without circumstances worship cannot be, but without Romish dirt, the Worship and Discipline are better kept, then with such whorish busking.

V. Arg. 5
Also whatever is a profession in fact, of a false Religion by Ceremonies indifferent, and yet proper to a false Religion, is a denying of the true Religion, but the using of these Ceremonies, used by Papists and Jews is such; Ergo, The Proposition is Scripture, Gal. 2.14. Peter lived after the manner of the Jews, in using the Religious mureEnals of the Jews, though he had no Jewish intention or opinion; yea, Acts 10. he disputeth against that: So
Cap. I. Q. 4. Humane Ceremonies adening of true Religion. 143

Circumcision, Galatians 6.14,15, is put for the Jewish Church. Now Altars, Organs, Jewish Ephods, or Surplice, Mass-cloaths, and Romish Crossing, bowing to Altars, Images, are badges of Jewish and Popish Religion: We know the dispute between Augustine and Jerome, who defended Peter's distillation, Gal. 2, to gain the Jews: But Augustine faith, Epist. 9, Si proterea illa Sacramenta celebravius (Paulus) quia simularet sa judaeum, ut illos sacrificaverer, cur non etiam Sacrificavi cum Gentibus, quia & ips, qui sine lege erant, tamen sive lege faciis est, ut eos quas, sacrificaverer? Yea, then (as Augustine faith to Jerome, Epist. ad Hyeronymum, 19) we might use all the Jewish Ceremonies to gain the Jews, and so fall in the Heresie of Ebion and the Nazarites: Duvallius, 20 Thom. tract. delegib. q. 3. Art. 3. would defend Peter in that; but he faith, Magis place Barroni Responsor, Tom. 1. Annal. cur, 5. Petrum vermissiter peccasse: As for Paulus Circumcisione of Timothy, Papists clese him. Vasquez, Tom. 1. in 12. disp. 181. cap. 8. Loco & opus more accommodating, He did it when he could not offend the Gentiles: Aquinas, 12. q. 103. Art. 4. Yea, so the Fathers, as Augustine, Epist. 19. Constofom, Cypril, Hyeronum.

Allo Papists, Bensonius, tractat. de figura, lib. 1. disp. q. 4. ad Articul. 4. Vasquez, Tom. 1. in 12. disp. 182. cap. 4. Prove to use Jewish Ceremonies, though with no Jewish mindis is unlawfull: Suarez, Tom. de legisl. lib. 9. de leg. Divin. pos. cap. 14. Usus Circumcisionis ex prohibitioe est factus malus, & actus malus non honestatur proper incitationem bonam. Aquinas, 22. q. 11. et 12. q. 103. Art. 4. As one should mortally sin, who should say, Christianum non necessitum, Christ is yet to be incarnate. So he using the Jewish Ceremonies were a lie in fact. Cajeter, and Tolent, acknowledge a lie in fact. Salmeron, in Gal. 5 q. 2. faith, It is unlawfull to use the Jewish Ceremonies. Aegidius Comick, de actibus, supernatural. 19. disp. 15. dub. 3. n. 39. Nullus modo licet ob ullam, siem, uti Ceremonias propius falsa Religionis. Vasquez, 12. disp. 182. n. 48. Patres Deillos commissare tenen non licere: Lodo. Merarius Iesu, tol. 1, in Thom. tract. de legis. disp. 19. Sect. 2. n. 5. Mentii suuent Apostoli usurpantes extioreles legum Mosae Ceremonias, si non ex animo usurpabant, tamen sibi vere licitis, ex animo vere colendi Deum per illas, scit ut aliis per easdem celebtradur. So Greg. Valens. Tom. 2. disp. 7. punct. 7. q. 7. Soto de justif. l. 2. q. 5.
Arg. 6. It is a religious scandal to the users of these Ceremonies: for Ceremonies devised by men, of no necessary use in God's worship, are monuments of idolatry, snares drawing the practisers to idolatry, and so unlawful, as the High places, Groves, Images, though not Adored of the Canaanites. This argument is so learnedly prosecuted by D. Ammes, that I adde nothing to it.

**Quest. V.**

Whether the Ceremonies, especially kneeling in the act of receiving the Sacrament, be guilty of idolatry?

Arg. 7. Wsoever presumeth to invent a worship of his own, com- miteth idolatry interpretatively, because he worshippeth a God whom he conceiveth is pleased with false worship: But that is not the true God, for he is pleased with no worship, but what he hath prescribed himself; but all inventers and practisers of humane Ceremonies, worship such a God: Also, all who usurp the room and place of God, give the glory of God to creatures; but all Authors and practisers of humane Ceremonies, take the room and place of God, from God, and give it to creatures, because to ordain worship, and all Religious means of worship, is proper to the only wise Law-giver: But for the clearing of this Question, I divide it in some subordinate Questions.

**Sect. I.**

Whether religious kneeling, laying aside our intention and will to adore, that before which we kneel, of its own nature be Adoration?

This Question is most necessary, both against Papists and Forma-
lists: But first remember, that (a) Raphae de la Torres, a late Schoolman, maketh heaven Adorations: 1. Bowing of the knee. 2. Pro-
stration. 3. The lifting up of the eyes. 4. Of the hands to Hea-
von. 5. Kissing. 6. Knocking on the Breast. 7. Uncovering of the head: Though this last be not Adoration, but a National sign of reverence, and is not every where Adoration; yet (b) Ab-
ulensis saith, the Jews did pray and sacrifice with covered heads: So saith (c) Virgilius, and (d) Lud. Vitæ: Therefore the Corinthians had this from the Grecians as a civil sign of gravity, which should not be banished from God's worship: and if it be appropriate to an Idol, it should in that case be made Veneration: But no reverence
null is due to an Idol. Jesuits, as (c) Suarez, and others, and Formalists, Morton, Burges, Hooker teach us, That Religious bowing before a creature, if there be no intention of Adoring, is not Adoration: But it is to be considered; that the bowing of the knee physically or civilly, is indifferent and is not Adoration: for we bow to Kings, and Artificers may bow the knee to drive a nail in a bed, and yet are not Adoring; but Religious Adoration, whether ye will or not by nature's impression is Religious note of Religious Submission.

2. I consider four acts of the soul that may convey external Adoration. 1. One of the minde, a consideration of the excellency of what we Adore; 2. A will to submit to this excellency; 3. The judgements diting this to be honest to submit; 4. A purpose or intention habitual or actual of Adoring; many of these may be where there is no Adoring: and the Religious external bowing of the body is essentially Adoring, when that bowing is in a state of worship: kneeling before consecrated Elements for Reverence of either God or the Elements, must be Adoration, though we should wash it with foul water, and say, that there is no intention to render God's glory to these Elements.

3. Let it be considered what is said by the (f) Jesuit Joannes de Lugba, the Pope's Professor at Rome, which I propound with some change; 1. There is a purpose of external Adoring, with an inward submission of the heart: whether this be an habitual or actual intention, it is sure it is an Adoration, when it cometh forth in a gesture of Adoring. 2. A will to bow the body in scorn and derision, as the Souldiers bowed the knee before Jesus and this being not in a state of worshipping, but in a state and case of disgracing, is not Religious bowing or Adoration: This is not a natural expression of inward submission, but rather of disgrace. 3. There is a willed voluntary Religious bowing for fear, for gain, or for glory: yet without any internal estimation of the excellency of the thing Adored. This Suarez denyeth to be worshipping, it being only a faining of worship, not a worshipping.

But I prove the contrary: 1. Because then no enacted worshipping of Idols, were indeed a worshipping of an Idol, and yet all the time that the Adorer boweth his knee to the Idol, though he have no inward purpose of heart to Adore the external bowing,

(c) Suarez.
Tom. 1. in 3. Thom.
q. 2. art.
5. Sect. 4.

(f) Joannes de Lugba, de myster., in cast. dif. 2. Sect. 2.
23. Sechla.

Intentional of worshipping.
must be a natural expression of actual submission to the thing before which we bow, and a conciliating of an opinion with others, of Religious eminency and subjection of Divine dignity, to that thing before which we kneel. 3. Religious kneeling of the Calves of Samaria, Hos. 8. is a natural expression of Religious love to these Calves, though the kisser have no intention of worshipping. 3. All 14, 11, 12, 13. The men of Lystra are reproved for sacrificing and for Adoring-men; 15. Sirs, why do ye these things, for we also, are men of like passions as ye, and Preach to you that ye should turn from these Vanities to the living God? Barnabas and Paul cebuketh the men of Lystra, because they worshipped men with humane passions; yet did they not intend to worship men, for they were to them in that act of worshipping, Gods in mens shapes, as they say, v. 21. Gods are come down to us in the likeness of men; if they conceived them not to be men indeed, but Gods come down from heaven, then could they not intend to worship men, but Gods: So John would not, nor had any purpose to worship a created Angel; but taking him to be God, he fell down and worshipped, as is clear by the Angels reproofs; Rev. 19. 10. He said unto me, See thou do it not, I am thy fellow servant: Likewise, Acts 17. The Athenians set up an Altar, not to the Portrait of gold, which yet they worshipped, v. 2. 4. 5. but intended not to worship it; But the God which made heaven and earth, whom Paul preached: So are the Gentiles said to offer to Devils, not to God, what they offer, 1 Cor. 10. 20. Deut. 37. 17. Psal. 1. 6. 37. and 2 Chron. 11. 15. Yerbohontos Calves are Devils; and yet they intended not to worship Devils, but God, that brought them out of the Land of Egypt, 1 Kings 12. 28.

4. If Religious kneeling require that we intend to worship every thing, before which, as an object, we do Religiousy kneel; then Religious kneeling should not signify internal submission of the heart by natures impression of Divine institution; but by the voluntary and the free institution of him that kneeleth: But this latter is absurd, for if kneeling should signify, what it doth signify, by our free and voluntary appointment: Then we might put upon natural gestures what significations we pleased; and were not to stand to the significations which God and nature have put upon kneeling. 3. So it were in mans power to impose upon Religious kneeling
kneeling to God, civil courtesy, such as a subject expresseth to his Prince, or a son to his Father, and it were free to us to kneel to a stock, and that Religiously, and yet put upon kneeling the negative reverence, that we give to the Bible; and it were in the three children will to kneel to Nebuchadnezzar's Image, and impose this signification on the gesture, that they were, kneeling, to God only, all which are manifestly false: so (g) Field faith, kneeling, hath institution from the instinct of nature.

They Obje&. 1. The externall act of kneeling signifies the inward submission of the heart, but there is no inward submission of the heart to a thing to which we kneel, when we are compelled to kneel only for fear of men, or induced to kneel for hope of glory, or some by-respect without any intention or purpose to adore, therefore this externall Adoration is a false signe, and signifies not a thing as it is, and so is no worship.

Answ. That externall bowing is not true, but false: I distinguish, it is not true Morally, because it is a false signe, and a sinfull abusing of worship, for there ought to be a bowed heart, when there is a bowed knee, but if the meaning be, this externall bowing is not true metaphysically, and partaketh not of the nature of Religious worshipping, it is false, for it is truly worship, and the essence and definition of worship agreeth to it: for from Religious bowing there refuseth by the nature of the externall Act, which is of divine institution, an honouring of that before which we do bow, as before a proposed object, what ever be the present purpose or intention of the bower: else if I bow to an Idol intending, and conveying in my heart-purpose all honour to God only, I should not worship an Idol: The three Children cast into the fiery Furnace did but refuse externall bowing to Nebuchadnezzar, and would hazard upon burning quick, before they should give that to the Image; or the Kings commandment was not, that all should give and convey in purpose of heart to that Image all divine glory, but only Religious prostration before it; yet the three Children say, Dan.3. Well, be it known to thee, O king, that we will not serve thy Gods, nor worship thy golden Image, &c. They expressly refuse knee-bowing, & the reason is, because if ye bow your knee Religiously to a stock, it is not in your power or free choice, to stay the flux and motion of Religious honour off, or from the stock; but
because Religious bowing doth not convey honour to the thing before which ye bow by your free will, but by God and nature in situation, even as weeping naturally expresseth sorrow, laughing gladness; so doth Religious bowing signify Religious honouring without any act of the free choice of the worshipper intervening. It is impossible to adore God, in and through an Image; and give no Religious reverence to the Image at all; as it is impossible to hear the word and tremble at it; and yet none of that Religious trembling be wounding and terminated upon the Word, as it is impossible to kneel to the King's Ambassador conveying all and whole the civil honour to the King, but some honour must redound to the Ambassador; a father cannot love the Doctor for his sons' cause, but some love he must confer really upon the Doctor; if not absolute, yet relative, for his sons' estate. Jacob could not kiss Joseph his son's coat, and yet refer that whole expressed affection to Joseph and no thing at all to the coat, for then should there be no reason, why he should kiss the coat, rather than the skin of the beast supposed to be the devouter of his son; if therefore the Communion should kiss the Sacerdotal Bread, as he boweth Religiously before it as the object of his Sacerdotal Worship, which he receiveth, hope it would be thought very like the Kissing of the Cultus of Sa graeas, and a Religious expression of love to the bread, and by the same case, Religious bowing to God; by the intervening of bread as an object, must be an expression of Religious honouring of Bread; but no Religious honouring by Religious bowing can be expressed, but Adoration of bread; for as I have proved, it is not in our free Election that Religious kneeling signifies what honour we please, as if it were in our power, that Religious kneeling signifies Religious, or civil honour; or more, of the Religious honour; but our will or thoughts cannot change the nature of things; kneeling is essentially Religious, as (a) Iohannes Delago dixeth it, \textit{Nora submissio externa}.

2. \textit{b) Suárez objecteth;\textit{ Adoration is a voluntary action proceeding from the will of the Adorer; and therefore excluding this will, it is not Adoration, but only the material action of adoring; also adoration is honouring, but none can honour without an intention of honouring, and therefore he who externally gives signs of honour to an Idol, without an intention to honour the Idol, doth not truly honour and adore the Idol, but only dissembleth.}
Quod benedictum beneficium solvit: Our third distinction doth well answer this: The naked material action of bowing Physically considered, wanting all Religious will of adoring, is not an honouring; if a Carpenter bow before an Image to drive a nail in it, he doth not worship the Image, because that is an action. In status aris, non in status Religionis; In a state of Art, not in a Religious state: But the voluntary bowing before any thing in a state of worship, or Religion, as its here, is Adoration; for there is voluntary bowing in a Religious way of a state, but there is not required a particular intention to Adore the signe, that is accidental to the nature of worship.

 Suarez objecteth. The essence of Adoration requireth the intention of the Adorer; therefore the adoring of this, or that thing, requireth a proportional intention of adoring the thing.

Anf. 1. The Antecedent is not universally true, and is a begging of the question, because externall adoring of an Idol may be without intention to adore an Idol. 2. Though the Antecedent were true; that an absolute Adoration of God requireth the intention of the doer, as it is not true; Lawfull and sincere Adoration indeed requireth the intention, but not absolute adoration: Though (I say) it were true, yet it followeth not that a relative adoration requireth an intention of giving co-adoration or relative worship to the signe.

 Suarez. 3. Objecteth: The honouring of one thing cannot properly be called the honouring of another thing different therefrom, except that honouring be some way referred by the minde, to that other thing, or except they be partakers one of another; but the Image, and first Sampler, or prototype are different things, therefore the honouring of the first Sampler cannot be called the honouring of the Image, except the honouring by the intention be referred to the Image. I answer, The Image and Sampler are one in a sinfull imagination, as Jebovah and the Golden Calf are one, but it followeth not, that there must be two distinct intentions, one in adoring the Prototype, and in co-adoring the Image another; But he who intendeth to honour the King in his Ambassadors person, needeth not two intentions, one by which he intendeth to honour the King, another whereby he intendeth to honour his Ambassador.
Sect. II.

Whether the Idolatrous Jews were charged with the crime of Idolatry, because they adored the creature in such, or because they adored the Godhead in, with, or under the creatures, which, and whether or no, do Papists commit Idolatry with them in this point:

Let these considerations go before.

1. That the Jews believed the Image to be God by way of representation, not essentially or really; they believed the Image to be God objective, commemorative, representative, relative, declarative, significative: Non essentia, non per se, non realiter.

2. There is an honour or negative reverence due to any Image of God, ordained by himself, or to any mean of honouring God, because it is such, though it cannot be expressed in the act of adoration; but the question is, if the honour of adoration, either real or absolute be due to the Image?

3. The Jews intended to honour Jehovah in their Images, what inferior intention they had to honour the Image, we are now to inquire.

4. We bow our knees two ways before a creature, either before a creature as an object by accident, or while we pray, where of necessity must be before us some creature; a school, a table, a pulpit, none of these are adored, because they are before us by accident, having no Religious use. The Image before the law, and the sacramentall elements before the kneller, cannot be thus present; 2. The creature is before the kneller of Religious purpose, as a Religious object.

5. The Creature is religiously present before the kneller two ways: 1. Active. 2. Passive. 1. In the meer dead naked act of teaching and exciting the memory, so that when that act is past, I turne from the creature, and adore the Creator: So at the sight of the Sun or Moon being taught and instructed of the Wisdom and power of God, in creating such excellent creatures, I am to turn from them, and adore the Lord of the creatures. Thus the creatures are kindly and per se objects in the act of teaching, but not objects at all in the act of adoration: 2. The creatures are objects passive, when bodily bowing in a religious state is directed towards the creatures really and bodily present by a commandment of the Church, or of purpose, and so they are made objects of Adoration.
Cap. I. Q. 5. intendeth the Adoration of God.

I. Conclusion. The relative expression of God which is in the works of God, is no formal ground of any Adoration of the creatures. I. Because Adoration upon this ground, though the creature, the Host of Heaven be excellent, is forbidden, Deut. 4:19.

2. Not only Images (which cannot represent God) and the Sacraments, but all the creatures, even, Rats, Mice, Flyes, Frogs, Worms, Insects and wicked men, yea, and Devils are to be worshipped, because all things having being, are shadows and footsteps of God, their cause, first Author, and last end, Psal. 19:1. Psal. 103:17. Rom. 1:19, 20. Act. 17:27, 28, Prov. 16:4. Rev. 4:11. Rom. 11:36, 37. 3. Because God is really, and by the diffusion of his blessed essence, present in all creatures, it followeth not that we should adore them: The Formalis upon this ground, that Christ is really present in the Sacrament, though the manner we know not, think that Christ should be Adored in the Sacrament, according to that, Verbum audirem, motum sentirem, modum nescimus. But if this be good Logick, because we know not the way of the Spirit, and how the bones grow in a woman with child, Eccles. 11: v. 5.

And God, where he worketh, is present by the immediation of essence and power, though we know not the way of his presence, we are to adore the soul of man, and the bones of a child, in a woman's belly; though they should say that God-man Christ is in a more powerful and efficacious manner present in the Sacrament, then in the works of nature; yet should it follow, that God is to be worshipped in the works of nature also: for Magus minus variat efficien, for then we could not conclude any thing but this: Though there be not so real a ground of Adoring Lice and Frogs, as Adoring of the Sacrament: Yet there is a ground, seeing God is in the reality of his blessed essence, present in all creatures.

II. Conclusion. The Idolatrous Jews did not adore the golden Calf, as a creature, but as God by representation, Exod. 32:4. And believing not the golden Calf to be really God. When Aaron had made thereof a golden Calf, they said, These be thy Gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt.

5. And when Aaron saw it, he built an Altar before it, and Aaron made Proclamation, and said, To morrow is a Feast to Jehovah. Now that they believed not the golden Calf to be really and essentially Jehovah, is more then evident: 1. Because they believed not, Moses to be essentially God, but their guide and leader under God; but this
this Calf they made to supply the want of Moses. 

2. The people gathered themselves together against Aaron, and said unto him, Up, make us gods which shall go before us: For as for this, Moses the man that brought us up out of the Land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him. They made then the Calf only a visible God under Iehovah, to lead them in Moses his place.

3. There is no reason why they should have made Aaron the maker of the Calf then another; but because he being the Lord's Priest, they thought by his holiness, the Godhead of Iehovah did slide into this Calf; and so they held the Calf to be a thing different from Iehovah. They say to Aaron, Make us gods: Ergo, they believed Iehovah to be before this made Calf. 

4. They saw the Calf melted before their eyes, & knew it was made of their ear-rings. 

5. They call it Iehovah, & yet they made it Iehovah; and therefore they discerned between the Calf & Iehovah: for they knew that Iehovah brought them out of Egypt; before the Calf was framed, but the Calf was an image of that Iehovah. 

(a) Bellar. contr. tom. 1.1.2 c. 13. 
(b) Gregor. de Valentin. 
(c) Aquinas, par. 3. q. 25. art. 3. ad 2. A-dorabunt Gentiles ipsas imaginem ut res quae dabant credentes, in ejus effigie iisdem quidem numinibus.

(a) Bellar. and (b) Gregor. de Valentin, say, They worshipped not Iehovah, but a vain Idol: Else how is it said, Ps. 106. when they made this Calf, that they forgot the Lord, if they worshipped God in the Calf, they were minds full of God. It is main reasoning this, the wife hath taken another husband tobed with her, Morally, forgets not her husband; and to worship God in a memorative signe, forbidden of God, is a forgetting of God, and a false God indeed. 

2. Those who acknowledge that the Heathens believe that some Godhead dwelt in Images, and gave Responses and Answered of them. Do they by acknowledge, that the Image itself had not the honour of giving Responses, as God hath, but that the included Godhead gave these Responses, and therefore the included Godhead was that which they worshipped. So (c) Aquinas and (d) Vasquez saith, The Heathens acknowledged a Godhead to dwell in the Images: And (e) Bellarmine saith, It is not improbable that the Jews believed, that they worshipped the true God in an Idol: Papists then may take to them Heathens Idolatry, for such, and not Images as they are.
in the Commentaries of the first Edition, on Exodus, said this same. 3. Though the Jews believed the Calf to be essentially God, yet it was God as God that they intended to worship, not the work of men's hands as such: Papists believe that the Image is not God, and yet give the highest worship that is to them. 4. Bellarmine faith with us, when he faith, They saw a Calf in Egypt and Adored it; they believed Jehovah himself to be a Calf; therefore they made the Image of a Calf, and Dedicated it to Jehovah. But (I Answer) That Image so Dedicated, they worshipped as Jehovah, and called the very material Calf Jehovah, and Dedicated it to the Honour of Jehovah; therefore they believed the Lord Jehovah, and the Calf Dedicated to his Honour, (which Calf also they worshipped) to be two divers things, as the Image and the thing signified are Relata and opposite: Ergo, they believed not that that Image which Aaron had made, was Jehovah essentially; therefore in setting up that Image, they worshipped it not as a creature. All the Prophets (faith he) proveth that the Idols are not gods, because they speak not, they neither see, nor hear, Isa. 46. Psal. 113. But (say some Papists) there was no question if they did see and hear by way of naked representation, because they represented gods and men in shape, who see and hear. Ans. first, If all granted they were living things, which did hear and see by representation; the Prophets did well to prove, they should not be trusted in, nor feared as Images, nor should that Godhead within them inclosed, be feared, because it cannot speak with the mouth, nor see, nor hear, nor walk, with their eyes, ears, and feet: and so it was a vain thing to make it a representation of God, who by serving these dead things did help them. But the Prophets strongly prove these Images, and the supposed Godheads in them, were dumb, deafe, blinde, and dead; and therefore neither sign, nor supposed deity represented by the sign, was to be Adored. Also, Isa. 40. 18. To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto him? 19. The Workman melteth a graven Image, and the Goldsmith spreadeth it over with gold; &c. Isa. 46. 5, 6. To whom will ye liken me? and make me equal, and compare me, that we may be alike? 9. I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me. Then it is more then clear that they made a likeness, a comparison, and a similitude betwixt the golden Image and Jehovah: Ergo, they believed
Idolatry may be when the party

believed not that the Image was essentially God, for every thing like to another, must be divers from that to which it is like (they being relatives and opposites) the one cannot be essentially the other; and he proveth they are not God by representation, Isa. 46. They cannot move out of their places except they be born upon Asse or mens boulders: And this is the Holy Ghosts Argument, I am God, Ergo, there is none like me by representation to be worshipped: All assimilation or comparative likeness made by man, betwixt Ichovah and God, is an Idolatrous assimilation; yea the Lords Argument, Isa. 46. is this, every thing made like unto me, before which ye fall down to worship, as a memorative Image of me, must be a living thing at least, that can move out of his place, and answer your cry when ye pray, and save you out of trouble, ver. 7. Isa. 46. And yet it is but a likeness of God, ver. 6. Now I Assume, but the Papists Image, and the Formalists Sacramentall elements before which they Religiously kneel, cannot move out of their place, nor answer the Prayers of those who bow to them, nor save them out of trouble: Ergo, they cannot be Adored as Images, with Religious bowing: nor can they say, the Images or Sacramentall elements can teach and represent God. I Answer, So did the Jewish Images represent God, and yet God convinceth them of Idolatry, Isa. 46. 6,7, Jer. 10. They were but Doctrines of Vanity and Lyes, and Hab. 2 19. Woe to him who saith to the Wood, Awake, and to the dumb stone, Arise, it shall teach. And though the Sacramentall elements be lawfull teaching and representing signes, as being the Ordinances of Christ Jesus; yet the office of teaching cannot elevate and exalt them to the State of Religious worship, because though the elements be lawfull Images, and in this they differ from Jewish and Popish Images; yet that which is Adored must be such as can hear Prayers, Isa. 46. 7. though it be the Image of God. But the Sacramentall elements are not such as can hear Prayer, &c.

Also, that the Adoring of Images is not forbidden by a Ceremoniall Law only, is clear: 1. By Gods Argument, (Isa. 40. 18,) To whom will ye liken me? That is, no created thing can represent God, which is of mans devising (for the elements of Gods institution do represent Christ) and Isa. 46. 9. I am God, and there is none beside me: Ergo, no invention of man can represent me. This Argument is taken from Gods nature, and therefore is of perpetual verity.
The Apostle Paul in the New Testament repeatheth this same Argument, Acts 17, to the heathen Athenians who were tied by no Ceremonial Law of God, ver. 29. *We ought not to think that the God-head is like unto Gold;* You see these people are challenged of Idolatry, who did but erect an Altar to the golden Likeness and Image of God, and yet they did not worship that golden Image, as such; but they worshipped in, and by the Image, ver. 23, 24. The God preached by Paul who made the world.

Hear what (a) Suarez, (b) Bellarmino and Papists say. *It is not Lawfull to represent God by a proper and formal similitude, which represents his essence; but it is Lawfull to represent him by images Analogically, signifying such a forme or shape in the which he appeared in Scripture, according to these metaphors, and mysticall significations, that are given to him in God's Word.*

Anf. 1. Why should not unwritten Traditions (which to Papists are God's word) express to us God's nature in Images, no lesse then the written word? 2. The Heathen did represent God by the Image of a man, with eyes, nose, tongue, ears, head, hands, feet, heart, understanding, all which are given to God in Scripture, yet were they Idolaters in so doing, because God faith, Isa. 46:9. *I am God, and there is none like to me.* 3. If we may portrait God according to all metaphors given unto him in Scripture, then ye may Portrait him, in the shape of a Lyon, a Leopard, a Bear, a Man full of Wine, a Thief stealing in the night, an unjust Judge, a Giant, a man of War on horse-back, &c. All which were folly; and we might worship a Lyon, a Bear, an unjust Judge, a thief stealing in the night, a man mad with the spirit of jealousy. 4. The Essence and specific nature of nothing in Heaven and earth, can be portrayed or painted, no more then God's essence; all painted things are but such and such things by externall proportion and shape; and it is unreasonable to saie that Portraits and Pictures of God, Physically impossible to the Art of Craftsmen, are forbidden only (whereas the Lords word setteth down to us no precepts for Art, as for painting, Musick, speaking right Latine) whereas the Lord forbiddeth universally Gods pictures in any thing in heaven, on earth, or under the earth, Deut. 4:15. *Take ye therefore good heed to your selves, for ye saw no manner of Image on the day that the Lord spake to you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire*.

(a) Suarez, tom. 3. q. 25, dif. 1. in 54. art. 3. Sect. 1. (b) Bellar. to. 2. de relig. Sanct. lib. 2. c. 8. The evasions of Bellarmino and Suarez answered.
... Gregor de Valent. saith we give was divine honour to the creature as to God, or to Christ, for that honour pertaineth to God or Christ, which consolateth to him reverence due to God only, and that opinion of divine honour is conciliated to God, or Christ, Coram & in imaginis, before, and in, or through the Image.

Ans. The people of God had not that opinion every way of Egypt, and their horses, that they had of God; and yet when they, Isa. 31, give that to Egypt and horses, which is due to God, to wit, their Faith and confidence, that they could save in the time of trouble, therefore interpretatively they made Gods of them; otherways they knew literally, that Pharaoh's horses were flesh and not spirit; but Morally and Spiritually they knew them not to be no Gods to save them: It is no more absurd that the Prophets say, The Idol hath eyes and see not, and that it is not God, though by sense they knew it not to be God, but by representation they trusting in the Idol as in God, then it was for Isaiah to say, The horses of Egypt are flesh and not spirit: A wife, if she give her body to a stranger, though not with that opinion of love and respect which is only due to her husband, is yet an harlot, and the people who swear by Jehovah, and by Malcolm, who worship Jehovah, and Jeroboam's Calves, and those who worship the Image of an Ash-Tree, representing Jehovah, Isa. 40. 18. Isa. 46. 6. 7. did not give honour to Malcolm, to the Calves, to the Images, Sicus Jehovah, as to God. See Roineald's Answer. But (faith he) we cannot Worship God, but we must conceive some Image of God in our minde, are we therefore Idolaters, because in these Images we Worship God? and Valent, faith, and so doth the Formalist Lindsey say, That God may be adored before the Sacramentall elements as Images. Ans. We are not forbidden to adore God in the inward conception of minde, Deut. 4. Ye saw no manner of similitude, but nor, ye thought no manner of thoughts of God. 2. The internall image of God in the minde is the objective conception of God as conceived in the minde, there is no hazard of Idolatry there, for that Image is not adorable at all, because then it must be conceived by a new different Image, and that new different Image must be cognoscible by another new Image, and so in infinitum. The externall Image is both made an active object to represent God, and when we religiously bow to it, it is made an object passive, that is adored with God.

Lastly,
Lastly, If the Jews and heathen had adored their Images, as they were such creatures consecrated, and as essentially Gods, the Lord would not have rebuked them for making an Altar Tree the similitude of a God, as he doth, Isa. 40. 18. Isa. 44. 9, &c. And all that I said in the former question proveth the same. So that though Divine honour in the Act of kneeling before the elements be intended to Christ, yet because the elements are there as actual signs, and Vicegerent Images of Christ, if we kneel to Christ Religiously through them, we give them divine honour, though we should intend to honour Christ Jesus only.

Sect. III.

Whether Papists and Formalists give that divine honour that is proper only to God and his Son Jesus Christ to Images, and the elements of Bread and Wine?

I. Cont. To adore Images is to give worship to God before Images, or, in, or through the Images without any Faith of a Godhead, or divine power in the Image according to the Doctrine of the Church of Rome. I prove this out of their Councils.

(a) The Council of Trent, That honour and veneration is due to the Images, not because it is believed, that there is any Divinity and virtue in them, for the which they should be worshipped; but because the honour given to them is referred to the Saviour, which they represent; that by these Images which we kiss, and before which we uncover our head and bow down, we may adore Christ, and the Saints; which these Images resemble. Hence, 1. The Image doth, but as a remembrative object, excite the affection to give honour to God, in, and through the Images; but 2. Let these words be examined, the Council denies any divinity to be in Images, but if they mean no divinity really to be in Images, so they say nothing against us; for we do not ascribe to Papists that they teach there is a real God-head in the Image, but that all that is really in it, is Wood, Gold, or Metall, and so did the Gentiles believe their Images to be teaching books, Hab. 2. 9. 1 Er. 10. 8. Deut. 4. 19. Isa. 40. 18. & 46. 67. Acts 17. 29. and gold and silver; but say they, What needed the Prophets to prove that gold and silver could not see, nor hear, nor deliver in time of trouble, reason would here convince them to be ten times more.
Papists did of old adore before, or at the presence of the Image as a memorial signe, and yet were Idolaters.

times blinde, who believed any such thing. Ans. The Prophets do well to do so: Nor that the Heathen believed there was any Godhead in them formally, but because they ascribed actions to these images, that were due to living creatures, and made them to be such as did see, hear, move, deliver; So Isaiah proveth Egypt's horses not to be God, but flesh, yet they did not believe there was a Godhead in the horses, but Consequenter, by good consequence, when they laid that hope on the horse, that they were to lay upon God, he had need to say the horse was flesh and not God: So when men give to these things, bowing of the body, and say unto a stock, Thou art my Father: God may prove the stock is not a living man, and hath no fences, to convince them the more, that they can far less be God's Vicar; for a Vicar or Deputy creature representing the living God, should be such as can do what God doth; else we should put on it the honour due to God: But if the Council mean, They have no divinity in them, but by way of representation, because they be Vicaria dei signa, signes resembling the Creator God; Now if this be denied, the images must be naked memorials before which people do adore God, as Mirandula, Durandus and others said, and yet latter Papists say more of their own Images: But I would have it remembred, that there be two sorts of deputed or Vicar-Images; some that do only signify, as the darkness of the Skie going before the morning light in the East, that doth nothing at all which the morning light doth, but nakedly signifies that the Sun is rising: There be other Depute signes that can exercise acts, which the Sampiar would do, if it were present, as the deputy is not a naked Vicar or depute signe of the King, for he doth not only signify the King's mind, but can do Royall Acts in the King's name: Images are depute signes of God, of the first sort, that do only rub the memory and understanding, and therefore deserve no honour except the honour due to the means of worship, as the Bible, Sacraments, which deserve not Adoration, but only a Negative Reverence, or a not despising or contemptuous handling of them, Images being unlawfull means, and not Commanded of God, deserve no Veneration at all; and though it be true, that the Ambassador deserve Princely Honour, for the Princes Place, whom he represents; yet he can act the person of the Prince, and is not a naked deputed
memorative object of God, is Idolatry.

puted sign, but Images are therefore convinced to be unlawful full
adueris representing (as Idolaters made them to be, I. 40. 18. I. 46. 6.7.) Because they can do no acts at all, not exercise any
actions proper to the samplar, for Psal. 115.v.6. They have mouths,
but they speak not, eyes they have, but they see not, 7. They have eares,
but they hear not; and therefore should not be trusted in, as in
means and deputed representations of God, for which cause the
Prophet infereth ver. 8. They that made them, are like unto them,
so are everyone that trusteth in them. ver. 9. O Israel trust thou in the
Lord. Therefore Religious trusting in them is Idolatry: But the
Canon of Trent faith this same of their Images, to wit, that there be
no Godhead or vertue in them. 2. If the worship of Saboeia, the
higher service due to God, be given to Images, as I prove hereafter,
then also some deity or Divine vertue; for Gods highest honour can
no more be communicated to any, save to God, then the Godhead
it self; for a Relative Godhead is as due to stocks, as a relative
worship. 3. If the Tridentine Canonists will have divine Adora-
tion given to God Coram imaginibus, before Images, or at their
presence, as only memorative signes, & active objects exciting us to
worship God, then is our Thesis proved: But if they mean that God
is Adored, Coram imaginibus, before images, as not only memorative
and active objects, but also before them as passive objects, that are
compartners under God of some divine adoration; then I say, they
contradicted themselves, for Gods highest honour called Latriona,
can not be given to them but by a figure, because they are Gods, & have
divinity in them only by a figure, and not really: for Suarez & Vas-
quez denyeth that we can fix our hope and faith in Images, or make
prayers to them. Nisi modo figurativo & tropoduriore, by a figure,
and a hard troop, and most improperly and by that same reason
must be given to stocks and stones most improperly, and that is,
men do religiously bow before them, as before memorative obj. &

2. Gabriel (b) Vasquez faith well, There can be no footstep of holi-
ness in the image, beside the excellency of the samplar, nor any divine
vertue wherefore it should be worshipped; for there is nothing in the

In imagine preter ipsum prototypi excellentiam non potest esse aliquo virtut, nisi entia debeat esse timentis imaginis folium irrationale & inanimatum excellenciae & sanitatis exempli, nisi hominum dignas esse submittere Adoratione.
image of it self, but that which is sensisse, and simile, and spirituall, and no man can in a Religious way submit himselfe to such a creature. Hence it must be a naked memorative sign, and therefore the killing of the Image, though Physically it be real, and not Metaphysically, yet moral it is not proper, seeing all religious affection in that killing is transferred to God. And we know Vasquez alloweth, that every thing, as it is a being, and resembleth God the first being, is to be Adored, and so stones,---Frogs, the Devil, Judas lips that kissed Christ, are to be Adored.

So their seventh pretended Synod (c) faith, That the Honour due to God is not to be given to images, according to our faith, only at the beholding of pictures we are put in mind of the sampler: And the same faith Mr. Lindefey, is the way of Adoring God in the Sacrament. But so the Gentiles, as faith (d) Arnobius, and (e) Laelanius, yea, and the Apostle (f) Paul faith Adored images; yea, and God would (g) not forbid similitudes of God to be Adored, except he did teach that the heathen Idolaters worshipped similitudes, and so the Papists in that vulgar verse saith, they Adored not the Images, but the thing signified by the Images.

Effigiem Christi dum transis, Semper Adora:
Non tamen effigiem, sed quod designat, Honora.

Let me add these reasons to prove they cannot Adore the Image, but as a memorative sign: 1. The Image and the elements in any consideration, either as creatures, or as the honourable act of representation is put upon them, are but creatures; for the act of representation is a temporary Godhead, and maketh them but Time-Gods; Ergo, they cannot be Adored. 2. If there be two Adorations here, one given to God, and another to the Image; and if both be divine honour, there must be two collaterall Gods; if Adoration prove Christ to be God, two divine honours put upon things, one upon God, and another upon the Creature; there must be

status, non quaelibet aurum, argentum et similes in cujusvis materiarum materia dijint, sed quod corum, quae
alior invisibiles sunt, praebens per simulachra exhibat. (c) Laelanius, de institut. ad
Constatantium. lib. 2. cap. 2. Non ipsa (inquitus Gentes) simulachra timetens, sed ea ad quorum imaginem facit, & quorum nominibus congregata factis. Resp. Laelanius nempe idem simili-
tis quod sit in coelic effect. Arbitramini, curigit oculus in caelo non tollitis? Cur ad parietes
signa & lapides potius, quam cujusvis, ubi cos esse creditis. (f) Matt. 17. 29. (g) Deut. 4.
18. Is. 40. 18. & 46. 6,7,8,9.
two Gods, or then the Creature remaining a Creature, must have Communion with Gods high honour, which is Idolatry. 3. Images and elements are either worshipped for themselves, or for some other thing; if for themselves, they are God, for only God for himself is worshipped with Divine honour; if for God they be worshipped, then it is an inferior, and improper worship, and therefore they must be worshipped as memorative objects. 4. Images and elements, if they partake of externall worship proper to God: Why may not Sacrifices and Incense be offered unto them, and faith and hope fixed on Images? They do not partake of internall worship: for as Vasquez faith well, inward worship consistseth in Apprehension prsimi principii, & in motu ad illud; in apprehension of the first Author and Creator of all things, and in the will's motion toward it. But this apprehension cannot be put upon Images or elements, therefore they be here significant objects only.

So their second Counsell (h) of Nice, as Epiphanius a Deacon, (h)Councilium Nicaenum 2. in name of the Synod faith, Images were present before the kneelers, as our elements are, only as memorative objects. 2. That the singular affection of Adoring, was bounded only upon God: And (i) Quod sit in recordationem atque memoriam, 5. ita quod salutari quandam affectionem in ipsa prototypa erubescit (Catholici) salutaris & honori cæ Ador veritae imaginibus, non venia ob id illis Latine omnem exhibentur, aus Devinum venerationem adscripsuntur, absit haec columnia. (i) Councilium Senonense. Cap. 14. Definit imagines debere adorari non quia in illius adorationem creditur inesse sed ob recordationem exemplar. (k) Councilium Mogunt. Cap. 4, Pastores noster populum acceptrum, imaginem eum ad id proximum, ut adhereretur et colere at quam reseruam utilitatem, meminisse debent, per imagines recordarem.
was essentially God, and kneeled to it as to God; Paul did in vain rebuke them for believing that the Godhead was like silver or gold; and if the men of Lystra believed the shapes of men, and the likeness of men to be essentially God, and in that respect gave the honour of Sacrificing due to God, to these shapes; then the Scripture in vain should bring these men of Lystra in, as putting a difference between the shapes of men, and the Godhead of Jupiter and Mercurius, to which they were about to give Divine Sacrifice. And if Formalists kneel before the elements, and give a transitive glory to Christ through them, they are in the same sense Idolaters that the Gentiles were. So the Council of Moguntiae, (l) and Alphon- 

(l) Concil. Moguntiae, ib. 
Sc. 2, Codex oculis perlustrans, cum ad venerabile & tremendum nomen, Ictu deveneris, oculos aperis, inclinatur, & suspensus in calum oculos atolli, & ob id omni reprehensione & Idolatria sufficitur eventus, etsi quidem non litteras qua uterum punguntur, honorat, sed cogitationes, & veneracionis mensis se ad cum honorandum & venerandum reparat, cujus memoriae haec littera ei suggeratur. (m) Alphon. de Castro hœres. 

(m) Alphon. de Castro hœres. 

denique adorato ipsa, si coram cruce sit, nunc tamen nostra ad id solum rector quod cruce ipsa representat. 

(n) Thom. Walsch de fœam, tom. 3, cap. 156, no. 6. (o) Greg. lib. 7, 

(o) Greg. lib. 7, Epist. ad Secund. q. 53. (p) Adrianus, de imaginibus, cap. 12. (q) Concilium Romanum, sub Stephano 3. Et nos quidem non quafi ante Divinitatem, ante ilam (imaginem aut elementum S 57 9 9 

Suppositio, sed illum adoramus, quem per imaginem natum, possum, aut in ebrum 

(f) 257 9 9 

Apostostum recordamus. (r) Suarez, tom. 3, in 1, disp. 54. Sect. 4.
ly, and by itself, and Adoration with another. Henriquez’s faith, it is a fault that it is not preached to the people, that the image of Christ is to be adored with supreme worship called Latreia. Cre-erits faith, many Schoolmen are of this mind; and so doth (w) Azorius (x) Archangelus Rubeo (y) Iacobus de Grapheus, Let us worship (faith he) every image with that same worship, with which we worship the samplar: That is, let us bestow the worship highest of Latreia, upon the Image of God and Christ, and the signe of the Cross, as it bringeth us in minde of Christ’s suffering. The second distinction is, that the Image is truly properly adored, as the material object no lesse then the samplar: Hence they reprove Durandus, Pius Mirandula, Hulcor, and other, who say that Images are improperly adored, & (a) Raphael de la Torres answering to that of Durandus and Mirandula, That Images are adored by accident; in respett that before them, and at their naked presence, as before memarative object, we adore God and Christ (faith he) are adored by accident is thus to be understood. Images are adored, Ratone Alterius, by reason of another. Vel per alium, by another thing, but this argueth not that Images are improperly adored, hereby only is denied that there is any adoration of the proper excellency of the thing adored. Hence he would say that the borrowed honour of Adoration given to the Image is truly and properly the Adoration that is due to God, but it is given to the Image in reference to God, and not for any inherent Excellency that is in the Image: For (faith he) If we do not properly adore the Image, we do but exercise the material action of kissing and kneeling to the image, without any internall affiement of submission to the Samplar: He addeth that it is enough that the intention of submission is referred to the samplar, and the external Adoration to the Image, for if any should (faith he) kisse the earth (as the rude multitude in some place doth) upon an intention of inward submission of heart to God, Neque quam vere & proprie adorat terram, he doth not truly and properly adore the earth, but only he exerciseth a material action.

(a) Raphael de la Torres, sum. Theolog. de relig. to. 1. in 22 q. 84. art. 2. disp. 5. q. 94. dub. 5. Respounder modus iste dicendi (per accidens adorantur) sive debet intelligi, idest per alium, vel (quod idem est) ratione alterius; hoc autem non arguit improprietatem adorations, sed negat adorationem excellenciae proprie et residentis in re adoratae; sive adoraturs humanitas Christi. See also Bellarm. de imag. c. 11. c. 15. Neque dicendum est impropria venerandas esse, quia quod non dicere nifi improprie, simplicitet negari potest.
Diverse va
tions of
Papists
touching
the wor
shippin
of kissing toward the earth: But I answer, all this is vanity, for such
a one worshippeth the earth, but referreth the internall submis-
on to God, and all this, is to say the Image doth truly partake of the
Religious honour (Lateria) due to God only.

A third distinction is here, of (b) Gabriel Biel on the Canon of
the Mosaic, In the Adoring of images (faith he) and of other things
which are adored by accident, though there be an external act of bow-
ing both to the Image and the Sambler, yet there be two internall acts
which are different, whereof one is terminated and bounded upon the
image, not absolutely as it is a such a material thing of stone, or mettall,
but as it is an image: This is an acknowledgement whereby I esteem
the Image a thing ordained to represent Christ, or a complacency
whereby I rest on such a thing, as to be honoured for Christ, and
the other is a recognition, and acknowledgement immediately ter-
minal and bounded upon the Sambler, whereby it is acknowledged
to be the chiefest good. But the truth is, Religious generation
before the image, or at the presence of the image (faith (c) Durandus)
as if the Sambler were there present, is one and the same adoration gi-
gen to the image and the Sambler; and all that (d) Gregorius de Val-
tentia faith against this, is, that Durandus minus circumspetit locum,
he speak not so waryly, as need were: And so did their (e) Seventh pre-
tended Lynod speak, as (f) Leonius expoundeth them, Non ligno-
um aut colorum naturam adoro, abstat, and (g) Vasquez faith, They
displease some in so speaking, but they mean well: They meant all
that which our Formalists do, and there is no discord (faith (b) Ga-
briel Biel) in re, in the matter it self; for both say, 1. that the
creature should not be adored with the highest honour (Lateria) of
it self, as if it were the object of Adoration: 2. Both teach that the
minde and affection is carried toward the Sambler, which is adored:
3. Both mean that the adorer exerciseth some act upon the image, as
it representeth the Sambler, only the diversity is, if this act termina-
ted on the Image, should be called an adoring of the Image; and
all these three Formalists do to the elements in the Supper: Hence
I require of the Formalists, one difference betwixt the objective
presence of the elements before the kneeler, in the act of receiving,
and the objective presence of the Heathens image of God, Isa.40.
and the Papists image of dumb wood, and blinde stone: Mr. Lindsey answered me once in a conference, That the elements were present as the Ordinances of God, but the Popish and Heathen images are the inventions of men. I replied to him, That is no answer: for images and elements (I know) do differ; Physica, specie; The Sun adored by Persians, and Satan by Indians differ. Satan and the Sun, are not Eiusdem speciei, of that same nature, but it is idolatry to worship either; images and bread in the kind of means of worship differ, but, as touching the objective presence before the kneller kneeling to these, there is no difference: as 1. To memorandum objects: 2. As to objects vicarious and standing in the room of Christ: 3. At their presence and through them God is adored.

(i) Suarez, is not content with the doctrine of Durandus here. By this images are (faith he) but occasions. Vel signa excitantia hominem ad prototypum adorandum, non vero res quae adorantur, or signes moving the man to adore the sampler, but they are not things adored: for (faith he) the man, who seeing a beautiful creature, wishes in his minde to the consideration of the Creator, and therefore praiseth and loveth the Creator, cannot be truly said to praise and love that fair creature, though the presence of that creature have stirred up the love of the Creator, and by this means images are reserved only for memory. Thus he will have images adored with the same worship that is given to God: But I answer: 1. If he shall kill that creature and direct Religious bowing toward it, and through that external Religious act, convey his worship to God, and give no other external adoration and signe of heart submission to God, then that which is tyed and alligated of purpose to that fair creature, as Papists and jews did of old, who killed the calves, and fell down before the images, as Isa.44.17, which yet were but memorials of Jehovah teaching them of Jehovah, Esa.40.18, Esa.46.6,7. Hab.2.18,19, Such a one should also worship that fair creature: Our Formalists do not make the elements memorandum images. 

2. God
2. God hath no other externall bowing made to him in the act of receiv'ng, then is made before these elements, in due regard of so divine a mystery, and because of so mysticall union; the union is real, whether it be by consubstantiation, or transubstantiation, they will not define, the Lord Jesus is present in the elements, in a more real and spirituall manner, then he is in any groundlesse image of mettall or wood; and therefore the image and elements do mostly really partake even by Durandus and Placoe, and Mirandula their minde of that worship of (Latreia) due to God; only Durandus (as Vasquez, and Gregor, Valent. say) spake not so warily, but not so grosse, as to say, What ever is given to God, is given to the image: 2. It is not in the Adorers power that kneeling should be a signe of lesse worship, as referred to the image, and of greater, as referred to God; for the same materiall kissing, and Religious Prostration, which would immediatly be conveyed to Christ, if he were in person present in the image and elements, is done to the image and elements, and Religious kneeling signifies the intenall divine submission of heart to God, as the first author of all, and the last end, not by mans will, but by divine institution.

3. Kneeling to God is a protestation (faith Gregor, de Valen.) That we are willing to raie an opinion of excellency in God, as this excellency is in some manner, and relatively in the image. If therefore kneeling of its own nature, without any act of mans will, or the

Churches institution, wanting Gods Word, do conciliate an opinion of excellency; to whomsoever kneeling is directed, in this it must conciliate the same opinion: if then it be given to Images and elements, it must be a protestation that we are willing to conciliate an opinion of Divine excellency in these lifelesse creatures, which is all we give to God by kneeling. 4. It is not enough that Valen. faith, This honour belongeth to Christ, in so far as it concili-
et al Christ the honour due only to God, and is expressed by kneeling, &c. it belongeth to the images to, as Coram & in illis, before, and in them this opinion is conciliated to Christ: But if the image be God only representatively, and by way of signification, then is it not God of itself and really. Quod est, tale tali, significative, non est tale per se, & realiter, as a painted man is not of itself, and really a man; the word (Jesus) as written with base ink, is not infinite Jesus, the mighty God, the Prince of Peace, really, but only in meer signification: therefore to give Gods honour and externall Religious bowing (which essentially doth note the highest excellency of God) to them, is Idolatry: It is a vain thing to say, The Ambassadour is not really the King; yet the real honour due to the King, is done to him. I Answer, where the King declareth that it is his will, that his Ambassadour be really honoured as himself; this is not the giving of the Kings glory to another against his will: But here expressly contrary to that ( Thou shalt not bow down to them) expounded especiallly of similitudes, Deut. 4. 15. Ye saw no manner of similitude. The glory of Religious bowing contrary to Gods will, (Who will not give his glory to another) is given to images, and to Bread. 2. It redoundeth kindely to the King, who is absent, and to be obeyed in his absence, that His Vicegerent and Deputy be honoured as himself, and presupposeth an infirmity in the King, that he cannot be in many places to receive immediately the honour due to him, and therefore will have that due paid to himself, mediatelie, by the honoured person of a Deputy. God infinite is in all places to receive immediately the pay of Religious knee-honour, and it dishonoureth God to have his glory laid down in the hand of any creature; as it dishonoureth the Husband that his wife give her body to another, representing his person: For this cause (l) Bernardus Puiol faith, Images are properly to be Adored, contrary to that which Durandus faith: And (m) Azorius faith, It is the common opinion that Images are to be Worshipp'd with (Latreia) the highest honour due to God: So (faith he) Thomas, Alexander, Bonaventura, Richardus, Albertus, Paladarius, Alman, Marsilius, Capreolus, Cajetanus, & ceteri juniores sic sentinunt.

The fourth expression of will, is this distinction of (n) Vasquez, That that internall submission to God, as to the Creator and chief God, is due to God only; and that the image, seeing it is a Creature, is not capable

capable of that high honour. But the externall act of kissting and kneeling, he will have, due to the image, for the excellency of the Samplar. And so he denyeth contrary to Suarez, That the image separated from the Samplar, or the humanity of Christ separated from Divinity, can be Adored: But if externall Adoration may be given to images; so also internall submission: (Thou shalt not bow down to them) Religiously it is expounded in the Second Commandment, (Thou shalt not worship them.) It is grossnesse in Vasquez to say, The Worshipping of images was forbidden the Jews in the Second Commandment, as a Ceremoniall inhibition, because of the Jews propension to idolatry: But Act.17.29. Paul expoundeth the Second Commandment, Forbidding the similitude of God: And the Athenians were not under the Law of Ceremonies. Ioannes (o) de Lugno faith, This is a probable opinion: But it is clear, Cornelius a devout man, one who feared and worshipped God, whose Prayers were heard in heaven for Christ's sake, knew that Peter was a man which lodged in the house of Simon a Tanner; yet his Religious externall bowing (though he knew Peter was not God, but a Divine man resembling God) by Peter is rebuked as idolatry, Act.10. v. 24, 25. I cannot help Ioan. (p) de Lugno to say, That Peter forbade Cornelius to worship him, not because it was a sin, but for modesties cause. But 1. Peter's Argument striketh against idolatry, ver. 25. (Stand up, (he forbiddeth Religious kneeling) for I myself also a man) The very Argument that Paul and Barnabas useth, Act. 14. ver. 15. We also are men &c. and used against the idolatry of Lystra, expressly condemned in that place: And the Angels Argument against the idolatry of John, Rev. 19, 10. I am thy fellow servant, Worship God; Ergo, externall Religious bowing should not be given to any, save to God. 2. Peter and the Angel should have opened the Jesuits and Formalists distinction, if worshipping of Saints and dumbe images be worshipping of God, and the honour principally of inward acknowledgment of the Supremacy and Soveraignty of God, be intended, in bowing to images, and modesty should not forbid honouring of God: And whereas Ioannes de Lugno faith, John was forbidden to worship the Angel, to signifie that our nature in Christ was advanced to a dignity above the Angels. But 1. then it is unlawfull to any to worship Angels. 2. Nor is it Lawfull to give the Virgin Mary Divine worship, as Suarez faith:
1. For her excellency in touching Christ. 2. For her Grace and Sanctity. 3. For her mothers place in bearing Christ; because her nature in Christ is not exalted above the nature of other believers; but the nature common to all believers, and Eadem specie, was assumed by Christ. 3. The Angel faith, (Worship God) he therefore believed the Worshipping of Angels was not the Worshipping of God. All these fight against Religious bowing before the elements, in due regard of so Divine mysteries: the Bread would say (if it could speak) See thou do it not, for I also am a Creature.

The fifth trick of wit, is a distinction of (q) Suarez, That one and the same act of Adoration may be given, and is given in external Worship to the image and to God, but in reference to God, it is Latreia, the high Honouring of God, and in reference to the image, it is an inferior Veneration: So do our Formalists say, as (r) Burges faith, Adoration and Veneration differ not but by mens will; and if it be lawful to adore God before the Ark, (s) Why not at the Sacrament? The Bread and the Wine are Christ signifying, (as the Ark had the title of Jehovah) by occasion of the elements, not as they are, but as they signify; we may render a knee-Worship, not in all to them, but only to God or Christ. And again, (r) he holdeth it lawful to adore the elements, but then Adoration as given to the elements, is Veneration, and Adoration in a large sense, 1 Chron. 29. 20. The people Worshipped God and the King: The outward Adoration was one, as the word by which it is expressed was one; but the Religious and Civil Worship were distinct in the minde and intention of the worshippers. Edward, the 6. Book (w) faith, Kneeling is to eschew prophaning of the Sacrament. Opposite to prophaning is external Religious Honouring, expressed by kneeling, and that is Adoring. Hence one and that same Adoration and external bowing, is given to Bread and to Christ; but the minde and will of the Adorer maketh the same act in reference to Christ, Adoration, or Latreia, of the highest degree of honour; but in reference to the Bread, lawful Veneration of an inferior nature. Answer 1. If it were possible that the Wife could transmit her body in the act of Harlotry, by, or through a strange Lover to her Husband, her will and minde might change Adulterey; if the faith, she giveth her body to a stranger, but in her minde and will intendeth to bring forth children to her own Husband. So if divers acts of the minde, make Religious Kneeling.
kneeling to a stock or bread lawfull, if one should adore the man
Indus as a memorial of Christ, his intention of will might save his
soul; if he say, I give one and the same externall worship to Indus
and to Christ: Or if Cornelius should say, I give one and the same
knee-worship, to Peter and to Christ: but in my intention they be for
different: For I worship Indus and Peter in that act with civil
homage: Commanded in the fifth Commandment, as they be Christ's
apostles, and represent him; but in that same I worship Christ
with the highest honour, called Latreia Vosque, and Burgess make
them one externall Worship. The three Children might have knee-
led to the image of Nebuchadnezzar, for their mind and will (as
Formalists say) might have put another signification of honoring
the Lord Ichovah, upon their knee-worship; and externall kneel-
ing could not have been denyed to the Lord Ichovah; and so the
three Children should not have given Divine honour and kneel-
glory to the Image, and they were sooks who did hazard their bod-
dies to the fire: But wisemen think, if they had given knee-wor-
ship (whatever their heart thought) they should have obeyed the
King, yet they professe disobedience, Dan. 3. 18. We will not wor-
ship thy graven image. 2. Neither think we the Athenians gave that
same honour to the similitude Acts. 17. 29. of God, that they gave
to the God that Paul preached, who made heaven and earth, v. 23,
24. Yet in giving Worship externall to both, they were Idolaters,
ver. 29. Nor did the men of Lystra give the same heart-honour to
the Deities of Jupiter and Mercury, which they gave to the shapes
of men; yet are they Idolaters in that. 3. Mr. Burgess saith, Isra-
el 1 Chron. 29. 20. in one and the same act (externall) worshipped
God and the King, because one and the same word expresst the honour
both to God and the King. But how shal we call that act? Civill;
or Religious, or mist? and did they transmit Latreia, divine honour
through the King to God? he hath a metaphysicall faith who be-
leeveth such dreams, because one word is used to express both the
worshipping of God and the King; therefore it was one externall act
of worshipping, and the worshippers; the people greatly feare the Lord
and the King, is it one manner of fear, really, that is in God, and to Samuel, and to the Lord; and the
King,
King, because one word expresseth both? I see not but one: the same action of bowing may be made to God, to Christ, to the water in Baptism, to the Bible, to the Sun and Moon, and we might kneel and Adore a Toad, a straw, and Satan, as they represent Gods wisdom and power, and through that same externally knee-worship also Adore God: What, may we not then Religiously Adore all things and Creatures, as they represent God the first being.

Presceterum, velit qualibet herbas Deum. A man may Adore himself, his own hands, his legs, his Mothers Wombe that bare him, &c.

As for Adoring of the Ark and foot-stool of God : 1. Ioan. Gifenus, a Lutheran faith, The Jews had precept and promise to Worship God before the Ark, we have no Command to ye exteranchor Adoration to any place or Creature. 2. (y) Didacusius faith, It is lawful to Adore God before the Ark, and the Symbols of his immediate presence, because God is there to receive his own Worship himself, by an immediate indwelling presence: For faith (z) Mr. Weames,


He appeared in glory above the Ark, beswiet the Cherubims, and it was a type of Christ who dwelt in our fleshs; but it is not lawful to Worship him, before the Symbols of his grace. 3. The Ark was a type in the act of teaching, we grant; but that it was in the act of Adoring God who was immediately present, and a Symbol Viceregent of God, we reade not. There is no need of mediate signifies, where God is immediately present, and Adored as he was in the Ark; they were to fixe both senses and thoughts immediately upon God. 4. They were to worship, not the Ark, but the precept is, & incurvate vos scabello, Worship toudard the Ark (a) Arias Montanus, &c. turneth it, Worship to the Ark: The Greek Fathers of the second Nican. Concel, ignorant of the Hebrew Tongue, would have the Lord Commanding to Adore his foot-stool; whereas the Particle (?) is a note of the Dative case, and often it signifies motion to a thing, or at a place, ad dextram, and doth not absolutely signific the accumulative case. (b) Musculus ad Scabelum.
To kneel before the Creature as a  

Cap. I. Q. 5.

d) Calvins bellum, he maketh it the Ark of the Testament. Calvins, (c) the Temple: Junius, (d) maketh it well to signifie the measure of bowing, bow to the foot-stool, or ground, or pavement of the Temple where the Lords feet are, as he saith on the Cherubims, 1 Chron. 28. 1. For there is no ground for Adoring the Ark; but the words are to be read, Excite the Lord our God, and bow your selves, (to wit, to Jehovah, who theveth himselfe, or dwelleth at his foot-stool) that we between the Cherubims, 2 Sam. 6. 1. For the word יְלֹוהִי as his foot-stool, is not connected with the Verb יְצָא, inscrutabile vos : Jesuits and Formalists, devised that construction, but it is to be connected with the word יָלַד, which is to be repeated from the former part of the verse; But your selves to Jehovah who dwelleth in the Ark, or in the Temple: A familiar elegy to the Hebrews, Psal. 5. 8. I will bow my self (to the Jehovah dwelling) in the Temple of thy holiness, as we are taught, Our Father which art in Heaven: So יָלַד וְיְצָא and it is a description of God from the place where he dwelt, and exhibited his presence to his rude people. 4. It is ignorance in Burges to prove God may be Adored in the elements, because they are as excellent Symbols of Gods presence as the Ark: for created excellency is no ground of Adoring the elements, except it be a Godhead, and uncreated excellency: We condemn Pope (e) Anastasius, who directeth Reverend bowing at the hearing of the Gospel, and not of the Epistles, as if the Gospel were holier then the Epistles.

But if Adoration may be given to the elements, because knee-worship signifieth according to humane institution, and mens will, and are taken from customes of men, and so doth signifie lesse honour then is due to God: Let me be resolved of this doubt: words of Prayer signifieth according to mens institution and their will, no lesse then Religious geltures do, and we may say to a stock, (Thou are my Father) and it is in our will that (Father) signifieth a representative Father, not an infinitive and Independent Father, such as God only is.

And if the image in externall kneeling, be Adored Per asidu, or co-adored with the Samplar, because it is one with the Samplar; Why may we not pray to the image, and fixe our faith and hope on the
the image and elements by co-adoration, or in relative praying and trusting in them? Yet (f) the Fathers of Trent for shame deny that we should pray to images, and put our trust in them: yet do Formalists turn the enunciative words of Christ (This is my body) in an optional mood, and a Prayer, The body and blood of Christ (they mean the elements in their hands) preserve thee to eternall life:
And we are not ignorant, that faith and hope are ascribed to the Cross, and this sung in the Church of Rome:

O crux avem, Deus unica,
Hoc passionis tempore,
Ange py, justitiam,
Reis, dona veniam.

A Learned Papist, (g) Raphael de la Torres faith plainly, It is lawfull to pray to images, so the inward devotion be directed to God: But if the Jews in their Idolatrous worship acknowledged the image to be but a representation of God, and a Book, Jer, 10, 8. They did no wrong who said Jer, 2. ver. 27. to a stock, Thou art my father, and to a stone, Thou hast brought me forth: For condition maketh all, if they speak by a figure; for the Papists when they speak to the Cross, and call the Cross their only hope, the Cross is not better born not a stock, it is but timber or dumbe wood: Now how doth not the dumbe wood to which Prayers are made, as if Christ himself were present, partake of Prayers and God's honour, in an inferior and relative way? For the wood standeth before him who prays to it, as God by representation, and as an actual Vicegerent, and tree-deputy of God, And Christ; it is no lese worship, ful by mouth-worship, by praying to it, as to the passive object of Adoration, as capable of knee-worship by bowing down to it; and a distinction may save idolatry in the one, as well as in the other:
And our Formalists bowing Religiously to bread, do not Adore bread, (as our half Papists say) and so may they pray to bread, and not Adore bread, for, they are as well masters of Grammar, to impose significations at their will upon words, as they be Lords of gestures and Ceremonies, to cause kneeling express Veneration to the images, and to elements, and not Divine Adoration.

God. Athenienses in orat. contr. idolat. Dicunt Philos. batuas quod non esse deos, sed simulacra deorum, idque haberi ut die sub istis imaginibus respondant.

Here
Here two great disputes, Suarez, and Vasquez, help the matter for (6)

Suarez saith, There be some acts of worship, as faith and prayer, which
precisely respect a reasonable and intelligent person, therefore this prayer
(Hail, and Cross) is a figurative speech, and a Metonymia, commit-
ning parts to the whole, and the speech is directed to him who was cruci-
ified, and therefore a prayer (Faith, it is Idolater) is considered as peti-
tio, vel ut honor quidam, either as a petition, and so it is not directly
but to God, but as prayer is an honour expressed in such words and fig-
ures, the image also is thought to be honoured by praying to it, as the sam-
ple to Christ, is honoured; soft words. Answer. 1. If praying and be-
leaving doe properly respect a reasonable creature, so doth positive
honouring which is esteemed, by the law of nature, premium viri-
atis, a reward of vertue; now vertue moral to be a foundation of ho-
nour, is as vainly given to a tree, or a stocke, as faith and prayer,
but to speak to any in prayer, and make our requests known to them
may be thought proper only to a reasonable person, who only can
understand our prayer, and in reason answer our necessities,
which a stock cannot do; but secondly, I answer a stock is by
Analogie, and as it is God representatively; as capable of rea-
sion to answer, and help us, and pitty us, in respect it can
notably well represent the Majestie of God, who can answer, he,
and pitty, as our Idolaters teach, as it is capable of knee-worship,
and that honour which is given to God, though in an higher de-
gree; for the formal reason why Images and elements are capable
of knee-glory, due to him who sweareth that all knees shall bow to
him, is that they represent God, and not because of themselves;
they have any divinity or Godhead in them. Now the same formal
reason holdeth here, for the Cross, stone, tree, or elements that are
prayed unto in that religious act, as they are the object of praying
 doe represent God, therefore they are also capable of faith and pray-
er, glory, as of knee-worship, or knee-glory. 2. Faith, hope, and
charity (as (7) Suarez saith) in so farre as they are given to God,
for giving of honour to him as to the supreme Lord, they put on the
nature of adoration, and in that same place be defined adoration to be:
the exhibition of honour due to any in the acknowledgment of ex-
cellency and submission and service due to him. Now Suarez reproo-
ves Durandus and Piet. Mirandula, because they denied that
the Image was adored, but would only have honour given to
God.
Cap. I. Q. 5. memoraotive object of God is Idolatry.

God at the naked presence of the Image, as a memorable signe, but it is certaine, as to trust in God, and to pray to him is incommunicable to the creature, so to adore any in allnowledgement of supreme excellency is incommunicable to the creature, therefore either the image is adored with the same knee-worship that is given to God, and that improperly and by a figure, as Duranlus and Mirandula taught contrary to the mind of Suarez, and idolatrous Jesuites and Formalists, or else prayers may be made to wood and stone, as to God, and that properly and without a figure; as knee-worship is encrusted to wood and stone by Jesuits doctrine, properly and without a figure. 3. Papists deny that sacrifices may be offered to Images, yet they burn incense to images; but that is not, faith. (k) Franciscan Antonius Capellus, a sacrifice, for it is tendered to men, to dead carions, and to things that are blessed, and requireth neither Altar, nor Priest: It is true, they say so, but burning incense to the brazen Serpent is condemned as Idolatry, and Altar and Priest is not of the essence of a sacrifice; but however as sacrificing is a recognition that we hold all we have of God, and therefore we sacrifice creatures to him, so any adoring of stones is an acknowledgement that these stones or stones are by way of representation, that God of whom we hold all the creatures: and do not Papists for the honour of God, make oblations to Ministers, and burn incense to Saints? and why may not prayers be offered to them? 4. It is a wild distinction where he faith that prayers as honour may be tendered to Images, but not prayers as petitions, whereas the very act of calling upon God in the day of trouble, Psal. 50. 15. is in honouring and glorifying God, and praying to God is due to God, as he is to be beloved in, and to be preached amongst men, Rom. 10. 14. 15. And so is he worthy to be glorified as the subject of preaching; then it is a vain thing to difference betwixt petitioning to God, and honouring God, because in that I petition God, in my necessities, I submit to him as to God, who can answer and hear prayers: If therefore the Image and the wood be capable of the honour of praying, it is also capable of the honour of petitioning, so as we may as properly petition and supplicate the stone, as give to it the act of prayers. 5. If Formalists say in the third person, (the body sacramental of the Lord save thee,) they may upon the same sound say, (O shew Sacramentall body of the Lord save me,) for this is
is a prayer to God, (O that God would save his people,) not in selfe then this, (O God save thy people,) the variation of person in the Grammar, maketh not the one to be a prayer, and not the other. Vasquez (1) faith, There is not alike reason, why praisings, prayers, and Sacrifices should be tendered to Idols, & knee-worship & Adoration, because from the affection of Adoring the Samarum, there is derived a externall note of submission to the image, which by a common name called the honour, Worship and Adoration tendered to the image in bodily manner, and being done before the image, tendeth to the honouring of the Samarum; but the outward action of Praising, Praying, Sacrificing, is commonly called Praising, Praying, Sacrificing, in relation to the Samarum, to His, God, and no way in relation to the image, or things without life; neither are they by accident referred to the images, only they be tendered to God before images, Coram illis. But Answer, This is but to beg the Question, for we deny, that from Adoring the image, there resulteth any Adoring of God, but a great dishonouring of his Name. 2. Durandus, Merandula, Hulccot, deny that Adoring of God, Coram imaginibus sanctum significat memoria, before the images as memorials of God, shold be an Adoring of the images: And Suarez faith, If images be only remembrance and memorials in the act of Adoration, this taketh much honour from the images, and is, faith (m) he, An Adoring of the Samarum, but not an Adoring of the image: Though (m) Vasquez, expounding Gregories minde, (which superstitious man calleth them, (o) good books, contradist Suarez in this, yea, and himself also; for he faith, The enemies of images (he meaneth the Reformed Churches) who use them only for memorials and books, (it is a lye that we use them for books,) will not bow their knee to them, for then (faith he) she should Adore them; and therefore (faith Vasquez,) if Christ be not in very deed, in his presence in the Sacrament present, the knee-worship is tendered to bread and wine, which is (faith he) Idolatry; therefore, either our Formalists are Transubstantiators, or Idolaters, or both.

non sanctum-sequitur imaginis [clements Sacramentilia] minus eoli, quem exemplaria, sed eoli sequitur ilia non coll omnino, sed exemplaria sacram. (m) Vasquez, tom. i. part. 3. q. 2. disp. 108. cap. 14. Nam enim utqui ad solam recordationem imaginibus sutor, quasi illos geret, non sicut se professionem, sed eum ipsum et ad exterior adorantem, sed eum obsecro ut corpus: gesto, qui reverentiam indicet, coram imaginem exemplaria recordantur, et ipsum siby solum adorant. (o) Gregor. Magn. l. 7. Epist. 53, if these be his Epistles.
by this learned Jesuites judgement, and why by this same reason may we not say against (p) Vasquez, that the bodily offerings of prayers, praises, and sacrifices to God, before the Image as the Image is an honouring of the Image by prayer, they say to the tree of the Cross.

Auges pieti justisiam, reiæ, dona veniam.
Increase righteousness in us, and give remission of sinnes, O tree crosse to guilty sinners. Names at Rome goe as men will, but the honour it selfe is put upon the dumbe wood, which is due to Christ. O it is but a figure (say they) yea but (say we) prayers and praisies in a bodily manner, and vocally are tendered to the wood, yet if the wife commit adultery with her husbands brother, because he representeth her husband, I thinke the matter should be washen with wine, and badly excused to say, O the loving wife for strong love to her husband committeth figurative adultery, and that bodily harlotry is referred to the brother of her husband by accident, and to her husband kindly, and per s[e], for himselfe. The same way, if Formalists bow their knee to bread, that such a holy mystery be not profaned. We know they cannot understand civill or country non-prophanation, that they intend; for kneeling and evil maners at the Lords table doe well consist together. Now religious non-prophanation by knee-worship, is adoring of these mysterius elements. Ergo they make prayers and sing praisies, and offer sacrifices to the bread. Let them see to this and answer to it if they can.

The first evasion of wit, I find in (q) Johanes de Lugo, who faith, 1. That the image and samplar making one and the same object, by aggregation, the inward affection besides externall knee-worship is given to such, but to the Image relatively, and for God or the samplar, and not for proper divine excellencie in it, and therefore the Counsels (faith he) call it not adoration in spiritu, but it is tendered to God ab-

and God are two divers objects. Anfw. This proveth our point, that when I adore an Image, intending to adore God, some foule-adoration adhereth to the Image, and that is a taste of Gods proper glory given to a stocke, or a stone. (q) Ioan. de lug. de myst. invar. disp. 36.

177

(p) Vasquez ibid. Hee who adoreth a saint (faith Ioan. de lug. de myst. invar. disp. 36. sect. 3. n. 29.) for friendship and grace which he hath argu-

Law thereof, for whom the man hath grace, yet it is not needfull that he formally adore God, and in reio in so doing for he may honour the faint and not formally honour God, for the faint
To kneel before the Creature, as a

solutely. 2. We give adoration of immediate submission to God, or the Samaritan as the debt of potestative justice, but we do not so worship the Image, we have no civil or politic communication with the Image, because it is not a reasonable creature, and therefore the worship of the Image is as if we were a material and useless action; when we uncover our head to the Image, by that action we would say or signify nothing to the Image, but to the Samaritan, or to God only. 3. The inward submission that we render to the Image, is not that we submit to it, as to a thing more excellent than we, for that were a foolish lye; yet (faith he) (that the man might fulfill the cup of the iniquity of his Fathers) we kneel not to the Image in solio directly rendering honour to it, but to God and the Samaritan before it. 1. Because then I should adore my own breast when I kneel upon it adoring the Eucharist. 2. Because so I bow to the wall before my. 3. If I have no honourable opinion of the Image, I do not adore it at all. 4. By kneeling to the Image, I have a will of submitting externally my affection to the Image, I yield to it, as a thing above me, giving to it the higher place. 4. The act of adoration is simply terminated upon the Image, as a thing contra distinction from the Samaritan, though it be adored with the same action which the Samaritan is adored. Thus the Ieisute.

Answ. But where all men may see many contradictions, and that he calleth downe all that formerly he hath said. 1. Images even as they represent God are dead things, and let the then a redeemed Saint, Ergo, I can give them no submission of external honour. 2. I signify and say nothing of honour to the Image, even as it respecteth God, and representeth him, because the dignity of representing God doth not elevate it to be a reasonable creature, therefore I cannot honour it, and it were a foolish lye to say that the Image as representing God, were a reasonable creature. 3. As it representeth God, it cannot heare payers, nor deliver in trouble, as the Holy One of Israel can doe; Ergo by the Holy Ghosts argument, I cannot bow to a lye, Esa. 44. 17. and 46. 9. Hab. 2. 19, 20. It made not the heaven and the earth, but by a figure, because it representeth the maker of heaven and earth, wherefore it should have but figurative honoure at the best; and that is no reall honour, Jer. 10. 8, 11, 12.

4. There is no debt of justice due to the dumb wood, or element, honour of external submission is a debt of potestative justice due to a superiour, the Images and Elements are not my superiour.

1. They
1. They be meanes, I the end. 2. They bee void of life and reason which I have. 3. They are not redeemed, sanctified, and to be glorified as I am. Ioan. de Lugo answereth, As I may love Peter for the goodnesse that is not in Peter, but in another, as I may love and define good to Peter, for the goodnesse that is in his father, and not in himself, and so pay the debt of affection to him for another, so I may honour an Image for the debt of honour that I owe to the sampler represented by the Image, therefore it is not required to the essence of adoration, that we acknowledge debt due to every thing adored for another; it is sufficient a debt be acknowledged, either to the Image, or the sampler. Answ. The debt of love and the debt of honour are not alike. I owe honour to superiors only as superiors, I owe love to superiors, equals, inferiors. If I truly adore an Image, I truly acknowledge excellency in the Image, I truly yeeld to it, a worthier place then I deserve to have my selfe, (faith (x) de Lugo) Ergo, by the fifth Commandement according to the debt of justice, I owe feare, honour, and reverence to it, else I adore it by a figure, which the Lefuit doth deny.

I am not afraid that they say, Damaucion, (s) a superstitious Monke alloweth Images to be adored. So dooth (r) that pretended seventh Synod, or (u) the second Nicene Synod, and (x) Stephannus and Adriannus, as we may read in (y) Nicephorus speaketh many fables for Images, he sheweth us that Luke the Evangelist should have painted the Images of Christ and the Virgin Mary. (z) And that (a) holy Silvester had the Images of Peter and Paul, and shewed them to the Emperour Constantine, and (b) Cunfius a fabulous man faith, there appeared to Silvester at the dedication feast of Saint Salvatours church the picture of Christ in the Wall, but the original of Images seemeth to be the vanity of man, faith (c) the Wifeeman. 2. The keeping of the dead in memory, faith (d) Cyprion, ad defunctorum vultus, per imaginem detinendos expressa sunt simulacra, inque posteris fulta sunt a qua primus assumpta fuerunt folatia, in aliis codicibus ad folatia. 3. The blinde heathen wanting the light of Scripture, began to worship Images. (e) Eusebium faith it began first among heathen, from the Heathenish cultome it came that Peter and Pauls Images were first made. Men did it faith (f) Augustine, ut Paganorum conscient capevolentiam, to conciliate the favour of Pagans, it may bee scarce out of Gregorius (g) Magnus.

(g) Magnus, faith (b) Voetius, that the worshiping of images crept in but the fift age. In the first three hundred yeeres, Images were not admitted (faith our Country-man (i) Patrick Sympson) into the place of worship, in the fourth, fifth and sixt Centurie, they were admitted into temples, but for the most part without opinion of adoration. In the second Nicene Councell, an obscure age, (faith (k) Petrus Molinaus) when the scriptures were taken away, it is ordained that images should be adored, but not the images of the Father. Quoniam quis sit non novimus, de ip; natura spectanda proponi non potest ac pinge. But only the Image of the Son. This Councell was Anno 787. as faith (l) Bellarmine. But this wicked Fathers argument proves also that the Image of God the Father may be painted, while they prove worshipping of images, because the Psalmist faith, The Lord arose as a mighty man after Wine. But (m) Genebrard faith this Councell of Nice, was controuled by a Councell in the west. (n) Barrowius mentioneth two Epistles written by Gregorius 2. A defender of images, wherein he faith, the Sonne may be painted, not the Father. This Councell was approved by Constanzine, Ireneus, and a Greeke copie of the Synod sent to (o) Adrian the Pope. But this wicked Synod did not maintaine adoration of images, such as Snarex, Bellarmine, Vasquez, Perierius, &c. now hold, but onely veneration. 2. Images were placed in the Churches, faith (p) Paul. Diaconus, multis contra dicitus, many speaking against; and (q) Bergomens. faith, the Emperour Constanzine himselfe not long after did abrogate the Acts of this Synod and (r) the Synod of Franckford condemned this Synod. See (s) Aventius; (t) Hincmarus faith it is true they of Franckford allowed images to be in Churches, but not to be adored. (w) Vrbpergenius faith that this synod did write a book against the second Councell of Nice, called otherwise the seventh general Councell. A booke came out in France, and after in Germany under the name of Charles the Great, condemning by strong reasons the adoration of images, and answereth all the arguments of the contrary. Tannernus the infirme faith this was a forged booke. But against fa-
Idolatry not in the Ancient Church.

mous and learned Authors saying the contrary, and so Hincmarinus and Ettius make mention of this book, and Pope Adrianus (as Hystinianus doth well observe) doth approve of this Synod of Francford by his Letters written to the Empeur of Constantinople, and the Patriarch Tharasius.

The first five hundred years (faith Calvin) images were not worshipped. Cajus Caligula a proud Tyrant, commanded the Jews to set up his image in the Temple: the Jews answered they should rather die than pollute the Temple of God with images, as faith Iosephus and Eusebius, and this fell out while the Apostles lived.

Ann. 108. Plinius 2. writeth to Trajanus under the third Persecution, That Christians were men of good conversation, and destitute vices, worshipped Christ, and would not worship Images (d), as that Letter beareth: and (e) Eusebius reporteth Adrian had a purpose, (as faith Bucol.) to build a Church for the honour of Christ void of Images. See Symon that ancient Writer: (h) Justine Martyr in this Age; Omnes imagines ad cultum propius spectant sempiter damnant Christiani. (i) Tertullian, a most ancient writer, who lived under Severus in time of the fifth Persecution, as (k) the Magdeburgenses testify; faith, Nos adoramus oculis ad calum suplantum, non ad imaginem sen picturas, et indignum imago Dei vivi imaginem idoli, & morti: si simul, (faith he also) and not only thinketh it unlawfull to represent God by an Image, but also faith, that Craftsmen, who profess themselves Christians, ought not to make Images of God. An ancient Writer (m) Clemens Alexandrinus, Noster nobis imago sensibilis de materiâ sensibili, nisi quae precisioni intelligentiâ. Deus enim qui solus est verum Deus, intelligentiâ precisit, non sensu: We have no sensible Image of sensible matter, because God is taken up by the understanding, not by the sense: and (n) Nibil in rebus genere potest referre Dei imaginem. This ancient Writer flourished, faith Catolog. Testium veritat. Anno 150. or as (p) Hispinus faith Ann. 200. and (q) Ireneus, the diff.

Idolatry not in the Ancient Church.

Cicle of Polycarpus, an hearer of John the Apostle maketh it the Hereof of the Gnosticks, that they held that Pilate made the Image of Iesus: *Et quid imagines habebant Christi, Apostolorum, &c.*

Philosophorum, easque coronarent, ac solendas proponenter. (a) Cyprian faith, Idols, or Images, be not only against the Law of God, but against the nature of man; (b) Origen said, The Images of Christians are Christians indeed, with God's Image: and, Nos vero idem honorem simulachra quia quantum possimus, sustennimus in eas crudelitatem, ut et eiusmodem divinum similem aliquid. (c) Grave

Assthanasius faith, η των οιδατω φωςον εις αυτη σωβει, εις το και υγιειν, το εος τω αστήν ηγον καιιν, εν ευνυ ποτε καιδος χρησιν, εις τω φαιλον. The invention of Images is from an evil soule, and not from good, and whatsoever hath a bad beginning, cannot be remedied in any thing good, being altogether bad: The Papists Harding bringeth in a counterfeit Dialogue of Ashthanus, betwixt Christ and his Church; and Christ comforting his Church, because she was persecuted for worshipping Christ's Image; but when and where this persecution was, none knoweth, for many times hath the Church been persecuted for not worshipping Images; but see the answer of the learned (d) Jewell thereof unto; (e) Epiphanius, who lived, Anno 370. provereth against the Collyridians, That Mary nor no creature should be adored. Unde est simulachrum hoc studium et diabolicum conantur? præsextum omnium justiciae, temperabant hominum mentes, drabili, mortals, naturam in hominum occult deiscans, Statutas humanas, imaginem pro se ferentes per artum, veritatem expressit, et mortui quidem sunt quos adorantur: Item, Revera sanctum erat corpus Maria, non seminem Dei, honora, non in adorationem data. Mary was not God, and therefore is not to be adored: He professed that he did rive a vail, that had painted in it the Image of Christ, or of some man, Cum ego videsssem in Ecclesia Christi, contra auctoritatem scripturarum, hominis pendent imaginem, scisdi illud, &c.

Laistaniu Formianus, Images are to represent those who are absent. God is every where present, it is vanity therefore to form an image of God. Also (h) There is no Religion, where there is an image: Also the difficulty, absque munium potestate, semper utique imagine supervacus est. The Arguments of the pacience against Images. [h] Laistaniu l. 2. cap. 19.
reason, when they fear the work of their own hands: 2. (m) God is not absent, but present everywhere: 3. (n) The image is a dead thing void of sense, God is the eternal and everlasting God: 4. (o) Nothing mortal should be worshipped: 5. (p) What vanity to hope for protection from these things, which cannot defend themselves! 6. (q) The image is life and victor when the worshipper: 7. (r) Man according to God's image, is the image of God. 8. (s) God needeth nothing, neither worship because he made the light, nor images. This man lived, Anno 300. Before which time the Church of Christ being persecuted, they had no Churches, nor Images to be ornaments in their Churches, as faith: (t) Ambrosius, and also (u) Chrysostom, who was displeased with the fooleries in Temples in his time, and faith, They were not like the Temples of the Apostolick Churches: and (x) Tertullian, and (y) Eusebius faith, They had then, Simplices domos, Simple houses, void of paintings and pictures: And the want of Temples was objected against Christian Religion, as (z) Origem cleareth in the time of Constantine, the son of Chlorus, as faith, (a) Saeculum, and (b) Eusebius, Temples were builded, but as (c) Joan. Lociusines expoundeth. Tertullian, without the ornaments of images, and (d) Tertullian himself maketh building of Altars, and portraits, Idolatricos cultum, Idolatrumos worship. In the forty years space, betwixt the reign of Valerian, and the 19. year of Diocletian, there were Oratories and Temples builded, but neither painted Pictures, nor Images in them, as faith (c) Eusebius: Yea, of thirty Bishops of Rome, even from Peter and Paul to Sylvester, and Constantine the Emperour; to wit, three hundred years, there none, who were not persecuted to blood, or to death, or some way. It is a vain thing to say, they had breathing time to

in vico constanti. 2. (c) Joan Armitans in explanatione can. 5. concilii gentem de Idol. Pistorach in vico Numae non hominum Graecorum atque Turcorum urbem insulaverunt, etc Tertullian, Apol. c. 25. (f) Euseb. Hist. eccles. l. 9. c. 10. (g) Origen cont. cld. 1. 9. c. 4. (h) Saeculom build 1. 9. c. 8. (b) Euseb. Lib. eccl. 5. e. 13.

Temple, and erect Altars, and golden Images of Christ, and the Virgin Mary, and the Saints. It is true, in the two hundredth year after Christ, under Alexander Severus, Gordianus, Philippus; Gallienus; Churches were builded, as \[f\] Nicephorus faith; but again under Dioclesian they were demolished to the ground, but observe well there were no Images of Christ broken, that which Tyrant in despite of Christ, would not have omitted; see \[g\] Eusebius, they were builded again under great Constantine, so \[h\] Sozomen, \[i\] Oso Phriisingenfs \[j\] and Nicephorus. The dream of Platina, for the building of a Church, by the donation of Constantine, with twelve portions of earth, equal to the number of the twelve Apostles, and of another Church, with the title of the holy Cross at Jerusalem, which Helena found in that place, and Constantine placed in this Church at Rome, is refuted by \[k\] Hospi-
nian: yet is there no word of any Images in these Churches.

\[m\] Arnobius An. 330. maintained against the heathen, that the Christians ought to have no Images: 1. Because the device of images is a novelty, and was not before two thousand years, but God and Religion are no new things. 2. \[n\] Because either the Gods dwell in their images, against their will, or of their own accord; if the former be said, they are compelled, which is absurd. If the latter, then they do either abide always in their images, and so are miserable, or they go out of the images when they please, and then the images are empty things.

\[a\] Eusebius Caesarius, who lived, An. 300. when Constantia Augusta wrote to him for the Image of Christ, answered.

That could not be: 1. Because his manhood was joined with his Godhead, and could not be separated therefrom. 2. Because his Godhead cannot be represented, Mortuus, & inanimatis coloribus, with dead and lifeless colors. \[b\] Hieronymus, who lived, An. 331. under Constantine, denyeth that any Creature, Angel, or Virgin Mary should be worshipped. \[c\] Rufinus faith, Helena the mother of Christ, but antiquity faith not, that her nails that fixed him to the Cross, because they were of his, who lived, Anno 370. condemneth Images: 1. Because they change the images of the dead, in the glory of God, who images: 2. The living serve the dead. 3. They take from stock
sacks and stones what they are, and give to them, what they are not. (c) Ambres.
4. (e) Idols are unclean. 5. It is unseemly [f], to worship what men
makest with their hands. 6. Because [g] images are but shadows,
(b) Augustine condemneth Images. 1. Because they insult the
weak minds of rude people, to worship them. 2. They have eyes and
see not. 3. The creatures are images of God, not stones. 4. Idols [i]
are husks and empty. 5. These (k) who brought in Images, took away
the fear of God, and increased error. 6. Martyrs (l) are not gods.
7. Confounded (m) be they who worship stones, our living stone Christ
is in heaven.

8. (a) Though worshippers of Images say, they worship God in Images,
yet they worship devils; for good men, as Paul and Barnabas, Angels,
and Cornelius forbade men to worship them. 9. It is a shame to adore
a beast endued with sense and life, far more to adore a dummy and
liveless creature. August, ps. 113. (b) Chrysostome is against Images.
1. Because the Law of God forbiddeth them. 2. (c) God must be honour-
red, as he willeth himselfe. 3. It is (d) a depressire of souls to wor-
ship Images. (e) It commeth from Satan to take God's glory from him.
(f) It is mockery that man should be the creator of God, the Creator of
all things.

(g) Cyrilus Alexandrin. who lived An. 415. faith, we neither be-
leave the martyrs to be gods, nor doe we adore them.

(h) Damascen a superstitious man much for Images acknowledg-
eth two things. 1. That Images are but (h) exagoge paraschoe unwritten
traditions. 2. He acknowledgeth that the brazen Serpent, the Cherno-
bim were made for signification, not for imitation or adoration.

(i) Gregorius Magnus, though he be alleged by Papists for adora-
tion of Images. Yet in his Epistle to Serenus Bishop of Massilia,
An. 600. he forbiddeth the adoration of Images, and alloweth
only the HistoricaU use of them, as is observed by (k) Fran. White.
(l) by Hospinian and (m) Catol. testum veritatis, and (n) this man
being the first who brought Images into the Church hath this Care
ves, atque indicat (faith he to Serenus) quod non tibi ipsa visio historiae
que, pictura testes panem abutur, displicit et sed illa adoration quae pictu-
ginem habec quasi excusaione ne adorari debuissent, confregereis, & quidem, quia cas adorari, ve-
tur, unum ad mundum, figuris verus reperediturum. k Fran. Whits way to the Church; ch. 9,
Fed. 2. p. 114. l Hospinian de Origen Imag. 3. 174. m Catol. test. veritas 1.6. p. 562. n Greg-
arios. lib. 9. ep. 9.
Idolatrie not in the Ancient Church.

Gapi. Q. 5.

Greg. mag. lib. 3. dido.

Beda l. 2. c. 22. ad peragendam nostram salutem mysteria nullum praeceptum officium habere nos cantur.

Beda l. 1. c. 9. ad Carol. Salutis, coelestis, inيبuc miscet pene in cunctis scripturis locis.

Idem l. 1. c. 27.

Idem l. 2. c. 24.

Idem l. 1. c. 21.

Idem l. 2. c. 24.

u. Lib. 1. cap. 19.


We forbid the Church (faith the civil Law) to be obscured with Images. Have the Image of God, (faith (x) Ephrem) in thy heart, non colorum varietate in ligno, not in Images and colours. Who can make (faith (y) Damascen) a representation of the invisible God. (z). Greglerus saith, the Jews would not admit of Ensigns and Trophies of the Romans for fear Images should be hidden under them. So said Josephus (a) before him. Their own men say with us, (b) Halcot who

y Damascen de fid. Orthod. 1. 4. c. 27.

2. Grefer. lib. 1. de crucis c. 44.

a Iosiph lib.

b Halcot in lib. sup. lett. 348. Ioan. Pic. Mirandum conclus. 3. c. Peregrins Ajala de trad. pag. 3. De Imaginibus scriptura non priditionem nec assumit nec summi se fuisse fundatum, necesse est. G. Aquinas (c) Peregrins Ajala Popili Bishop, for adoration of Images, faith he, there is neither Scripture, nor Church tradition nor consent of Fathers, nor good reason to make it good. For faith (d) Gabriel

Idolatry not in the Ancient Church.

Biel. The image, either considered in itself as it is metal or stone, or as it is a holy signe, is a sensible Creature, to which Latreia, Divine honour should not be given; and the Romish (c) Decrees faith, We commend you that you forbid images of Saints to be Worshipp'd: The (d) Doway Doctors say, Idols have eyes and cannot see, &c. Now if they have Images of God and Christ which can see, and hear, and speak, we exceedingly desire to know: (e) Alexander Allen's, 

[f] Durandus say, That images in themselves, and properly, are not to be Worshipp'd.

(g) Geo. Cassander Wibeth, That they had continued (in majorum frorum sententia) in the mind of their forefathers, and that the Superstition of people in Worshipping images had been suppressed. The Council conven'd by [6] Constantinus Capronimus condemneth Worshipping of Images, or placing them in Churches. 1. Because it is forbidden in the second Commandment. 2. The Pithing of Christ is a dividing of the two Natures. 3. It is against the Ancients, Epiphanius, Nazianzen, Chrysostome, Athanasius, Amphilochius, Theodorus, Eusebium Pamphili. The Council of Nice is builded upon lies. Adrian Bishop of Rome, writeth to the Council of Nice, That the Emperor Constantine being a Leaper, and labouring to cure his Leprosie by shedding of innocent Babes blood, Peter and Paul appeared to him by night, in a Vision, and bade him go to be Baptiz'd by Sylvester, and that he, to be cured by Sylvester Baptiz'd, builded a Temple with the Images of Peter and Paul. This is as true as the Image of Christ spake to Tho. Aquino at Naples, Bene Scripsisti de me, Thoma. Why is not all Evangel that Aganias hath written then? For their own Platina (a) faith, The story of Constantines Leprosie is a fable; and Socrates faith, That Constantine was sick when he was 65. years, and he made no mention of his leprosie; so (b) Hossinianus faith, and our own (c) Simson faith, That Sylvester and Marcus his successor were both dead before Constantine was Baptiz'd: (d) Genebradus a Papist faith,

c Decret. 3. diff. 3. c. 27. Greg. d Doway men, Ann. not. 2. Sam. 5. 8. The blinde and the lame shall not enter in the Temple. e Alexand. Aleus. 3. p. q. 30. art. ult. f Durand. l. 3. diff. 9. q. 2. 
g Cassand. Incompl. ad fer. 

and the seventh Epistle to the Synod, condemneth Nesiorus of Idolatry, and condemneth the Idrians as Idolaters, who Worshipp'd Christ whom they believed to be a man onely: And Athanasius, cont. Ariam, Orac. 1. And Nysenus in Laud. But, And Nazianzen, Orac. 40. say, To Adore a Creature, though in the Name of Christ or God, is Idolatry. 

Reasons of the Ancients against Idolatry. Cap. 1 Q. 5

down right, that the Councell of Frankford condemned the second Nicene Councell; But (e) Bellarmine, (f) Suarez, (g) Sanderson (h) Alanus, deny, that the Doctrine of the second Nicene Councell for Adoring images, is Condemned by the Councell of Frankford; they say it is only expounded, and that the right way of Adoring images is made manifest: Yea, faith (i) Naucles, (k) Sabellius, and (l) Blandus: The Councell of Frankford reserveth due honour to images, and saith nothing against the Councell of Nice. But this is as clear as daylight at Noon-day: For (m) Annonius is most clear in it, and (n) Abbos Vesperges. (o) the Book of Charles the Great saith the same. The Synod of Frankford was convened An. 794. for purpose to condemn the second Synod of Nice, called the seventh pretended and false: Synod: (p) Auveninus saith expressly, Sicca Grecorum (in Synodo Nicena decreta) de imaginibus adorandis in concilio francosurzensi rescissa & abolita sunt: and (a) Vesperges saith, in this Synod it was decreed, Ut septima & universalis Synodus, nec septima nec aliquid diceter, quasi superaqua ab omnibus abdice tu est; and the same faith (b) Eginradus, (c) Geor. Cassander: But the very Arguments in the Nicene Councell are set down, and dissolved in the Frankford Councell, as our own Master (d) Simson observeth: As the Nicene Councell reasoneth from the Cherubims, and the brazen Serpent. Frankford Answereth, These were made at Gods Commandments, images not so. Yea, say they, and with them (e) Lorinus. The Cherubims and brazen Serpents were not made to be Worshipped; see these and many other Arguments, set down and Answered by the Councell of Frankford.

As also faith (f) the Learned Author of Carol. Test. Verit. The Arguments used by this Councell, proveth that no Adoration is due to Images, as may be hence collected: As also out of the book of (g) Charles against the dreams of Tarasius, whose entry to the Priesthood was unlawful, and was a great Idolater, and against the Idolater Pope Adrian; Because 2. There is no holiness in images, either as they are figures or colours, or as they are consecrated.

3. Because to adore is to glorise, [h] but only God is to be glorified.

3. God Commanded us not to love images, but men, and sent his son in the flesh for men, and not for images; and if [i] they be not to be beloved, neither are they to be Adored. 4. It cannot be proved that the honour of the image is the honour of the sampler. Christ said not, 'Whas ye do to images, ye do to me, nor be that receiveth images, receiveth me.' This Argument proveth, that Veneration is not due to the images, as to books of the Trinity; because that the Veneration of the Image, is an honouring of God, there must be an union betwixt the Images and God or Christ, betwixt the Tree and Christ. 1. There is no union lawful, that can be a Warrant of honouring anything; but an union Warranted of God, betwixt Crossing in the Air, and Dedication to Christ's Service, betwixt Supper and Pastorall Sanetity; There is no union, nor is there a personal union betwixt Christ and the Image: Nor 2. an union of parts, as betwixt the shoulders and the head. Nor 3. is there a Divine relative union, as betwixt the mean or the end, the Servant or the Lord: for as [a] John White faith well; and [b] the Scripture proveth, all union betwixt God and the means of Worship, which are to be reverenced as means of Worship in relation to God, is by divine institution; now certainly if by Divine ordinance there had been an union betwixt the Image and God, then had it been lawful to lay the Image in the heart, to say: How love I thy Image? (the painted pictures and wooden portraits of Christ, the wood of the Cross are my delight) (I hope in the wood) (I have taken images for my heritage, they are sweeter to me, nor the honey or the honeycomb) (brow pleasant are the wooden feet of these dead and defiled Ambassadors of Christ, who bring to my soul news of God, or of my Redeemer Jesus.)

(c) Ambrose, [d] Gregorius, [e] Augustine [f] Chrysostom faith, The honour of the servant redoundeth to the Master, when he is a servant by appointment of the Master, and he that heareth faithful Pastors, heareth Christ who sent them: And [a] Athanasius, and [b] Basil, to prove the honouring and adoring of Christ, the substantial Image of God, to be the honouring of God the Father, say: The honour of the Image, or of the servant of the King, is the honouring of the King. But the Image is formally made an Image of God, and the saints by means imagination, not by God's word or his...

ordination: Their own [c] Persius faith, If the imagination were carried upon the image or simulacrum with one motion, yet is cannot be concluded, that the same is to be done in adoration: And [d] we are not to worship God by our fantasies, faiths, Augustine; nor by our carnal thoughts. Suarez, Bellarmine, Vasquez, Gresneres, buildeth all their adoration of images upon the saying of Aristotle: De memor et remissis, cap. 2.

Hence the (f) Fathers of Trent, (g) dreaming Damascus, (h) doting Nicephorus; if we believe (i) Suarez, make this a principle of their Bible of idolatry: That God and the Image are one, but we see not how they be one, nor can we say that God is present in the Image as in a place: for if he be present in the Image, In loco ut sic, as in such a place, then he is there as in a consecrated place, and by promise, and so they must give us the word of God, for God's presence in Images; but if God be present in Images, as in loco simpliciter, non ut in loco ut sic: As he is in all places, then is he not present in images, as in images, but as in all creatures and then let us say Amen, to (k), Vasquez, who faith, all things which have a being, A Mouse and Frog are to be adored, as having resemblance with God the first being: And he faith, this is the opinion of (a) Cajetanus, and citeth (b) Lomelinus the dreamer, who was at the Council of Nice the seventh false Synod; who faith, all Creatures visible and invisible are to be adored. And the Popes Profession (c) Joannes de Lugo proveth by four great reasons, that all creatures should be adored.

1. Because all creatures are the effects, and as it were the hands of God in writing of God.

2. Because we use to kiss and adore material places, and the house or field where an Angel, or Saint hath been, for the touching and propriety of the place and that holy thing, but God omnipresence saith nothing of all creatures. Be doing then, Masters, kiss, and adore the sanctified Devil and Hell fire, but take heed you scald not your lip.

3. We kiss and worship a gift of a Prince, but all creatures, even the most abject and contemptible, are the gifts of God the Creator.

4. Man in a special manner is the living image of God. But true

a Cajetan. 22. q. 103. art. 3. ad. 4. b Lomelinus in Dialog. 5. cont. Judaeus. vi references. 7 Synod. falsa art. 4. c Joann. de Lugo de mystic. incarnat. disp. 37. Sect. 1. n. 2. 1.
Idolatry not in the Ancient Church.

Cap. I. Q. 5.

is, God is to be praised for all his creatures; but externall Adoration before them, and laying a part of Gods glory upon them, for that is forbidden by your own, for (d) Leo the first faith the contrary, and (e) Salmeron faith; The body of (f) Moses was hidden of old for fear of Idolatry, and the use of Images and pictures were by God forbidden to the Jews in the second command, faith (g) Alexander Alen. (g) Albertus, (h) Bonaventura, (i) Martinus de Ajala, (k) Abulensis, who I am sure have with them in this, Albertus and Bonaventura, that the Images of God, because (they) he is an invisible Spirit, are forbidden by the Law of nature.

But I return to the Synod of Frankeford: (5) Because images are void of senses and reason. 6. It cannot be proved by the example of the Apostles, (m) Ergo, (say 1) Images are neither to be teaching books, nor adored creatures: 7. The ancient Fathers (n) were ignorant of this worship. 8. Only the rich (a) who are able to sustain Images, should be saved, and not the poor. 9. There (b) is no profit, but great vanity in adoring Images.

To the Arguments from miracles it is answered, (c) that these miracles are lying signs: for, Eum miracula, nulla Evangelii lectio tradit. 2. They deny that all things are to be adored, in the which, or by the which (d) God wrought miracles. Gregorius Nyssenus bowed his knee to the Image of Abraham: What then? the Council faith, these books of Nyssenus are perished.

The fable of Agbarus, to whom the Image of Christs face painted in a cloath was sent, was not in the world till the year of God, 700. It is a counterfeit work ascribed to Athanasius, in stile and phrase of writing not like to him, where it is said, that it was the Image of Christ crucified by the Jews in Berithus a Town in Syria, out of whose side flowed blood and water, which being mixed with water, could cure all diseases; (e) so Symson.

The Testimony (f) of the Council of Elberia is clear, that images should not be in Churches (g) Canus, (h) Surjus and your own men say, this Council condemmeth images. For 379. years 1.

d Leo. 1.
Serm. 7. De nativ. ab.
sinendum ab ispe specie offici.

e Salmeron
in 1 Tim. 2.
disp. 8.

f Alex. alen.
3 P. 4. 35.

art. 3. lect. 7.
g Albertus
diff.

gart. 4.
h Bonavent.
art. 1. q. 2.

ad i. in con-
trarium.
i Martinus
de ajala
tratt. de
trad. 3. par.
k Abulens.
Deut. 4. q. 4
& 5.

l Carol. lib.
2. cap. 25.
m Ibid.
n Carol. 1. 4.
cap. 27.
a Carol. 1. 4.
cap. 27.
b Carol.
1. cap. 21.
c L. 4. c. 10.
d L. 3. c. 15.

c Symson
treats of the worshipping of Images, pag. 50. 51. 5 Councilium Elberiae.
cap. 36. Plaenit in Eccles. picturas, non esse debere, ne quid colere, aut adoratur, in parve-
tibus imagin. g Canus line 5. cap. 4. h Surjus 1 Tom. of concell. an in cap. 36. cont. Elber.

there
there were no Images in Churches; in this age Martyrs were admired, and the Greeks first, especially Gregory Nyssenus, the brother of Basilus had Images in Churches; (i) Sozomen faith, Christians took into Churches pieces of Christ's image, broken by Julian the Apostate, in the first age, when Religion was born down and holy Pastors killed.

Gregory Magnus first defended that Images should be in Churches. Its like the Apostate Julian would hate any thing, bearing the name of Christ most falsely, yea, and Antiquity beareth contradictions most apparent touching images.

But (b) Nicephorus faith, the creatures of God are the Lawfull Images of God. But it is more then evident, by what I have said, that ancient Papists and Synods used images to be memorials of God, and not to be adored.

CAP. II. QUEST. I.

Whither kneeling or sitting be the most convenient and Lawfull gesture in the Act of receiving the Sacrament of Christ's Body and blood?

1. Conclus. Sitting is the most and only lawfull gesture. That gesture, that Christ and his Disciples used upon morall and unakerable grounds, which doth not concern the first Supper as first, but as a Supper, and that not upon occasionall and temporary reasons, belonging to that Supper, more then to all the Suppers of that kinde, that we are to follow as a pattern, and must be most Lawfull. But the gesture of sitting is such, Ergo:

The Proposition is evident in Scripture, (c).

I prove the Assumption. 1. Sitting was either: 1. Miraculous.

2. Customable. 3. Occasionall; or 4. Morall. None in reason can say the first, that sitting was a miracle: 2. Nor is it customable. For

1. Customs laudable are grounded upon decency and reason, and so morall, or grounded upon no reason at all.

But Christ did nothing in God's worship, nor did he any human morality actions for the meer fact and will of others going before, for these were not reasonable humane actions, and if it be customable only, it is not lawfull to put away a customable action out of worship, and to put a morall action of kneeling and Divine significanc
ion in the place thereof, for so we might change places, times, persons and all physical circumstances, and make them supernatural.

2. The action could not be occasional: for then the occasion of the Supper as first, and because of such persons, such time at night, such place, an upper chamber, should have moved Christ to sitting, rather then to kneeling, or to any other gesture: but kneeling or any other gesture might have consisted well with that first Supper, with the upper chamber, with the time and persons, as well as sitting, except the Lawgivers will had been a reason of the contrary.

Some objection. Christ chose an upper chamber, not the Temple, twelve persons, not ten, not twenty, at night; for he might have celebrated it at dinner, but we are not bound to imitate Christ in these; Ego, neither in sitting.

Ans. Occasional, properly is that which hath a reason, not from the nature of the thing itself, but from such occasional occurrences of Providence, as God will not alter, and its that which hath no moral nor sacred conveniency with the nature of worship, but hath only a conveniency for such a time and place, as Christ's preaching in a ship, when he is at the sea side, and a multitude are to hear him, the ship hath no agreement with the nature of preaching, more then an house hath, time, place, and persons are clearly such as agreed with that supper, as first, not as a sacred worship, and therefore were merely occasional, and so not imitable, and though Christ might have altered them, yet had they been occasional, and they have no sacred conveniency with this Supper, as this Supper; and if Christ had altered these for meer will, upon no reasons that concerneth all Suppers, they had not been occasional, but positive points of worship, and so had obliged us; yea, the upper chamber, and these twelve persons by no possibility, can concern all Suppers, to the end of the world, but sitting agreeth kindly and natively to all Suppers in general, as kneeling to all praying indefinitely. Christ might have changed bread and wine, in flesh, and milk, or water, will it hence follow, we are not to imitate Christ in bread and wine? And that bread and wine are occasional? Lastly, Paul's practice in passing from an upper chamber, and from twelve men, to a Church full of men and women, I Cor. 11.23, 17, 18, 22, warranteth us to passe from these, we have not the like reason to warrant us to passe from sitting.

Ee 2. That
2. Arg.

That gesture which Christ chose, and that refusing farther, even kneeling, having the same Religious reasons, at the first Supper as now, that must be most convenient and lawfull. But sitting is such; Ergo.

The Proposition is clear: The Assumption is proved from Matth. 26. While they did eat (the Passeover) he took bread, Mar. 14, 22. As they did eat, Jesus took bread.

But while they did eat the Passeover, they sate. Ergo, while they took the Supper they sate: I prove the Assumption, Matth. 26, 20. And, when the evening was come, he sate down with the twelve, Mark 14, 18. And as they sate, and did eat, Jesus said, &c. v. 22. And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, eating the Passeover, and sitting were co-existent, and taking the Sacramental bread of the Supper, and eating the Passeover were co-existent; Ergo, Taking the bread of the Supper, and sitting were co-existent.

Parabole ethics, Paul expoundeth, (as they did eat) after they had ended eating, and so after they had ended sitting, and possibly passed to another gesture, 1 Cor. 11. After Supper he took the Cup. Ans. If you wholly remove the Passeover, you remove the Table also. 2. Though the Suppers were not mingled, yet the holy Ghost expresseth the co-existence of sitting, and taking the Sacramental bread, as Ezek. 8, 1. As I sat in mine house, the hand of Jehovah fell upon me, 2 Sam. 18, 14. Joab thrust three darts in him, while he was yet alive, 1 Sam. 25, 16. The men were a vow all to us, all the time that we were with them, Dan. 4, 3, and Matth. 26, 47. And while he yet spake, La. Judas came, Act. 10, 19. While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said to him, Act. 22, 6. Rom. 5, 10. If praying interceded between eating and taking the Supper, and the Passeover sitting, to put them to kneeling, this must be true, while they were not eating, Christ took bread, a plain contradicting of Christ. 3. After Supper he took the cup, but they sate not after Supper; he took the bread, for praying, blessing, breaking, distributing eating, interceded between the Passeover and taking the Communion Cup, and therefore he had reason to say, After Supper he took the Cup, but not that reason to say, after Supper he took the Bread. It is violent to describe Christ's taking the Bread from the adjunct of time, while as they sate and did eat, if sitting and eating were not at this time, but were gone and past by, many...
interceding actions of kneeling, praying, preaching, this were to describe supper from dinner. 3. By this, the gesture of no table action can be cleared from Scripture, for when it is said, Luke 9. John 6. He made the multitude sit downe and eat, a cavilator might say, praying and blessing the meat went before, and possibly they sate on their knees, and Christ sate downe and taught the people; it may be, he rose and knelted before Sermon was ended. The Scripture saith, While Christ and his discipes did eat, and so while they did sit, he tooke bread. This taking of bread, whether it be an Hypothesis as many think, in respect the Evangelists mention but once taking of bread, or if it was preparatorie, and before the act of blessing, it was a sacramentall act performed by Christ, while they were sitting, which is much for sitting.

That Christ passed not from passover sitting, to Supper kneeling, I thinke these considerations move me. 1. Because the changes of all in the Passover, to that in the Lords Supper, as of flesh in bread and wine, is positively set down. 2. No question the change unto an adoring gesture, had been upon the grounds of conciliating more reverence to that Sacrament, then to the Passover, which must be moral, and tye to the end of the world. 3. Nor would the Holy Ghost have removed an ordinary table gesture into so insolent, and supernaturally significant gesture, as kneeling, without a grave reason expressed, or his owne will onely, which is only the essential reason, why bread is a Sacrament rather then any other Element, and so would stand of necessary and essential use. 4. Sitting at the Idols table 1 Cor. 8. 10. declareth that in religious feasts, sitting was ordinary, and a signe indicant of honouring the spiritual Lord of the Banquet, and a religious communion with the Lord of the Feast was hence signified.


Anf. 1. Christ, his reasoning to prove that avanish, to sit at meat is a greater honour, then to stand: Luke 22. 27. were null, if avanish signifieth prostration, for religious bowing is always an act of inferioritie. The same I say if avanish signifieth falling downe
to the ground. 2. Sitting or pitching about a place, and sitting and lying in sackcloth, may well signifie simply to be in a place, but table-sitting and table-inclining on Christ's bosom must be more then simply being at the Table. Nor doth Calvin in that place explain sitting at table, for nothing but simply being at table, though elsewhere he doth.

3. Arg. That which representeth the honour of table-fellowship of fellow-banqueters with Christ, that is of necessary use; but sitting at the Lord's table representeth this; Ergo, Luke 22. 27. The Minor is made good to teach the Disciples humility, he would stand and have them to sit. Whether is greater he that sitteth, or he that standeth? it is a greater honour to sit at table, then to stand; Ergo it is an honour to sit, for we may well infer the positive from the comparative, Luk. 22. 29. Upon the occasion of their striving who should be greatest, and Lord Bishop, he promiseth a sort of fellowship in a Kingdom. 2. In sitting on thrones with him, and the meaning that that fellowship should quench the fire of their appetite for Prelacy. 3. This sitting in Scripture, as table-sitting, is used to express our fellowship with Christ in the Gospel, Mat. 22. 1. 2. Luke 22. 30. Mat. 8. 11. 12. Luke 14. 15. 16. 17. Cant. 1. 12. Cant. 5. 1. Rev. 19. 9. Rev. 3. 20. and our Communion with Christ's body and his blood is sealed up in this Sacrament, 1 Cor. 10. 16. 4. This is confirmed, in that the Sacramental food is not simply given as food, (though that be a special fruit thereof) for then there should be no more required to the essence and integrity of the Supper, but eating and drinking, and on his alone, eating and drinking and using the words of Christ, should receive a Sacrament, and the manner of eating should be accidental, and in the Church other; but this food is given as food Table-wise, with the solemnities of a banquet, and of spiritual fellowship, which must be represented of purpose here, and that sitting ways, so to eat and drink with Publicans is a signe of fellowship, as Christ's eating and drinking with Publicans and Sinners made him be considered to be a friend to them, 1 Cor. 5. 11. To refuse to eat with a fornicator, is to refuse fellowship with him, 1 Cor. 8. 10. 1 Cor. 10. 20. 31. To sit at the Idols and Devil's Table, is to partake of the idol and Satan's worship, as having fellowship with them; Ergo, to sit at the Lord's Table, is to have fellowship with him. 5. The Holy Ghost speaketh
this fellowship, Luke 22. 14. He sate down and the twelve Ap-
postles, our cowd with him, see a fellowship, Mark 14. 15. Luke 22. 15. With desire have I desired to eat with you, καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦ ὀφειλοῦντος, table-wife, as ver. 14. Mark 14. 29. I will not drink, νῦν οὐκ ἔμεθη αὐτὸν. The words carry a resemblance of drinking with them the well of life, so Augustine, Hilary, Musculus, Amsinck expound them, so (as I take) he draweth them from 1. This material wine. 2. From Sacramental tabling. 3. From this old fruit of the Wine. 4. From fellowship here in the Kingdom of Grace, to 1. New wine in heaven. 2. To heavenly tabling. 3. To new and everlasting wine. 4. In the Fathers Kingdom. Neither am I much moved with what Parabodie faith, that our Saviour led the woman of Samaria, from Jacob's well to thirst for the water of life, yet is not for that, Jacob's well made a type by divine institution. I answer, this would have some colour, if Christ did speake of common wine, as he did speake of Jacob's Well, as of common water. But all the three Evangelists speake of Sacramental wine consecrated by word and prayer, else Christ's calling bread his body should not prove that bread were a signe of his body by divine institution, but onely we were to make that spiritual use of bread and wine, that we make of ordinary bread and wine at our houses. Formalists then must say that Christ speaketh of wine here as common, not as Sacramental, which is absurd when Christ is expounding the Elements, in their spiritual signification, Luke 5. 22, 21. But behold the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me, on the table. Mark 14. 20. If he had been kneeling or standing, (gestures unpossible for them then,) he could not have his hand leaning on the table, and if he had not been sitting table-wise, in a table-fellowship with Christ, then could not our Saviour have conveniently convinced the ingratitude of Judas, as he doth. Now if Christ aime not to make Indus his fault the greater, because Indus and he sate at one table together, and that as an holy and Sacramental table, he had in this no more argued Indus of ingratitude, then any of the rest of the house who communicated not with Christ, because Christ and they did sate one materiall and ordinary bread together. And in this Achitophel was a type of Indus, as David of Christ, and that not onely in this.
this, that Achiophel did ease bread with David, and so had a civil fellowship, but that they went together to God's house, in company together, Psal. 55. 14. So had Christ and his disciples fellowship together, at that same sacramental table: and as tabling together signifies civil fellowship, so must fellow-tabling at one table signify spiritual fellowship together. 6. Giving and not granting that fellow-sitting together were only a common honour, not a spiritual honour by divine institution, yet since to sit at a table with a Ruler, is an honour, 1 Sam. 20. 5. 2 Sam. 9. 13. Esther 7. 7. Prov. 23. 5. Mat. 8. 11. Luke 16. 23. Luke 22. 30. And the Lords Disciples are admitted to sit with him, as is clearer in that he saith, 'whosoever shall sit down at table with the twelve, and shall sit,' (Luke 24. 30.) he means with them, and not by bread and blessing. No power on earth should dare to deprive the people of God of this honour, for this honour was bestowed on the Lords Apostles, as communicants; not as Apostles, and the wars of Christ's bodily presence, diminisheth nothing of the honour, seeing he is really, but in a spiritual manner present, as the Lord of the feast, with us, as he was with them. Paybode saith, when Christ's feast sat at table in the Passover, even then he schooled them from looking at honour in material or outward sitting, while as Luke 22. 36. he would stand himselfe as a servant, and vouch his Disciples feast. Ansv. His non-sitting and washing their feet, being a morall, not a sacramental teaching them humility, doth no more schoole them from not looking to sit, then his non-eating, and non-drinking while he stood servant-like, doth schoole them from not looking to the honour of eating and drinking sacramentally. Christ teacheth lessons of humility, not to learn as not to seek the spiritual honour of communion with Christ, that were to teach us to be proud, and this man is that bold to insinuate that it was a piece of pride, for the Disciples to sit at table with Christ, and for John to lean on his bosome.

Mr. Paybode thinketh to crush this argument, because the serving of God the Father and giving him glory, must be incompatible with a table-fellowship with his Sonne. The disputee (faith he) reasoneth thus; Kneeling importeth an inferiority, therefore it is contrary to the person of co-heirs, which person we all by table-sitting, but do you (faith he) dream of a co-heir ship, whereby you stand upon an inferiority to Christ; then when you take on you the person of co-heirs by sitting
using as Table, it were not lawfull either to esteem, or in a short ejaculation to call Christ your Lord and Superior; yea so faith must have no working at the Sacrament: for Faith importeth an inferiority and dependance: We respect Christ in his banquet, as a King inviting us to eat with him; yea, I may kneel and call God my Father, and in so doing, I actuative the person of a co-heire.

Ans. But in this the disputers and we mean no other thing, then the kneeling which is a note of submission, and never used in banquet, cannot formally express, as an apt signe, the dignity of fellow-ship with Christ. 2. Poor logician, it followeth not in sitting at Table, which is the expressing signe of the honour of Table-fellowship, we may not call Christ, Lord, David sitting at Table with his Prince Saul, might well term him (my Lord the King) but if David should be put to his knees at Table, and inhibited to eat at the Table, at which his Prince did eat; no wise man will say, that Saul had honoured David with fellow-Tabling with him. For the Act of kneeling, and non-eating were no expressing signes of fellow-Tabling, but by the contrary of no fellow-Tabling; the Disputer hath no minde to make us every way equal with Christ, so as there can be a case, wherein it is not Lawfull to esteem or call Christ our Lord, King and Superior, this is Paybodies consequence: but take away Table-sitting, an honour put upon us by Christ in this Sacrament, Luk. 22.27. and substitute kneeling for it, then you take away Gods expressing signe of Table-Fellowship in that gesture: for while the world standeth, kneeling shall never be a signe of Table-Fellowship: sitting at Table is a signe, as the Scriptures clear, but sitting taketh never away our inferiority to Christ; you may worship and actuate the person of a co-heire, but not worship in an expressing visible signe of co-ship, and then kneel. Further he reasoneth with us, as if Table-sitting inferred an equality between us, and that Lord who is the head of men and Angels; we reason for an honour of fellowship, not equality. David set at King Saul's Table, is not made equal with Saul, but in Table-sitting, he doth partake of Table-honour to seat with his Prince.

If Christ should have sittet and caused his Disciples rise and wash his feet, in that he could not have said, (I have put the honour of Table-fellowship on you, for you stand and wash my feet, and I sit) this (I say) had been no table-honour, but most contrary to it: it had been
been indeed servaunt-honour, Luk. 22. 27. and more then sinfull men are worthy of. To kneel to Christ is an honour, but to kneel at Tabling with him, as kneeling, is no more an expressing signe of table-honour, nor standing and serving Christ, while he did eat is an honour of table-fellowship. Now if any shall take away eating with Christ, at that table, he taketh away table-honour, as Papists do in taking away drinking with Christ from the people, yet eating with Christ maketh us not equal to Christ, but take away eating, and you take away Table-honour, so take away sitting at Table, and you take away (casenuw) in so far the Table-honour.

But by this mean (say they) you make it necessary to sit, and of Divine necessity. I answer, Table sitting is not so necessary, as that the want thereof doth annihilate the Sacrament, and make it to be no Sacrament at all, but it is (as I think) many ways necessary, as first it is morally or Theologically necessary, as being gesture sanctified by the practice of Christ and his Apostles, upon Morall grounds, and so to be imitated by us: 2. It is necessary, by necessity of expediency, as free from hazard of Idolatry, of which crime kneeling in this act, is guilty. 3. It is necessary, sacramentally, for the integrity of the Sacrament, as signifying our honour of Table-fellowship. 4. It is by natures grounds necessary, that as this banquet is materiall, having bread, wine, taking, breaking, distribution, eating, drinking, so the externall solemnity of a banquet, such as is table-fitting, requireth the same. And 5. which is our 4. Argument, it is necessary by necessity of Divine precept (Do this in remembrance of me) that this is included in the precept we certainly believe: 1. Because nothing in reason can be excluded, from the precept of the first pattern, but what is meerly occasional, such as sitting is not.

2. The practise of Christ and the Apostles cannot be a will-action, and therefore must fall under a precept: sitting cannot be occasionall, upon the reason that it was continued through occasion of the passover; for if this be good, then eating and drinking, and the Analogy betwixt the signe and Christ, shall be occasionall, and the singing of a Psalm, as was at the Passover, shall be occasionall: for Christ retained what did equally belong to the Supper of the Jews, and this Christian Supper, as concerning the common nature of sacred Feasts.
5. What is proper to a table of solemn feasting, should not be denied to this, But sitting was such; Ergo, More of this may be seen in the Nullity of Pearth examination, and the re-examination of the five Articles of Pearth.

**Q U E S T. I I.**

**W h o t h e r h u m a n e L a w s b i n d e t h c o n s c i e n c e s a r e n o t ?**

**A r g . 8.**

Our Argument against Ceremonies is, that they fail against the fifth Commandment, and the Authority of Rulers.

What the Civill, or Church-Ruler can command must be good, necessary, apt to edifie, and not indifferent, or neither good nor evil; Ceremonies are acknowledged by their Fathers to be indifferent, and neither good nor evil; Ergo, They are such as cannot be lawfully commanded. The Proposition is clear; the Ruler must command for good, Rom. 13. 4. He is the minister of God for thy good, and all for edification, 1 Cor. 10. 23, 1 Cor. 14. 3. v. 12, 17, 25. And therefore all means enjoined for this end, good and Edification must conduce thereto of their own nature, and not by the will of men, else they edifie not. But that this may be further cleared, it is questioned, if humane Lawes binde the conscience: for which consider,

1. Dist. An humane Law is taken in Concreto, when judges command what God commandeth, as when they make a Law against murder. 2. In abstracto, when the judge forbiddeth what may tend to murder, as carrying Armour in a City in the night.

2. Dist. There is some morall equity in right humane Laws.

3. Something positive.

4. Dist. There be four things to be regarded in humane Laws:
   1. Publick peace of the society. 2. The credit, honour and Majesty of the Ruler, even when the Law is unjust. 3. Obedience passive, and submission, by patient suffering. 4. Obedience active by doing, Which now to be considered.

Dist. 5. An humane Law Civill may oblige, Ratione generalis precept, in regard of the generall command to obey our superiors, as the fifth Commandment. But the question is, if a humane Law, as merely positive oblige in conscience, as if this which the Captain forbiddeth,
How humane Laws do binde the conscience. Cap. II. Q. 3.

biddeth, (not to speak the watch-word) he is self against the sixth Commandment (Thou shalt not murdher), if no murder follow upon the not speaking of the watch-word, though it be against the fifth in the generall.

Dist. 6. The question is, whether we be obliged in conscience to obey superiors in things Lawfull, or whether we be obliged in conscience to obey superiors, when they are sole authorityative relaters and carriers of God's express Law to us, for then they bring nothing of their own, to lay upon us, and in these cases their laws are rather God's Laws delivered by superiors to us, and bindeth the conscience. But the question is, if positive laws, in particular matters, negatively only, conform to the word, as in matters of Oeconomy, and policy, as not to eat flesh in Lent, for the growth of cattell; in matters of Art, and in ordering of war and Military Acts, commanded by Captains, if these commandments as such oblige the conscience. Now to oblige the conscience, is, when the not doing of such a thing bringeth an evil conscience; now an evil conscience, as Pareus (a) faith: Is the sense of sin committed against God, and the fear of God's judgement.

Distinctly. The conscience is obliged by doing, or not doing, two ways: 1. Pet. 3: kindli, when the fault of itself obligesth, and for no ressed without, as to give alms to the poor as the Commandment of the superiour: 2. When the fault obligeth for a reason from publick peace, good example, and order.


2. Conclusion. Publick peace in all the commandments of superiours, in so far, as can be without sin, obligeth the conscience, as Heb. 12: 14. Follow peace with all men, and godliness, Psa. 34: 14. Seek peace, and follow after it, Rom. 12: 18.

3. Conclusion. Subjection to the censures of Rulers by suffering patiently, is an obligation lying upon all private persons, 1 Pet. 3: 22. But if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable to God, Rom. 13: 3. Whoever therefore ressiste the power, ressiste the ordinance of God.

4. Conclusion. Nothing in non-obeying unwarrantable Command
ments must be done that redoundeth to the discredit of the Ruler or the hurting of his Majesty and honour, 1 Pet. 2. 17. Honour the King, Eccl. 10. 20. Curse not the King: For even when we deny subjection or obedience objective, to that which they command, yet owe we obedience officiell, and all due respect and reverence to the person and eminent place of the Ruler, as Acts 7. 2. Steven calleth them, Men, brethren, and fathers, Acts 7. 51. And yet stiffnecked refirers of the holy Ghost.

5. Conclus. Humane Laws, whither civill or Ecclesiastic, in that particular positive matter, which they have of Art, Oeconomy, policy, and in Gods matters of meer humane coyne and stamp, do not bindes the conscience at all, per se, kindaly and of themselves.

1. Nothing, but what is either Gods express word, or his word by consequence doth lay a band on the conscience of it self: But not to eat flesh in Lent, upon civill reasons, Not to carry Armour in the night, To wear Surplice, and to Crosse infants in Baptisme, are neither Gods word expressly, nor by consequence. The major is sure; because the word is the perfect and adequate object of matters of Faith, and norall practice, which concerneth the conscience, Psal. 19. 7, 8. Psal. 119. 9. Iohn 20. 31. Prov. 8. 9. 2. Because whatever thing layeth a band on the conscience, the not doing of that would be a sin before God, if the Ruler should never command it (But the carrying Armour in the night (the not wearing Surplice in Divine service) should be no sin before God, if the ruler should never command them, as reason, Scriptures, and adversities teach. The Proposition I instruct from the disaffixion of an obligation of conscience, for to lay a band on the conscience is defined, to lay a command on the soul, which ye are obliged before God to do, as you would eschew sin, and obtain eternall salvation: So the learned Pareus (b) to (c) Dr. Field, to (d) Gerson, and so with (e) Gregorius de Valentia, and (f) Suarez. 3. None can lay on a band of not doing, under the hazard of sin, but they that can remake sins, for the power that lootheth, the same bindeth: But mortal men cannot binde to sin, nor loose men from sin, but where God goeth before them in binding and loosing, for they cannot be from the grace of pardoning sin: But be onely, who hath the keys of David, who openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth. 4. Whoever can lay on bands of Laws, to bring any under the

---

How civill positive laws binde not the conscience,

[b] Pareus
(b) Com. in Rom. c. 13.
Dub. 7.
(c) Richard Field on the Church 4. book 6.
33.
(d) Gerson de vita S. Pe. part. 3.
ed. 4.
(e) Greg. de vul. 10.1.
disp. 7.
punct. 6.
Sect. 1.
(f) Suarez tom. de legibus lib. 3.
cap. 22.
the debt of sin, must lay an hand on bonds of obligation to eternall punishment, but God only can do this, Mat. 26. 8.

The Proposition is clear, because sin against God, essentially includeth a relative obligation to eternall punishment. 5. In matters of Gods worship this is clear. The School-men, as [h] Aquinas, [i] Suarez, [k] Ferrarioius, [l] Conradus teach us, that there is a twofold good. The first is, an objective and primordial goodness, whereby things are agreeable to Gods Law, if rulers made not this in that good which they command, they are not just and so not to be obeyed. There is another goodness that cometh from the will of authority, & is only divine authority must make things good, the will and authority of Rulers findeth objective goodnes in these, and therefore commandeth Laws of things, but because they enact Laws of things, they do not therefore become good and Lawfull. It is the will of the Creator of all beings which is the measure, rule, and cause of the goodnesse of things, as Adams not eating of the tree of knowledge is good and gratefull obedience, from Gods bidding will, and it should have been as gratefull obedience to that tree, if God had commanded so. Men cannot make wars, nor can their will create goodnesse in acts indifferent, nor can forbidding will illegittimate or make evil any actions indifferent, and therefore things must be morally good, and so intrinsically good without the creative influence of humane Authority, and God only are they apt to edifie, and to oblige the conscience of terms of goodnesse moral.

And this is strengthened, by that which in reason cannot be denied, to wit, that it is essentiaall to every human Law that laye its obligation on the conscience, that it be just, nor is it to be caus'd by Law, except it be just, and justice and equity humane Laws from God, the law of nature, and his word, not from the Authority and will of men; therefore Turists expound that [m] Which the Prince, hath the vigour of a Law, of just things. And the School-men, as [n] Carduba, [o] Thomas, [p] Soto, [q] Adrianus t. Navar. t. Driedo u. Castro, as I gather out of their writings, give strong reasons, why Rulers cannot lay an obligation on the conscience, when the matter of the Law is light and mean.

(by) Aquin. 22 q.v. art. 1. ad 3.
[i] Suar. Deo. 6. dicturn. Tract. 3.
[m] E. F. de consili. Princip.
[n] Carduba in sum. quest. a. 8. part. 1.
[o] Thom. 22 q. 104. art. 6.
[p] Soto de inf. leg. 1. 4. 6. art. 4.
[q] Medina C. de penitencia trad. 4. de jejun. c. 7.
[r] quad. 6. art. 2.
[t] Driedo 1. 3. De liber chriis. c.
[u] Castro lib. 1. de leg. pena. 6. 4.
ty, for this were to make a man a transgressor before God, for a word, a straw, a toy, which is unjust: Because the just weight of the matter is the only just ground of the Laws obligation: Ergo, the will of the Lawgiver, except he make a moat a mountaine, cannot lay an obligation of necessity on man. 2. It were a foolish law, and so no law to oblige to eternal punishment, and the offending of a God for a light thing, for this were to place the way of salvation in that wherein the way consisteth not. 3. Such a law were not for edification, but for destruction of soules. 4. This was the Phari-
ses fault, Mat. 23. to lay on intolerable burthen on mens soules.
5. The law of God and nature freeth us in positive laws from guilt, in case of necessity, as David did lawfully eat Shew-bread.
6. A Civill law may not take away a mans life for a straw, farre less can it bind to Gods wrath. 7. (x) Augustine faith, they be unjust ballances to esteeme things great or small, for our sole will. Out of all which I conclude, that no law as a Law, doth oblige the Conscience, but that which hath from the matter morall equi-
ty, and not from the intention of the Law-giver, as (y) Cajetan, (z) Silvester, (a) Angelus, and (b) Corduba teach, which intention must take a rule from the matter of the law, and not give a rule. c. Germon, No law (faith he) is a law to be called as necessary to sal-
vation, (as all good lawes should be) but that which de jure Di-
vino, is according to Gods lawe, yea, we are not (faith (d) Durandus) to obey the Pope if he command a Monke to doe somthing, when he is not moved to command by the necessity, the profit of the Church, but by his owne free will, and if this be knownen. If the Pope (faith he) for his owne will, and without necessity and utility should se-
clude workes of supererogation, that command should tend to destructi-
on, and we are to obey Christ, vobo is above the Pope. And therefore his mind is, that all obligation of Conscience, in humane command-
ments commeth from Gods will and law, that is, from the just and necessary matter of the law, not from the will of men.
6. Conclus. All humane or Ecclesiastick lawes binding the con-
sience, have necessarie, and not probable deduction only, by the warrant of both the Major Proposition and Assumption from the

(x) August. De Bapt. l. 5. 6.
(y) Cajet. verbo pra-
cepti trans-
gerendo.
(z) Silvest. verbo pre-
cept. q. 9.
(a) Angelus
verb. lex.
(b) Cordu-
ba q. 10. part.
1. 2.
(c) Ger. de
vis. (part.
left) q. 6. 7.
Nulla lex
ferenda est
quam nec-
cessaria ad
salutem qua
non est de
jure Divino.
(d) Du-
rand. l. 2.
d. 44. q. 5.
numb. 6.
St. Pape
praecepserat
Monacho quia
sunt consortes
suum profes-

Word
Word of God, and Law of Nature. This conclusion is against. (e) Suarez, he seeketh only a probable connexion betwixt obliging Laws and the Divine law. And (f) Gregorius de valent. is in very deed against Gerson, who teacheth three things of all humane lawes. 1. That they are in so farre just. 2. That they in so farre oblige the Conscience, as they have necessary dependance upon natures law, or Gods word; and therefore comparest them to these precepts that Physitians give to sicke persons, they oblige the conscience of the sicke, (as I thinke) from the first Commandement, (Thou shalt doe no murder,) for if the patient sleepe at such a time, or drinke wine in such a case, he killeth himselfe, but they have not obliging power from the first Commandement, not as if the King being sicke were obliged by the first Commandement to obey the Physitian, as his superiour. 3. He will have all humane laws that properly obligeth, to be onely declaratory, and to manifest onely the Divine law, and to apply it to such and such a matter. The Conclusion is clear from what is laid before, because all civil laws as meerly positive, in the case of non-contempt do not obligate, and in the case of non-scandal, as (g) Medina, (h) Almain. (i) Gerson teach. And if followeth from a sure ground, that (k) Vasquez layeth downe, and he hath it from (l) Driedo, to wit, that the efficacy of obligation in humane lawes, consisteth not from the Will of Lawgivers, or their invention, but from the dignity or weightiness of the matter. If then the matter be not from Gods law, just, the obligation is none at all; for if the law from mans will, shall lay on an obligation of three degrees, whereas Gods law from Gods will, before men inacted this in a Law, laid on an obligation of two degrees only, tying the Conscience, then the will of man createth obligation, or the obligative power of conscience in the matter of the Law, and by that same reason he createth goodnes, which is absurd, for that is proper to God onely.

I grant it is hard, because of the variety of singular actions in mans life, to see the connexion, betwixt particulars of humane lawes and Gods lawes; yet a connexion there is; and for this cause the learned worthy, Divine, (m) Parcus will have humane lawes in

| Suarest Tom de leg. lib.3. c.24. |
| Greg. de valent. tom.2. disp. 7. q. 5. puna. 6. Sect. 1. |
| Human lawes oblige onely in so farre as they agree with the Law of God. |
| Medina De jure cap. 7. |
| Almain Moral.c.12. |
| Gerson ut supra. |
| Vasquez disp. 158 c.4. num. 32. |
| Praecipuus intus non facit præcepsum habere magorem vel mi-norem obli-gandi sufficientiam, sed necessitas, dignitas, vel utilitas. |
particulari, & per se, in the particular and of themselves to binde the Conscience. Whereas (n) Calvin, and [o] Beza, Junius, Tilenus, Sibrandus, Witsakerus and others deny this: But the truth is, humane civil lawes are two waies considered. 1. As they are meeryly Positive & according to the letter of the Law. 2. As they have a connexion with 1. The principles of nature, of right and wrong. 2. With the end of the law, which is the suprem law, The safety of the people, as the Civill law faith, be who entret in an inheritance and maketh no Inventory of all his goods, shall pay debts above the whole heritage, this law according to the letter in the Court of conscience is unjust, and doth not oblige in Conscience; so as he is guilty before God, and deferveth the vengeance of everlasting wrath, who doth not make an inventory of all his goods, and produce it to the Judge; so he that goeth up to the walls of a City, may be by the Law commanded to be put to death, yet is he not guilty of eternall death before God, and therefore if the preumption which is the ground of the law ceate, as this; He that maketh not an inventory with a purpose to enjoy the whole inheritance and pay no debts, sinneth before God against conscience, as famous jurists, to wit (p) Jasion, (q) Bartolus and others teach: for this Law considered as having connexion with a principle of nature, that every man should pay his debts, is a Law binding the Conscience, and the truth is, the end of these Lawes oblige the Conscience, they being divine expressions of justice and righteousness, but not the Lawes themselves; for whatever obligeth the conscience as a divine truth, the ignorance thereof is a sinfull ignorance, and maketh a man guilty of eternall wrath, but men are not guilty & lyable to the eternal wrath of God, because they are ignorant of all the civil Lawes in Justinians book; then were we obliged to be no lesse versed in all the civil lawes that bindeth in foro humano, then of the Bible, and law of God.

The adversaries strive to prove that these lawes oblige the conscience, we may heare (r) Bellarmine, (s) Vasquez, (t) Valentinian, and the Formalist and Arminian, (u) Doctor Jackson say, To resist the Rulers in giving, and making lawes, is to resist God, as 1 Sam. 8. They have not refused thee, but they have refused me, that I should not reigne over them. Suarez faith, An humane law is the nearest cause of obligation of conscience, as the eternall law is the remote cause. And Jackson as the immediate interposition of divine authority

(n) Calvin inst. l. 3. c. 19. Scott. 15. 16.  
(o) Beza in Notis in Rom. x3.  
(p) Jasion. 
(q) Baldus in rubrica F. de acquisitionibus, reditibus & cons. 
(r) Bellarm. tom. 1. cont. 5. 1. 3. 11. 
(s) Vasquez tom. 2. in 12. disp. 152. cap. 2. 
(t) Valentinian. 
(u) Doctor Jackson on the Creed, lib. 2. cap. 4.
authority made the killing of Abrahams sonne, holy, Which otherwise Would have beene cruelly; for the interposition of authority derived from God, make some actions that barely considered would be apparently evil, and desperate, to be honest and lawful; to strike a Prophet would seem sin, but when a Prophet commanded to strike, was to strike is disobedience, 1 Kin. 20. 33, 36. to rob a Spaniard is Piracie, but to do it upon the Kings letter of Mars for Wrongs done to the State, is obedience to the King. Answ. To resist the servant in that wherein he is a servant, and as a servant, is to resist God, as 1 Sam. 2. proveth well. But the assumption then is most false, for rulers in making laws, and creating by their sole pleasure, goodness morall, in particular matters without the word of God, are not Gods servants, nor is humane authority as humane, the nearest cause of obligation of conscience, instamped in these laws, nor is it the cause at all, and therefore to resist them, is not to resist God. They be Gods instruments and Ministers in 1 Propounding and expounding Gods laws. 2. In executing them, and defending them from the violence of men. 3. In making positive and directory civil laws, for civil government, that are laws improperly so called, which bind the conscience as above is said, is so far, as they have dependance upon Gods Law: for Iames faith, There is but one Law-giver. As for Church canons, all, except Physicall circumstances in them, are to be warranted by the word. Therefore it is a false consequence of Valentia, humane laws oblige, depend upon a Deo externo, as they depend on the eternall law. Ergo, they oblige in Conscience, it followeth not. They oblige in Conscience as their Major and Minor proposition, in that which is moral, can be proved out of Gods word, but so, in their morallity they are merely divine, and not humane and positive, and to the argument concludes not against us. They oblige in Conscience as they depend upon the eternall law, that is, as they are deduced from the eternall Law of God, in a Major proposition, without probation of the assumption, that we deny, and it is in question now. The people 1 Sam. 8. in rejecting Samuel from being their judge, rejected God, not because Samuel had a power of making laws, without the warrant of Gods word. Neither Moses, nor Jeremiah, nor Ezekiel, nor any Prophet were in that servante subordinate to God, for they were only to declare the word as Gods mouth. 3. We could have no more at Beterwine (x) hand
(x) Bellarmino faith. For Bellarmino faith, In a good sense, Christ gave to Peter a power, to make that which is sinne, to be no sin, and that which is no sinne, to be sinne. So Jackson, the interposition of derived authority, maketh that which would be murthre otherwise, to be a good worke; that is, men may doe what God onely can doe. If Isaac then at the commandement of Abraham his father, offer his sonne Jacob to God in a bloody Sacrifice, then Abrahams derived authority maketh that a lawfull sacrifice, as to strike a Prophet of it selfe, is a degree of murthre, but when a Prophet commandeth another to strike a Prophet, it is lawfull. But can any blasphemere say, that this was humane derived authority without warrant of the word of the Lord, such as are humane positive lawes, and our humane ceremonies, see the text, 1 King. 20. 35. And a certaine man of the names of the Prophets, said unto his neighbour in the word of the Lord, smite me. This was immediate, divine and Prophetical authority, and not humane. Doth the Kings letter of Mart make robbing a Spaniard lawfull? Court Parasites speake so, he refuteth himselfe. The Kings letter of Mart, for wrongs done to the State, maketh that which is Piracy lawfull, then the Kings authority doth not here by a nomothetic power, and a law laid upon the Conscience, but the wrongs of Piracy by Spaine, done to the State of England, may make the robbing of Spaniards an act of lawfull warre, and an act of justice flowing from the King as a lawfull Magistrate. Now Jackson is speaking of mandates of Rulers in that place, which have no warrant of the word of God. Yea, even Stapleton (y) a Papist faith, as Doctor Field also (z) observeth, That humane laws binde for the utility and necessity of the matter, and not from the will of the Lawgiver. And so faith [a] Gerison, [b] Almain, [c] Decius, [d] Mencha, and our owne [e] Iunius faith. The plenty of power of lawes is only in the principal agent, not in the instrument. [f] Doctor Jackson faith, unlimited and absolute faith or submission of conscience we owe not to rulers, that is due to God, but we owe to them conditionall assent and cautionary obedience, if they speake from God. Suppose they feache not an express commission from Scripture, for if Pastors be then onely to be obeyed when they bring evident commission out of Scripture, I were no more bound to believe & obey my governours, then they are bound to believe and obey in Bellarmi. cont. Barclay. cap. 3. Bono, &c. Christus dedit Petro potestatem faciendi de pecato non pecatum, & de non pecato pecatum. Humane authority is not the nearest or instrumentall cause of Lawes. (y) Stapleton de Statu Eccles. cont. 5. q. 7 art. 2. (z) Field on the Church, books 4. c. 33. (a) Gerison oper. moral. cap. 12. (b) Almain. (c) Decius nomenclaturi c. 10. (d) Mencha. (e) Iunius ann. 89. (f) Doctor Jackson 16.
What obedience we owe to Superiors under God. Cap. II. Q. 2.

My Governors, then they are bound to believe and obey me; for equals are obliged to obey equals, when they bring a warrant from God's Word, and so the power of Rulers were not real, but titular, and the same doth [g] Sutluius and [h] Bellarmine say.

Answer. We owe to equals, to Mabonetz, conditionall and cautionary faith and obedience; thus, I believe what Mabonetz faith, so he speaks God's word, yea so Samaritans who worshipped they knew not what. John 4. 26. gave faith to their Teachers in a blinde way, so they spake according to God's word. 2. It followeth in no sort, if Rulers are only to be obeyed when they bring God's Word, that then they are no more to be obeyed then equals & Inferiors, because there is a double obedience, one of conscience, and objective coming from the thing commanded; And in respect of this, the word hath no lees authority, and doth no lees challenge obedience of Conscience, and objective, when my equal speakseth it in a private way, yea, when I writ it in my muse, then when a Pastor speaketh it by publike authority, for we teach against Papists, that the word borroweth no authority from men, nor is it with certainty of faith to be received as the Word of man, but as indeed the Word of God, as the Scripture faith: 1. There is another obedience officially, which is also obedience of Conscience, because the fifth Commandement injoyeth it. Yet not obedience of Conscience coming from the particular, commanded in humane Lawes, as humane, so I owe obedience of submission, and submission of affection, of feare, love, honour, respect, by virtue of the first Commandement to Rulers, when they command according to God's Word, and this I owe not to equals or inferiors; and so it followeth not that the power of Rulers and Synods is titular, because they must warrant their mandates from the Word. But it always this mans hap to be against sound truth. But 3. That I owe no more objective submission of conscience to this, (Thou shalt not murder) (Believe in Jesus Christ) when Rulers and Pastors command them, then when I read them in God's word. I prove 1. If this from a Ruler (Thou shalt not murder) challenge faith and submission of Conscience of six degrees, but as I read it my selfe, or as my equal in a private way faith, (Thou shalt not murder) it challenge faith and submission of four degrees only, then is it more obligatory of Conscience, and
and so of more intrinsically authority, and so more the word of God when the Ruler commandeth it, then when I read it, or my equal speaketh it to me. This were absurd for the speaker, whether public or private person, addeth not any intrinsical authority to the word, for then the word should be more or less of God's word, as the bearers were public, or private, more or less worthy. As God's word spoken by Amos a Prophet, should not be a word of such intrinsical authority, as spoken by Moses both a Prince and a Prophet. 2. My faith of subsjection of Conscience, should be resolved, as concerning the two degrees of obedience of faith to the word spoken by the Ruler on the sole authority of the Ruler, and not on the authority of God, the Author of his own word. 4. I answer to Sutulumius, That Christ in the external policy of his own house is a Lawgiver, ordaining such and such officers himself, Ezek, 4. 11. commanding order and decency, and setting down a perfect discipline in the New Testament, in all particulars that have influence, religious, moral, mystically significant in God's worship, and there is reason that Synods and Pastors, should rather promulgate God's Lawes, than the people. 1. Because God hath given to them by office, the key of knowledge. 2. Because by office they are watchmen, and so have authority of office to hear the Law at God's mouth, and in Synods to give Directories or Canons according to that word, which people have not, and that their Canons must be according to God's Word, is said in the word, Nehemiah 10. 32. Also we made ordinances for no. 34. as it is written in the law of the Lord.

Jackson faith, Of things good in themselves and apprehended so by us, without any scruple of evil, every man's conscience hath sufficient authority to inquire into, only the alacrity of doing in what time or measure it is to be done, or such circumstances, cometh within the subject of obedience to governours.

Answ. Then because faith in Christ is evidently good by the Doctors learning, the Pastor hath no more authority to command the people to believe in Christ, then the people hath to command the same to him. So in preaching all the necessary fundamentals of salvation, the authority of Pastors is merely titular. There be then little necessity of a public ministry, as Socinians teach us. 2. The alacrity and manner and measure of believing, and doing things
What obedience we owe to Rulers  

Cap. II. Q. 2.

Evidently good is as particularly set down in God's Word, as obliging the Conscience, as the Mandates themselves, God who commandeth us to love him, and to believe in his Sonne, hath not left that power to Prelates, that create wretched Ceremonies, to command us to love God with all our heart, or not, and to serve God with alacrity or not, or to believe in Christ with all the heart or with halfe a heart; the sincerity, measure and manner of the loving of God, is no more the subject of obedience to rulers then the loving of God. Rulers doe command both alike, Paria auctoritate, except the man say that we obey God's Law perfectly, when we give obedience to it, according to the substance of the acts, though we obey not sincerely.

The Doctor giveth us Rules in obeying Rulers. We are not so adventure on the action, whereof we are persuaded there be much evil, and no good in it.

Ans. Then we cannot venture upon Ceremonies, that bringeth adders to God's word, under all the Plagues written in God's word.

2. God's word, not mens persuasions of conscience (except in this also he be an Arminian) is the rule of mens actions. The servants of Caiaaphas may be persuaded there is no good, but much evil in confessing Christ; We are to lay aside the erroneous persuasion, and obey, if the action be good, in it fell.

Jackson. Some actions apprehended as meerly evil, may be undertaken with lesse danger, then others which are apprehended partly as evil, partly as good; the action is evil as long as we fear the evil in it, to be greater then the good we can hope for.

Ans. To do any thing as apprehended evil, of which sort are humane Ceremonies to us, for any respect, is to do with a doubting conscience, and to sin, Rom. 14. 23. 2. God's word, not probabilities should lead us in adventuring upon actions.

Jackson. 3. If the measure of the good apprehended, be as great as the evil feared; in private choice, we may adventure upon the action, leaving the event to God's providence, which favour eth actions, more then privations, works rather then idleness, and following of that which is good, rather then abstinence from evil; for whereas this in difference of persuasion is, authority may cast the balance, and sway the private choice? So also (a) Hooker.

Ans. This is the Jesuit (b) Suarez's doctrine, and so faith the Jesuit.
Iesuit of Corduba (c) Sanches, when the subject is in a doubt, whether the thing commanded by the Superior be lawfull or not, he is obliged to obey, and he is to be excused because of the command of the superior: 1. Because (say they) the Commanders condition is better, and for a speculative doubt, he is not to be spoiled of his power of commanding, where reason, faith he, commandeth nothing against reason: 2. Because the inferior hath resigned his will to the superior, Demonstr. 17. Paral. 19. Ergo, In things doubtsome, God commanded to stand to the determination of the Priest, and it is a truth that the will of the Superior doth not vary and change the nature of a thing in itself; yet it varieth to the inferiors conscience. Now indifference of persuasion is all one to Doctor Tuckton with indifferency of the thing, for so he dictates. If one have indifference of reasons of twelve degrees on both sides, that Arianisme, or Arminianisme, is truth, if authority determine both to be truth, the weight of authority in indifferency of persuasion should cast the ballance, and to believe this, or not to believe it: where Arguments are of twelve grains of light of truth on both sides, it is to the doubting man, as if the thing were indifferent, so is the doubter to give up his soul, conscience, and faith to believe Arianisme to be truth, not from light of conscience, (for equally as much light of conscience are in either side, as is supposed) but for the meer will of humane authority, without Gods word.

Now though the matter here be indifferent in itself, yet not so to the doubter; for Ceremonies in our persuasion are not indifferent. See here Ignatius Loyola (d) say, Give over your self to your Ruler. Give the Prelate your faith to keep, while ye be in eternity, and at the last judgement he will restore the pawn; And this is (faith Gregory de Valent.) (e) to give your two eyes to your guide: I had rather they stick in my own head. To these Jesuits I oppose the minde of (f) Vasquez, and [g] Salas, who say in that case the subject should first lay aside his error, and then obey. 2 God requireth a full persuasion by the Lord Iesus, even in things indifferent, Rom. 14. 14, 22, 23. But poor naked humane authority cannot engender persuasion of faith; and here is doubting: 3. It is false, That providence favoureth positive actions, more then privations, for
Rom. 14. God loveth better abstinence from meats in themselves lawful and clean, as the Apostle proveth, ver. 14. Because nothing is unclean of itself, then that the eater doubt, if he be not trespassing the Law of God in eating, though a great Apostle say, there is no danger in eating.

And Jackson addeth of the same nature these: The good of obedience is not a consequent only of the action, but either an essential part, or such a circumstance and motive precedent, as bringeth to a new essence for its concomitants, whereby the evil, which we out of private persuasions fear, may be counterbalanced by the goodness that is in the purpose of sincere obedience to lawful authority, as well as we conceive good probably included in the very object of the action, that which doth that which in his private opinion he suspekteth to be evil, because enjoyned by lawful authority, doth not evil that good may come of it, seeing the goodness of obedience is no consequent of the action, but a motive precedent. Authority maketh actions indifferent to be good and necessary.

Ans. He beggeth the question: The goodness of sincere obedience to authority (faith he) may counterbalance the evil, that we in our private choice fear to be in the action. But first, obedience to authority in things wanting God's word (whereof he speaketh now) is not obedience, but sinning, because doing without faith. 2. I take the Doctor at his word, refusing obedience to mens will-worship, or to practise even to the ruin of the weak, things indifferent, for fear of the greatest evil, the offending of God, by adding to his worship, Rev. 22.18.19. is obedience to God, and not a privation: the purpose (I say) of this obedience to God, may counterbalance all evil that can be imagined in non-obedience to men, and sure obedience to God, though probably obedience is as good and better, then obedience to men, though probably obedience.

Jesuites and Formalists say, Rulers are in possession to command; Ergo, We cannot thrust them out of possession, where we are not persuaded that they command against reason, faith Sanches: So I say, God is in just possession commanding us to venture upon no indifferent action, where the conscience doubteth, and shall we not no less contend for God's just possession, as time-servers do for mortal Rulers unjust possession in this? 2. I prove that it were lawful then to sin against God: A Jew is alike persuaded, that Muries Son is the true Messiah, and that he is a deceiver: Opinions about
Cap. II. Q. 2. in case of a doubting conscience.

about a man, might seem indifferent to the Jews, And it is all one (faith Jackson) as if the thing be indifferent. Now the Pharisees in a Council, determine, that Mary's Son is a deceiver; Then it is lawful for the Jew, upon purpose of sincere obedience to Pharisees, who sit in Moses' chair, to believe, that Mary's Son is a deceiver; because the conceit of sincere obedience is an essential motive to transubstantiate unbelief into sincere obedience, and the Jew may venture upon the faith, that Mary's Son is a deceiver, and crucifie the Lord of glory: being commanded thereunto by his Commanders, because God's providence favoureth more positive actions, then privations.

3. He faith, He that obeyeth for the sole authority of Rulers, doth not evil that good may come of it: 1. Because the goodness of obedience countervail the evil of the actions: But 1. The question is, if it be obedience; Ergo, If it be no obedience, it cannot countervail the evil. 2. If it be the evil of sin, with a doubting conscience to do what judges commandeth, having no warrant of faith, but the will and lust of men, no purpose of good, though it were to save all the world, can counter-redeem the evil of sin against God. Because (faith he) such a one doth not evil, that good may come of it. Then he that stealeth moneys to give to the poor doth not evil, that good may come of it, by Dr. Jackson's reason, Because the goodness of purposing to help the poor is not a consequent, but a precedent motive of the action, and so maketh it good: We all know, the intention of the end goeth in the intention before the action, but not as an essential cause to make an evil action good, or make an indifferent action necessary and honest: A good intention doth make a good action good and better, but that a good intention (as Idolaters are full of good intentions) can never so season the means, as (this Doctor faith) that it can make evil to be good; [i] Vasquez condemneth the Fathers of ignorance, because they said, Pro-positum bonum excusat malum opus: so Cassianus (k) said, It was lawful to lie for a good end, and (l) Chryṣostome, and (m) Ambrose said the same, as Vasquez faith: see (n) Aquinas for this. 3. It is the doctrine of the man of sin, That Pope or Rulers, sole and bare authority can make an action indifferent, and so neither good nor evil, to be indifferent and good, as (o) Bellarmine faith; for God only by his institution createth moral goodnesse in actions, mans will
will is no creatrix of goodnesse. 4. Neither resolutions nor skill are
to be credited or followed, because private or publick, because au-
thority of man as such, is no light nor warrant to the conscience to
adventure upon morall actions; and the Lord giveth light to private
men to obey, Psalm 25. 8, 9. 1 Cor. 2. 14, 15. lob. 7. 17, 18 lob. 7, 27. 2 Cor.
3. 18. 2 Cor. 4. 4. As he doth to Rulers to Command. So (p) Sylvester,
(q) Tartares, (so (r) Rivetus, (s) Doctor Field.

I proceed to answer other Arguments: As 1. We must not ob-
bey. Not only for wrath, but for conscience, the violation of a special
Law, necessarily draweth with it the violation of the general Law of
the fifth Commandment; But the violation of the general Law
Learned (t) Pareus, hurteth the Conscience; and the Magistrate pun-
ished not for general Violation, but for the Violation of this spe-
cial Law; Ergo, this special Law obligeth in Conscience. And it seem-
eth to carry reason. Every just punishment presupposed essentially a
sin, else it is not a just punishment; but the Ruler doth justly punish the
particular Transgression of an humane Law; Ergo, the Trans-
gression of a particular Law of Rulers is sin. The Proposition is con-
firmed by grave School-men, (u) Soto, (x) Sylvester, (y) and Ioan,
Elium, who thinketh that there cannot be a Law obliging to a pu-
nishment, nor not to a fault; because punishment hath an in-
trinsic relation to a sin, nor can it be a just punishment that is not
proportioned to a sin; for the Law (z) saith, That cometh not under
damage, which cometh not under faults.

An; Though the Violation of the generall Law hurteth the
Conscience, it being against the fifth Commandment; it followeth
not that the Violation of every particular Law, even that that is
meekely Positive, hurteth the Conscience before God: For then the
carrying of Armour in the Night. Suppose no Ruler on earth make
a Law there anent, should be a sin before God, which no wise man
can say. 2. The other reason is more important; and draweth with it
that School-question agitated by Jurists also and Canonists, An
ulla decur lex purus penalis? If there be a Law purely Penal, with-
out sin in it: And if the Law of Rulers in things meekely Positive,
be meekly Penal and co-active, and not formally obliging to sin.
But I Answer, Rulers do justly punish the Transgression of a Posi-
tive Law, not as particularly humane and Positive: But as x. It
bath connexion with the Morall Reason of the Law. 2. As the par-

(p) Sylvester, (q) Tartares, (so (r) Rivetus, (s) Doctor Field.
Cap. II. Q. 2. _Humane laws binde not the conscience._

Particular transgression is scandalous and against order, in which case the formal object of the just punishment inflicted by the Ruler, is in very deed not the simple omission of the positive act of a particular humane Law, but the violation of the moral goodness annexed to it, and of the scandal given. Now in this meaning, the transgression of the positive humane Law is not kindely, _per se_, of it self punishable, but by accident, and so it bindeth the conscience by accident: And in this sense, great Doctors, as (a) Ambrose, (b) Anselm, (c) Theodoret, (d) Chrysostom, (e) Navarra, (f) Felinus, (g) Taranquel say, That humane Laws oblige the conscience. But the most learned of the Canonists aver, that not to obey civill Laws, laying aside the evil of scandal, is no mortall sin, and so doth not involve the conscience in guiltiness before God.

2. They object. To resist the Laws of the Magistrate, is to resist himself; and to resist himself, is to resist the Ordinance of God.

Ans. To resist the Laws positive and particular in connexion with the moral reason of the Law, is to resist the Ruler, true. But to the question is not concluded against us: for by accident in that sense, humane Laws bind the conscience; but to resist the particular Laws, as particular Laws, as particular positive Laws, is not to resist the Ruler: A Ruler as a Ruler, doth never command a thing merely indifferent as such, but as good, edificative, profitable, and except you resist the morality of the positive humane Law, you resist not the Ruler; yea, nor yet is the Law resisted.

3. The Jesuit Lod. Meranius (h) objecteth: Every true Law obligation, either to guiltiness, or to punishment, but the civill and Canonick Laws are Laws properly so called. But they do not ever oblige to punishment only. Ego, They oblige to sin.

Ans. It is denied that Laws civill or Canonick, as meerly particularly positive, do oblige as Laws, or that they are Laws, they being only Laws according to the morality in them, that can promote us to our last end, eternall felicity.

It is also false that the Jesuit faith, _If thou wilt be saved, keep the Commandments_, doth command the keeping of all Civill and Canonick Laws, or that hence is concluded a Law obliging the conscience, that is, humane and positive, as if a Lent Fast, a Pilgrimage, and not carrying Armour in the night were commanded by Christ, as necessary to life eternall.
The same (i) Meratius striveth to answer the Argument of Albert and Gerson, which is this; Who ever can oblige to sin mortal before God, he can inflict eternal punishment, but no mortal man can inflict eternal punishment.

1. Saith he, This Argument would prove sins against the Law of nature, as homicide, and adultery, not to be deadly sins, for by the Law of nature, eternal punishment is not inflicted for sins against the Law of nature, but by the positive will of God. If any say, God is the author of the Law of nature, because he is the Creator of that human nature, in which this law is written: So is that be sufficient that the law of nature oblige under eternal punishment, so also the civil and Ecclesiastical laws shall bind the conscience, because he is the author of that power which maketh Civil and Ecclesiastical laws, for there is no power, but it is of God.

Ans. 1. By the Law of nature, sins against the Law of nature deserve eternal punishment, and that essentially, laying aside the positive will of God, to whom I grant it is free to inflict punishment, or not to inflict, and this agreeth to all sin. But to carry Armstrong in the night, laying aside the case of scandal, and the morality thereof, that no murthor follow thereupon, deferveth neither temporal nor eternal punishment. And if this Argument of the Jesuits hold good, no mortal sin shall oblige to eternal punishment, because God's positive will is the nearest cause of actual punishment eternal in all sins. 2. God is not the Author of a proper somethetic power in man, for that is the question.

2. He answereth, Distinguishing the Proposition. None can oblige to a mortal sin, but he who can inflict the eternal punishment of a mortal sin. It is true (saith he) of the punishment which wholly dependeth upon the will of the judge who made the Law: but it is no true of that punishment, which no way dependeth upon the will of the Judge, such as is eternal punishment, excommunication dependeth upon the will of man, and is obligeth to eternal punishment, yet none cannot inflict that eternal punishment: for a man may command an act, the omission whereof, or the commission whereof, is of such moment, that it serveth much for the good of a community, and therefore he who of knowledge and willingly doth such an act, doth sin against right reason, and so against the eternal law of God.

Ans. 1. The distinction of the Jesuits is but a begging of the question.
llion. He who can oblige to mortall sin by his Law, can also oblige to eternall punishment, if eternall punishment dependeth wholly on his free will, as the Law doth; What is that, but the inflicting of eternall punishment belongeth to him who maketh a Law obliging to sin mortal, so being the inflicting of eternall punishment belong to him; But our Argument is, he who hath dominion and authority to make a Law, hath dominion and authority to inflict a punishment answerable to the transgression of that Law: for it is one dominion and power to make the Law, and to inflict the penalty of the Law: Man cannot make the penalty of eternall wrath: Ergo, he cannot make a Law obliging to eternall wrath.

2. Excommunication is not done by mens will, but by the power of the keys for a mortall sin deserving excommunication, and so eternall wrath. If any Excommunicate upon his sole will, as wicked Popes have done; in that case the will of a man obligeth neither to punishment, nor to eternall punishment, it is but Brutum Fuit men, and not to be feared. 3. If any Commit an act that hurteth a whole Community, and is forbidden by men in Authority, he sinneth against the Law of God, though men had never forbidden that Act: And we deny not but humane Laws agreeing with the Law of Nature, doth oblige the Conscience both to sin and eternall punishment, but then they are not humane Laws, but Divine Laws, and in that case two guiltinesse, Duo reatus, are Committed, one against the fifth Commandment, in doing what Superiors according to Gods Word forbidden, and there is another guiltiness against the matter itself, and a Divine Law, which also should stand as a sin before God, though the Ruler had never forbidden it: But if any carrie Armour in the Night, being forbidden by the Judge, for eschewing of night homicide, if no homicide follow at all, and the matter be not known, and so not scandalous, the carrier of Armour is involved in no guiltiness before God.
That Christ hath a spiritual Kingdom, not only in the power of preaching the Word, but also in the power of the keys by discipline.

Concerning the Christian Magistrate we are to consider two heads, the one negative, what he cannot do in the matters of Christ's Kingdom: 2. Positive, What he ought to do, for the opening of the former: We are to cleare whether or no all externall scandals Ecclesiasticall, as well as civill, are to be punished by the Civill Magistrate; and that as in Civill scandals, that disturbeth the peace of the Common-wealth, the Magistrate hath a twofold power, one to command what is good and just, another to reward and punish; so the Lord Jesus in his Kingdom, hath not onely a directive power to teach and forbid, but also a power, by way of Discipline, upon the external man ecclesiastically to reward and punish, to bind and loose, in an externall Court on earth. It is granted by the Adversaries, that Christ as King hath a power of binding and loosing, but meerly internall, purely spiritual, in regard of the Conscience, by the Preaching of the Word; but for any externall power to take in and cast out of the Visible Kingdom of Jesus Christ his Visible Church, this they deny, and so refuse all externall Ecclesiasticall censures of receiving into the bosome of the Church, and casting out by rebukes, or Excommunication; and therefore that there is no externall Court in the Church to punish Ecclesiasticall scandals, all scandals and externall offences of the Church, are to be punished by the Christian Magistrate onely: In opposition to which error, I say,
1. Conclusion. There is not only a rebuking of an offender in the Church, by private admonition, as between Brother and Brother, common to all Christians, Col. 3. 16. Levit. 19. 17. And of the Pastor only, he applying the Word by way of Preaching to such and such offenders, and closing the Gates of the Kingdom of Heaven upon impenitent sinners, which is acknowledged by the Adversaries: But there is also a Church-rebuking by way of censure, which must presuppose an Ecclesiastical Court, and a rebuking of a Publicque sin, put forth by many; whereas one only, not a Church or multitude may Preach the Word, and so rebuke by way of Preaching, which I make out from the Word of God, 2 Cor. 2. 6. Sufficient to such a man is his punishment which was inflicted of many: The word ernalsia, a rebuke or punishment, in the old Translation, it is Orbargario, in the Newer, Incepareo; Piscator Muleta, is a chastisement, whether this punishment was actuall excommunication, as many Learned Interpreters do not improbably gather out of the Text; or if it was a Rebuke of the Church in order thereunto: Certain it included, a rebuking not of one man, but a Church-rebuking inflicted by many, 2 Cor. 2. 6. And by the Representative Church of Corinth, gathered together with Pauls spirit and the power of the Lord Jesus, 1 Cor. 5. 4.5. And so presupposeth a Court or Convention of many inflicting this punishment. 2. The Adversaries who deny that there is such a thing as Excommunication, say it was only a rebuke; but if it was Excommunication, it must include a rebuke coming from the many who do excommunicate. 3. It is such a rebuke as must be taken off and pardoned by many, as ver. 7. So that contrariwise, ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, ver. 10. To whom ye forgive any thing, I also forgive. So here is a rebuking put upon an offender by many convened in a Court, who did rebuke by way of judicidal Authority, and the power of the Lord Jesus; Ergo, it was some higher censure which was inflicted by many, and taken off by many; then that which was inflicted by one by way of Preaching, where there is no necessity that many either rebuke, or comfort the rebuked: for one Pastor is to give out the sentence of Death or Life, rebuking and comforting, toward any one offender, or a person Repenting, whether many be convened to consent and joy or not. Yea, I may, being a Pastor of Jesus Christ, dispense rebukes and comforts by way of Preaching, against
the will and minde of the whole flock: But a rebuke, and a forgiving by many, cannot be dispensed, except these many convene together in the Name of the Lord Jesus in a Church way, and consent.

2. If the convened Church must be heard and obeyed when she rebuketh a Brother, for a fault done between Brother and Brother, and that upon the Testimony of two or three witnesses, then is the Church a Court that is to rebuke an offender, and so to convene him before her: and that is some other censure then by way of Preaching; but the former is true, Matt. 18. 16, 17. 3. If the Churches of Jerusalem and Antioch, convened in a Synod, do give forth an Ecclesiastical rebuke on false Teachers, as those that troubled the Churches, and perverted their Souls with false Doctrine; then is there rebuking of offenders by a Church or Churches, beside a Pastorall rebuking by one single Brother or Pastor: But the former is true, Acts 15. ver. 24, 25. The Proposition is clear, in that a select company of Apostles, Elders and Bishops, doth not only Doctrinally conclude against their error who did hold the necessity of Circumcision, but also against the Persons, and their Schismaticall way, of troubling the Church by a cause in making a side and Faction in the Church, ver. 2. 24. And this not any one single man could do in an ordinary way, except we say that it was an idle and unnecessary remedy which the Apostles used to quench the fire, as if any one man might have done all this, or as if they had rebuked these men publiquely, not having heard and convinced them by the Word of God; or as if an offence touching conversation and against the second Table, had risen betweene Church and Church, no lees than in the present case of an offence in matter of doctrine, that the Apostles would not have taken the same course, all which are not to be imagined. And in very deed this was not a point of meer doctrine, but also of peace and charity, violated by a Faction, ver. 2. And a scandall in eating things strangled, was raised in the Churches, Acts 15. 24. 1 Cor. 10. 28, 29. Rom. 14. 14, 15, 16, 17. 4. If Timothy be to rebuke publiquely, those that sin publiquely, and that judicially upon the Testimony of Witnesses. Then is there a publike Church-rebuking by way of censure, beside the Pastorall rebuking. But the former is expressly said, 1 Tim. 5. 19, 20. This must be a rebuking in a Church-court, except we say Timothy his alone was the Church, and a Monarch
march of the Church, who hath power to lead witnesses against Elders.

2. Conclusion. There is such a censure as excommunication in the hands of the Church, by which scandalous offenders are to be debarred from the society of the Church, and other holy ordinances, that they do not prophan them, which is proved from Mat. 18, 15, 16, 17, 18. Thus, he who is to be of a brother esteemed as no brother, but as a Heathen and a Publican, and whose offence is bound in Heaven, as the Church bindeth on Earth, and that upon the testimony of Witnesses, he incurrath some other censure of reall ejection out of the society of brethren in a Church State, then Pastorall rebuking. But he who trespasseth against his brother, and will neither be gained by private admonition, nor by the Church rebuking him, is in such a case; Ergo, such a one is to be excommunicated, and to Christ must have instituted such a censure.

Divers reasons are allledged against this sense, as not favouring excommunication.

Object. 1. If thy brother trespass against thee, is, if thy brother trespass against God, shou knowing him to be guilty, art to deal with him, and to bring his fault to publike hearing that he may be punished.

Answ. 1. The same phraze in the same doctrine of scandals is, Luke 17,3. Take heed to your selves, saith the apostle, to avoid this: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. But it cannot be said that if our brother transgress against God, we knowing of that, we are not to forgive him a sin committed against God, though he should come to us, and say that he repenteth, for then might any private brother pardon murthers and sorceries, and if this private brother were a Magistrate, by this he is to forgive bloods, and not use the sword against the evil doer, and is to dispence with it seventy seven times, if the offender say he repeneth. 2. The text faith expressly, If thy brother trespasses against thee, not is his against God. It is true, sinnes against a brother, are sins against God, but it is evident from the text, that Christ speakes of such sinnes in a speciall manner, committed against me, or a particular brother, which are within the verge of my power or his to pardon, as not being yet publike scandalous.

Objections against excommunication removed.

3. Camero
3. Sineer faith, to sinne against any here, is not to sinne against God with the knowledge of a brother, but it is to sinne in private against a brother, so as the offended brother is in meeknes to labour to gaine him, and not bring his fault to publike, if he can be cured in private, and therefore with much lenity we are to proceed, whereas before Christ had exhorted not to contemne our brother, here he teacheth with what loving patience and longanimitie we are to labour to gaine him when he is fallen, else Christ should say but the same thing over againe, that he said once.

Object. 2. But by this place of Scripture, I should rebuke any brother whom I know to sinne against God, to the end I may gaine him to repentance, and that before two witnesses? Now this is absurd: my Father, my King and Prince before two witnesses: And therefore by the Church is meant a number of private Christians before whom I am to convince my brother, and that I am not to rebuke any offender whatsoever, is cleare in that Solomon saith, it is a mans glory to passe by an offence, and we are not too reverre our servant cursing us. Ergo, we are not to rebuke every one, nor to bring them before any Church Court.

Answ. 1. This argument is against Christ, as well as against us, for it tendeth to conclude that it is not universally true, that I am to rebuke every offending brother, which I will grant in some sense. For 1. If the fault be small, and possibly a matter of goods, with which I may dispence, without lesse hurt to my brothers soule, then the evil of scandall may be, if I complains to either the Church or Magistrate, I am rather to suffer wrong, 1 Cor. 6. 7. But because I am not to rebuke my brother impudently, may I not conclude from Christ's words, i may rebuke him? Or because a meane person may not rebuke a Ruler, or a Prince, or King? Will it follow that a Nathan may not rebuke King David, and because I may not rebuke King Saul, his Father, shall it follow that no other may rebuke King Saul? Or because I may not rebuke a scorner, though a professing brother, or because I may not rebuke my brother before two or three witnesses, who to my knowledge bear the offender ill will, and so I see my rebuking shall be so far from gaining him to repentance, that it shall provoke him to a greater offence, shall it therefore follow I am to suffer sin in my brother, and not to rebuke him at all, which the Spi-
Cap. III. Q. 2. Excommunication is a Divine Ordinance.

rit of God calleth a hating of my brother in my heart, Lev. 19. v. 18. This argument concludes that I may not rebuke my brother, but only that I may not rebuke my brother imprudently, or that any brother may not rebuke any brother, whoever he be, King or Ruler, Negatio modi non negat rem ipsam, so we are to pass by offences and to be willing to forgive them. Ergo, we are not to rebuke an offending brother, but doth not follow, I must be willing to forgive all, friend, or enemy, Ergo, by this reason I am not to rebuke any at all, and Solomon will eth us only not to be swift, too glad and willing, or too quicke and sharpe eared to heare every word, Eccles. 7. 21. Also Heb. Give not thy heart to all words that are spoken, lest thou hear thy servant curse thee. So is the same phrase, Eccles. 1. 13. Prov. 23. 26. Eccles. 1. 17. Not unlike this is the phrase Dan. 6. 14. The King set his heart to deliver Daniel, but this will not prove we are not to rebuke an offending brother. 2. That by the Church here, is meant a number of private Christians, is against the Text, for then three witnesses should be a Church, being three private Christians, but sure it is Christ attendeth in his speech to an higher degree, to the Church who is to heare the Witnesses, the Plaintiff and the Offender, who hath power to binde and loose, which is nothing but a Church-court.

2. Thou hast gained thy brother, must be a spirituall gaining of him to repentance, as 1 Pet. 3. 1. That they may be gained by the conversation of the wives, 1 Cor. 9. 20. inaudios nunquam. That I may gain those that are under the Law. Ver. 21. That I may gain those that are without Law. ver. 19. That I might gain the more. Ver. 20. inaudios nunquam. That I might gain the lewes, so is the Word used for spirituall gaining, Mar. 2. 17, 20, 22. and Christ in his Sermons never speake of civill gaining of brethren: And 2. Because he speaketh of the brother, as he is a member of a society, where there be three or more brethren, and a Church of brethren whose helpe he may seeke to gain a brother; it is cleare he must speake of a Church-gaining, or of a gaining in order to a Church, and not with reference to any civill Sanedrim or Court of Magistrates.

Object. 3. The place (saith Erasmus) is to be understood of lighter Erasmus. faults, for which one brother may pardon another, and which a private brother hath power to conceale, it cannot therefore in good sense be
Excommunication is a divine Ordinance. Cap.III.Q. 2.

be extended to weighy scandals that are to be punished with Excommunication.

Anf. 1. A fault may be light and small in its rise, so long as it is private, which deserveth not excommunication, but if contumacie shall come to the fault, as it is here in its growth and tendencie to scandalize many, it is not small. 2. A private fault is not hence concluded to be small, because a brother may pardon it, and conceale it. For Christ faith to scandalize on of the least of these that believe in him, is so great an offence, that it were good for the man so offending, to be cast in the Sea, having a milstone hanged about his necke, ver. 6. And yet a brother is to forgive such an offence, Luke 17. 2, 3, 4. 3. In that a brother is obliged to forgive his brother, from this fault, it is cleare, it is not so small a fault, and 2. Because it is a fault to be brought to the Church; and 3. If the Offender remaine obstinate, he is therefore to be esteemed as an Heathen and a Publican, or as no brother, nor any member of the Church; and 4. This sinne is bound in earth and heaven. 5. The text will not bear that all weighy faults, such as Murder, that defileth the Land, or solicitation to follow strange Gods may be transfagted betwene brother and brother and concealed. Deut. 13. 8. Though Ioseph be in this called a just man, (as Bes.a observeth) in that he would not make Mary his wife a publike example, nor reveale her Adulterie, which was by the Law to be punished by death, for so Ioseph conceaved of her.

Tell the Church, that is, (faith Erastus) tell the civill. Synedrion of the Iewes, and therefore this place is nothing for excommunication, or any Spirituall Church Discipline, and if the Offendor refuse to beare the Ortodoxe Magistrate, then may the offended brotber plead his right before the Heathen Magistrate, and deale with the Offendor, as with a Heathen, and a Publican.

Anfw. In the Word of God, the word Ecclesia, Church, applied to matters of Religion, (as it is evidently here, where it is said that the offended brother, is to labour to gain the soule of his offending brother) doth never signifie a civill judicature, and therefore the exposition is insolent, and the words ἡράξεσθαι or ἱέραξεσθαι or αὐραξεσθαι can never beare such a senfe, we desire one paralell place in the old or new Testament for it.

2. The scope of the place is the removall of scandals in Christ's mecke,
Excommunication is a Divine Ordinance. Cap. III. Q. 3.

Suffering to gain an offender, but having recourse to the Magistrate to use his club and sword, is rather a way of irritation, to make the gap the wider, and therefore Paul, 1 Cor. 6, condemns this as repugnant to love, that they should go to law one with another, before the heathen Magistrate.

7. Such an expression as this, (let him to thee as an heathen mixt and a Publican) is never taken for the civil complaining of him before an heathen judge, nor doth it express the use of the sword by the Magistrate; it is so insolent a phrase, that all the Greek Authors that ever wrote, cannot parallel it; for this is a Spirituall and Morall reproach put on the offender, the Magistrates way is a real inflicting of punishment.

8. This remedy is contrary to Paul's, 1 Cor. 6. For there the offended brother, though the offending party be never so contumacious, hath not this remedy of Christ's to implead his brother before an heathen Magistrate, that the Apostle taketh for a sinfull scandal, and sin cannot be Christ's remedy: Paul's remedy is, Suffer rather wrong and defrautation; Paul by this interpretation should have commanded them the contrary.

9. Where is ever the supreme Magistrate (who cannot be excluded, if this exposition stand,) called by the name of the Church.

10. How incongruous is it, that Christ should direct the Jews, who were to be dispersed through all the earth; to go up to Jerusalem for judgement, seeing Jerusalem was to be laid equall with the ground; and the Jews, their state, Church, policy, and the Scepter now removed from Iudah, let wise men judge.

11. The complaining to an heathen Magistrate, or the punishing of an offender by the sword, by no Scripture, is such a binding on earth, by the power of the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, as this is expounded, Matt. 16. 19. And such a binding as is ratified in Heaven, and that by the joint Prayers of two or three on earth, as is here spoken, ver. 18. 19, 20: A Heathen Magistrates Sentence, though never so just, should not be valued, except it were confirmed by the Prayers of the Church, as the Sentence of Excommunication must be.

12. The Jewish Sanadine was now to take an end, and expire with all the Jewish policy; it is not to be imagined that Jesus Christ would
would appoint a perishing remedy for a perpetual and ever-enduring disease; now offences and scandals between brother and brother were to be in the world to the end, ver. 15. If thy brother offend, &c. And Christ faith, Offences must be, and the remedy here is moral and perpetual: as 1. That Christ shall have a Church visible on earth, against which the gates of Hell shall not prevail: 1. That we first deal to gain our brother in private, ere to his greater shame, he be brought in publick, before the Church. 3. The Lords ratifying in Heaven, what his servants shall bind and loose on earth. 4. The agreeing of two to pray together, the convening of two or three in the name of Christ, with a promise of the presence of Christ, all these are moral and perpetual: The Lord never did the like of this, before or after.

13. In all the New-Testament we do not read, that Christ, who was the end of the Law, and the body now come in the flesh to abolish all Ceremonials and temporary Laws of the Jewish Church and policy, as Jewish, did institute any old-Testament Law, such as the Sanedrim was for offending brethren: if it be said that this was but the right expounding of an old divine Law, now almost buried through the corruption of men; then must Erasmus shew that this was an old Law of divine institution, that the Jews were to keep this threefold order in gaining an offending brother, and that this is now abolished, and that the power of the Magistrate in Church business, by this place is not established to the end of the world; both which are contrary to the Principles of Erasmus, not to say that there is not in this whole Chapter, or Luk. 17. where the same purpose is handled, any shadow of reason to assert that Christ is restoring any Ceremonial or Judicial Law to its genuine and sound meaning and sense, but by the contrary Christ speaketh of the Moral and perpetual Doctrine of scandal, and how we are to deal with an offending brother to gain him to repentance, either by ourselves or the Church, and to forgive private injuries, even to seventy seven times: Lastly, since Publicans and Romans converted to the Christian faith from Paganism, even at this time were Brethren, who might both give and take scandals, it shall follow that Christ commandeth Gentiles to submit to the Jewish Magistrates, this was against Christian liberty, and to take from Cesar those things that are Cesar's, which is unjust.
Excommunication is a Divine Ordinance. Cap. III. Q. 2.

But, faith Erastus, Publicans were not in Iuda excluded from sacrifices, Luk. 18. A Pharisee and a Publican went up to the Temple to pray, Christ himself did eat with Publicans and sinners: therefore this phrase (Let him be unto thee as an Heathen and a Publican) cannot express this (Let him be excommunicated) except you say, that all heathen and Publicans were so served by Christ, and the Jews, as if they had been excommunicated.

As. 1. Publicans, that were by Nation Heathens, were excluded from sacrifices and the Temple, jure, by (a) Gods Law; but not de facto, because the Jews being under bondage to the Romano Emperor, and spoiled of their Liberties and Laws, might not put their Laws in execution against Heathen and Publicans; it is sufficient to us, faith Beza, that Publicans were execrable and hateful to the Jews, and (say I) that Heathen and Publicans remaining such, are without the Church, (b) and not to be reputed as brethren, but enemies to the true Church of God, and this is that which to us is Excommunication.

I do not doubt but Publicans went to the Temple to pray, but that is but to Argue, A facto ad jum, not the right way, A jure ad factum: Publicans ought not to have done so. 2. Christ the Supreme Lawgiver, who is above the Law, did often dispense with sacrifice and positive Laws, for a work of mercy, and if he touched the dead, and touched the skin of the Leper, and suffered his disciples to pluck the ears of corne on the Sabbath day, what marvel then he did eat with Publicans and sinners, contrary to the Letter of a positive Law, Knowing his own, whom the Father had given to him from eternity were to be brought in to himself, by his familiar conversing with them; why should not the Physician converse with the sick; the shepheard with the lost sheep; the Redeemer with his ransomed ones? But this is no warrant, that therefore the cleansed Leper should not be to him, nor to the Priest, or that an obstinate offender should not be reputed as a Heathen, and not admitted into the Sanctuary. 3. That simple Publicans, or Heathen remaining such, should sacrifice. I never read, sacrifices were offered for Iobs friends, who were not within the visible Church: But 1. by Gods own special and immediate command; as we read, Job 42.7,8. A positive Law for it (which yet was requisite for ordinary worship of that kinde) we read not. 2. I think Iobs friends
cannot in knowledge, Religion, Profession, be esteemed meer Heathens, and therefore as God cied not himself to a positive and standing Law here, so neither was Christ, being the same God equal with the Father, so restrained from not familiar conversing with Heathen, and Publicans, but he might leap over a Ceremony to save a lost soul.

Object 6. But (the adversaries say) Christ here useth Words proper to the Jewish Synodry and the Old-Testament, as witnesses, Ecclesia, or congregation, Heathen, Publican, and these are not New Testament words, nor was there such a thing as a New Testament Church on earth at this time, and Christ having not yet ascended to Heaven, nor sent down the holy Spirit, cannot be thought to hold forth the power and jurisdiction of a thing yet destitute of all being, such as was the Christian Church, nor can he here speak of Christ's Spiritual Kingdom.

As. 1. Christ did well to use these words, witnesses, Church, Congregation, Heathen, Publican, as well known to his hearers, and these same words in use amongst the Jews are used in the New Testament, as 1 Cor. 16. 22. 1 Tim. 5. 19. Acts 15. 7, 17. Rev. 11. 2, 8. 1 Pet. 4. 3. 2 Pet. 1 19. 20, 21. Anathema Maranatha, witnesses, Gentiles, sinners of the Gentiles, imposition of hands, &c. Indeed in ordinary, the Pastor under the New Testament is not called Priest, nor high Priest, nor the Communion Table an Altar: But the words here used are obvious and very significant; and the word ecclesia or Church is a most obvious word in both the Old and New Testament, and doth signify any Assembly, Religious, civil or prophane, according as the nature, person and use or end of the meeting or Assembly was Religious and Prophane, as is evident by many places of the Old and New Testament: where the seventy Interpreters use the word for a Church Assembly; for which see the due rights of Presbyters, page 349, 350. and page 473, 474. And since the word Church here is cleerely a company convened to gain an offending brothers foule, by rebukes and cenfures, and which hath power to binde and loose on earth, so as their fact is ratified in heaven, it cannot be any other, then a New Testament Church-meeting, seeing we find the Church of Corinth commanded to convene and exercise such a power, 1 Cor. 5. 1, 2, 3, 4.
And therefore it cannot be expounded of the civil judge; nor to add, that Erasbus, who objecteth this, saith the Synod hath both civil and spiritual or Ecclesiastical power, and therefore he hath no ground to expound the place of the Civil Magistrate. Because he was not yet ascended to heaven, and had not sent down the Holy Spirit, it is no consequence to say he speaketh nothing of the Christian Church of the New Testament, for before his Ascension he appointed the Ministry, the Sacraments, the power of Censures, and the keys given to the Church of the New Testament, Matth. 28. 19, 20. Joh. 20. v. 21, 22. Matth. 26. 20, 21, 22, 23, &c. Now it is as inconvenient, that precepts, such as (Do this in remembrance of me,) (take ye, eat ye,) and (be that heareth you, heareth me,) should be given to the Christian Church, which yet had no being, as for Christ to hold forth the power of jurisdiction of a Christian church destitute of all being. Yea, this recurseth upon Erasbus, who will have Christ here to hold forth the power of the Christian Magistrate, as yet remoter from being, all Magistrates being professed Enemies to Jesus Christ, whereas there was at this time a seed, a bottom of a Christian visible Church: There being eleven Apostles, seventy Disciples, and many others who professed faith in Christ already come. Yea, though there be no formed instituted visible Church of the New Testament, yet it became our great Prophet, who taught that Gospel, yea, all that be heard of the Father, Joh. 15. 15. to his Disciples, which was to be a rule of the Faith of the Christian visible Church not yet instituted, and who erected a Ministry to teach them before his ascension, also to furnish that Ministry with the power of the keys & censures, as he expressly doth before his death, Mat. 16. 17, 18, 19. Not to add, what Camerole faith, that he spake these words when he was now to offer himself on the Cross, and Matth. 2. 16. He mentioneth the edifying of the Church of the New Testament, and the Disciples ask who is to be greatest in the Kingdom of God, ver. 1.

Object. 7. Let him be unto thee as an Heathen and Publican, cannot mean as much as. Let him be excommunicated, but only, let him plead with his obstinate brother, who contends with the Christian Magistrate, before the beaten Magistrate, and in preferring the offender, who is now obstinate, let him deal with him.
as with a Heathen and a Publican, onely in this matter of pursuit, but otherwise the Publican was not excommunicate. 1. Because the Publicans place and office was good and lawfull and from God, then to repute him as a Publican is not to repute him as a prophane man. 2. When John Baptist is demanded by the Publicans what they shall do, he doth not bid them lay downe the office of a Publican, but one ly not abuse it to rapine and extortior, nor is Zacheus compelled by Christ to lay downe his office, but onely to make restitution.

Answ. 1. There is no necessity to condemme the office of the Publican, or the birth and condition of the Heathen as unlawfull. But a Publican went for a prophane man, and for a man who is a stranger to the true church of God, as Mat. 5.46. If you love them that love you, what reward have you? Do not even the Publicans the same? Ergo, it is Christ's mind to exclude the Publicans from any spiritual or eternall reward, promised to these within the visible Church; and when Christ was slandered by the Jews, because he went in to be a Guest with a Publican, Luke 19. 7. And because he did eate with Publicans, Mat. 9.12, 13. Christ taketh it as granted that Publicans were prophane men and sinners. But he saith they were sicke sinners and lost, that is, such as were sensible of their by-past prophanety, and desired the Physician Christ to cure them; and Gentiles or Heathen is taken for these who are without the Church, and are void of Religion, 1 Cor. 5. 1. Such fornication as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, 1 Pet. 4. 3. Let it suffice you, that ye have wrought the will of the Gentiles, Eph. 2. 11. Ye were in times past Gentiles, what is that, but Ver. 2. Ye walked according to the course of the World, according to the Prince of the power of the aire? So a Samaritan, is taken for one that hath a Devil, yet to be a Samaritan by birth and nation is not unlawfull, it is then a distinctive term spoken among others to be an Heathen, or counted an Heathen and a Publican, that is, counted a prophane wicked person not a brother, not a member of the church. Theophylact expoundeth this with us, if he beare not the Church, let him be an out-cast, least he rob any of his wickednes upon others within the Church.

And these words: Let him be to thee, is a word of command, as Mat. 5. 37. Yea, let your speech be yea, yea, Mat. 20. he that would be greatest, let him be your servent; and, let him be to thee,

K k
is not to exclude the Church, but it is set downe in a Law-manner in the second person, for farre more must the obstinate offender be as an Heathen and a Publican to the Church.

Ver. 18. Verily I say unto you, What ye bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven, and what ye loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. These words contain a reason why he, who contemneth the Church, is to be holden as a Heathen and a Publican. Why? is it such an offence before God to despise the church? Yes, saith our Saviour, with a grave asseveration, Verily I say unto you, they that despise the presence of you, the Ministers of the Gospel, being according to truth given out, they and their sines shall be bound in Heaven.

Object. 8. **Befallis faith, he is said to bind, who doth remytte the sinne. When he maketh the obstinate brother unexcusable; and he looseth, who remiteth or pardonneth the injury, and gaines to repentance his brother by a brotherly admonition, for except he speake of a brotherly composing of private injuries, to what end should Christ subject the law of the living again? I say to you if two agree, & c.**

Answ. 1. Christ doth argue from the less to the more, he pro- veth what the Church bindeth on earth, shall be bound in Heaven, because if the prayers of two or three gathered together in the name of God, and agreeing together on earth, are not rejected in Heaven, farre more shall that be ratified in heaven, which the whole Church of Christ decreeth on earth in the name of the head of the Church, Jesus Christ. 2. When in the chapter going before, Christ had ascribed to the Apostles and Pastors, which are the eyes of the Church, a power of the keyes, and here he ascribeth to them the power of binding and loosing, there was no cause to dreame that he speake of the private forgiving of private sines betweene Brother and brother, for then he might have said at the first step, Thou hast gained thy brother, that gaining or convincing of thy brother shall be bound or loosed in heaven, no lesse then the Churches judicial binding and loosing in heaven, which yet is set downe in a higher degree of power. But I may here say with Beza in the whole Scripture, the word of binding and loosing is never spoken of any other but of those who are in publike places, and by a borrowed speech, here it is spoken in regard of spirituall power. To bind and to loose, is by a judiciall power in subordi...
Cap. III. Q. I. Excommunication is a Divine Ordinance.

subordination to Christ the King, to remit and retain sins. So Josephus faith, the Pharisees ruled all, so that they would banish or recall from banishment, loose and bind whom they pleased, and upon the Authority according to the which Christ sent his Disciples as the Father sent him, so he instructed his Ministers with power to remit and retain sins, Joh. 20. 23. and Mat. 16. 19. What thou bindest on earth, shall be bound in heaven, What thou loosest on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. So doth Lucian bring in that prisoner speaking to Jupiter, Loose me, O Jupiter, for I have suffered grievous things, Mat. 22. 13. Then the King said to his servants, take him, bind him hand and foot; binding here (you see) is done by the command of the great King, Acts 21. 11. So shall the Jews now bind Paul, they bound Paul with Law and authority, such as it was, John 18. 12. The Captaine and Officers tooke Jesus, and bound him, they bound him not by private authority, Mat. 27. 2. and Acts 24. 27. Felix left Paul, and bound him, if liars, binde any Malefactors, they doe it by authoritie and Law. So do the Hebrews speake, Psal. 105. 20. The Ruler of the people loosed him, Psal. 102. 20. The Lord looketh downe from heaven, to open or loose the children of death. Psal. 146. 7. The Lord looketh the Prisoners, Joh. 12. 18.

3. It cannot be denied, but when one private brother pardons another repenting Brother, God ratifies that in heaven. But it is clear, the pardon here holden forth by our Saviour, is such a loosing as hath witness going before. 2. Such an one as comeseth higher to the knowledge of the Church. Nor doth the particle again, signify any thing but preterea, moreover.

4. And who can say that binding and loosing here, is some other thing then binding and loosing in the Chap. 16. ver. 9. Where the same very phrase in the Greeke is one and the same, except that the Lord speaketh, Mat. 16. 19. in the singular number to Peter, as representing the teachers and Governours of the Church, and here Mat. 18. He speaketh in the Plural number, relating to the Church. Now Mat. 16. 18, 19. binding on earth, and loosing, which is ratified in heaven, is evidently the exercise of the power of the keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven. I will give to thee the keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven. What be these keyes, he ex-

K k 2 poundeth
Excommunication is a Divine Ordinance. Cap.III. Q.1.

Poundeth in the same very verse, and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven, whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven; then binding and loosing on earth, must be in these to whom Christ hath committed the power of the keys: but 1. Christ hath not committed the keys to all, but to Church-rulers, that are the Stewards of the House, and the dispensers of heavenly Mysteries. Hence the keys in Scripture signify authority and official dignity that is in Rulers, not in private men, as Esai. 22. 22. And the key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder. So Christ is said to have the key of David, to open and no man shutteth, to shut and no man openeth. By which out of doubt (faith) is pointed forth the kingly authority and power of Christ, to faith. And our owne Calvins, Musculus, Gualther, Piscator, Beza, Parent agree, that the keys are insignia potestatis, an Ensign of power given to the Steward or Master of a Nobleman's house, who is a person in office. The giving of the keys (saint worthy Mr. Cotton) is a giving power for the preaching of the word, the administering of the scales and censures, by which those invested with power doe open and shut the gates. Now we desire any Word of God, by which it can be made good, that the keys and power to bind and loose is given to all that are in the house, even private Christians. But we can shew the keyes and binding and loosing, and opening and shutting to be given to the Officers and Rulers of the house. Hence I argue that interpretation that confoundeth the key-bearers, and the Children, with the Servants of the House; and the Governors that are over the people in the Lord, with the governed, puttheth the Characters proper to the Officers and Stewards confusedly upon all that are in the house, is not to be helden; but this interpretation is such; Ergo, &c. also to bind and to loose is expounded by Christ; Joh. 20. 23. to be a power to retain and remit sins on earth, which are accordingly retained and remitted in Heaven, and that by virtue of a calling, and Ministeriall mission, according to which the Father sent Christ Jesus; and Jesus Christ sendeth his Apostles and Pastors to the end of the world, as is clear, if we compare Matt. 18. 18. and Matt. 16. 19. with Joh. 20. 20, 21, 22, 23. Matt. 16, ver. 15, 20. Matt. 28. 18, 19, 20. Luke 24. 47, 48.
5. It is against the course of the Text, that we should restrain this to private pardoning of light injuries between brother and brother: 1. Because Christ labours to decline this, that one shall be both his brothers judge to put him in the condition of an Heathen and Publican, and binde his brothers sins in Heaven and Earth, and also, that he should be his party and accuser: Now Christ will have the private brother do no more personally, but admonish his brother and gain him. 2. If that prevail not, then he is to admonish him before two or three witnesses: See here, the brother is not both party and judge; but witnesses have place. 3. If that prevail not, the business is to ascend higher, even to the Church, which undoubtedly is an Organical body, 1 Cor. 12. 28. Rom. 8. 6, 7, &c. Matt. 20. 28, 29, 30. Whereas two or three private Christians are not a Church, but an homogeneous body: Now who would believe that Christ is to bring down the business which is so high, as before the Church, to the lowest step again, to a private binding and lossing to one brother, who both as judge and party judgeth his brother; yea, and may do this, though there were no Church on earth? What power hath the Church above the offended brother, or the offender, if the one may binde the other under guiltiness in earth and heaven? 2. Erastus will have light and private offences only spoken of here: Now Christ speaketh of offences that God taketh notice of in Heaven and earth. 3. Christ's way is a wise and meek way, that that which one cannot do, and the offence that two, three, four cannot remove, the Church shall remove, but Erastus maketh one private man to remove it, and to Excommunicate and binde in heaven and earth. I might cite, Tertullian, Cyprian, Augustine, Chrysostom, Theophylact, Hyeronimus, and all modern interpreters both Popish and Orthodox for this interpretation, not any of them dreaming of the insolent opinion of Erastus, who misapplies Augustine and Theophylact for his own way, as Bega de Presbytero, pag. 63, 64, cleareth.
That the place, 1 Corinthians 5, doth evince that Excommunication is an Ordinance of God.

The Argument for Excommunication may be thus framed, from 1 Cor. 5. If Paul command that the incestuous man should be delivered to Satan ver. 5. purged out of the Church, least as leaven should corrupt the Church, ver. 6, 7. That they should judge him, ver. 12. And put him away from amongst them, ver. 13. So as they were not to eat with him, ver. 9, 10. Then is there a divine command for Excommunication; for the Commandments of the Apostles are the Commandments of the Lord, 1 Cor. 14, 37. 2 Pet. 3, 2. But the former is true: Ergo, so is the latter.

There is no ground or shadow of reason to expound this expelling of the incestuous man by the preaching of the word without any Church-censures, for all that is required in Excommunication is here; 1. This putting out was not done by one single Pastor, as putting out by the preaching of the word is done, but by a company and Church, ver. 4. In the name of the Lord Jesus, when ye are gathered together, and my Spirit. 2. Paul should have written to any one Pastor to cast him out by preaching, but here he writeth to a Church; 3. He forbidth company, or eating with such like men, v. 10. Now this is more then rebuking by preaching. 4. This is a judging of the incestuous man, and a casting of him out of their society, which is another thing then preaching the word.

Evans and others expound the giving to Satan, of a delivering of the man to Satan, to be miraculously killed, as were Ananias and Saphira, Acts 5, 5. And because at this time there was no Christian Magistrate to use the sword against the man, therefore he writeth to the Church, that they by their prayers would obtain of God, that Satan might take him out of the midst of them.

Anf. This insolent interpretation wanteth all warrant of the word: For 1. To deliver to Satan, hath no Scripture to make this sense of it, to pray that Satan would destroy the man. 2. It wanteth
eth an example in the old or new Testament, that the whole Church are fellow-Agents and joyn'te causes in the bodily destruction of any, or in working of miracles, such as was the killing of Ananias and Saphira: The Apostles wrought miracles, and that by their Faith and Prayers, and Christ and the Prophets; but that the Believers, who should have mourned for this scandal, 1. Who were puffed up: 2. Who were in danger to be leavened with the man's sin, and had their consent in Excommunication, should joyn in a miraculous delivering to Satan, is an unparalleled practice in the word. 3. To deliver to Satan, cannot be expounded here: but as 1 Tim. 1. 20. Where Paul faith he had delivered Hymenaeus and Alexander to Satan, now that was not to kill them, but in a musuion, that they might receive instruction and be disciplined, by this medicinal Church-revenge, not to blaspheme: I know of no instructing of these who are dead: if there be two deliverings to Satan, let Erastus and his expound it to us. 4. The Apostle expressly faith, he wrote to them, not to keep company with such men, nor with Fornicators, covetous men, Drunkards, Extortioners, Idolaters: Now Erastus his minde must be, that the Apostles and Churches of Corinth, Philippi, Thessalonica, grievously sinned against God, in that they did not miraculously kill all the Drunkards, the covetous persons, the fornicators, whereas they are commanded to admonish them as brethren, 2 Thess. 3. 14, 15, and to pray for them, if they sin not against the holy Ghost, 1 John 5. 16. 1 Tim. 2. 3. 5. Paul rebuketh this as a moral fault amongst the Corinthians, such as is not to mourn for this man's fault, and to keep him as leaven in the midst of them, and not to cast him out: Whereas in all the Scripture you finde none ever rebuked, because they put not forth in Acts an extraordinary and miraculous power to work miracles; working of miracles came upon persons called thereunto, by extraordinary raptus, and were in men not as habits under the power of free-will, but as immediate Acts of God, even as fire-slaughters are in the Air: So I conceive, while I be better informed. 6. And shall it not follow, that now when the Churches have Christian Magistrates, it is the will of our meek favour, that they kill with the sword all the Drunkards, Fornicators, and all that walketh unorderly; which should make the Church of Christ a Butcher-house, whereas we are to admonish all such as brethren, 2 Thess. 3. 15. And to wait on them with all
all patience, if God peradventure may give them repentance. 7. The destruction of the flesh must be the destruction of the body. But the bodies of the godly are saved no less than their spirits in the day of the Lord. 8. And for many of the former reasons, by delivering to Satan, cannot be meant a miraculous tormenting of the body by Satan, with the saving of the life; such as we read was the case of Iob; for the delivering to Satan, is to cast out of the Church, and declare such an offender to be of the number of the wicked world, of which Satan is Prince, Job. 31. Iob. 14. 30. and God, 2 Cor. 4. 4. and that which we assert as the essentials of excommunication, are, 1. Here is a member of the Church, one who is within, 1 Cor. 5. 12. one who hath fallen in a foul scandal, and had his father’s wife, ver. 1. who by the Church convected in the name of our Lord Jesus, with that spirit of the Apostle given to them by Christ, vs. 4. was delivered to Satan, that his soul may be saved, (for that is the genuine and intrinsic end of Excommunication,) and so be purged out of the Church, lest he should infect the Sheepe, ver. 7. and Christians were not to bear company with him, not to eat with him, ver. 9. 10. and he was judged to be cast out as a Heathen and Publican, ver. 11, 12. 13. and that by a convened court, having the name and authority of him who is King of the Church, ver. 4. and more we doe not crave. Obj. To deliver any to the power of Satan, is no mean of salvation. Answ. A morall delivering to the efficacy of curse, and a reprobate minde, is not a mean of salvation, nor is excommunication such a mean, nor in the power of the Church, but a medicinal depriving of an offender of the comfortable communication of the Saints, and of the prayers of the Church, and means of grace, such is a means, and mighty through God to humble.

CAP. V. Quest. 1.

Whether the Word doth warrant discipline and confine, even to the excluding of the scandalous from the Sacraments, beside the Pastoral rebukes inflicted by one.

We are not to conceive that there was nothing Morall in the Laws that God made to his people of Israel, to debarre
debark the unclean, from the society of God's people, and from communion with them in the holy things of God, *Num. 5.* 1. And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying: 2. Command the children of Israel that they put out of the Camp every leper, and every one that hath an issue, and whatsoever is defiled by the dead, *Lev. 5.* 2. If a soul touch any unclean thing, whether it be a carcase of an unclean beast, or the carcase of unclean carcase, or the carcase of unclean creeping things, and if it be hidden from him, he shall be unclean and guilty. 6. And he shall bring his trespass-offering unto the Lord for his sin, which he had sinned, *Lev. 7.* 20. But the soul that eateth of the sacrifice of the peace-offerings that pertaineth to the Lord, having his uncleanness upon him, even that soul shall be cut off from the people: 21. Moreover the soul that shall touch any unclean thing, as the uncleanness of man, or any unclean beast, or any abominable unclean thing, and eat of the flesh of the sacrifice of peace-offerings, which pertain unto the Lord, even that soul shall be cut off from his people. In the which observe, that here the soul that shall touch any unclean thing is to be cut off; but *Num. 5.* 2. He is only to be put out of the Camp; now these were not killed that were put out of the Camp, and therefore to be cut off from the people must be a morall cutting off by Excommunication, not by death; also the word מְלֶאכָה signifies to make a Covenant, to cut off, either by death or any other way, as by banishment; by which a thing leaveth off to be in use, though it be not destroyed, as when a branch is cut off from a tree, *1 Sam. 31.* 9. Yea, we have *Isa. 50.* 1. Where is that Bill of cutting off or divorce: Now this was not a Bill of killing the wife that was divorced, but putting her from her husband, as our Saviour saith, it is not Lawfull to marry her that is divorced, *Matth. 19.* 9. A killed and dead woman is not capable of marriage; yet the word is, *Deut. 24.* 1. *1 Cor.* 3. 8. from that same Theame, בָּרָה: The Hebrews have another more ordinary word to signify death, as *Exod. 31.* 14. He that doth any work on the Sabbath, in dying he shall die: And it is expounded, he shall be cut off from the midst of the people: פָּרָה but *Lev. 7.* the word פָּרָה is four times used without any such expression, *ver. 20, 21, 25, 37.* To which may be added, that when zealous Hezekiah did finde that the people were not prepared, According to the purification of the Sanctuary, though they had celebrated the Passover, the King did not only not kill them, but...
but prayed, God might be merciful to them, and the Lord killed them not (as the spirit of God) but healed them, Exod. 12:15. He that eateth unleavened bread, that soul shall be cut off from Israel: but it is expounded, ver. 19. That soul shall be cut off from the Church of Israel: Certainly, he that is killed is cut off from both State and Church, and from the company of all mortal men on earth, Isa. 38:11. Then to be cut off from Israel is only to be deprived of the comfortable society of the Church of Israel, as the holy Ghost expoundeth it: Also Lev. 4. If any commit any sin but of ignorance, and so if he touch any unclean thing, or eat unleavened bread, forbidden of God, he is excluded from the holy things of God, while the Priest offers for him, according to the Law: Now if he was presently to be killed, either by the Magistrate, or in that act killed by God's own immediate hand, as Aaron's sons were, there was not a journey to be made to the place, the Lord had chosen to sacrifice there, which might have been three days journey from his house, who was unclean; yea, when the man that gathered sticks was stoned, and the false Prophet stoned, Deut. 13. there was no sacrifices offered for any of them before they were killed; and I hope, there were no sacrifices in Moses his Law offered for the dead. Hence learn we: 1. That to cut off from the Congregation, was not to kill, but it was the Jewish excommunication greater or lesser: 2. That Moral sins, under the Old Testament debarred men from the holy things of God, while the Priests sacrificed for them, and brought them in a capacity to receive the holy things of God.

Leviticus 10:10. The Priests were not to drink wine, when they went into the Tabernacle: That ye may (as the Lord) put difference between holy and un holy, and between unclean and clean: Now Haggai expressly saith, cap. 2.11, 12. That it was the Priests part to put this difference, and so to admit to, or exclude from the holy things of God.

Hence for this cause it is said, as 2 Chron. 23:19. Yeboiinda appointed the officers of the Lord's house, so he set porters at the gates of the house of the Lord, that none which are unclean in any thing, might enter in; so Ezra 9.21, 22. None did eat the Passover, but such as were pure, and had separated themselves from the filthiness of the Heathen of the land; for this cause doth the Lord complain of the Priests,
Priests, Ezek. 22.26. Her Priests have violated my law, and have polluted my holy things, they have put no difference between the holy and the profane; neither have they shewed the difference between the unclean and the clean, Ezek. 44.6. And thou shalt say to the Rebellion, even to the house of Israel, thus saith the Lord God: O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations: 7. That ye have brought into my sanctuary, strangers uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary to pollute it, even my house, when ye offered my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my Covenant, because of all your abominations: 8. And ye have not kept the charge of my holy things: But ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for your selves, 9. Thus saith the Lord God, no stranger uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel: Here is a complaint, that those that have the charge of the holy things, should suffer the holy things to be polluted: I grant it cannot bear this sense, that none should be admitted to be Members of the Visible Church under the New Testament, but such as are conceived to be regenerate; except it can be proved that the Sanctuary was a type of the visible Church: 2. That the Apostles constituted their Churches thus; but we read not in all the New Testament of any admission of Church Members at all; but only of baptizing of those who were willing to be baptized, and from this resulted the capacity of a Church Relation in all Churches visible: Nor, 2. Do we finde any shadow in all the word of God, of tryall of Church Members, by way of electing and chossing of such and such, as qualified by reason of a conceived regeneration in the persons chosen, or of rejecting and refusing others as conceived to have no inward work of grace in them; this I believe can never be made good out of the word of God. 3. They must prove the Apostles admitted into the Sanctuary of the Visible Church Ananias, Saphira, Simon Magus, and others uncircumcised in heart, to pollute the holy things of God, and that the Apostles erred, and were deceived in the moulding of the first Apostolick Church in the world, which was to be a rule and pattern to all Churches in the New Testament, to all Ages: I deny not, but they might have erred according to the grounds of these, who urge the comparison for a Church of visible Saints, but that the Apostles De facto did erre.
in their Election and judgement, in that wherein the holy Ghost holdeth them forth and their acts to be our rule and pattern, I utterly deny: I grant Act. 15. In that Synod they did Act as men and Elders, not as Apostles, but that it could fall out, that they should err, and obtrude false Doctrine instead of truth to the Churches in that Synod which is the first rule and pattern of Synods, I shall not believe.

But there is this Morall and perpetuall truth in these Scriptures: 1. That there are under the New Testament, some over the people of God in the Lord, some that watch for their souls, and govern them; as here there were Priests, Levites that taught and governed the people: 2. That the Rulers of the Churches, always are to have the charge of the holy things, and to see that these holy things, the Seals and Sacraments and word of promise be not polluted, and that therefore they have power given them to debar such and such profane from the Seals, and so are to discern between the clean and the unclean, and this which the Prophet speaketh, ver. 9. is a prophecy never fulfilled after this in the persons of the people of God, therefore it must have its spiritual truth fulfilled under the New Testament, as is clear, ver. 11. Yet the Levites that are gone away far from me, shall be Ministers in my Sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the House, and Ministering to the House—

14. And I will make them keepers of the charge of the House, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein, Ver. 15. And the Priests and the Levites the sons of Zadok, that keep the charge of my Sanctuary, when the children of Israel went astray from me— they shall enter into my Sanctuary, and they shall come near to my Table to minister unto me, and to keep my charge—

23. And they shall teach my people the difference between the holy and profane, and cause men to discern between the unclean and the clean. 24. And in controversy they shall stand in judgement, and they shall judge it according to my judgement, and they shall keep my Laws and my Statutes, in all mine assemblies, and they shall hallow my Sabbaths. Now this Temple was another house, then Solomon's Temple, as is evident out of the Text, it having rooms, dimensions, structures, so different that none can imagine them one house, and these chapters contain the division of the Holy Land, which after the captivity was never done, for
for the ten Tribes never returned, and this Temple is clearly a
type of the new Jerusalem; and agreeeth to that City spoken of,
Revelation, chapters 21. and 22. As may appear especially by the
four last chapters of Ezekiel, and in the last words of the last
chapter, And the name of the city from that day shall be, The Lord is
there. And the Priests after the captivity as well as before brake
the covenant of Levi, Mal. 2. And therefore I see it not fulfilled,
except in the visible Church of the New Testament, and in the As-
semblies of Christian Churches, Mat. 18. All. 15. and the rest
of the Church-assemblies under the New Testament: As for the
Lords personall raigne on earth, it is acknowledged there shall be
no Church policy in it, no Word, Sacraments, Ordinances, no Tem-
ple, as they lay from Rev. 21. 22. And with correction and sub-
mission, the Priests and Levites, that Ezek. 44. 15. are said to keep
the charge of the Lords House, when others went astray, I take to
be a prophetic of these Pastors under the New Testament; to wit,
the Apostles of Jesus Christ, and Pastors, and teachers that Christ
left in his Church; for the edifying of his body, Ephes. 4. 11. 12.
When these Scribes and Pharisees did sit in Moses his chair for a
while, Mat. 23. but onely as porters and inferior Officers in
Gods house; yet they were to be heard, while God should
cut them off, as he prophesied, Zach. 11. 8.

We cannot say as some doe, that persons were deprived amongst Obje.
the Jews, of Church communion in the holy things of God, because
of Ceremoniall, not of Morall uncleannesse, but now under the New Te-
Stament only Morall uncleannesse can exclude persons from the holy
things of God; and therefore to argue from ceremoniall uncleannesses in
the old, to morall uncleanness in the new, is no good consequence. I
answer, the Ceremoniall uncleannesse in the Old, which did ex-
clude from the holy things of God, doth strongly conclude that
morall uncleannesse under the New Testament doth exclude from
the holy things of God, if that exclusion of the Leaper out of the
campe seven dayes, and the touching of the dead, though impru-
dently, did typifie some other exclusion from the holy things of
God, as no question it did, then the consequence must be strong.
2. It is also false that morall uncleannesse did not exclude from
the holy things of God under the Old Testament. For 1. what was
more ordinary, then that sacrifices should be offered for sins of
igno.

Ceremoni-
all exclusion from
holy things under the
old, did typi-
fiie exclusion for
morall un-
cleannesse
under the
New Te-
stament.

Levit. 5. 24.
ignorance, for trespasser, and while this was done, the person was not admitted to partake of the holy things of God. 2. Whence was the Lords frequent complaints of wearying his soul with sacrifices, solemn assemblies, feast days, and new Moones, when they were morally unclean, and their hands were full of blood, and they had not put away the evil of their doings, did not love judgement and justice, Isaiah 10. 11, 12, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19. And when God complaineth so of them, Jer. 7. 8. Will ye steal, murder and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other Gods whom ye know not? 10. And come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my Name? Erge, Murtherers and adulterers were debarred from entering into the Congregation of the Lord, and partaking of the holy things of God, while they repented. Let none say by prophecying, or the keyes of knowledge: in preaching the Word, they were declared unworthy to enter into the Temple; but that will not conclude that it was the Priests office by power of discipline to exclude them from coming unto the Sanctuary of God. Ans. But if the Porters were set at doores of the Lords house, to hold out the unclean, and if the Lord charge the Priests with this crime, that they, Ezek. 44. 8. set keepers of the charge of the Lords house for themselves, that is, for their owne carnall ends, and not for the honour of the Lord: And that ver. 7. They brought into the Sanctuary of the Lords house uncircumcised in heart, that is, such as were morally unclean, then had the Priests a power to debarre from the Sanctuary such as were morally unclean, and if the Priests are saide to beare rule by their moanes, Jer. 5. 31. Then the Priests did beare rule and governe, though they abused their Power, and the word מִקְוָמִים signifies to have dominion over any, Psal. 72. 8. Psal. 110. 2. 1 Kin. 4. 24. Levit. 26. 17. And the Scripture gives a power of judging and governing to the Priests. And 2 Chron. 30. 6, 7. The Princes that Hezekiah and the Congregation of Israel sent through the Land, commandeth a morall preparation to those that were to keepe the Lords Passover, to wit, that they should turne againe unto the Lord God of Abraham, and should not be like their Fathers, nor like their Brethren, that trespassed against the Lord God of their Fathers. And ver. 11. divers of Asaiah, and Manasseh, and Zebulun humbled themselves, and came so
to Jerusalem to keep the feast of the Passover. This proves clearly that people under the Old Testament were no less to try and examine themselves, by the King and Priest’s commandment, carried to them by Potties before they should eat the Passover; then they are to try themselves before they eat and drink at the Lords Supper; only the adversaries say, the Priests by preaching were to debarre from the Passover those who were morally unclean, but not to debarre those who were morally unclean, so they were not typically and ceremonially unclean, by any power of Discipline, or by Potters set at the gates to kepe them out of the Sanctuary. But I answer, 1. How are the Priests Ezek. 22.26. reproved for violating the Law of God, and prophane his holy things, in that they put no difference between the holy and profane, the clean and the unclean? Surely the Priests prophane in the highest way, the holy things of God, in admitting into the Sanctuary, those who were not only ceremonially, but morally unclean, as murderers, adulterers, who cryed the temple of the Lord, Jer. 7: And they put no difference between the Holy and Profane, when they admitted to the holy things of God, and into the Sanctuary the uncircumcised in heart, for they do more pollute the holy things of God, who partake of them being morally unclean, and uncircumcised in heart, then those who are only uncircumcised in flesh.

Object. But the Church under the New Testament can no other way, but morally, and by preaching (as it would seeme) only debarre scandalous persons from the Seales and Prayers of the Church; for should a scandalous person, or an excommunicate person obtrude himselfe on the Lords Supper, against the will and sentence of the Church, the Church cannot use any bodily violence to hinder such profane intrusion upon the holy things of God, because the Churches weapons are not carnall but spiritual; bodily violence can be no spiritual weapon, that the Church as the Church can use, so do the Remonstrant Arminians argue, and some other for the congregationall way.

Ans. This Argument is against all Church-censures, but though the Church as the Church cannot hinder scandalous intruders upon the holy things of God, by bodily violence, it doth not follow; Ergo, The Church can keep the holy things pure no way, but morally, that is, by preaching only, for we can give a third way: The rebukes, The Churches exclusion from the Seales declarative, not co-active by violence.

Remonstrant in Apology.
Censures and Exclusion

Censures applied to some by name.

Censures, admonitions and Excommunication, or delivering to Satan are all transacted without any bodily and externall violence; Christ's Kingdom resigneth all such carnall weapons to the Magistrate, who is the only Governor of the Church of Christ, as the Opponents say, All Church Censures are by way of Declaration, applied to such men by name; and there co-action, though penall, is not by bodily violence, but by acting upon the conscience of men and putting them to shame.

Hence 2. We argue, if beside the preaching of the word, in which Commandments, Promises and threatnings are proposed to all in generall; there be rebukes of the Church, the sentencing of such and such persons by name, as Hymenæus and Philetæus, and other Blasphemers; the Authoritative Declaration, that such a brother is to be esteemed as a Heathen and a Publican, and brotherly fellowship of eating and drinking with such an one denied, that he may be ashamed, if these be, then are some debarred from the holy things of God, by Church-Censures, beside the preaching of the word of God.

But the former is true; Ergo, so is the latter.

The Proposition is proved, because all wicked persons and heart-hypocrites are excluded from the holy things of God, by the Preaching of the Word: But only these that are notoriously, and by testimony of witnesses, convinced to be scandalous or contumacious in atrocious sins, after they are by name rebuked, and are declared to be esteemed as Heathens and Publicans; and from whom we are to withdraw brotherly fellowship, are excluded from the holy things of God, by Discipline and Church Censures.

The Assumption I prove: Because the word is preached to all by one in office, and that a Steward and dispenser of the mysteries of God, and he excludeth all unworthy ones known to be such, or invisible only, from the kingdom of God. But the Censure, 1. Is inflicted by many, 2 Cor. 2.6. by the Church, Matt. 18. 17. conceived together, 1 Cor. 5. 4. (2.) It is applied to such persons by name, 1 Cor. 5. 5. He that hath done such a deed, ver. 2. Hymenæus, Alexander, 1 Tim. 1. 20. Jezebel, Rev. 2. 20. (3) The whole congregation is not to eat or Table with such an one, 1 Cor. 5. 11. We are to note and observe him, and to have no company with him, that he may
may be ashamed 2. Thes. 3. 14. to esteem him as an Heathen and a Publican, and exclude him from the Seals of the Covenant, so long as he remaineth in that state.

3. Arg. If a person may for not hearing the Church, be judged as an Heathen and a Publican, and his sins bound in heaven by the Church; then by discipline he is excluded from the holy things of God in a peculiar way, in the which contumacious persons, uncircumcised in heart are excluded, in foro interno Dei, in God's secret Court; But the former is true, Matt. 18. 15, 16, 17, 18. Ergo &c. Now if there be two Courts, one before God, Rom. 2. 16, Rom. 4. 4. 1 Cor. 14. 25. 1 Cor. 3. 21. Another of the Church, Matt. 18. 15. 16. &c. 1 Cor. 5. 4, 5, 6, 11, 12. and two sorts of bindings, two sorts of Writs, two sorts of Sentences, then can it not be denied, but the Church hath a spiritual Court for censures, as well as for preaching the Word.

4. Arg. Exclusion of an offender from the societie of the Saints, and not to eate or drinke with him, is some other reall visible censure accompanied with shame, then any censure by the preaching of the Word; but there is such a censure inflicted by the Church, Ergo, The Proposition is cleare from Rom. 16. 17. Now I beseech you brethren, mark those that cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them. Here is a reall, visible, and personall note of shame put on Schismatics, a bodily declining and avoiding of their company, which could not possibly be done by preaching of the Word. But (some may say) this was not done by the Church court, but every one as private christians were to etchew the society of Schismatics, and by this you cannot conclude any Church-censure.

Ans. Not to say that it were unjuste to decline any, and renounce society with him, before he were convinced to be factious according to Christ's order, Matt. 18. which to Erasius is a way of common and natural equity. And so in order to some publique censure before the Church, Paul writeth to a constitute Church at Rome, in which he prescribeth Rom. 12. the Officers duty, as what Pastor, Doctor, Elder, Deacon, ought to doe in a Church-body; We cannot imagine he could command every private Christian to inflict the censure and punishment, (for a punishment it is in order to a publike sin) of avoiding any in Church
communion, professing they serve the Lord Jesus Christ, as these
doe upon their owne private opinion: Jesu Christ and his
Apostles must have left men loose in all order and discipline by this
way, howbeit the adversary would deny a church punishment, here
is a punishment inflicted by many, 3 Cor. 2. 6. And it is not inflicted
by way of preaching, so 2 Thes. 3. 14. If any man obey not our word
by this Epistle, note that man, have no company with him, that he
may be ashamed, on purpose, by the learned is to put a publike church
note on him that he may be confounded, make him a wonder, a publike
wonder, that he may be ashamed, as Piscator and P. Baynes ob-
serve on the place expounding it of excommunication, and the same
word μη συναυστασαν that is here, is used toward the incestuous
man, who was to be excommunicated, 1 Cor. 5. 9. I wrote unto
you in an Epistle, not to keepe company with fornicators, the word
πορετον ver. 1. Is ascribed to the incestuous man, and here they are
not to be mixed πορετον with fornicators, ver. 11. But now I have
written unto you not to keepe company, if any man that is called a
brother, be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a raile, or an
extortioner, with such a one, no not to eate. And that we may know
that this is a church censures, he addeth ver. 12. For what have
I to doe to judge them also that are without? Ergo, this no keeping
company with such, is a Church judging.

5. Arg. The Church of Pergamus is rebuked for having amongst
them, such as hold the doctrine of Balaam, and Revel. 2. 14. and
Thyatira, that they suffered Lezabel to preach and seduce the servants
of God, ver. 20. as the Church of Ephesus is praised v. 2. that they
cannot bear with them that are evil, but had tried such that said
they were Apostles, and were not, and had found them liars, Rev. 2. 2.
Here is it clearly supposed that these churches were to censure
false teachers, if any shall say they were to censures them no other
waies, but by preaching against their errors; 1. This would establish
a Prelate above the Church contrary to that of Mat. 18. Tell the
Church, and 1 Cor. 5. Where the Church gathered together was to
excommuncate. 2. The Angel of the Church is taken collectively for
all the Rulers and the whole Church to whom Christ writeth, as is
clear, in that he saith so often; He that hath an ear, let him heare
what the Spirit saith to the Churches, not to the Pastors only. 2. The
removing of the Candlestick, is not from the Angel, but from the Church; and
and repentance, and the fighting and overcoming, a reward of the crown of life, and many other things are evidently spoken to the Churches, not to the Angels of the Churches. And therefore the tryall of false Apostles must be by a Church, a Court, a college of church rulers, as Paul speaketh unto, Acts 20. 17. Where it is said, Paul called the Elders of the Church of Ephesus, and exhorted them to beware of false teachers, that should not spare the flock, and should teach perverse things. v. 28. 29. 30. and of this sort were these lying and seducing Apostles, now how can one Angel or many Pastors by preaching only try false Apostles; and finde them liars? This trying and sentencing of lying seducers, Rev. 2. 2. must be by a court, such as we find to be the practise of the Apostles and Elders at Jerusalem, who in a Synod Acts 15. did finde these who taught a necessitie of Circumcision, to be perverters of soules and liars, saying, They had the Apostles authority for what they taught, whereas they had no such thing; and Schismatick troublers of the people, Acts 15. See what further I have said for Excommunication before, cap. 2. and sect. 7. which proveth also the same thing. The Church of Thyatira would not be rebuked for suffering Jezebel to teach, if they had no power of Church censures to hinder her; It is not enough to say that the Angel of that Church did sufficiently hinder Jezebel to teach, when in publike he declared and preached against her false doctrine, and by the same reason Pastors exoner their conscience, if they preach that such and such scandalous persons are not to eate and drinke their owne damnation, though they debarre them not in a visable court by name from the Lords table, and though they never excommunicate them, and therefore there is not any censure but Pastoral rebukes by way of preaching, not any other by way of discipline.

Ans. The Angel of Thyatira had not sufficiently hindered Jezebel to seduce the servants of God, by only preaching against her false doctrine, in regard that Paul and Barnabas not only hindered those that teached, that the Gentiles ought to be circumcised, Acts 14. cap. 16. by Preaching; but also had recourse to the power and authority of a Synod, that in a Synod which is a Court essentially consisting of many Pastors and Elders, they might be declared to be perverters of soules, and liars, as indeed they were judicially declared to be such, Acts 15. 24. Hence I argue; if the Apostles could not be said sufficiently to hinder Jezebels and Seducers, by only
Exclusion from the Seals proved. Cap. V. Q. i.

Preaching, and disputing against their errors, except in case of their persisting in their errors, they should tell the Church convened in a Synod, as Christ's order is, Mat. 18. Then the Angel of Thysia, or any one Pastor do not sufficiently hinder scandals, but may be well said to suffer them by only private rebuking and publick Preaching, except they use all these means to hinder Izabel's, false Teachers, and all scandalous persons, that the Apostles used, and therefore the Angel of the Church of Thysia must be rebuked for not using the Authority and power of the Church against Izabel. And here by the way, when these false Teachers had sinned against their brethren in perverting their souls, they take not the course that Ezra's dreameth to be taken according to Matt. 18. They complain not to the Synedrim, or Civil Magistrate, who should use the sword against them, but to the Church Synodically convened at Jerusalem, who used against them the spiritual power that Christ the head of the Church had given them.

6. Arg. If these be an Ecclesiasticall debarring of scandalous persons from the holy things of God, especially from the Supper of the Lord by Censures, and not by the preaching of the word only, then there be Censures and power of jurisdiction in the word beside preaching of the word. But the former I make good by these following Arguments.

1. Arg. If the Stewards and dispensers of the mysteries of God, are to cut the word aright as approved Workmen, 2 Tim. 2.15. And are to give every one their portion of bread according to their need, and measure, Matt. 24.45.46.47. 1 Cor. 4.1.2.3. and must not say the souls which should not die, by denouncing wrath against the righteous, nor save the souls alive that should not live, by lying words, Ezek. 13.19. by offering mercy to the wicked and impenitent, then as they should not deny the seals of salvation to Believers, hungering and thirsting for Christ; neither should they give the seals of life to those that are walking openly in the way of destruction.

But the former is true; Ergo, so is the latter. The Proposition is clear: As the word should not be divided aright, if wrath should be Preached to believing Saints, and life and salvation offered to the obdurate and wicked, so neither should the Stewards cut the seals of the word aright, if the Supper were given to wicked men: If they should say, This is the blood of the Covenant, fed for the Remis-
Remission of your sins. Drink ye all of it: They should save alive those that should die, with lying words; for the seals speak to the Communicant, and apply to him in particular, the very promise that in general is made to him; and this will prove as the Magistrate being no Steward of the word, and not called of God thereunto, as Aaron was Heb. 5. 4. can no more distribute the word and seals to whom he pleaseth, Ex officio, then he can Preach and Administer the Sacraments, nor should another man, who is no Steward, but a Porter or Cook, Teach, and that by his office, how, and to whom the Steward should distribute Bread: nor is it sufficient, to say, by this one man, not the Church, is to debar from the Sacraments, for the seals being proper to the Church, as the Church, he must act here, in, and with the power of the Church. 2. It is another question, whether by the Minister, or by the Church any ought to be debarred, and whether there be any such Censure as debarring from the Seals; and its another question, by what power, whether by the power of order, or by the power of jurisdiction, Ministers may debar the scandalous from the seals; I conceive by both powers, they may keep the Ordinances pure; and if it belong to the Magistrate to debar any more than to preach the word, and by the way of Erastus: The Magistrate by his office, as he is a Magistrate only is depriued of Jesus Christ to Steward the Seals to whom he pleaseth: Ergo, (say I) to cut the word aright to whom he pleaseth, must be his due.

2. Arg. As the dispensers of the word must not partake of other mens sins, 1 Tim. 5. 22. so neither should they distribute to wicked and scandalous men, such Ordinances, as they see shall certainly be judgement and damnation to them, and as maketh the Communicants guilty of the body and blood of our Lord: Now that the Stewards Communicate with the sins of these manifestly scandalous, to whom they administrate the Supper: I prove: 1. Because they that sow pillovs under the head of the openly wicked, preaching peace to these who should die, do hunt souls, Ezek. 13. 20. and partake of their presumption, and they that heal the wound of the people with smooth words, are false dealers, and concurreth to the wound of the people, Jer. 8. 10, 11. As the Prophet that preacheth lies partaketh of the peoples presumption, which believe those lies, Jer. 14. 14, 15, 16. 2. If Eve should but reach the fruit of the
Exclusion from the Seals proved.

forbidden Tree to Adam, and say take and eat, she partakes of Adam's sin, if the mother give poison willingly and wittingly to a child, she killeth her child, though it be told the child that it is poison: The Supper to those who knowingly to us, eat unworthily, is forbidden meat, and poison.

3. A third Argument is, from the nature of holy things. It is not lawfull to give that which is holy to dogs, nor to cast pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, Matth. 7. 6. But the Sacraments are holy things, faith Erasmius, and no man can deny it; Ergo, we are not to give the Sacraments to the scandalous and openly prophane.

But Erasmius answereth, That the Lord preached the word to Pharisees, and the word is a holy thing, and a pearl, and by Dogs, and Swine, he meaneth open persecutors. They that will seem members of the Church, and confess their faults, and promise amendment, are not such as will trample on the Sacraments, and will turn again to tear you: Et si quis satis reperierat hunc ego admittendum minime concesso, for such (faith he) Are not to be admitted to the Sacraments.

Anf. These holy things, which prophane men and openly scandalous can make no use of, but pollute them to their own destruction, and the abusing of the Ordinances, no more then Dogs and Swine can make use of Pearls to feed them, but only trample on them, are not to be given to the prophane and openly scandalous. But the Lords Supper is such a thing, being Ordained only for those that have saving Grace, not for Dogs. Now the Assumption applied to the word, is most falso, (as it is applied to the Lords Supper, it is most true) for the Word is Ordained by speciall Command to be Preached to Dogs and Lions, that thereby they may be made 1/4. 11. 4.5.6.7. 1/4. 2. 3.4. Lambs and Converts; the Supper is not a mean of Conversion; and since Dogs can make no use of it, but trample it under foot, we are forbidden to give such holy things to them. It is true, They'll trample the Pearl of the word; but we are Commanded to offer the word to all, even while they turn Apostates. 2. If Christ Commanded the word to be Preached to Pharisees and Scribes; these were such persecutors as sinned against the Holy Ghost. Dogs in the Superlative degree, Matth. 12. 10. Job. 7. 28. Job. 8. 21. Ergo, Christ Commanded
Law of nature would teach the Mother, not only, not to co-operate with her sonne attempting to kill himself; but to hinder and stop him by pulling a knife or sword out of his hand, when he is about to destroy himself; if so, then ought not the Church and her Officers to co-operate so far with those who do Eat and drink their own Damnation, as to exhibite and give to such the seals of the Covenant, to pray that these seals may be blessed to scandalous ones, which is to pray directly contrary to the revealed will of God in his word, and against that which the faithfull Pastors and Paul Preacheth, That every one should try and examine themselves, and so eat and drink: Now a real and physiocrall co-operating of the Church, with such manifest impiety, must then be the Churches suffering of sin in a brother, or not hindring him to eat his own Damnation; if the Lord have committed a power of dispensing the seals to Christians, not to Pagans and Turks: Let Erasbus shew any precept or practice, why we might not admit Jews, Turks, Indians, though never Baptized, to eat and drink the Lords body and blood, (we are to Preach the Gospel to them, if they were amongst us) except that such as are to communicate, according to the will of Christ, are Christians, members of the Church, who do try and examine themselves; and Jews and Turks though dwelling and born amongst us are not such, yet Erasbus would that such should never be admitted to the Lords Supper, though they should be Christians; Officers also have a command not to dispense some parts of the word to all, as we are not to rebuke open Scorners; Should any of our Church turn Jew and blaspheme Christ, and persistingly after conviction persist in his Apostasy; might not Erasbus aske by what command of Christ will ye not Preach the Gospel to such an one? Christ made no exception, but said, Preach to all Nations. Why do you make Exceptions? might we not answer, Christ hath given a power of dispensing the Gospel to all; yet hath he excepted some, because its against the will of Christ that such can obey the Gospel: We are bidden pray for all, yet are there some that we are not to pray for, because they sin unto death: So is the case here in some kinds.

7. It is for our instruction that the Priests were rebuked, for that they admitted into the Sanctuary the uncleanwashed in flesh and heart, that they put no difference between the clean and the unclean.
Eras tus against Exclusion.

Hag. 2, 11, 12, 13. And this was a shadow of things to come, as was observed before, teaching us, that farre lesse should the Pastors of the New Testament suffer the holy things of God to be prophaned.

8. We read that John Baptist and the Apostles baptized none but such as confessed their sinnes, and profesed faith in Jesus Christ; it would then appeare to be the will of Christ, that every one should not be admitted to the Lords Supper, though some say, the Apostles baptized single persons not in Church communio, so that Pastors administer the Sacraments by reason of the power of order, as they are Pastors, not by power of jurisdiction, as having warrant from any Church, in regard Churches at the beginning had the Word and Sacraments before they had any Church Government, yet I conceive the Lords Supper is a Scale of a Church-communication, 1 Cor. 10, 16, 17. and the like I say of Baptisme typed by Noahs Arke, 1 Pet. 3, 19, 20, &c. and though the Apostles, partly by priviledge, partly through necessitie, the parts existing before the whole, were necessitated first to baptize, and then to plant Churches, yet the Churches being once constitute, these are Church priviledges to be dispensed both by the power of order, and the power of jurisdiction.

CHAP. VI. Quest. 2.
Some speciall Reasons of Thomas Eras tus against Excommunication, examin e d.

Thomas Eras tus a Phy sition, who medled not much with Divinity, saved in this, in which he was unsound, in his reply to Beza laboureth to make Excommunication a dreame, and nothing but a device of Pastors affecting domination.

1. Object. O nely Pet r killed Ananias; onely Paul excommunicated Alexander and Hymeneus, onely Paul said he would come to the Corinthians with the rod, and for a long time onely Bishops excommunicated, Presbyters gave advise onely. Ergo; This power is not in the Church.

Answ. 1.
Ans. 1. The consequence is nought, Christ said only to his Disciples in person, Go teach and Baptize, is it a good consequence therefore, that none hath power to teach and Baptize, but only the Apostles? Only Paul exhorted the Corinthians, to mourn for the inculcous mans fall, therefore no Pastors have power to exhort in the like kinde. 2. We grant the Apostles did many things out of their Apostolick power, which in a constitute Church, the Church only may doe, as Paul his alone disputed against Circumcision of the Gentiles, Acts. 15. 2. What? Ergo, Paul in a Synod, and a Synod hath not power to discharge and determine the same, the contrary is evident, Acts. 15. 12, 22, 23. 3. It is false that the Authority and rod, with which Paul said he would come to the Corinthians, 2 Cor. 10. 8. was proper only to Paul an Apostle, the same he giveth to Timothy, and to all the Elders. 3. If Bishops exercised the same power for many ages, Erastus must shew us Bishops who could kill miraculously, such as Ananius and Elisias, and work miracles; now beside that, Erastus must with his new opinion, hold up a new creature called a Prelate, unknown to the Apostles or Jerome and the Fathers, he must parallel Bishops for working of miracles to Paul and the Apostles.

Obj. 2. The Apostles declared many to be excluded out of the kingdom of heaven, and so bound in heaven whom they did not excommunicate from the Sacraments, so also do the Ministers daily, and yet Christ in his word commanded not them to be debarred from the Lord's Supper.

Ans. It is very true, the Apostles and Pastors of Christ that now are, denounce eternall wrath, and that authoritatively against those that are invisibly to men heart-hypocrites, who yet before the Church (who know not the heart) go for Saints, and are neither excluded from Sacraments, nor so much as rebuked. But it is a vain collection, that therefore externally scandalous are not to be debarred from the Supper, and Excommunicated: The Prophets, 1 Cor. 14. did preach that Heathens remaining Heathens were excluded out of the Kingdom of God; yet Heathens cannot be Excommunicated; and yet (I hope) Erastus dare not deny, but Christ hath forbidden, that Heathen remaining Heathen be admitted to the Sacraments: Though I dare provoke any Erastian, and attest them by their new Doctrine, to shew me a warrant from Christ's Testament, why the Church should refuse the Seals to a Turk; they will
will say, A Turk is not willing to receive, and therefore the Seals may be denied to him, and yet cannot be denied to a member of the Church though scandalous, if he desire it, and profess repentance.

But I answer, Though a Turk be unwilling to receive the Seals; What if he should be willing, and require to be Baptized, yet remaining ignorant of Christ and the Gospel we should not Baptize him: Now by the Doctrine of Erastus, we have no more warrant to deny the Seals to him, then to deny them to Judas; we desire a Scripture from the adversary, which will not conclude with equal strength of reason against the giving of the Seals to any scandalous member of the Church; it is true, a Turk ignorant of Christ, though he should desire the Seals is uncapable, and he is unwilling virtually, in regard he as yet refuseth the knowledge of the Gospel, and to is the scandalous profehor no lefse uncapable (though we may grant degrees of incapacity) for he is virtually unwilling to receive Christ in regard he is unwilling to part with his idol-sins: 2. Though a Turk should be unwilling (as its like enough he will be) yet we desire a Scripture, why we cannot make offer of the Sacraments to a Turk, and yet we may Preach the Gospel and make offer of Christ in the word to him, 1 Cor. 14.23. And this Scripture shall also conclude, we are not to admit scandalous persons to the Sacraments, being both uncapable of them, as also because they can but trample on these pearls, no lefse then the Turk should do; the Argument then is just nothing: We exclude many from the Kingdom of Heaven, whom we do not excommunicate on earth; But he should say, we Excommunicate many, whom we do not exclude out of Heaven.

Erastus. These two are not one, to declare a person hatefull in Heaven to God, and to be caste out of the visible Church; for if they be both one, then one private Pastor may Excommunicate, for he may declare from Gods word, that an offender is excluded out of Heaven: batch not the word of God in the mouth of one as much authority and power as out of the mouth of many? the authority of the Word dependeth not on a multitude, also why should this be a good a consequence (God judgeth not this man worthy of the Kingdom of God; Ergo, he is to be caste out of the visible Church) as this (God judgeth not this man worthy of life eternall: Ergo, God will not have him to live in this temporall life) Are we ignorant that God esteemeth many not
To exclude men from the kingdom of heaven not one with Excommunication

Worthy of life eternall, to whom he hath given power to cast out devils in his name? Matth. 7.

Ans. All this is but with carnall reason to speak against the ways of God; for 1. Not every denouncing of a sinner unworthy of Heaven is Excommunication: So Judas might have Excommunicated himself, and when one Pastor declarcth an offender unworthy of Heaven; he is not formally excommunicated out of the visible Church; he is cast out of the invisible Church: But that is not Excommunication, except it be done for a publick scandal that offendeth the Church: 2. Except it be done by the visible Church. 3. According to the rule of Christ, Matth. 18. 4. That he may be ashamed, and repent and be saved: Gods binding of the offender in Heaven, is a part of Excommunication, but not all, nor the very same with Excommunication. 2. The Churches casting out for Christ's institutions cause, is of more Authority then the Conscionall casting out performed by one Pastor, and yet the Conscional casting out by one, in suo genere is as valid as the other, subordinata non pugnant. 3. We are not to take our compasse and rule of God's ways by his outward dispensation, but the revealed will of Christ is our Rule, God thinketh those who walketh inordinately, and causeth divisions, not worthy of the Christian society of the Saints; and must binde them in heaven to that cenure, in regard he expressly so commandeth in his Word, Rom. 16, 17, 18. 2 Thes. 3. 14, 15. 1 Cor. 5. 11. Yet he thinketh them worthy of Salvation, and may give repentance and Iesus Christ to many of these; he may deny salvation to the wicked; and upon that feed them to the day of slaughter, dare flesh and blood quarrell this consequence? God hath appointed the wicked for the day of wrath. Ergo, he giveth them more of this life then heart can wish. This consequence dependeth on the meer dispensation of God, not is this our Consequence. God judgeth such unworthy of heaven; Ergo, they must be cast out of the visible Church, we never made Excommunication a necessary consequent of the Lords judging men unworthy of Heaven, for then all these that God judgeth unworthy of life eternall should be Excommunicated, and only these, which is false; for God may judge some worthy of life eternall in Christ, and yet they are to be Excommunicated, if they refuse to bear the Church, as many regenerate may go that far in scandalous obstinacy, and many whom God judges unwor.
unworthy of life eternal, may so belie a Profession, as they deserve not to be excommunicated, and both these may fall out, and do fall out according to the revealed will of Christ.

Erasius 4. objecteth. Excommunication must exclude men from only the external society of the Church, for he only can joyn us to Christ, or separate us from internal and spiritual society of Christ, who can beget lively faith in us, and extinguish lively faith when it is begotten, for by faith only we are made living members of Christ's body, and by only infidelity we leave off to be members of his body: But no Church, no creatures can either beget lively faith in us, or extinguish it in us: or thus, men can neither give to us, nor take from us salvation, therefore Excommunication should not be defined by cutting men off from salvation.

Ans. This is the only Argument of Erasius, that seemeth to bear weight; but it is false and groundless, it supposeth the false principle that Erasius goeth on, that Excommunication is a real separation of a member from Christ's Invisible and Mystical body, and that the Excommunicated person who may be an Invisible member of Christ, and regenerated, may be an Apostate, and fall from Christ, and leave off to be a member. The contrary of which all our Protestant Divines teach against Papists; whereas, Excommunication is only a Declarative; but withall, an Authoritative Act or Sentence of the Church, and no real cutting off of a believer from Christ: But you will say, it presupposeth a cutting off in heaven from Christ; and therefore the Excommunicated person is declared to be cut off. Let me Answer, I conceive Excommunication hath neither Election nor Reprobation, Regeneration or non-Regeneration, for its object, or terminus, but only it cutteth a contumacious person off from the Visible Church on earth, and from the head Christ in heaven, not in regard of his state of Regeneration, as if Christ ratifying the Sentence in heaven, did cut him off so much as conditionally from being a member of his body: No, but in regard of the second Acts of the life of God, and the sweet efficacy and operation of the Spirit, by which the Ordinances are lisse lively, lisse operative, and lisse vigorous, the man being as the Learned and Reverend Mr. Cotton saith, As a false Member, in which life remaineth, but a little withered and blunted, and he in Satan's power to vex his spirit, and therefore I grant all, to wit,
that Excommunication is not a real separation of a member from Christ's body, only unbelief doth that; but it followeth not, *Ergo*, it is a separation only from the extraneous society of the Church. For 1. This external cutting off, is ratified in heaven: And 2. Christ hath ratified it by a real internal suspension of the influence of his Spirit in heaven: But I deny that this universal doth follow from Christ's binding in heaven. That whenever God judgeth unworthy of heaven, all these are to be cast out of the Church; he cannot prove this consequence from our grounds.

Pag. 79. *Eraslus Argueth thus:* If God damn any as a sinner in heaven, he will have the Elders to cast him out of the Church Visible in earth, so they know him to be such; yet this is not sure.

Ans. It is most sure, so all the Church know him (Elders only Judicially Excommunicate, the people also by consent, and by Execution of the Sentence, and avoiding the offender) and if it be Judicially proved, the Church is to Excommunicate. But 1. he must not be without the Church, 1 Cor. 5:12. Though the Church know Turks and Pagans, and those who live without Christ, to be damned in heaven; yet they Excommunicate them not, for they are without the Church, 1 Cor. 5:12. and yet damned, Acts 4:12.

2. They may know many unregenerated, Job 15:18. Yet they cannot Excommunicate them for non-regeneration, or non-election to glory, which they cannot know judicially, except they be externally scandalous, Matt. 18. 17. 1 Cor. 5:12.

Eraslus, By Preaching, Drunkards are excluded out of Heaven, and God declareth by the Preaching of the Word, that they are not the faithful on earth; but you cannot prove these four from Scripture.

1. That God hath Commanded to cast them out of the Church, who be hath judged unworthy of life Eternal.

2. That they should not be admitted to the Sacrament, who have polluted themselves with some sin, though they say they repent, except it please the Elders.

3. That it is God's will that they be debarred from the Sacrament, by the presence of a Court of Elders.

4. That God hath Commanded such a Court of Elders under a Christian Magistrate, who should have a power of jurisdiction, different from the power of the Magistrate.

Ans. 1. Declaring by Preaching, that a Drunkard is not of the number of the faithful in the Visible Church, is materially communication. This Eraslus faith, We want only a Court of Elders:
Elders: But how proveth he that one Pastor should cast out of the Church by Preaching, all those that God judgeth unworthy of life eternall. Erastus faith, A Presbytery cannot do this: 1. Because the heart is known to God only, pag. 83. And doth one single Pastor know the heart, and a Senate of Pastors knoweth it not? 2. Must Pastors know the heart, which God only knoweth, 2 Chron. 29, 30. Jer. 17. 10. Otherwise they cannot judicially Excommunicate, and one Pastor may by way of Preaching, Excommunicate, and yet he knoweth not the heart. 3. For the first of his four, we need not prove it, we affirm it not. 4. Though a Turk or an Apostate should say that he repents, yet he lies; and Erastus faith, 1.3. cap. 3. pag. 207. Hanc ego minus admittendum censeo. I think such a one is not to be admitted to the Sacrament. 5. What Christ faith, Matt. 18. we take to be Gods will. 6. If there were no Christian Magistrate, belike a Church-Court might excommunicate; and shall the Magistrate, because Christian, spoil the Church of the power she had while she wanted a Magistrate? 7. The power of Excommunicating, and binding and loosing in earth and heaven, must then be principally in the Magistrate: And who gave the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven to the Magistrate?

Erastus. If Excommunication be a cutting off from Salvation: then all who are Excommunicated must perish; But many Excommunicated persons are saved, many relaxed are Condemned.

Ans. We define not so Excommunication: Nor did Beza put mens Salvation in hazard, because they are Excommunicated so they repent, if their sins be retained in Heaven, and they never repent. Let Erastus see how they shall be saved. 2. Those against whom one Pastor denounceth the just deserved wrath of God, are Conscionally cut off from Salvation: But many of those are saved. Let Erastus Answer this himself.

Erastus. He only can cast out of the Church who seeth the heart; Pag. 83. But men, or the Church, seeth not the heart; Ergo, men can do no more but debar from the Sacraments: It is not enough to say, that Whom they cast out, as the Ambassadors of God in the name of Christ, declaring those to be bound on earth, whom Christ hath bound in heaven are excommunicated: for the Argument is not, whether Pastors may pronounce on earth, that which God hath ratified in Heaven; but whether they may (so cast out of the Church, as they may cut men off from Salvation; and whether one Pastor may not do this, no lesse than a Presbytery.
Erasimus against Evulsion

Answ. So I may argue a Prophet cannot warn a wicked man, that he shall dye eternally: because a Prophet in ordinary, knoweth not the heart more then a Senate of prophets; yet are all prophets to exclude from Salvation, wicked and impenitent men, but conditionally, so they repent not, in which God goeth before them, Ezek. 3. 18, 19, 20. Cap. 33. 6, 7. Acts 20. 20. Nor are we to doubt, but all Prophets to the end of the world must do the same. 2. If men debar from the Sacraments, as having warrant from Christ, they do also exclude men from Christ and Salvation offered in the Word; and is there not need that Pastors see the heart, if they exclude men from Christ and Salvation in the Word and Seals, as from Salvation simply? And how can men know binding in Heaven, more then the hearts of men on earth? The one is as far from our intuitive knowledge, as the other, except that we know both by fruits and effects; otherwise, this is but a Popish Argument, if the Church do bind on earth, as God bindeth in Heaven, say Stapleson, Bezaemon, Swarne, and other Papists; then must the Church be infallible in judgements: But we deny the Consequence in the one, as in the other. 2. It is that which offendeth Erastus, 1. That a Senate, not one man doth this. 2. That the Christian Magistrate doth it not: But I pray you, doth one Pastor, or the Christian Magistrate know the heart, but a Presbytery cannot do it, because a Presbytery knoweth not the heart? Is not this too partial! Logick?

Pag. 36.

Erasinus. Many Excommunicated persons have repented in the end of their life, and dyed devoutly; then be who is cast out of the Visible Society of the Church, is not cast out of the internal and Spiritual Society of Christ.

Answ. This is as much against Christ's words, as against us; may not many whose sins are bound in heaven, and against whom the Pastors denounced exclusion out of heaven, repent in the end of their life, and die devoutly? Ergo, The very threatenings of the Gospel must be wind, and by these, none are excluded from Heaven. 2. Excommunication is but a conditionall excluding out of Heaven; if men repent, the condition not being placed, Nihil possum in esse, they are saved; though it may fall out that they want the externall relaxation of the Church, not through their own fault, but by some externall providence insuperable to them.
But it is to beg the Question, to say, Those that are justly Excommunicated, and seek not to be reconciled to the Church, do repent and die devoutly. Beza Faith, Pastors should give food to the hungry sheep, though they know not the moment when they do repent. Erastus Replyeth, Then give Word and Sacraments to those who seek them. Ans. This is more Charity then the Scripture knoweth, belike Erastus will have all those that seek God daily, and delight to know his ways, and ask for the Ordinances of Justice, and take delight in approaching to God, to be all hungry souls, hungering for Righteousness, and so blessed, Matth. 5, 6. Luk. 1, 52. Isa. 55, 1. Whereas Isaiah Faith, They may do all that, and be but plaited Hypocrites, Isa. 58, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.

Erastus. But if the Excommunicated man repent, whether soon or late, he was never cut off from inward communion with Christ, for then the elect might perish; if David and Manasseh had been excommunicated, and died, they had been saved, except we deny the perseverance of the Saints.

Ans. Erastus evidenceth, he hath little skill in Divinity, he thinks a regenerate man not capable of Excommunication, why? and the sad falls of David, Peter and others prove, they may fall in as great sins as not being of the Church. If one repent in his death, as the repenting Theeb, will that infer he was never all his life separated from Christ? The contrary is true and cleare in the Ephes. 2, 11, 12, 13. Tit. 3, 3. 1 Tim. 1, 13, 14, 15. 3. This is as strong (as it is weake as water) against all the threatenings denounced against such sinners as the Lord giseth with Repentance, for Excommunication to the regenerated is a sort of Evangelick conditionall threatenings.

Erastus. To give internall communion with Christ is a spiritual thing, Ergo, The Church cannot take it from any, and that same power that giveth, taketh away, then the Presbytery cannot by losse, give salvation, nor by binding, take it away. Excommunication on earth is working, except God bindeth first in heaven, then it is but a declaration of what God doeth, for he is the sentence that another judge hath given out, is not to judge; there is a difference betweene those that by authority give out a sentence, and those who as servants doth promulgate the sentence. So Luther tom. German. 1. fol. 239. Excommunica non est, ut quidam opinantur, animam Satane tradere, & pre-
Many fruits in the bosom of Spoliae. Now the true faith & charity in the heart remain, etiam vera communio Dei, & precum Christianitatis fructus permanent, postquam alius est excommunication, nec fieri alius posset, quam privato externi Sacramentum, ac commercium hominibus ac si in custodiam traditum externum amicum consuetudinem prius, amore & favore eorum intecum non spoliatur.

Ans. This is but the old argument of Erastus, repeated almost a hundred times to please the people. We never taught that either Presbytery or Minister can give, or take away inward Communion with God. But hence it will not follow, that Excommunication is an empty thing, for all we doe is but a Ministry, Christ doth make the whole Gospel, promises, threatenings, Sacraments, effectual, else, What is Paul? What is Apollo? but the Ministers by whom ye believe? And what is the planting of Paul, or the watering of Apollo, except God give the increase? If this annull Excommunication, because Excommunicators are not properly judges, but only Servants and Heralds to declare what Christ doth in Heaven, then may Erastus prove that the Word, Promises, threatenings of the Gospel; The Apostles, Evangelists, Pastors, Teachers are nothing, for all of themselves are mere declarations of God's will. 2. Those who Excommunicate because they judge not, but declare the will of Christ, they are not for that void of all authority, for their declaration is authoritative. What did Jeremiah but declare God's will, yet it is such a prophetical and authoritative declaration, as I conceive Baruch or any other not sent as a Prophet of God, could not bear that which God putteth on Jeremiah, v. 1, 10. See, I have this day set thee over the Nations, and over the Kingdoms to root out, and to pull down, to destroy, and to pull down, to build, and to plant: Hath Jeremiah no Propheticall authority over the Nations and Kingdoms to whom he prophesieth in the Name of the Lord, to build and destroy, to root out, and to plant, because he declareth and prophesieth, that such Nations shall be destroyed and rooted out for their wickedness, and such shall be builded and planted? Then meer declaration, faith nothing against Excommunication; Paul, faith he, and the rest of the Apostles were nothing but Ministers, 1 Cor. 3, 5, and yet authority they had, else he could not say, 2 Cor. 10, 6. We have in readiness vengeance against all disobedience, Verse 8. For though
I should boast somewhat more of our Authority, &c. I should not be ashamed, and 2 Cor. 5. 20. Now then we are Ambassadors for Christ, but I pray you Cor. 12. 29. Are all Apostles? Are all Prophets? Are all Teachers?

3. What Luther faith is true, Excommunication can put none out of the state of saving Faith and inward Communion with God, nor doth deprive men of the fruit of the Prayers of the godly, for the godly pray that Excommunication may be medicine effectually blessed of God, for the saving of the mans soul, yea, Gods not hearing of the prayers of the godly, praying in a Church way, that he may be humbled, is a mean to humble the cast out man, nor is the man delivered to Satan morally to be hardened; but judicially and withall medicinally to be softened, that his spirit may be saved. Nor is the Church to hate him, but to admonish him as a brother, 2 Thes. 3. 15. And he is so deprived of the externall society and means, as the operation of the ordinances is suspended.

Eras in us. If any should die in their typical uncleanness, were they so Excommunicated, that their salvation was in hazard?

Ans. Not, so they repented: What then? Ergo, Excommunication was not ratified in Heaven, it followeth not.

Eras in us Beza faith, Tho se that were morally polluted with hainous sins, were more unclean then those who were typically only unclean: Ergo, They should be far rather excluded from the holy things of God.

Eras in us answers, If God had commanded them to be punished with the same punishment, and not with divers; it would follow, that those that are morally impure should rather be debarred then the other.

Ans. But the Ceremoniall uncleanness was punished so to signify Gods detestation of morall uncleanness, and how hateful they were, who would multiply sacrifices, and yet bad hands full of blood, Esa. 1. And who would steal, murder, whore, and yet come and stand before God in his house, and cry, The Temple of the Lord are these, Jer. 7. 4 9. And that God punished the one with heavier plagues then the other, is much for us, that adulterers far more and the uncircumcised in heart were to be holden out of the Sanctuary, as the Lord faith, Ezek. 44.7, 8, 9. then those who were only uncircumcised in flesh.

Eras in us. Those that morally sinned, were not debarred from the bo-
lie things, because they were invited to come and offer sacrifice for their sins.

Ans. And because they might not enter into the Temple, while the Priests offered a sacrifice for them, they were no lesse excluded from the holy things of God, then an Excommunicated person is, while the Church see him swallowed up of grief, and do relaxe and forgive. 2 Cor. 2.6,7,8,9. Is this a good Argument? The Excommunicate person is invited to come again, that the Church may pardon, then it will follow he was cast out.

Erastus. Paul forbiddeth to eat with fornicators, 1 Cor. 5. It shall never follow that they are worthy of holy convention that are worthy of a common Table, and that they are unworthy of the Supper, who are unworthy of a common Table, they were debarred from a familiar Communion with the godlie: 1. That they might be ashamed: 2. Least they should infect them; Paul saith, be not mixed with them, but be not mixed with them; yea, says he, but be not mixed with them, etc., but be faith not, exclude them from the Lords Table, and other holy things: In the Sacrament I must try my self, not others; in my familiar Table with others, I am to try them, that I may gain them; yea, 2 Thel. 3. Though we are to eke forth familiar conversing with those that walk disorderly, yet are we to keep communion in holy things with them, and to admonish them as brethren.

Ans. Erastus propounds an Argument of his own, 1 Cor. 5. in place of ours; we said never that they that are unworthy of the holy Supper, are unworthy to be Tabled with in common familiarity, as brethren, though that be most true. But we reason thus, Thos that are to be delivered to Satan, and cast out, as, 1 Cor. 5.5,13. of the Church, and judged, ver. 12. and with Whom we may not eat, ver. 11. These are not to be admitted to the Lords Supper, which is the proper feast of the Church: But such are all incestuous and scandalous persons, and therefore Paul doth indeed command them to be excluded from the holy feast. 2. To say the Church and her Officers must try themselves, not others, ere they come to the Lords Supper, is to beg the question, for ere they be admitted into the Sanctuary, they are to be tried, whether they be uncircumcised in heart and flesh, or not, Ezek. 44.7,8,9. Ezek. 22.26. As we have proved. 3. Paul not only useth a passive verb, be not mixed with them, but 1 Cor. 5.5. he useth four active words, v. 5.5. not with the flesh, Ezek. 22.26. As we have proved. Hence
Hence I argue, The men whom they convened together were to judge, to deliver to Satan, to purge out, to put away out of the midst of them, ver. 2, or from amongst them, v. 13. This man they did Authoritatively either put from amongst them, as they were Christians, from their common Table, or out of their fellowship, as they were men, to kill him, Or 3. out of their Church-Communion, that they should not keep the feast of the Lords Supper with them: Let Erastus give a fourth: now we cannot dream of the first two: for 1. Would the Apostle command a Church-meeting, to interdict a man of Tabling with them in common eating and drinking? What needeth a Church-court, for they were ἀναμειχόμενοι, when they did this? And what needed a judging Court for this? for, not to eat with him, was no censure of the Church, as Erastus faith. 2. It is no Grammar, nor can it bear sense, that the Corinthians could say, we Corinthians gathered together in the name and power of the Lord Jesus, do cast out such a one out of the midst of us, that is, from our common Table, this would say, they had all one common Table; and that all the Church of Corinth met at this time to some Feast, to cast him out of their love Feasts; a dream no man ever conceived.

3. The Text speaketh of eating in their houses: could they cast the man out of his own house, and from his own Table? they had no power so to do. But ye will say, they might forbid any brother to go into this mans house to his Table: True, but this was not to put the man out of the midst of them, as Paul faith. Nor fourthly, was Pauls spirit, and the name and power of the Lord Jesus required for eschewing of a common Table with this man.

Erastus faith, Paul commanded this, Rom. 16.17. 2 Thef. 3.14, 15. To all and every believer at Rome, and Thessalonica by themselves. Nor 2. were they to kill him: Never did a Church convene to kill a man. This is so insolent that Erastus must give precept for it, or a practice beside the present case: therefore here must be some Church out-casting.

4. Though Paul will have us admonish a cast out man as a brother, 2 Thef. 3. Its private admonition that I owe to all men, Lev. 19.17. And that one woman is to performe to another, Col. 3.15. But not any of the holy things of the Sanctuary.

Erastus. The Jews accused Paul of nothing, but that they lied that
he brought Greeks into the Temple. The Law bad all the clean eat the Passover, and excepteth none for their wickednesse, Christ admitted Judas to the Passover, and said, Drink ye all of this. Paul receiveth a Catalogue of wicked men in Corinth, 1 Cor. 5. With whom we are not to have private dealing, but he commandeth never to exclude any who are willing to come from the Lords Supper: We are to trie our selves, not one another, nor is it a sin to eat at the Lords Table with Wicked men.

Ans. Belike it was a crime then to bring the Greeks into the Temple: 2. It is a begging of the question to say, all were admitted to the Passover: See how this is before answered. 3. Christ admitted Judas into the Passover; What then? may Timotheus lay hands suddenly on all he knows to be Judases, that they come in and lap the blood of souls? contrary to 1 Tim. 3. Christ is above the Law, and if his practice in this were the rule, because Christ admitted Judas whom he knew to be a Traitor, and did eat ordinarily at Table with him, and committed the flock to such a known wolf. We are also to eat with covetous extortioners, which Paul forbiddeth, 1 Cor. 5. 11. And we are to commit the flock of God to known Wolves, where we have a precept on the contrary, 2 Tim. 2. 2. Christ would rather teach that we are to admit to the Seals all not ignorant and scandalous, and not be too curious in striking up a window in the conscience of others: 4. Pauls practice at Corinth is but a negative ex particulari, and not concludent: The heathen came to hear the word at Corinth, 1 Cor. 14. 23. And Paul doth no where command the Heathen should be excluded from the Sacraments: Will Erasius then have them admitted? 5. When Paul faith, that unworthy Communicants were guilty of the Lords body and blood, and required fidelity in the Stewards, 1 Cor. 4. He taketh for confessed, scandalous persons should not be admitted by the Church; its true, the sin of others who communicate unworthily, is not the sin of another fellow-communicant, who hath not authority to debar his fellow-communicant.

Erasius. The Scripture debarred no Jews of old, neither from sacrifices, nor other sacraments, but commandeth that all children, Jews or Strangers, that were not legally unclean, their homes, should thrice a year appear before the Lord in Jerusalem, for to partake of the holy things of God; Ergo, None were
communicated from the holy things of God, for morall wickednesse.

Ans. *Erasimus* counteth this an Argument that cannot be Answered; but it Answers it selfe to me: And *Erasimus* proposeth a Law that is Catholick to all the males; yet he maketh it not Catholick himself, but propoundeth a number of males that are excepted, as he excepteth those that were legally unclean, those that are from home: and yet, *Deut. 16. 16. Exod. 23. 17. Exod. 34. 23.* in the Letter of the Law, there is no such exception as *Erasimus* maketh: I hope if he make an exception, so may we, according to the word of God.

Though we should give, but not grant, that there was no Excommunication amongst the Jews, but only for Ceremoniall uncleanness; yet it proveth not, there is no Excommunication in the Christian Church, but the contrary; for if for touching the dead by Gods Law, men were separated from the holy things; in that Church, far more, for Morall uncleannesse, are men to be separated from the holy things of God under the New Testament, for undeniably Ceremoniall separation signified and typed out Morall separation, *Col. 2. 21.* 2. What ground *Erasimus* hath to except those that were Ceremonially unclean, and so as uncircumcised in flesh, that they were not to appeare before the Lord, (let him shew the Letter of Scripture for it,) the same ground have we to shew that the uncircumcised in heart are not to appeare before the Lord, *Ezek. 44. 7, 8, 9. Ezek. 22. 26.* Not shall I thinke God would both command all the male without exception, to compeare before him thrice a yeare, whether they were Adulterers, Theeves, Murtherers, Idolaters, or not such: but truly sanctified and holy; and that he would expressly rebuke the Males that were Adulterers, Theeves, Murtherers, Idolaters, because they compeared for him in his House, *Jer. 7. 8, 9, 10.* So then as he commandeth the Males to compeare, except they be legally unclean, or Lepers, and would rebuke them, if they should appeare before him being Ceremonially unclean; and therefore in that case God would have them not to come. So also, if they should be Morally unclean, he would have them not to come, that is, it is not their sin, that they appeare before the Lord, *quoad substantiam actus,* but their obedience, but it is their sinne that they appeare *sui modo,* in their unrepented guiltinesse, yet is it the sinne of the Priest in not differencing
rence between the clean and the unclean, that they suffer them to come 
inside, that as Swine they pollute the holy things of God, to the Male is their sin, that they come so, and so guilty, and that they come not, it is their sin, but to the Priests it is their sin, that they admit the unclean, and cast Pearles to Dogs. But as God would not rebuke unworthy Eaters at the Lords Table, 1 Cor. 11. if they might eate unworthily by Gods Law, so neither would he rebuke Theeves and Murthers for appearing before him in his Temple, if they ought not, by Law, not to appear in that state. No doubt (faith Erazmus) pag. 106. there were many wicked persons in the time of Joshua, Judges, and the Kings, in such a multitude, yet they were bidden all to compare before the Lord, and none are excepted for their wickedness, and is it certaine God would not both bid them compare and not compare.

Anf. All that sinned in Israel were bidden offer Sacrifice, yet those who are wicked, as Sodom, are expressly debarred from Sacrifices, except they were morally clean, Esai. 1. 13. Bring me no more vain oblation, incense is an abomination unto me,---16 Wash you, make you clean. So say I here, God said expressly, Jer. 7. 9, 10. Except you be washed from your lying, the altar, come not before me to stand in my house, to profane my holy Name. Ergo, the Morally unclean are excommunicated from those holy things, so all the wicked by the same reason were forbidden, they remaining in their wickednes, without Repentance, to eate the Paschal, yea, to take the Name of God in their mouth, Psal. 50. 16, 17. to Sacrifice, Esai. 66. 3. to touch the Altar of God, except their hands were washed in innocency, Psal. 26. 6. And the Priests had the charge of the house of God, to put difference betweene the cleane, and the unclean, and the Priests are said to violate the holy things of God, if the wicked as well as the Ceremonially unclean were not debarred, Hag. 2. 11, 12. Ezek. 22. 25, 26. Ezek. 44. 7, 8, 9. and certainly, the Males that were Leapers were expressly excepted, and forbidden to come in the Congregation of Gods people, as is before proved.

Erazmus. The Pharisees and Sadduces debarred none from the Sacraments for their wicked life.

Anf. What? will Erazmus make the Pharisees practise our Rule, they killed the Lord of Glory, and then eat the Paschal with bloody
bloody hearts and hands: Is such a Practice our Rule?

Erastus. John Baptist refused Baptism to none willing to be baptized, and referred the inward Baptism, by the Spirit and fire to Jesus Christ.

Ans. John baptized those who confessed their Sins, and professed their Repentance; and the like we crave of those that are admitted to the other Sacrament. And the instance of John or an Apostle, baptizing, cannot warrant the Baptizing of all Murderers, Idolatrous persons, or the wickedst living, as Erastus saith, and the wildest on earth, if they should but desire Baptism, and give no confession of their Faith, nor profession of their Repentance.

Erastus. Christ who rebuked many abuses, and cast the buyers and sellers out of the Temple, would have rebuked the pollution of the Sacraments also; but that he never did: and Christ said that Peter should forgive his offending Brother often in one day, if he but say, I repent thee: and he saith, This transgression shall be ratified in heaven. Will you be more cruel then God? Do not we often lie to God in our Confession to God? He meaneth well, who desires to come to the Supper: Be not Judges of men's Conscience.

Ans. Christ Commanding not to cast Pearls to Swine, and scourging out those that polluted that Temple that was a type of his body, doth argue clearly, that the holy things of God should not be profaned: But that Christ rebuked all abuses in the worship of God, in particular, Erastus cannot say. It is one thing to forgive our brother, by putting away private grudge, and a church-pardon in the name of Christ is another; in the former sense we are to forgive our enemy, though he repent not, Matt. 6.12, 14, 15. Rom. 12, 19, 20. Luke 23, 34. But this forgiveness, Luke 17, is not said to be ratified in heaven; for God doth not always forgive when we forgive, God doth forgive when theinner repenteth. Erastus will have a lying confession ratified in heaven. 3. When the Church in Christ's Name forgiveth not upon words and lies; but upon Visible Testimonies of repentance, they are no more Judges of the heart, then Isaiah when he said, Except ye believe, ye shall not be established: and Paul when he said to the Judge, Believe and thou shalt be saved: for without more then lying words of mouth, yea, without true lively faith; neither could the one be established, nor the other saved.

Pep Erastus.
Eraslus. When Paul exhorteth the Corinthians to eat things sacrificed to Idols, in the Idols Temple, because they could not be partakers of the Table of the Lord, and of the Table of Devils; he bids them not forsake the Supper of the Lord, but only not to go to the Feast of Idols; because the Supper, and the Table of Devils are inconsistent; therefore he saith, I will not have you to have fellowship with Devils, but he saith not, I will not have you to come to the Supper of the Lord; nor doth he bid them approve their repentance ere they come to some (I know not what) Presbyters. And in this place he speaketh of an external Communion, as the purpose and words prove; because he speaketh of Israel according to the flesh. 3. Because those that earthing Sacrificed to Idols, were perverted, there was no difference between those meats, and other meats.

Anf. Erastus his Argument is this, being reduced to form; is, if Paul say not, 1 Cor. 10, I will not have you come to the Lords Supper; but only, I will not have you to have fellowship with the Devil in his Table; then he will have none debarred by the Elders from the Lords Supper: But the latter is true. I deny the Proposition, it is a connexion, that one who taketh on him to refute such a precious and eminent divine as Theod. Beza, may be ashamed of; and yet his book from head to foot standeth most upon a negative Argument from some particular place of Scripture; for he speaketh nothing of the power of Elders, to keep the holy things of God pure.

What if he should say, Moses in the first of Genesis saith not, I will not have you not to come to the Lords Supper; Ergo, there is no Authoritative debarring of men from the Lords Supper: Such tedious consequences no learned Divines would ever dream of. 2. Beza, nor any of our Divines never dreamed that God in the Old or New Testament said, Noli vos ad mensas domini (ad sacramenta) venire, which are the words of Erastus; so his conclusion cometh not near the controversy: Jews and Gentiles are invited, and commanded to come to Christ, and so to all the Ordinances and Sacraments, but I hope this will not infer that all should come to the Sacraments hand over head, and whether they be clean or unclean, circumcised or Baptized, or not circumcised, not Baptized. God commanded Aarons sons to serve in the sanctuary, and appear before him in their charge; What, Ergo, it is not Gods will, that they
they come not to the Sanctuary, and before him unwashed, and with strange fire, and without their holy garments? this is the very consequence of Erasmius: Our question I conceive is, whether all must be admitted promiscuously, and whether even those that come immediately from the Devil's Table, without any preparation known to the Church, should be set at Christ's elbow to eat the Lord's body and blood? Erasmius faith, Paul never said, Nolo vos ad me venire; then because two negatives make one affirmative, Paul must say, I will that all that are partakers of the Table of the Devil, come and be partakers of the Lord's body: But the conclusion is contradicent to Erasmius himself, who faith right down: I judge, that he, who woul but trample the Sacraments, should not be admitted unto them, and to Paul, 1 Cor. 11.27, &c. 3. Erasmius confoundeth two Questions; one is, whether all should be admitted to the Lord's Supper: (Erasmius faith, every where in his book none are to be debarred;) and another by whom are they to be admitted or debarred? By the civill Magistrates, faith Erasmius; by the Stewards and Officers of the house of God, the rest of the Church consisting, say we. 4. The Argument will conclude, that not only the Church or Magistrate ought to admit those that have fellowship with the Devil to the Table of Christ, but they ought to command them to come, it being Christ's will they should be admitted, and that they themselves who are Communicants are obliged, though keeping fellowship with the Devil, to come, and eat their own damnation: for Paul faith, by this reason in the place, 1 Cor. 10. No more (I will not have the partakers of the Devil's Table, to come to the Lord's Table) nor he faith, (I will not have the Elders to debar them) if Erasmius say, they should try and examine themselves and come: He flies from the controversie, which is not, whether the worthy, but whether the scandalous and unworthy should come; Erasmius faith, all should come. 5. Whereas Erasmius will have the Apostle to speak of the external Communion of the Elements only: 1. It is false. 2. Nothing to the purpose, it is false, 1. ver. 16. It is called the Communion of the body and blood of Christ, and that must be more than external Communion. 2. ver. 17. We many are one body, this is not an external body only, for it is the unity of the body of Christ signified by one bread. 3. It is not external only, but internal and spiritual fellowship with Devils that is condemned, ver. 30. 21. Ergo,
It must be internall Communion with Christ in his death that is sealed and commanded. 4. This is meer Socinianisme, to have the Sacraments only memorative signes, as is clear. 2. It is not to a purpose, for if the Church debar only from externall society, from the Church and externall Seals; this debarring being ratified in Heaven, Matt. 18. It is sufficient for our conclusion. 5. Paul his condemnning of eating at the Idols Table, as inconsistent with eating and drinking of the Lords body, he must expressly forbid those who eateth in the Idoll-Temple, to come to the Lords Table, except they repent, and try themselves: Hence it must follow, that if Christ have commanded his Stewards, to dispense the word of promise and threatenings, and comforts, according to the temper of the flock, so must they dispense the Seals, and so by good consequence Paul said (I will not have the Lord and Satan mingled, nor a partaker of Satans Table admitted to the Lords Table) Rom. 16.

Erastus his Arg. 13. 1 Cor. 10. God spared not idolaters and murmurers; yet they eat, we, and they of the same spiritual meat, and drink the same spiritual drink, and so had the same Sacramones (otherwise the Argument of the Apostle were nothing; if ours and their Sacraments were not all one) if then, those that were idolators, fornicators were admitted to their Sacraments, then also to ours under the New Testament.

Ans. Beza answereth well, so that. Manna and the water out of the Rock, as they had a spiritual Relation to Christ, were holy things and types of Christ, just as our Sacraments are signes of Christ already come in the flesh, and so agreed in the kind of holy signes with our Sacraments: yet Manna, and the water out of the Rock, were also ordained to be bodily food, for the famishing and thirsty people, good or bad, holy or unholy, these two, Manna and water out of the Rock were given by the Commandment of God, and the Priests, to the people, both. as Gods people in Covenant with God, and to them, as men starving in the wilderness, and dying for thirst; for they had not plowing, eating, harvest, bread, vineyards, wine, fountains in the wilderness, and therefore no marvell then such holy things being; also beside that they were holy things, such as were necessary to keep them from starving and bodily death, as the shewbread, which was also a type of the word of life revealed to the Ministers of God, was given.
given to keep David and his men from starving. No marvel (I say) then these bodily helps (though in another higher signification they were Sacraments) were by God's command bestowed on many wicked men, who often partake both of outward Ordinances and temporal deliverance from death and famine, because they are mixt with the people of God. But Erastus, if he would prove anything against us, should have proved that circumcision, the Passover, and other holy things of God, ordained for the visible Saints to shew forth our spiritual Communion with Christ, and which were never ordained for necessary helps to sustain the natural life, were to be administered to those that were openly prophaned and wicked; and therefore we deny this connexion: Manna signifies the very same thing; to wit, Christ our food of life, which bread and wine signifies; Ergo, As Manna was given both as a holy sign to figure out Christ our life, and to feed the bodies of openly holy, or openly prophaned, to sustain their bodily life, so also baptism and the Lord's Supper, which serve for no bodily use, should be administered to those that are openly prophaned.

Erastus is put to a poor shift with this solid Answer of that Reverend, Learned, and holy Divine, Theod. Beza, he saith, Vis dicam quod sensibilibus simulatis: The sea and the cloud, faith be, were not necessary to feed the body.

It is true, Erastus the Physician would think the cloud and pillar of fire can neither be Physick for the sick, nor food for the whole, yet Physicians say, Manna is apt for both; not is the divided Red Sea, food or Physick: But good man, he knows the cloud was their guide and convey by night and day through the wilderness, and appointed by God to convey the Leapers, the unclean, and all those who were Excommunicated from the holy things, and the Idolators and openly wicked, as well as the clean and the holy, and he knew the time that the people had no food but Manna a holy signe, that those who were unclean seven dayes, and often many times longer, were not to starve for hunger, but must eat Manna though a holy; yet their only necessary food then, without which they could not live.

But I hope Erastus cannot prove, while they were unclean, or put out of the Camp, or yet extremly wicked, that they might eat the Passover, which was a most holy Sacrament, not ordained for
for the feeding of the body, as Manna and water out of the Rock were.

Eraslus may know the dividing of the Sea, was necessary to preserve the life of the most wicked and unclean (God being pleased for his Churches cause, to bestow Temporall deliverances on wicked men, mingled with the godly) from being drowned with the Egyptians, and that God, who will have mercy, and not sacrifice, may well by a positive Law appoint that holy and unholy, clean and unclean, shall have the use of such holy things, as are not meekly holy, but mixt, being both means of Divine institution, and also necessary Subsidies for mans life, but it followeth not therefore holy things, that are purely holy, should be prostituted to holy and unholy, the clean and unclean.

Eraslus. God in the Church of the Jews punished wicked men with bodily punishments, not with Exclusion from the Sacraments, and Paul threatneth death and sickness, not Excommunication to those that did eat and drink unworthily.

Ans. Then putting out of the Campe was no Exclusion from the holy things of God, all the world not onely will cry shame on this Divinity: But they will say, Eraslus, his Logick is bad. God punisheth some wicked men with death, and the sword of the Magistrate, and stoning; Ergo, he appointed no Ecclesiastical detharring of the unclean from Circumcision: 2. It is false that Paul threatneth death to unworthy Communicants; only he faith, God slew many of them for that sin; and hence it follows well, the Officers should hinder the scandalous to run into such a sin, as is the not discerning the Lords body, which bringeth death and deatnes on the actors: What consequence is this? God punisheth wicked men; Ergo, the Officers should not rebuke them for those sins, nor the Magistrate or Church punish wicked men; God punisheth stubborn Rebels to parents; Ergo, the judge should not stone them, the contrary Logick is the arguing of the Spirit of God.

Eraslus. Every one is to try himself, therefore there is no need of any other to try him, for Paul speaketh of that which is proper to every mans conscience.

Ans. It is an unlearned and vain consequence: It is commanded, that every one try if he be in the Faith or no; for the peace of his conscience, and this is so proper to a man himself, and so personal,
that no man can try, or know certainly, whether he be in the state of grace, but he himself, 2 Cor. 13.5. Rev. 2.17. None can joyn with him in this, as none can joyn with a man to try if he have faith to discern the Lord's body, and eat worthily, but will it follow therefore the Pastor should not watch over him to try in another way in a Pastorall way, by his walking, profession, and practical knowledge, whether he be in Christ or no.

The contrary is Heb. 13.17. They watch for the souls of the people, as they that must give an account. And they are so far to try that are Shepherds, that they are obliged in a Pastorall way, to know those of the flock that are diseased, Ezek. 34.4. Sick, broken, driven away, and lost. And to what end should they try themselves, least they eat damnation to themselves? Ergo, the Stewards should try the Frolicks, that they eat not poison: if then, the Lord's Law bid men beware they be not tempted to Sorcery, Sodomy, Murthers; and if every man ought to have personal watchfulness over his own conscience, that he be not inflamed to those sins; and Achan was to try if his heart was ingaged to the wedge of Gold, and to be wary to meddle with it, but it doth not follow that Magistrates, as John should not try our Sorcerers, Sodomites, and other Achans to punish them.

Erasmus, 2 Cor. 13. is against this; a person is to try himselfe: Will it follow when he hath tried himselfe, that he cannot come to the Lord's Supper, except he seem meet to the Elders. And this not our consequence, let Erasmus owne it, we care not. In a circinate Church he should, else Erasmus provides no way against a Pagan, who hath heard the Word, as he may doe, 1 Cor. 14.23. may without the Elders and Church fit downe at the Lord's Supper, for Erasmus provides no stop for him, but only his own Pagan Conscience, and so may one by that rule but trample on the Sacrament, his owne Conscience is all his rule, contrary to what he saith himselfe, lib. 3. c. 3. p. 207.

Erasmus 1 Cor. 11. Paul forbiddeth none to come to the Supper, but upon supposition that they come as the manner is, he biddeth them come worthily, as all are bidden hear the Word, though they be forbidden to hear it, as if it were some prophane History; nor doth the Lord command sufficient coming, for we all commanded of God is evil.
All are commanded to hear the Word, but not to come to the Supper. Anf. 1. Paul then forbiddeth not Pagans, more to come to the Supper, and Children, then he forbiddeth them to heare the Word, which is absurd; he commandeth all to heare, but he commandeth not all to come to the Supper, but those onely that can discern the Lords body, for to heare the Word, though I be not prepared, is simply necessary, if I would be saved; and to sacrifice, if I would be reconciled; and to pray, if I would obtaine any blessing; though the manner of doing all these be commanded, that I heare, sacrifice, and pray in faith. But to come to the Supper is not commanded to all, not to Pagans, not to children, not to the unregenerated; but onely to the regenerated, and to those who discern the Lords body: and for a child to come to the Lords Supper, or an unrenewed man, is forbidden, not commanded, and no ill act is commanded, and it is a sinne that they come at all: But Erastus will have it lawfull as it is to heare the Word, then doth Christ command Turks and children to come to the Supper, for he commandeth them to heare the Word, and Peter bade Simon Magus pray, Act. 8. 22, but he neither bids give the Supper to him, nor bids he him receive it, but by the contrary, forbids pearsles to be cast unto Swine.

Arg. 16. Erastus. Arg. 16. God will not have fewer Christians to be members of the Church now, than of Jews to be members of the Jewish Church. But God would have all circumcised, even the most flagitious, that were punished by the Magistrates, to be members of the Jews Church, Ergo, God will have all the baptized to be Members of the Church.

Anf. This will prove, that all baptized, even children, should come to the Supper. 2. I deny the Minor, to wit, that all the most wicked remained Members of the visible Jewish Church, jure before God, the wicked Jews to God, were as Sodom and Gomorrah, Esa. 1. 10. Yea, he faith, Amos 4. 13. Are ye not unto me as children of Ecbiptians, O children of Israel, saith the Lord? What they were de facto, and not cast out, was the fault of the Priests, and that the Church does tolerate Izebels, Wolves, Lions in the flock, and admitteth them to holy things, is their sin.

Erastus. But Repentance was not always commanded to those Jews especially who were unclean, by touching an unclean thing against their will, and ignorantly, and the purging of them depended on their
Cap. VII. Q. 3. from the Sacraments, answered.

their owne will, so they observed the Ceremonies of Moses.

Anf. That is much for us, if those who were uncleane, against their will, and cast out of the camp, it being a trying Type, that far more those that are wickedly scandalous are to be cast out of the Church.

Erasus. The Church is a draw-net, a field, a marriage Supper, there be good and ill in it, and it was not the intent of the invisers, who are bidden invite all good and bad, Mat. 22. But the man that came himselfe, without the wedding garment, he is cast into utter darkness: Ergo, The Officers are to invite all, and forbid none.

Anf. They are to invite all, to all Ordinances, and Seals, even Dogs and Swine, that is false: They are to invite all to some Ordinances; to hear the Law and Gospel preached, but not the Seals, that were to cast Pearles to Swine. 2. The way of Erasus is, that none are to be debarred, nor to debarre themselves from the Seals, more then from the Word.

The Lords forbidding Adam to touch the tree of Life, and his casting of him out of Paradise, and Cain's being cast out from the presence of the Lord, to me are rather Types presignifying Excommunication, and that God will have wicked men debarred from holy things, then patterns of Excommunications, and so are they allledged by Beza and our Divines.

CHAP. VII. Quest. 3.

Whether Erasus doth justly deny that Excommunication was ty-

pified in the Old Testament?

VVe take types of uncleanesse in the Old Testament, to be rightely expound'd, when the holy Ghost in the New Testament doth expound them. Now that Ceremoniall uncleanness did typifie Morall uncleanness is cleare, 2 Cor. 7. 17. Touch no unclean thing, and I will receive you. 18. And I will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my Sons and Daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. This is a manifest Explication of the Ceremoniall holinesse and cleance, commanded in the booke of Levitike, for
after the Lord: hath given them a number of Lawes, about eathing of uncleane things, he faith in generall, Lev. 26. 3. If ye walke in my Statutes, and keepe my Commandements, and doe them. 11. I will set my Tabernacle amongst you, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people. And it is a cleare allusion to Num. 19. 11. He that toucheth the dead body of any man, shall be unclean seven days. 16. He that toucheth one that is slaine with the sword, in the open field, is unclean. 22. Whatsoever the uncleane person toucheth shall be unclean: So Paul, Tit. 1. 15. To them that are defiled and unbelieving, nothing is pure, but even their minde and conscience is defiled.

2. The Prophets expound it so, Ezek. 36. 25. Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean. From all your filthinesse, and all your Idols will I cleanse you. Hath he not a cleare reference to the water of Separation, Num. 19. ? With this water the unclean person, and his clothes were washed, yea, the Tents and the Vessels, ver. 17, 21. According to which, faith Paul, 2 Cor. 7. 1. Having therefore these promises (dearly beloved,) let us cleanse our selves, from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit. Here a cleare Allusion to Ceremoniall filthinesse bodily, and of the flesh, and of Tents and Vessels, Heb. 10. 22. To both these washings there is a reference. Let us draw near, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. And Heb. 9. 13. If the blood of bulls and goates, and the ashes of an heifer (mingled with running water, Num. 19. 17; which purged vessels that were but capable of Ceremoniall uncleannesse) sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh. 14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, ---purge your conscience from dead works? It is cleare also, that the unclean were seperated and the Lepers put out of the campe, so as the children of Israel might not tach any thing Ceremonially unclean, and all uncleane persons were put out of the Congregation. Hence the Hypocrites word alluding to that separation, Esa. 64. 5. Stand by thy selfe, come not near to me; for I am holier then thou. So was Miriam removed, and leprous. King Vesiab out of the Congregation of the Lord.
against their will were polluted legally, as the night pollutions, the diseases monethly of women, when they were necessitated to be with Children, Parents, Wife, brethren when they died; sometimes they touched unclean things ignorantly, but no man lives wickedly against his will. 2. God could not forbid in every time and place the touching of the dead, onely God commanded the polluted to be purififed according to the Law: God would have his people neere their dying friends, but God never gave leave to any to live wickedly. 3. A holy man not sinning in his thought, remaining holy, might be legally unclean, without either his will or knowledge, by touching some unclean thing, that he knew not to be unclean. But a wicked man doth not as one time both doe wickedly, and remaine pure and holy.

Ans. All this is a meere cavilling at the wisedome of God, in making such Ceremoniall lawes, and such punishments against the transgressors of them, as the wise Law-giver of his free-will thought fit; because these Lawes seeme ridiculous. But the foolishnes of God is wiser than men. 1. We say not, that the punishment of legall and morall uncleannees is all one every way, and alwayes; it is enough for our purpose that God will have those who are legally uncleanse separated from holy things, while they bee purififed, and little sinne and guiltiness seeme to bee in legall uncleanness, as when bodily Leprosie came on persons against their will, yet when God will have them punished with being removed from the people of God, from the Sanctuary and the holy things, this could not be for it selfe; for as Paul faith, Doth God take care of Oxen? So we, doth God hate bodily diseas, which are his owne just actions, not our sinfull doings? since I say God hateth them not, and putteth not punishment on them for themselves; therefore it must be to signifie what detestation and punishment the Lord our God, would have his Church to put upon morall wickednes: So we thinke Erastus might have spared paper and paines, in proving a difference (which no Divine denieth,) between Ceremoniall and Morall uncleanness, and the punishment of the one and of the other, for it can never prove his conclusion. Ergo, Separation for legall uncleanness cannot typifie separation for Morall uncleanness. I could give eight and twenty differences between Isaac and Christ, as
Era\-\textsuperscript{lus} giveth seventeen or eighteen between Legall and Morall un\-clean\textsuperscript{ness}, and the punishment of both: But I hope that should never conclude against the Holy Ghost, Heb. xi. 17, 18, 19. Gal. 4. 28, 39, 30. Rom. 9. 9. that Israel was not a type of Jesus Christ. 2. Night pollutions are not altogether against our will; they are sinfull pollutions, except concupiscence, and lustfull habitual day lufts, the cause of them, be not sinfull pollutions; yea, and forbidden in the seventh Commandement.

3. These pollutions Legall caused by invincible ignorance, were types or symballicall signes of our originall inquity, and give me leave to doubt, if all actuall touchinge of things unclean, was no Morall sinfulness. I conceive the Jews, as the Christians also were obliged to walk 
\textit{ap\-\textsuperscript{ie}\-\textsuperscript{\alpha}}\textit{Ephes.} 5. 15. and were to take heed to the outerman, that they should come, were no unclean thing, in some cases leprose and other legall uncleannesse came on them without either will or knowledge. 4. If the standing beside the dying friends be all one with touching the dead, I remit to the principles of Physicke, and if the touchinge of any dead be excepted in the Law Ceremoniall, let the learned judge. All the other differences assigned by Eras\-\textsuperscript{lus} I leave, as not concludent against us, they tend all either to blame God, who should punish some legall uncleannesse, that is, altogether against the will of man, with any punishment at all, as the three first differences insinuate. Or, 2. that God punished some Legall uncleannesse more severely then homicide and Morall uncleannesse, as the 5. difference doth insinuate, and the 4. difference. And this is to challenge God, to whom I desire to ascribe a sovereignty, both in punishing or pardoning, as he thinketh good: Or in punishing more severely, or more mildly these same sinnes, or in punishing greater sinnes with lighter punishment, and with a heavier rod lighter sinnes.

Era\-\textsuperscript{lus}: Any legally unclean was debarred from the Temple, the difference was: only in the time, but you debarre not all wicked men from the Supper.

Ans: The most that were legally unclean, were also morally un\-clean, in that they willingly transgressed a known Law; Ergo, Legall uncleannesse, was also Morall uncleannesse. 3. Though we debar not all wicked men, but only the scandalous, yet we have in readi\-\textsuperscript{ness} vengeance against all, and so against latent disobedience, which
which is a high censure, in debaring hypocrites from heaven; and we conceive Legall uncleanness as the monthly diseases of women, night pollutions, want of Circumcision did typifie much natural and original heart corruption, which cannot be punished by men or the Church; but it follows nor, because Legall uncleannesse signifieth some other uncleannesse then that which is scandalous and censurable by the Church; *Ergo,* it signifieth no finnes scandalous and censurable by the Church.

*Erafus.* He that was legally unclean a long time, or all his life, as a Leper; was not esteemed as no Jew, or uncircumcised, or a damned man, he was to kepe the Sabbath; yea, none unclean were excluded from the Sacrament of the generall expiation in the 10. Moneth, Lev. 16. and 23. Yea, every soule under the paine of cutting off, was to afflict his soule that day; then the Lepers were not as Heathen and Publicans and condemned men; yea the Magistrate could not punish a man for Leprose.

*Anf.* This is a poor argument, because Ceremoniall Excommunication differeth from Christians Excommunication; *Ergo,* the former is not a type of the latter, it followeth not. *Isaacs* blood was never really shed, Christ was really crucified, *Isaac* was not mocked, spitted on, did not wear a crown of Thorns, Jews and Gentiles crucified him not, between two Theevs. *Ergo,* *Isaac* was no figure of Christ offered for our sins, it followeth not. 2. Nor are Lepers no Jews, but in some respect, they might no more come to the Temple. 2. Nor amongst the people of God, nor 3. Eat the Passover, then Heathens might doe; and so are the Excommunicated with us, they are not exempted from faith, repenting, afflicting their soules for the finnes of the Land, nor are they eternally damned, so they repent. But *Erafus* hath no ground to say, because the unclean were to afflict their soules, and abstaine from servile worke in the day of atonement, (as our Excommunicants are not loofed from the duties of the ten Commandements wholly, but from some publike Church duties) but I see not how it followeth; *Ergo,* The unclean were to come to the holy convocation in the day of expiation, and to observe the publike solemnities with Gods people; One Law of God is not contradicent to another, and the Leper and unclean were separated, *Ergo,* God could not tie them to be mingled with his people. 3. The Leper was not punished by the Magistrate, for he suffered onely for
his Leprofici. But it followeth not that the Magistrates should not punish a person obstinate to the Church.

Erautus. When some unclean persons were debarred from the Tabernacle and sacrifices, many wicked men were admitted; Ergo, Moses both commanded men, at the same time, to come to the holy things, and not to come.

Answ. Moses bade the unclean come, he bade all clean, so they were not scandalously and openly wicked, come; and some came that were not bidden, but rebuked for their coming, as Jer. 7. 8. 9. Psal. 50. 15. Here is no contradiction.

Erautus. There be no figures of things present, but of things to come; moral uncleanness was present, at least there be no figures of things that inure in the senses, as theft and homicide.

Answ. Circumcision, the Lord's Supper, are signs and symbols of things present, as of Original sin, our present union with Christ, and communion of love amongst our selves, Col. 2. 11. 1 Cor. 10. 16, 17, 18. 2. Scandals, as they are spirituall wickednes, inure not in our senses, yet other ways they are visible. 3. Christ's dying was both typified to Joba the Apostle, and Mary, and his death incurred in their senses, they saw him die. So was Christ raised from the dead, typified by Jonas in the belly of the Whale, and with their eyes they saw him, after he rose again.

Erautus. Houses, cloaths, trees, stones, were capable of legall uncleannes, men onely of Morall; Legall uncleannes is a qualitie, wickednes morall is in actions.

Answ. I am ashamed and wearied to put in Paper such childish things, all this will not prove that Legall uncleannes is no type of Morall uncleannes; Isaac was but a man, Moses a man onely; Ergo, they cannot be Types of Christ who is more than a man; Bread and Wine are some other thing then Christ, then cannot these be symbols of Christ, and our spirituall communion with him. I see nothing here, but a challenging of Gods wisedome, who hath chosen leprofici, bodily, to figure out finnes spirituall Leprofici. Erautus will say not so, Leprofici is in the category of quality, and finfull actions in the category of actions.

Erautus. Legall uncleannes signifieth naturall corruption, not scandals.

Answ. Yea but Leprofici and other uncleannes legall, was contagious and infectious, and did relate to wicked actions that infect.
as a canker; its original being common to all, is not that contagious from one to many; nor did the Lord ever command separation for sinne Original, but for transgression of Ceremonial Laws he did.

Eraust. The Ceremoniall uncleannes doth typifie the justification, and washing of a sinner in Christ's blood, because no uncleane thing can enter in the New Jerusalem, and so the Scripture, Rev. 21. Eliz. 42. Joel 3. Acts 19. And it shadowes out no such thing as Excommunication out of the Church.

Adv. All the arguments that Eraust made to prove that legal separation and uncleannes, proveth not Excommunication and Morall uncleannes, will with the same force conclude, that Legal uncleannes is not that which excludes men out of heaven. As for instance, to begin with the last, Legal uncleanness signifies sinne original, not wicked actions, therefore it signifies not scandals, then by this Legal uncleannes that caused legal separation, is signified mens exclusion out of the high Jerusalem, for openly sinne Original, not for actual sins. This type must be a lying type, for actual sins especially do barres us out of the New Jerusalem, Rev. 21. 8. 6. 22. 15. 1 Cor. 6. 9. 2. Legal uncleannes and corruption of nature, differ as much as legal uncleannes and actual wickedness. But Eraust said the former cannot typifie the latter. 1. Because Legal uncleannes is often involuntary. 2. It is not universally forbidden. 3. Many godly men may be legally unclean, but actual moral wickedness is not so, even so say I. All naturall or original uncleannes is voluntary in Adam. 2. Is universally forbidden. 3. It cannot coexist with that holiness which we must have, or we cannot see God. 3. By Eraust his fourth difference, legal uncleannes was otherwise punished then natural corruption, for natural corruption is punished with the first and second death, Ephes. 2. Rom. 5. 15. 16. the like may be said of all the rest. 4. Numb. 12. 14. Shame was inseparably annexed to Leprosie with contagion, so leavening of others, and shame is annexed to soul scandals, and annexed to casting out of the Church, 1 Cor. 5. 1. 7. 2 Thef. 5. 9. 10. But though a necessity of walking may be holden forth to us in Legal uncleannes, ere we enter into Heaven; yet not so directly as in legal separation, for in it men scandals are excluded out of the church, least the uncleane
Whether Erastus doth justly deny Cap. VII. Q. 3.

cleanse should infect the clean, as is clear as the light; Num. 19. 22. Hag. 2. 13. Gal. 5. 9. 10. 1 Cor. 5. 6, 7. but wicked men are not excluded out of the New Jerusalem in heaven, for fear they should infect and defile any person in heaven. 2. Separation from the Church is medicinal, Num. 12. 14. that the party may be humbled and pardoned; 2 Cor. 5. 6, 7. that the Spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord; 1 Cor. 5. 5. and the man shamed for his further good; 2 Thes. 3. 14. But exclusion of men out of the New Jerusalem for their uncleanness, Rev. 21. is not medicinal, that they may be humbled, but for their everlasting shame and destruction; and therefore a separation from the Church by way of discipline is here intended, not any exclusion out of heaven.

Page 140.

Erastus. All legall uncleannesse is punished with exclusion, but no man for corruption of nature is excluded out of the Church.

Ans. We grant all, and therefore legall uncleannesse did hold forth a great scandalousnesse, not natural corruption.

Erastus. The actions of unclean men were punished by death, Ergo, Not by exclusion out of the Church.

Ans. The Antecedent is not universally true: Capitall faults, as I said before, were onely thus punished; the consequence is null.

Erastus. He that was legall unclean, did defile all, beside him, even vessels, places, garments; but Thieves, adulterers do not defile, but these that consent to their wickednesse; nor did they defile the places. The adulterous women brought to the Priest and temple, did not defile the Priest or Temple, Ioh. 8. Nor did Moses and others abstain from the worship, the Manna, &c., because many wicked men did partake thereof, nor were the vessels purifed after wicked men touched them; therefore it followeth not, because God is more offended with the sacrifices of the wicked, then of those that are oneley legall unclean, that therefore wicked men are no lesse to be debarred from the holy things, then those that are legally unclean.

Ans. This is to dispute with God; God made a law, that he who being legally unclean, should touch men or things legally unclean, should pollute. This Law, God, freely made, as a positive statute, who can tye God to the like Law, touching those, that are morally unclean? no man: now because God made no such Law, it leaveth not off to be the blame of the Priests, that they brought the unclean person'd in heart to the Sanctuary, as God complained.

Ezek.
Ezek. 44. 8, 9. c. 22, 26. And that the Church should hinder the wicked to pollute the holy things of God. 2. The adulterous woman was brought to the Priest and Temple to be judged, God had so commanded, and therefore no wonder she polluted neither Priest nor Temple, but had thee not polluted the Passover Morally, though I say not Ceremonially, if she had eaten without Repentance and offering for her sinne? I thinke she would.  

Erastus. Though God punisht he pollution of holy things, by debarring men from them, it followeth not that be winketh at them, for be punisht them with death, and more grievously.  

Ans. But by this that God punisht he pollution of non-converting Ordinances with death, we gather that the Church should also hinder the pollutions of them, and punish Swine that trample on Peasles, and not prostitute holy things to their lust. Beza said, those that were unclean, had need of Sacrifices, Ergo, They were guilty of sinne. Erastus faith, that external uncleannesse was not sinne, but because it put us in mind of our naturall corruption, that had need to be purged in Christ's blood. Ans. The breach of a Law is sin, a Ceremoniall Law is a Law: 3. It was punished often with cutting off from the Congregation, but God did not cut off men from the Congregation for naturall corruption, as Erastus granteth.  

Erastus. If legall uncleannesse were sinne, God would not have commanded it. But God commanded, or at leaft permitted the Priests and others to pollute themselves with the dead, Levit. 21. Ezek. 44.  

Ans. It is weakly argued, for the father to kill the sonne, then should be no sinne; God commanded Abraham to offer up his son Isaac; it is not properly a defiling, nor a sinne, when God Levit. 21. willeth the Priest to be near those of his kin when they die, it is Gods owne exception from the Law, though to come neere to others when they are dead be sin. Gods commanding and forbidding will is the formall cause and rule of obedience and sinne.  

Erastus. Where finde you that the Priests were so judge whether Page 150. any had repented, that so be might be admitted to the Temple?  

Ans. It is written, Ezek. 44. 99. c. 22, 26. the Priests should not have admitted the uncircumcised in heart to the Sanctuary; Ergo, they should have tryed if they were such ere they admitted them. Yea, if in the very day of his oblation ere he offer, the sinner must first restore what sinfully taken away, Lev. 6. 4, 5, 6. Ergo, The Priest
Priest except he rule unjustly, should judge whether he have first restored it in the principall, and added the siste part more in it, Lev. 6. 5. As Ezra the Priest stood up, and said unto them, ye have transgressed, and have taken strange wives,--now therefore make confession, and separate your selves from the people of the Land, and from the strange wives, Ezra, c. 10. v. 11, 12. And this they did ere they sacrificed; Ergo, the Priests judged of their repentance, before they were admitted to Sacrifice; and the washing of the hands in innocency before the person compassed the Altar, Psal. 26. 6. must be tryed by the Priest, if not, the Priest offered to God the Sacrifice of fools, and did eate the finnes of the people, in offering for contumacious impendiums.

Eraclus saith, the putting away of their wives was a civil service, and belonged to the Magistrate.

Ans. Ezra was a Priest, and Shechaniah saith, ver. 5. Arise, this matter belongs to thee, and he is ordinarily called Ezra the Priest.

CHAP. 8. Quest. 4.

How Eraclus acquitteth himselfe, in proving that the place Matt. 18. maketh nothing for Excommunication.

Eraclus. The scope of the Lord is to teach how great an evil Scan- dal is, and how without offence scandals of vnaught may be removed, because when we referre an injury to the judge, the vnaught may be scandalized; he speaketh not here of great injuries; to be removed by Excommunication, but of lesser, and private ones between brother and brother, before we bring them before heathen judicatures proper to Heathens, and Publicans.

Ans. There is no scope of our Saviour to prevent heathen judicatures dreamed of in the Text, nor a shadow thereof, Psal. decimam tertiam consequiendum. 2. He speaketh not of small injuries onely. 1. Christ must not be strained in his words; he speaketh of scandals in generall, ver. 7. Woe to the world, because of offencers, they be not light that bringeth a woe upon the world. add faith indefinite
indefinite, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, this is comprehensive of all offences. 3. He speaks of such offences, from which I am to gaine my brother. Verse 15. But I am to gaine him from all, great or small. 4. He speaketh of such as I must bring before the Church, in case of my brothers obstinacy; but that is comprehensive of all, verse 17. 5. He speaketh of such as are bound in heaven, these be great and small, verse 19. 6. He speaketh of such as I must forgive, v. 15, but I must forgive all to seventy seventimes as Luke 17. 7. He speaketh of such as being perfisit in, maketh a brother no brother, but as a Heathen and a Publican, but great and publike Scandals rather doe this, then small and private ones.

Erasius. The sense is when thy brother, that is, any Jew, doth thee an injurie, study to reconcile him to thee thy self alone; if thou speed not so, assay the same before two or three witnesses, but if neither so thou canst thy self of injurie, tell the Synedrie, that is, tell the Magistrate of thy people, or thy own Religion; but if he will not hear the Magistrate, then shou mayest without the offence of any, deale against him, as a Publican, and an uninjurious Heathen, who will acknowledge onely the Roman judicature, and pursue him there.

Ans. If this be the sense, it is farther from the understanding many miles then the words; a common reader may come after, and finde a more native sense. 1. If thy brother offend thee, &c. should not be restricd to the Jews only, nor the Gentiles only, the Disciples, for the most were Gentiles and neerer Christians then Jews. 2. Brother is as large as the offender, as those of the Church. 3. As large as the offender, to be gained, Paul was to doe what he could to gaine Iewes and Gentiles, and both may offend. 2. Christ's scope is not so much to free the Plaintiff from injuries, (it is a carnall like gloss) as to remove Scandals and Stumbling blocks out of the way of both; and gaine the offenders sole. Observe that the Exploision of Erasius is so wille than sense, scriptures, or Greeke Authors cannot dream that(let him be as a Heathen,) can be in sense all one with this. Pursue him for his injury before the Roman judicatures. But the Exploision we give according to the way in its first notion, doth offer it selfe to the understanding: For, Let him be to thee, as an Heathen, is, let him be counted as one that is without the Church, and not of the people of God, as the word Heathen is taken, Levit. 25, 44. 2 King. 17, 8. Psal. 2, 1. Psal. 44, 2.
Ps. 46.6, 76.9.16. Lam. 1.3. Ezek. 20.23. Lam. 1.10, Acts. 4.27.
Cor. 5.1. Eph. 2.11. 1 Thes. 4.5. 1 Pet. 2.12. Rev. 11.12.

3. It will be long ere Scripture make a parallel to this; Tell the Church, that is, Tell the King, tell the civil judge, that is, tell not the Church; For the Church dealeth with spiritual Armour (and the King is not the Church) 2. with no force or violence, but the word and discipline; 3. with the man's conscience, to gain the man to repentance, for so all Christ's three steps is to save the soul and to gain him to repentance.

Eraustus lays a good Iron club over the offenders shoulders, and brings the offender to a Civilian, to whom Christ never committed the Gospel: What? shall the justice of peace, preach Christ to the offender, and wield the rod of Christ's power out of Zion? Is there no way but that to gain a soul? 2. He brings him to one who hath no weapon, to a Magistrate, but a weapon of steel, the sharp sword; or 3. will this Magistrate not labour to gain him, which clearly is Christ's intent (O he is greedy in his Stairs to have the lost gained, as is ver. 11.12.) then Christ misleth his end. But whether the man repent or no (faith Eraustus) the Magistrate as such, must cudgell the offender. 4. It is admirable that (Let him be to thee as a publican and a Heathen) must be a new Judicature, and this is to drive him to Caesar's Tribunall; a strange gloss: but 1. This will loose him out of hand; will Nero and the Heathen judge, Preach him back a submissive Lamb to the Jews? But 2. How do you this Citra offensionem, without scandalizing? Paul cannot advise what Erasustus doth; he thinks Christians should rather suffer injuries, then to implead a brother before a Heathen judge. 1 Cor. 6. Yea, but er you suffer so (faith Eraustus) cause him to compare, and answer the highest Heathen judge on earth, to teach him better manners: This is a vindicative way: 2. Scandalous heathens will say, See how these Disciples of Jesus agree: 3. It is the highest rupture of love, 1 Cor. 6.

Eraustus. By my exposition, I do not, as Beza faith, take away a brotherly pardoning of all injuries, for though Christ teach us how to compose and remove only private injuries piously, and without the scandalizing of the weak, it followeth not therefore Christ teacheth that only private injuries are to be pardoned; doth Christ teach no other thing? I never thought that only light injuries are to be pardo-
Cap. VIII. Q. 4. from Erastus his gloss.

and 1. When either we chide him, or we unwillingly acknowledge his faults, we are to pardon him, for if we must bring a small injury to the Church, far more must we bring a greater injury.

As. 1. Christ would to many injuries to be pardoned, as is comprehended in this general (if thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him), but this comprehends great injuries, and all injuries. It being as Erastus faith, parallel to [verse 19.18]. Thou shalt not suffer sin in thy Brother. What? must we not suffer a small sin in our Brother, because that were to hate him in our heart? But we may suffer great sins in him, and not rebuke him; yet that should not be hatred of our Brother. 2. Christ is not only teaching how to remove scandals; but how to remove them by gaining our Brother, even by telling the Church; if need be, that they may labour to gain him also, if one brother, and if one with two or three witnesses cannot gain him to repentance; and so he would have all injuries pardoned, out of which we are to gain our brother. 3. It is too narrow a compass, to which Erastus draweth Christ in his words, only to remove the scandal without offending the weak, to labour to remove only petty scandals and not great; yea, and public to our whole Church. 4. Erastus seemeth to imagine, if we draw our brother before the Church, that is, the Civil Magistrate, we do not then forgive him; it being now a great injury, but he is deceived, we are to forgive our brother, and to pray for his forgiveness; even when we make the offence publick, and when he repenteth not, as Christ did forgive as man, though he that Crucified him, though they did not repent, [verse 2.21, 22, 23]; [verse 24.35, 36].

5. Erastus cannot deny but great injuries should be brought before the Magistrate, and a little injury, when an offender refuseth to obey the Christian Magistrate, must be a great injury, which maketh the man, as a heathen and a publican; What is before answered, I shall not need to trouble the Reader withal to repeat.

Erastus. The reason why Christ speaketh here of the transgression of private injuries, is because he speaketh always in the singular number, if thy brother offend thee, rebuke him between him and thee alone, take two other, them, tell them the Church: Let him be to thee, as a publican; be that is Excommunicated, is not Excommunicated so one only, but to all the Church.

As. This shall make the whole ten Commandments, [verse 20] and
The place, March. 18. vindicated Cap. VIII. Q. 4.

and the whole Gospel and the profession of it, Rom. 10.9. which are all spoken to one in the singular number, often in the second person to command private virtues, and forbid private sins only, and not to be Laws obliging the Church in publick duties, and to eschew publick sins.

Erasius Answereth, Let him be to thee who art injured, and to all that are injured, as a Publican, not to the whole Church; for there be some laws that agree privately to the Magistrate, and to none other, some to Parents, not to children, to Masters, not servants, so neither is this precept to all Christians as the Decalogue is, and such like, but only to those that are privately hurt; be faith not, rebuke every brother thou meetest with, but the brother that sinneth against thee. Christ speaketh not in this third person, nor to the Church, for the Disciples were not the Synedrie, or that Church.

Ans. 1. Its most false, that all the precepts of the Decalogue are all of them spoken to all and every man: Honour thy Father and mother that begat thee, is one of the Commandments; and it is not spoken to those that are only Parents themselves, and have their natural parents dead: but doth it follow that that Command doth injoyne private obedience, and forbid only private, not publick disobedience to natural Parents: So the sixth Command saith, If thy brother fall in a Lyon's den so the hazard of his life, pull him out; if thou cannot rescue him thy self alone, take three with thee and assay it; if thou cannot so rescue him, tell it to twenty: The man is not to rescue every brother here, but only, the brother that is in danger to be devoured with the Lyon: will any say the Law of the sixth Commandment is given here, to one private man to help another in a private danger? This (rebuke thy brother) is the Law of nature, and it is under this, Lev 19.17. Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thy heart: And if I rebuke him not for sinne, any sinne, and the most publick, and so most offensive and scandalous to many; I hate him; nay, I am not so much to rebuke him and gain his soul, because the sin is an injury done to me, as because it is done against the Majesty of God, and destructive to the offenders soul, and I must labour to gain his soul. 2. Erasius dreames that that is a private sin, which is done to one man, or one ranke of men; to a Ma-

Chief speaking in the second person, argueth not the privacy of the scandal.
gift, is not a subject; he is beguiled, an offence, and publick stumbling-block may be laid before one man, and it is often a publick sin.

3. The speaking of it in the second person is nothing, for, if the false teachers be saved, Rom. 10. 9. is as publick and universal, as John 3. 16. Wherefore he is saved. The second person in all precepts of Law and Gospel (and this, rebuke an offending brother, is both) is as broad as the third person, and as large in extent, except you say the verse John 3. 16. comprehends then more believers that are saved, then Rom. 10. 9., of which is against sense.

4. Christ ought not to have spoken to his Disciples as a Church, because he is directing them as members and parts of a Church, how to deal with an offender; but if he be not the Church, that is, the Christian Magistrate, he should die, faith Beza. Erastus answereth, But the Church or Jewish Synedrie had no power of life and death; now they were under the Roman Empire.

Ans. Christ here then sheweth not a way to remove Scandals, because the Roman Emperors sword is not Christ's Spiritual way, 2 Cor. 10. The weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty through God.

Erastus. By this same place, I cannot prove there is such a thing as Excommunication, what is said to one is said to the whole Church; but it is said to one, that he should forgive an offending brother seventyseven times in one day, if he acknowledge his fault; Ergo, there can be no just cause why the whole Church should not doe, that which every member is obliged to doe, but your Presbyters will punish though anyone should confess his fault.

Ans. There is a twofold forgiving, one private, in passing the private revenge of the fault and grudge against the person of the offender: thus the whole argument is granted, for Members and Church both are to pray, Forgive us our sinnes, as we forgive them that sin against us: I hope the Synedrie, the Roman President, the Magistrate, thus are obliged to forgive those whose heads they justly take from them, so Luke 17. We are to forgive our brother seventyseven times a day, though he neither repent nor crave pardon, but far more, if he crave pardon. But by this Argument the Christian Magistrate should use the sword against no bloody Parricide, for he is thus to forgive him, and much more, if he say he repented. 2. To forgive, is to remit all punishment, and so what is said
said to one Member of the Church, is not said to the whole Church. Private men have not power of Church-punishment to forgive it. The Church hath a power limited by Christ, that is to forgive and open heaven, in so farre as they see Christ goe before, and see the man penitent, and therefore Erasius his consequence is short, it follows not, that the Church should no more excommunicate them one Member. Erasius looks farre beside the booke, in that he thinkes it is all one to forgive an injury, and to remove a scandal in the way of Christ in labouuring to gaine a brother. I may forgive one that offendeth me, and not labour at all to gaine his soul. Erasius. We cannot expound sic et, against thee, against the Church, because he saith, after, tell the Church, then the sense should be, O Church, tell the Church.

Anf. It is not denied by us, but that the Scandal in the rife may be private, but Erasius will have our Saviour to speake only of private Scandals. 2. If one Church shall offend another, the offended may admonish, and if the Church be not gained, the offended, Church is to tell more Churches Synodically convened, as may be gathered from Christ. Soope, to remove all Scandals between brother and brother, Church and Church.

Erasius. Tell him between thee and him, if it be told me consic. I only knowing, then he hath sinned against me privately; should I not reprove him before others, if he have sinned against others? but Christ will not have me to take any Witnesses at the first.

Anf. 1. I may tell him between me and him, a publike fault: this proveth onely my admonition to be private, when the fault is known to twenty and scandalizeth them, and it proveth not the fault to be private. But you will say, then I must take these twenty who are offended, no lesse then I am to goe my selfe. I answer, not so; For 1. I may be ignorant that any knowes it, and I am not to uncover what God hath covered, except it were a sin that bringeth wrath on the whole Land, as blood, and the Canaanites sinses.

2. Though I should know twenty were offended, charity will bid me try, if I onely can gaine him, and then love maketh the worke easier to twenty.

Erasius. But Matthew and Luke compared together, doe teach that Christ speaketh of such sinses, as one Brother may pardon another seventy seven times; and the question of Peter to Christ, bow oft shall
my brother offend, and I forgive him? saith he, that Christ speaketh not of such sins as private men may forgive, for Peter knew well, that he alone could not forgive these sins, which only the Church and a multitude can pardon.

Ans. Though it be true, Matthew and Luke c. 17. speak both of scandals and scandalous sins in general, yet it is evident they speak of two sorts of scandals; Luke speaketh v. 3. of scandals between brother and brother, which may at first be taken away by rebukes; but he hath nothing of the Churches part touching these. But Matthew hath it at length, chap. 18. ver. 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20. Then Luke 17, 4. and Matthew more distinctly, chap. 18. ver. 21. upon the occasion of Peter's question, resolves a case of conscience, how Christians are to pass by in love the faults one of another, even to seventy times seven; they are not scandals of one and the same nature, as Erastus conceiveth. The former is, how we may gain an offending brother from the guilt of active scandal in giving offence to us, and that is by free rebuking; and if that gain him not, then by taking witnesses and rebuking him; and if neither can do it, by telling the Church, to which Christ hath given a more powerfull way, to bind and loose in earth and heaven, faith: Matthew: Luke speaketh onely of simple rebuking, which tendeth to the other two. The latter way, is how we our selves may be freed from passive scandal, if our brother provoke us seventy times, or seventy seven times a day: this must be by a private pardoning, and laying aside all grudge, or hints of revenge toward our brother, and this is a great mistake in Erastus, that he confoundeth those two scandals, which by two Evangelists are distinguished, for Peter upon occasion of the former Church-scandaals, propheth the second, Mar. 18. 21. then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Peter asketh nothing of gaining the offender, and Christ answereth nothing of gaining him, having satisfied them fully in that before: But Peter came in with a new question, concerning private forgiving. 2. It is evident in the former, that Christ speaketh not of sins, that one brother may forgive another; for then it were free to the offended, after two admonitions ineffectual to gain the offender, to forgive and desist, as he doth in the matter of forgiving: But it is not free to him to desist, if the offender refuse to be gained, and add contemptuous;
The offender cannot pardon the punishment (he ought to remit the private grudge) he is under a command of Christ to tell the Church, that is one punishment, and if he yet be obstinate, he is to be reputed as a Heathen and a Publican, that is another punishment, which a private man cannot dispense with: 1. He cannot dispense with Christ's command. 2. He cannot omit all Lawful means of gaining the soul of his brother; for the Law of nature tyeth him to it. Erastus will have it a matter of holding off of an injury, only by complaining to the Roman Emperor, a carnall way. Christ is on a higher and more spirituall strain to gain a soul, as is clear. If he hear shee, then haste gained thy brother, rest there: But if he hear thee not, go yet on to gain him: Take with thee two or three, then if he had been gained at first, a second admonition before two or three were needless. But if yet he be not gained, then go yet on, to seek the gaining of his soul; and tell the Church, and if the Church cannot gain him: then let him be as a Publican, and cast out: This is also a way of gaining, that his spirit may be saved, 1 Cor. 5. Therefore this is most false, that Christ speaketh of those sins which we may forgive: Who can believe that it is credible that our Saviour hath a more noble end, and more excellent then to gain a brothers soule: or that he doth teach us in these words to descend from such a spirituall end, as the repentance of an offender, to a far baser end, to hold off injuries by fleeing to a heathen Judicature?

Thef. 42. pag. 28.
Erastus. Christ speaks of such sins, as the offender cannot deny before witnesses. But sins to be punished by Excommunication, so baimous, as deserveth to be delivered to Satan, he would deny: Ergo, he must speak of smaller sins.

Ans. This is for us, he speaketh of such sins that the offender will persist in, against the Authority of witnesses, Synedrie, or Church and Magistrates, as Erastus thinketh while he be as a Profane Heathen; Ergo, he may deny them: 2. If we suppose three faithfull witnesses, who have seen and heard, such as will testify the sin before the Church, it is like to be a grievous and publick trespass. Nor would Christ have the Magistrate troubled, and the Church offended for such sins as may fall out, in a brother, seven times; yea, seventy seven times in one day, and may be, by private transactions pardoned, as Erastus saith: How should Erastus
his civil throne, sink under threescore and ten scandals in one day?

Erastus. The Church punisbeth not the man for such sins, but dismisseth him as an injurious person.

Ans. True, if we believe Erastus begging the question. 2. To declare a brother, no brother, but a profane Heathen, without Christ in the world, nad out of the Covenant of Grace, must be the highest Church-censure, &c must be more highly punished than so.

Erastus. I call them light faults only compared with crimes punished by the Law.

Ans. Such as contumaciously defended, makes a man none of Christ's, but the profanest living; yea, of a believing Jew, an Apostate, and a Heathen, deserveth to be punished by the judge.

Erastus. If the offended be willing to suffer the injury then to compose before a heathen judge, he may.

Ans. There be no smell of an Heathen, or Roman Judge in the Text, 1d Erastus adduces de suo. 2. It is not free to gain, or not gain, my brothers soul, or obey Christ's command, or not obey it.

Paul, 1 Cor. 6. forbiddeth us to implead our brethren before Heathen Judges; Erastus saith, Christ commandeth the contrary: Erastus answeres, Paul saith in these things that we sit, and sitting in smaller matters, as of goods we should not.

Ans. It's true, Paul giveth instance, in those that he calleth things of this life, but in opposition to the great matter of judging the world and Angels: 2. Paul saith generally; Ye go to law one with another, 1 Cor. 6.1, 2, 3, 4. And he esteemeth it such a fault, that he saith of it, v. 9. Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.

Erastus. Paul himself appealed to a heathen judge Cesar.

Ans. True, but not for small offences falling out seventy seven times a day, for which the Magistrate will not punish, such as these offences be, faith Erastus, pag. 181, pag. 28. Thes. 42. But being accused of a high crime of life and death. 2. He appealed not from a godly Magistracy, such as the Synedry holdeth forth, but from bloody judges: 3. In matters not with Saints, as 1 Cor. 6. And brethren to whom you are to grant pardons, seven, and seventy seven times a day, but with Blasphemers, and Murtherers of Christ, Acts 18.6. 1 Thes. 2.15.
Eras tus. Christ teacheth how private injuries may be removed, without offence by the Magistrate, but not before may reduce to repentance a brother that giveth scandal.

Ans. Theres not a footstep of injuries or Magistrate, or sword in the Text: 2. ver. 7. And all along he speaketh of scandals that may hinder our entering to heaven, and these words; rebuke him, Thou hast gained thy brother, are clear as the Sun, that he intendeth the offended, in all these steps, is to gain the soul of the offender.

Eras tus. This is no Argument at all, he speaketh of gaining an offending brother: Ergo, His scope is not to repair any civil loss: But I pray you, a brother arguest an injurious man, and convinseth him of his error; hast he not first gained him to God, and then to himself, while he maketh him of his enemy his friend? Can there be a better way of compounding private injuries? if his conscience be healed, will he not leave off to be injurious?

Ans. I may say, as he faith to that Apostolick servant of God, holy Beza, Egregia vero raisocietatis: The question is now touching the scope of Christ, Matth. 18. Eras tus proveth repairing of civil injuries to be Christ's scope, and how proveth he it? Because he that is gained to God by repentance, is made a friend, and will leave off to do civil wrongs: Just as if one should say, the scope of the holy Ghost, in the history of the Creation, in the two first chapters of Genesis, is to make the Reader a good Philosopher: Why? because he that understandeth the works of Creation, the Heaven, Stars, Sun, Moon, Seas, dry Land, Trees, Herbs, &c. Mult not this man be an excellent Astronomer, Geographer, Physiopa, &c? So may he say, the scope of the holy Ghost, in the ten Commandments, is to make a man an excellent Citizen of London, or Paris, Why? how is that the scope of the ten Commandments? by Eras tus his Argument, What better way can there be to make a good social Citizen, then if he be well versed in the Doctrine of the ten Commandments? So may I say, the scope of Paul in the first eleven Chapters of the Epistle to the Romans, is to make a man love his brother, why? Because if he know God, and free justification by faith in Christ, and our freedom from the Law, and the Doctrine of Election by Free-grace, and the like, he cannot but love his brother: Now how can that be Christ's scope, which is nei-
ther spoken In terminis? Not so much as insinuated? Now to gain an offending brother is In terminis spoken, ver. 15. Thou hast gained thy brother; so Erasus granteth this is Christ's scope, but not his last scope; and gaining of his soul he will have, but a scope for a civil end to hold off injuries: How carnall is the glosse of Erasus? Now the scope of Erasus is never spoken, never hinted at: Erasus cannot deny our scope, onely he will not have it the chief scope of the words; the best ground he hath for his scope is that, Tell the Church, is, Tell the Civill Magistrate.

Erasus to put a good face on the businesse, faith, scanning on the Pg. 188, sense of the words, Christ therefore faith rebuke him, Matth. 18. That we may understand, that he is to be convinced of sin is error, and sin is unrighteous, that he may acknowledge it not only to us, and before men, but far more to God, and so thou hast gained thy brother, and lost him, if he refuse to hear thee, that is, If he suffer not himself to be convinced, and do not acknowledge his fault, he is bound in Heaven, and this is that which I would say, this gaining of him is the pardoning of a civil wrong; that he may be received in friendship.

Ans. If Christ's intention be, that he may rather acknowledge his fault to God then to the offender, as Erasus granteth, then Christ's scope in these words, must be his spiritually gaining to God, not a civil depulion of a civil wrong, but the former: Erasus granteth 2. If spiritually gaining be intended in all the steps of our Saviours progress, and when this is obtained, the progress doth cease; then means rather crossing and thwarting that scope, then suitable spiritually thereunto, are not to be attempted; then is not civil depulion of injuries our Saviours scope in the words, but the former is true; Ergo, So is the latter; the Proposition is evident, from the nature of a scope, and end in any speech. I prove the Assumption by parts. 1. If rebuking of an offending brother gain him to repentance, then it is clear the offended man is to rest there, and not to Tell the Church or Magistrate, for he hath obtained even the end, for which Erasus contendeth, and who goeth about new means to compasse an end already obtained? Christ would never command that, yea, when Christ faith, ver. 16. If he hear not thee, then take with thee one or two more; Ergo, If he had heard him, he was not to take one or two more, and ver. 17. If he should neglect to heare them, he was to tell the Church: Ergo, If he should hear them,
them, he was gained, and was not to tell the Church; Ergo, spirituall gaining must be Christ's scope. 2. If to tell the Church, be as Erasmius dreameth, to tell the Civill Magistrate, and then the Roman Emperor; this was no suitable mean to gain the mans soul; a club was never dreamed of by our Saviour to compass the spirituall end, or nearest scope of gaining any to repentance; for the end of the Magistrate, as a Magistrate, is to bring no man to repentance, but to take away evil out of the land, to caule Israel fear, and do so no more, to be an avenger of evil doing, far lesse is there any shadow of reason to dream that Christ intended by Cesar, or any Heathen Magistrates sword, to gain an offending brother to repentance, and that he commandeth the offended brother to use such a carnal mean so unsuitable to such a spirituall end. Lastly, How a private brother cannot be said to binde and loose, I have cleared already.

Erasmius. Leaff these words (Let him be to thee as an Heathen) should seeme to make the offender every way as an Heathen; therefore he addeth a restrictive word, and a Publican) and he addeth the article; common to them both, so as he speake not of every Heathen and Publican, but of those who were conversant amongst the Jews, and none of those would answer to any Judge, but the Roman Emperor or his deputies, being the servants of the Romans, to vex the people of the Jews.

Anf. Here is a groundlesse conjecture, for a Publican was large as odious as a Heathen, being a companion to sinners, and the worst of the Heathen.

2. How provest he that 4 things, that Heathen is meant of those Heathen only, that were servants to the Romans, and would acknowledge no Judge but Cesar. 2. The Jews themselves said, We have no King but Cesar: 2. The holy Ghost doth not restrict the Heathem so; What warrant hath Erasmius to be narrower in his glosse then the holy Ghost is in the Text. If in thence, (Let him be as an Heathen) the threatening be perpetuall, to remove all scandals, to the end of the world; when most of the Heathen shall not acknowledge the Judicatures of Heathen Rome, then the word Heathen must be as large as all Heathen, all wicked and all scandalous men, such as Publicans, and so there is no hint at the Heathen Roman Judge here, which is the way of Erasmius. But the former is true; for this Law of Christ is to remove scandals among the Disciples when
Can Erastus sayone use babling prayers but such heathen as were subject to the Roman Empire; Gal. 2. 9. That we should go to them, to the Heathen, here is an Article also; belike Paul should preach to no Gentiles but those under the Roman Empire: A frothy dream, Gal. 3. 8. The Scripture foreseeing God would justify the Gentiles. Here also an Article, belike then no Gentiles are justified by faith, but these that are Officers to the Romans, and vexed the Jews; Acts 18. 6. Henceforth I will go to the Gentiles, Acts 21. 19. Paul told the things the Lord had done by his Ministration in the Churche amongst the Heathen, Acts 26. 23. that Christ should shew light to the people, and his power, and to the Heathen, and the Roman heathen only, except Christ be a Saviour to no other Heathen in the world: I need not weary the Reader with these unfoild conjectures of Erastus.

Erastus Converted Publicans were not souldiers, as touching their Office, Eras. A publican signifies not one that is none of the Church; Zachus after his conversion remained a Publican.

Ans. Converted Publicans left not off to be Publicans, but they left off to be such as went under the name of Publicans; that is, abominable Extortioners and grinders of the Poore: and therefore it followes well, that to be a Publican in the common speech of the Jews, familiar to our Saviour, was to be a wretched godless prophane man, without the Church, and without God and Christ in the world; as also the Heathen were; Eph. 2. 11. 12. 1 Cor. 1. 14. 15. 2 Cor. 4. 3. 4. Acts 21. 11. Rom. 3. 24. blasphemers of the Name of God, and in Cor. 10. 1. You know that you were Gentiles carried away with dumb Idolts, Eph. 4. 17. Thus ye walk not as other Gentiles, in the vanity of their minds. 18. Having the understanding darkned, being strangers from the life of God. These and many other Scriptures confirmeth me much, that in Christ's time to be as a Heathen and a Publican, was to be cast out, whereas the man was once a brother, a beleever, and in profession in the covenant of God, and a brother to Peter, John and the Lords Disciples, and a Christian and professing Saint, as the disciples of Christ were, but now one who is turned out of
that society, and as a Gentile serving Satan, walking in the van-
ity of the minde, as an un circumcision man, &c. This is as like Ex-
communication, as one egg is like another: we have cleare Scrip-
ture for this Exposition, but it is good Erastus never gave us one
yllable of Scripture for his exposition: Nor can it be shewn that
to be as a Heathen and a Publican by Scripture, or any that ever
spoke Greeke, is to be in subjection to the Roman Empire, or ly-
able to their lawes, onely we have diction of Erastus for it.

Page 191.

Eraistus. Whoever by no law of God or command was execrable,
and could for no just cause be hated, by no Law of God could be
debarrd from the Temple and holy things of God. But such were
the Publicans; Ergo,

Ans. 1. The Major is false. The Leper because a Leper was by
no Law of God cursed, and execrable, nor was he worthy of ha-
tred, but of pity; yet was he by an express Law debarrd from the
Temple and holy things of God.

2. The Minor is false, in the sense we contend for, the office of
a Publican in abstrato was not execrable, nor worthy of hatred:
but the thing signified, and that which proverbially went under
the name of a Publican amongst the Jews, to wit, a professed ex-
tortioner, a robber, a grinder of the face of the poore, is both ex-
ccrable and hateful; the conclusion in the former sense is granted,
and it is nothing against us: But in the latter sense, the Asumpti-
on being false, the conclusion followeth not; not to say, that in
ordinary, none was a Publican, but he that was either an heathen,
and so execrable, or then an Apostate, wretched, unchristian Jew.

Eraistus. But I have demonstrated that no man was debarrd from
holy things, for Morall uncleanness, then neither should a Publican be
counted a seprarated man, will Christ command him to be cast out
whom the Jews could by no Law cast out?

Ans. If we give the matter to Erastus his word, all he saies are
demonstrations: Let the reader read and judge. 2. All his argu-
ment here proceedeth on a false ground, while he contendeth so
much to justifie Publicans he presumeth (to be as a Publican) to
be in our sense all one with this, (to be excommunicated.) But
1. we lay the least weight on the word (Publican) and more on this,
(to be as an heathen.) 2. We take them not divisively, but as Christ
speaketh them, copulatively. We say, not to be excommunicate
all one, as, let him be as a Publican, but that to be excommunicated, is to be as a Heathen. άρνησθης and as a Publican.

Eraus: The article δίς is set before both the word (Heathen) and the word (Publican) by the holy Spirit, which signifies either the very nature of the predicate (heathen and Publican) or must put a great Emphasis and a great ease of difference between the Heathen and Publican here, and in other places, as these be not one, Petrus et, άρνησθης Petrus et, άρνησθης (Peter is a man) and Peter is the man, or that man.) So when we say, pleasure is that good thing, άρνησθης, that chiefest happiness; we say more then when we say pleasure is good, so άρνησθης that Publican must signify a Publican, as a Publican, if there be an Emphasis here common to both the heathen and the Publican, now there can be no other thing in the master of e'vewring Scandals common to both, but that both acknowledged no other but the Roman Magistrate, and therefore, except you make (to be a Publican,) δίς to be debarred from the Sacraments) all one, you have not another place in all the New Testament for your Excommunication, for no Publican because a Publican, was debarred by Gods Law, Jure divino, from the Sacraments.

Ans. 2. All the wits on earth cannot make us see another place for Eraus: his explication of this the word. Matth. 18, and of 1 Cor. 5. But we hope it shall appeare we have more from Scripture, to say for Excommunication then this one place, or then Eraus: and all his party can say against it; here is all that Eraus: can say against this strong place, builded upon one Article δίς; a poore and ignorant Grammatication. 1. He cudleth out the word (Publican) of leffe weight with us, from the word (Heathen) and would prove that no Publican because a Publican, and for the office, was debarred from the Jewish Sacraments, which we grant; for no office or place lawfull in it leffe, debarred any from Christ; Centurions were hateful to the Jewes, and put over them by the Romans, yet I should conceive the Centurion, whose servant Christ cured, Luke 7. was a Profelite, and a member of the Jewish Church, a lover of the Nation, else I see not how the Jewes would have accepted that he should build them a Synagogue, as he did ν. 5. and Publicans might have bin Profelites also, but that which was signified by a Publican to the Jews, was no leffe odious then the name of a hangman or a most wicked and flagitious man, as Matth. 5. 45, 46, 47.
46, 47. and by Christ decoyed from the number of the children of our heavenly Father: Amongst the Jews it was counted abomination to eat with Publicans, Matth. 9. 11. Matth. 11. 19. Luke 7. 34. And when Christ saith, Matth. 21. 31. of the rebellious Jews; Verily, I say unto you, that you are as the publicans and harlots shall enter into the Kingdom of God before you: He clearly maketh Publicans the wickedst of men; shall these two, is it make us think Erastus were not dreaming, if he should from these words gather that Christ, meaneth only of such Publicans and Harlots as acknowledged no other Magistrate, but the Roman Magistrate? And the Article ῥα is doubled in the following verse also.

2. Let us retort this Argument, he that heareth not the admonitions of brethren in secret, and of the Church in publick, is to be reputed, not as a Jew, or a brother and member of the Church having right to the holy things of God, but as a Heathen.

Now a Heathen to the Jews was no brother, and had no right to the Sacraments, either of the Jewish, or Christian Church, as is clear by the word of God, therefore he that heareth not a brother in secret, or the Church in publick, is to be reputed as no brother (I mean in that publick visible way he once was) but as a Heathen, who hath no right, Iren. div. vol. by God's Law to the Sacraments. 3. What means all this trifling about the Article ῥα? Say that the Article ῥα should restrict Heathens and Publicans, to such and such Heathens and Publicans: I shall deny, In exteriorum, this consequence, Ergo, He means no other but only such Heathens and Publicans, as did acknowledge no other Magistrate, but a Roman Magistrate. There is no shadow in the Scripture, or in any Greek author for the Word, but rather ῥα signifies the qualitative and spiritual condition of any, especially when Christ speaketh of gaining of souls, as here, Mat. 18. 13. To I am sure ῥα signifies Joh. 1. 14. Mat. 6. 10. 1 Pet. 1. 19. To doth ῥα signifies Mat. 5. 5. and elsewhere, though I deny not but it may signifies a civil or natural sameness, but Christ doth here speake of neither, as is cleare. 4. If here a Publican as a Publican be meant, as Erastus saith; Ergo, All Heathens and all Publicans are here to be understood; Ergo, Not these only that had this common to them both, to wit, that they both acknowledged no civil Magistrate, but the Romans, the contrary of which Erastus affirgeth. 5. Yes, this is not emphatick and deservative of Heathen
Heathen and Publican, Christ acknowledged no civil judge as King over the Jews at this time but only Caesar, when he said Matt. 22. Give unto Caesar the things that are Cesar's, and to God the things that are Gods. And the Jews themselves did so when they said, we have no King but Caesar; If then to be as an Heathen and a Publican, be all one as to acknowledge no King, nor judge but Caesar, then to be as a Heathen and Publican, must be all one with this, to be as Christ and the Jews, for this was common to Heathens, Publicans, Jews and Christ, to acknowledge Caesar was their only King and civil Judge. 6. They were the worst of the Heathens and Publicans, who in a peculiar manner acknowledged no lawful judge but Caesar, and hated the Jews, the only Church of God most at this time; Ergo, If the Article ő inferre that a disobedient brother is most like these Heathen, they must be greatest enemies to the Jews, and so Erastus hath gained nothing, but lost much by his poor Grammatication. Yea, if the offended brother should repute the offender as the worst of the Heathen, he is to esteem him who was once a Member of the Church, in that he was obliged to hear the Church, now as a Heathen, and so no brother, no Member of the Church, and here Erastus must grant that one brother may unchurch and Excommunicate any other for disobedience to the Church, but the Church may not.

Erastus. They are as absurd who say, by Publicans here are understood wicked men, for then by Heathen must be understood also the wickedest of the Heathen, and not all the Heathen dwelling in Judea.

Ans. I deny the consequence, for by Publicans are meant men wicked and unpure by conversation, and by Heathen men unclean by condition, because without the Church, and strangers to the Israel of God, and without Christ and God in the world.

2. We have proved what is meant by a Publican, by evident Scriptures, but that by a Publican is understood one who acknowledged no Magistrate, but a Roman, no Scripture; no Greek author warranteth us to think it, never man dreamed it, but Erastus.

Erastus. The Pharises hindered not Christ and his Apostles to come to the Temple.
The place Matth. 18. vindicated: Cap. VIII. Q. 4.

Ans. Christ was a born Jew and circumcised; yea, and what can the Practice of the Murderers of Christ prove? It is no Law. But the Romans never sacrificed in the Temple, but gave Liberty to the Jews to serve God, according to his word, and to hear Christ preach, and that Christ kept the Ceremonial Law, and taught others, even the cleansed Leapers so to do, Matth. 8, is clear.

Eras tus. Private men do forgive sins, Matth. 18. Luk. 17. Ergo, to bind and loose is not a proper judicial act of a Court, Matth. 16. Christ speaketh not to Peter only, but to all the faithful, who by teaching one another, may bring one another to acknowledge their sin, and if they do it they are pardoned, if not, their sins are bound in Heaven.

Ans. To these the keys are given, who retain and remit sins, as Eras tus faith: But these be such as are sent of Christ, as the Father sent his Son, Ioh. 20. 2. Either in this place there is given power to bind and loose by publick preaching, the word, or by some other place; but this power to bind and loose by publick preaching, is only given to Pastors and Teachers, 1 Cor. 12. 29. Eph. 4. 11. 12. And Eras tus granteth elsewhere, that every private man by his office cannot preach, nor administer the Sacraments, and by no other place is this given to Pastors, for I could elude all places, with the like answer, and say there is a publick Baptizing and Administration of the Supper, by Ministers and sent Pastors only, and a private also performed by private Christians; yes, by a woman, and both are valid in Heaven, and the binding and loosing of both ratified in Heaven. 3. Christ spake this to the Disciples, who, before were sent to Preach, and cast out Devils, Matth. 10, and faith not, whom he the bindes on earth, but in the plural number, non qui se perspicaxerit salutem repudiat, insinuat. pag. 198.
which Peter speaketh, Mat. 18. 21, 22, 23. and Luke 17. 4, 5. is of an inferior nature; for I know not, if you can gain a brother's soul seven times a day, if he but say, It repenteth me, Luke 17. 4. or seventy seven times, Mat. 18. 22. These words, It repenteth me, said seventy times a day to the Church cannot satisfy to the gaining of a soul, whereas to the private remitting of revenge, it were enough. We have the Text to warrant us, that Christ spake to Stewards, to whom the keyes are committed. Erasius doth but wickedly assert, he spake to those who were as Christians in that act, but the Text is clear, he speaketh of binding and loosing spiritually, which is nothing to the holding off of a civil injury, which Erasius faith is the scope of our Saviour here, and how hungry must that sense be: that you deal with him as with an Heathen, who acknowledgeth no Judge, but a Roman judge, is a matter ratified in heaven? 4. A private man is to forgive an injury even though the offender repent not, Mat. 14. 15. Rom. 12. 19. 20. Col. 3. 13. but that pardon cannot be ratified in heaven. 5. See what we have said of binding and loosing before.

Erasius. Though Christ should speak this onely to Ministers, yet is followeth not that he speaketh this to other Presbyters.

Anf. That dependeth on the proving that there be ruling Elders in the Church, which I conceive I have proved else where, from Rom. 12. 8. 1 Cor. 12. 28. 1 Tim. 5. 17. I conceive when Christ spake this, there was neither a formed Presbytery, nor a formed Church.

Erasius. Christ faith not, if two or three Presbyters, or two or three Page 199. Ministers agree in one, I will hear them, but where two or three Christians agree.

Anf. Nor doe we say, that two or three can make an Excommunicating Church, but Christ argueth a minore, if the Lord heare two or three on earth, farre more will he heare a Church, and ratifie in heaven what they doe in binding and loosing offenders in Earth; But how shall these words agree to the interpretation of Erasius? for he expoundeth two or three and the whole Church, to be but one Christian Magistrate; can he be said to agree to himselfe? Or can one or two, or three meet together in Christ's Name? And, what coherence is here? Two or three conveneth to pray that he that will not hear the Christian Magistrate may be
dealt with as a Heathen man before the Roman judge, how vio-
lent and farre off is this glossie, and how unsuitable to the Text?

Eraetus. What other thing is it to a private brother, to gain an-
other to himselfe, and so God, than binding and loosing in Heaven?

Answ. To bring him before the cival Magistrate either Christian or
Heathen, whose intrinsicall end by vertue of their office, is not
to gaine soules, but to draw the blood of ill doers, is farre from
gaining of Souls.

Eraetus. Though binding and loosing be judicall and forinsecall
words, they agree not so to the Ministery onely, but rather to the Magi-
strate, except you say that in the time of Christ amongst the Jews,
there was a Church court besides the Magistrates court.

Answ. That they argue authority judicall, is proved already by
many Scriptures, and judicall authority Ecclesiasticall it must be,
which agreeeth to the Church, and it was never heard that the
Church especially in the New Testament, doth signifie the Magis-
trate. 2. There is no necessity to say there was a Christian Church
court in Chrisifs time, because there was not a Christian Magistrate
at this time, but the Jews had then a Church-court, before which
Christ was conveyed. Caiaphas being President, and the blinde
man, John 9. who was cast out of the Synagogue, for that he con-
fesseth Christ. 3. Christ speaketh of that which was to be, though
in its frame not yet erected.

Eraetus. Christ hath the like words of binding and loosing, Mat. 16.
which signifieth also to preach the Gospell, that he who beleueth
may be loosed, and he who beleueth not may be made inexcevable,
and therefore it is no other, but to pray a brother to desist from his in-
jury, shewing him that that is acceptable to God: for to binde and loo-
se in all the Scripture, is never to debarre any from the Sacraments; if
you divert your brother from doing an injurie, by declaring the will
and wrath of God, out of his Word, thou haft gaine him, and loosed
him, if he will not be persuaded, the wrath of God abides on him,
and thou haft bound him.

Answ. If loosing and binding Matth. 16. be preaching of the Word
of God, and loosing be Christian forgiving of an injurie, then are
women who are taught in the prayer of Christ, Mat. 6. to for-
give one another, invested with the keyes of the Kingdome of Hea-
ven, to preach the Gospell; and why not also to administer the
Seals?
Seals, and so are all private men clothed with the keyes to take in and cast out at their pleasure, and what are Ministers that are over the people in the Lord, and watch for their soules? 2. We never said, to binde was to debarre from the Sacraments, except consequently only, to binde, is to declare an obstinate man as a Heathen, and so no member of the house of Christ, and consequently to have no right to the bread of the children of the house, nor say we, that to Excommunicate is formally to debarre men from the Sacraments, it is to cast them out of the house: hence it must follow that the privileges of the house belongeth not to them.

3. You may diswade a man from doing a civil injury, and never gaine his soule, but the Magistrates club, for which Erastus contendeth in these words, cannot reach the soule.

Erastus. None can remit a debt but the creditor, nor pardon an injury but he who suffereth the injury.

Ans. Then none can binde, and loose but private men, and the keyes of heaven are given to all private persons, nor can private persons by forgiving, so remit the person as he is loosed in heaven.

2. The Church is offended at Scandals, and are sufferers; Ergo, The Church must binde and loose: Let Erastus teach us the way except by Church-censures.

Erastus. Casting out of the unclean is not to binde, because to purifie is not to absolve, the unclean might be purified by any cleane, and not by the Priest's onely.

Ans. The legall purging of the Leper, was onely by pronouncing him cleane, and could not be done but by the Priest, and is was a loosing of him.

Erastus. Where Christ institueth any new ordinance, he omitteth nothing that is substantiall, but here he speaketh nothing of publike sins, for which you doe especialy excommunicate.

Ans. Christ according to the minde of Erastus does here institute a throne for the Christian Magistrate, how doth he then institute a way how the Christian Magistrate may remove private Scandals and not publike? for publike Scandals hurt the Church ten to one more then private doe. Christ speaks of sins in their rite private, betwene brother and brother, but he speaketh of publike Scandals, of such as will not heare the Church, and for these onely we Excommunicate. 2. That is not true, that any one place
The place Matt. 18, vindicated Cap. VIII. Q. 4.

...place of Scripture, where an institution is that all the substantials of that institution should be expressly set down in that place; it is enough that all be held forth in either one Scripture, or other, as in Christ's sufferings, Baptism, Psalms, &c.

Eraustus. οὖν λέγω ὑμῖν. Again I say unto you, if two of you shall agree on earth, these words must referre to private men, not to the Church, it is clear that Christ speaketh nothing of two, as he doth in this verse, but when he saith that one private man is to rebuke and gain another private man; nor is it enough to say its an argument a comparatis, for if the same thing be not kept in both extremees, it is a vaine comparison if you say a childe understandeth this; Ergo, An aged man understandeth it, it followeth well. But if you say a child understandeth this; Ergo, An aged man is rich and good; who would not laugh? But if God heare the prayer of two; Ergo, farre more will he heare the prayers of the Church, it followeth not, except you say, if those things that two or three bindes on earth be ratified, how shall we thinke, that that is ratified which the Church bindes and looseth?

Ans. Here is nothing but Grammatications that cannot convince: it is true, that Christ speaking of two, he speaketh of private men, but many will not grant so much, for they say, that by two the smallest number is meant, a Church of the fewest, by a Synedoch, and two may be taken for a small convention and number which doe literally exceed two, Jer. 3. 14. Rev. 11. 3. I will give power to my two Witnesses; they be more Martyrs who witnessed against Babylon then two literall, and this Exposition seemeth to me as good as the other, and then if the smallest Church doe binde and loose in heaven and earth, so much more the Church; and so all shadow of this unsolid Grammatication is removed. 2. The proportion is well kept, if two praying on Earth be so heard in Heaven, as by their prayers, they may obtaine that these be ratified in Heaven which they ask on earth; farre more is that ratified in heaven, which the Church in a judiciall and authoritative way, doth on earth, in the Name of Christ: for praying of private Christians, and publike and authoritative binding of the Church doe both agree in this, that the Father of Christ ratifieth both in heaven, which is a due keeping of proportion, and not such a crooked comparison.
Erafhw would make between an aged man, & a rich & good man. Through two private men have the same Analogical binding in Heaven and earth with the Church, it followeth not that the binding of the Church is not a Church-binding, as the binding of the two private men is also a binding, but no publick, no Church-binding. 4. How shall Christ's words keep either sense or Logick with the exposition of Erafhw? If he will not hear the Christian Magistrate, complain to the Heathen, Magistrate; and again I say, if the Lord hear two praying on earth, far more will be ratified in Heaven, what a proverbial Heathen Magistrate doth on earth against a Christian offender; judge what sense is in this gloss.

Erafhw hath no reason to divide these words, ver. 19. Again I say, if two agree, &c. from ver. 17. 18. Because they are meant of the Magistrate (faith Erafhw) against all sense, and joyne them to the words of the 15. and 16. verses: for there is no mention of binding and loosing by prayer, ver. 15, 16. But only, of rebuking, and here Erafhw shall be as far from keeping his proportion, of rebuking and praying, as he faith, we do keep proportion between Church-sentencing and praying. To Theophylact, Chrysostom, and Augstine, Beza answered well, and Erafhw cannot reply: 6. If there be binding and loosing between brother and brother in the first and second Admonition, before the cause be brought to the Church, what need is there of binding the man as a Heathen before the Heathen Magistrate? And, what need of the Heathen Magistrates prayer to bind in Heaven? Was there ever such Divinity dreamed of in the world?

Erafhw. These words, Tell the Church prove only that the Church hath the same power to rebuke the injurious man, that a private man hath, this then is poor reason: The Church hath power to rebuke an offender; Ergo, it hath power to Excommunicate him.

A. All know that Christ ascended in these three steps: 2. Erafhw granteth the cause is not brought to the Church, but by two or three witnesses which is a judicial power, as in the Law of Moses and in all Laws is evident: if he hear not a brother, he is not to be esteemed, as a Heathen and a Publican, but if he hear not the Church, he is to be reputed so. 3. We reason never from power of rebuking to the power of Excommunication; but thus, The Church hath power to rebuke an offender, and, if he will not hear...
The Church, then is the man to thee, that is, to all men, as a Heathen
and a Publican; Ergo, The Church hath power to Excommu-
nicate.

Eras tus. Christ speakeath of the Church, that then was: How could
be bid them go to a Church that was not in the world; they having
heard nothing of the constitution of it; did be bid them erect a new
frame of Government, not in the world? An 

He could as well direct them to remove scandals, for time
to come, as he could after his Resurrection say, Matt. 28, 19, 20. Go
teach and baptize all Nations, which commandment they were not
previously to follow, but Acts 1, 8, to stay at Jerusalem, and not To
reach all Nations, while the Holy Ghost should come: I ask of Er-

astus, how Christ could lay a Ministry on his Disciples, which was
21, give to his Church and Disciples that they had not occasion to
obey many years after? As how they should behave themselves, when
they should be called, before Kings and Rulers: 2. Nor were the
Apostles who were already in the room of Priests and Prophets to
Teach and Baptize (he after being to institute the other Sacrament)
to wonder at a new forme already half instituted, and which dif-
fered not in nature from the former Government, save that the Cer-

emonies were to be abolished.

Eras tus. Only Matthew mentioneth this pretended new Institu-
tion, not Luke, nor Mark, the Disciples understood him well, they ask no
questions of him, as of a thing unknown, only Peter asked bow often
he should forgive his brother.

An. This will prove nothing, hath much which we believe with
equal certainty of Faith, as we do any Divine institutions; shall
therefore Erastus call the turning of water into wine, the raising
of Lazarus: The healing of the man, born blinde, and of him
that lay at the gate of Bethesda, Christ's heavenly Sermon, Job cap.
14, 15, 16. His prayer, cap. 17, which the other Evangelists mention
not. Fragmen tum bonum, mens fantasies, as he calleth Excommu-
nication? 2. Did the Disciples understand the dream that Erastus
hath on the place, and took it as granted, that to sell the Church
is to sell the civil Magistrate? And that not to hear the Church is
civil Rebellion, and to be a Heathen is to be impleaded before
Cesar or his Deputies only? This is a wonder to me; Matthew see-
ter.
...this way, an institution of all Church-Government, which no Evangelist, nor anyone in the Old, or New Testament, establiseth.

Eras tus. Christ would not draw his disciples, who were otherwise Th: 48.
most observants of the Law, from the Synod, than in life, to a new 34, 35.
Courts, where witnesses are led before a multitude and sentences judicially set up, it had been used against the Authority of the civil Magistrate, and a scandal to the Pharisees, and the people had no power in Christ's time to choose their own Magistrate; therefore he must mean the Jewish Synod, if by the Church we understand the multitude. We must understand such a multitude as hath power to choose such a Senate, but there were no such Church in the Jesus at this time.

Ans. That the Church here is the multitude of Believers, men, women, and children, is not easily believed by us. 4. And we are as far from the dream of a meet civil Synod, which come is no suitable mean of gaining a soul to Christ, which is our Saviours intention in the Text. 3. Erastus setteth up a christian Magistrate to intercept causes and persons, to examine, rebuke, lead witnesses against a Jew before ever Cesar, their only King of the Jews, or his Deputies, hear any such thing, this is as far against the only supream Magistrate, and as scandalous to the Pharisees, as any thing else could be: 4. Had not John Baptist, and Christ's disciples drawn many of the Jews and Proslytes to a new Sacrament of Baptisme, and to the Lamb of God, now in his flesh, present amongst them? this was a more new Law, then any Ordinance of Excommunication was, especially since this Church was not to be in its full constitution, till after the Lord's Ascension.

Eras tus. It is known this Sanedrim delivered Christ bound unto Pilate, condemned, stoned, commanded the Apostles to be scourged and cast into prison. Terrutius, Faith of Paul before Felix, we would have judged him according to our Law; Paul said, Act. 23. 10, Ananias, thou st thereof to judge me according to the Law, Act. 26. Paul confessed before Agrippa and Festus, that he obtained power from the high Priests, to take to prison and beat the Christians, and Paul for fear of the iniquity of this Church or Sanedrim, dealt with them as Heathen, and appealed to Cesar. Ans. But by what Law of God did they this? It is not denied but the Jews' Synod, being two courts,
did inflict punishment; But that Christ established a civil law, as a mean, Matthew 18. To gain the soul of a brother is now the question; we utterly deny this, and gave reasons before thereof, to which I add, if any obeyed not the Church, that is, the Sadducees, as Erastus faith, they might be stoned to death as Steven was: Was this Christ's milder way, to cite them only before the Roman Senate? Were dead men capable of answering to any further judicatures? 1. The last step of convening Hebrews and Publicans before the Roman Senate, according to Christ's order is not to be observed with them, for even Hebrews and Publicans, are so far forth our brethren: that is, we are not, when they offend us, to suffer sin in them, but to rebuke them as Christians, Lev. 19.18. For this is the Law of nature: The Law of nature will teach us not to hate an Heathen in our heart. 2. We are to labour to gain all, even those that are without the Church, 1 Corinthians 19.19, 20, 21, 22. 1 Peter 3.1. And this is Christ's way of gaining all, to rebuke and admonish them: Erastus it was never Christ's meaning to deal with Hebrews and Publicans so, as at the first we are to drag them before the Heathen Magistrate, that by his sword he may gain them, or take away their life; yes, and Erastus went on in Ecclesiasticall crimes, that the Jews had power of life and death, in the matter of Steven and of Paul, if he had not appealed to Caesar to save his head: Josephus, Antiq. Lib. 14. Cap. 26. Antiquities. Lib. 14. Cap. 13. But in things politic, Caesar took all power of life and death from them; Hence only is Christ's time the footsteps of the two distinct courts remained, and the Priests, not the civil Magistrate had the power of Church discipline. But all was now corrupt.

CHAP. IX. Quelk. 5.

The place 1 Cor. 5, for Excommunication, vindicated from the objections of Erastus.

Eraostus. Paul did nothing contrary to the Command of Christ: But Christ excluded no man from the Passover, no Judas; Ex-
Cap. IX. Q. 5. from Erastus his Glose.

Neither minded he to exclude the incestuous man; he saith not, 2 Cor. 5: Why debarred you him not from the Sacrament? But why did you not obtain by your tears and prayers, as Augustine expounded, that the man might be cut off by death?

Ans. Christ would not take the part of a visible Church on him, to teach that none should be cast out of the Church for secret and latent crimes: 2. Paul did nothing without the Command of Christ: But Christ neither in the Old, or New Testament, commanded his Church to pray for the miraculous cutting off of a scandalous person; give an instance in all Scripture, except you make this one which is contravened, your instance.

Erastus. Paul 2 Cor. 2, absolvethe the man from all punishment, Pag. 214, and numebly only instula rebuking; Ergo, He was not excluded from the Sacrament.

Ans. Exclusion from the Sacrament is but one of the fruits of Excommunication; not formally Excommunication; yet he harpeth on this always, has to be excommunicated or to be delivered to Satan, but to be debarred from the Sacrament. 2. The answer presupposes he was Excommunicated, we urge the place for a precept only of Excommunication, if he repent to the satisfying of the Church; there was no need of Excommunication. 3. If the man 2 Cor. 2, was delivered from rebuke only, and if that was all his punishment; Ergo, he was not miraculously cut off, for then he must have been miraculously cut off, and raised from death to life again, unless miraculous cutting off had been no punishment: But if he was not miraculously cut off, because he prevented it, then with what faith could the whole Church pray for the miraculous killing of a brother, and not rather that he might repent and live? 4. In all the Word of God, the intrinsical end of putting to death a Malefactor, is to avenge God's quarrell, Rom. 13:4. That all Israel may bear and fear, and doe no more any such wickednes, Deur. 13:11. To put away the guilt of sinne off the Land, Numb. 34:33, 34. That the Lords anger may be burned away, and a common plague on the Church stayed, when justice is executed on the ill doer, Psal. 106:28, 29, 30, 31. And it concerneth the Church and Common-wealth, more then the soule of the Malefactor, and there is nothing of such an end here. But the intrinsical end here, is, that the mans Spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord.

pray, Acts 4. 24, 29, 30. and with them the Church of believers, for working of miracles in general; for the Apostles had a word of promise in the general for working of miracles, Mark 16. 17, 18. But that the Apostles had before hand revealed to them all the miracles they were to work: I cannot believe by any Scripture, but that it was revealed to them upon occasion only, by an occasional immediate Revelation, Do this particular miracle, Hic & nunc. And this I am confirmed to believe: Because Elias, 2 Kings 1. 4 was mistaken in sending his servant with his staffe to raise the dead son of the Shunamite (a Pastor with nothing but a club and naked words cannot give life to the dead) ver. 31. and therefore the working of a miracle in particular Hic & nunc was not always revealed to the most eminent Prophets, such as Elias was; and so I believe, as working of miracles on this; and this man came not from an habit in the Prophets and Apostles, far lesse from a habit subject to their free will, but God referred that liberty to himself, to act his servants immediately, both to pray by the faith of this miracle, Hic & nunc, and to work this miracle, Hic & nunc. Now to the Assumption: How can Eras tus or any of his followers assure our conscience that God had given the Faith of miracles to all the sanctified in Christ Jesus at Corinth, whom Paul so sharply rebuketh, 1 Corinthians 3. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. That this being revealed to them by God, and they having the faith, that it was the will of Jesus Christ, that Paul should kill, or (as some say) deliver to Satan this incestuous man to be miraculously tormented in the body or flesh, as Job was, that he might repent; is it like Christ would reveal more of his will, touching every particular miracle to be done by Paul, to all and every secure one in the Church of Corinth that were puffed up, and mourned not for this mans fall, then he revealed to the Apostles themselves? But I have proved that the Apostles and Prophets knew not, nor had they the particular Faith of this, and this miracle; how then had all and every one of the Church of Corinth this Faith? Now they behoved to have this light of Faith of this miracle revealed to them, that this was Christ's will, that Paul should work a miracle for the destruction of the man; else the Corinthians could no more be justly rebuked, because they prayed not to God, that Paul might work this miraculous destruction of the man (which yet he never wrought, as its clear, 1 Cor. 2, he was
was not killed, but repented, and was pardoned) then because they prayed not, that the miraculously might cure the cripple man at Lystra, Acts 14, or that he might work any other miracle. Now how was this revealed to all of the Church of Corinth that this was Christ's will? If it be said, they were to pray conditionally that God would either by a miracle take him away, or then in mercy give him repentance to prevent destruction: 1. We have no sure ground for a conditionally and disjunctive Faith of miracles in the Corinthians, then for an absolute Faith: 2. If it was the will of Christ, that the man should by himself be miraculously killed, why did not the Apostle immediately by himself kill him? Why? It was the Apostles fault as well as the sin of the Corinthians, that the man remained as a leaven to sowe and infect the Church; yes, it was more the Apostles fault then theirs, for he had only the immediate power miraculously to purge the Church; some may say, as the Lord Jesus was hindered some time to work miracles, because of the peoples unbelief, Matt. 13. 58. So here Paul was hindered to work this miracle on the scandalous man, because of their unbelief.

Anf. Paul could not profess this; for he had not essayed to work any miracle of this kinde, as Christ had done, Matt. 13. But only sheweth them of a report came to him of the fact, and of their security, and not mourning. 2. Paul should then rather have rebuked their unbelief, and not praying that God would miraculously destroy the man; but this Paul doth not. 3. Paul rebuketh them, for not judging him, nor passing him out of the midst of them: Must that be Paul's meaning; pray to God that I may have grace and strength immediately from God, to kill him miraculously, and to judge him. Now they knew the Apostle miraculously thus judged those that are without, as he stroke with blindness; Rhymas who was without the visible Church: I conceive the whole Churches were to pray, as the Apostles do with the Saints, Acts 4. 29. 30. That miracles may be wrought both on those that are without and within: But of this judging he saith, ver. 12. What have I to do to judge them also that are without? Do not ye judge them that are within? 4. It is directly contrary to Christ's direction, Matt. 18. Which is, that by rebukes we gain the offending brothers soul: Now Brafman will have him gained to Christ, by
by removing his soul from his body, and by killing him. Yea, the Apostle, writing of the censuring of those in Thessalonica, who walked unorderly, and obeyed not the Apostles Word, which doth include such as break out in Incest, Adulteries, Murthers, is so far from giving direction to kill them miraculously, that he biddeth one keep no Church company, nor Christian fellowship with them, but yet they are to be admonished as brethren; Ergo, they were not to be miraculously killed, for then they should be capable of no admonition at all being killed; and could there be worse men then was amongst the Philippians, Enemies of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction, whose God was their belly? Yet there was no blood in the Apostles pen, he chides nor the Philippians, nor the Galatians who had amongst them men of the same mettall, Gal. 5. 7, 8, 9, 10. Ver. 19, 20, 21. Nor the Timothy who would have to doe with farre worse men, 2 Tim., 3. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Nor Titus who had to doe with wicked Cretians, Tit. 1, because they cried not to God, for Pauls bloodie sword of vengeance, that these wicked men might be cut off by Satan, nor doth the Apostle to the Hebrewes draw this Sword against those who sinned against the Holy Ghost, c. 10. c. 6. Nor James against bloody warriours, Murtherers, Adulterers, Oppressors, c. 4. c. 5. Nor doth Peter and Jude use this sword, or command the Churches to use such carnall weapons against the wickedest of men, but recommended long suffering, rebuking, the rod of Church discipline, to reject Heresicks after admonitions. Hence I argue negatively; in all the Scripture, never did the Lord command that they should pray to God and mourn, that he would inflict bodily vengeance and death, or yet forfeiture on any scandalous professeor, nor is there promise, precept, or practice in any Scripture of this Church censure. 5. Erastus doth thinke a court of the Church, that hath power to lead Witnesses, judge and censure offenders an extrem wronging of the Magistrate, and an incroaching on his Liberties, but here is a more bloody Court, for if the whole faithful are to pray for bodily death by the Ministry of the Devil, upon one of their own brethren, because he hath lye with his fathers wife, or fallen in Adultery, or Murther, as David did: Surely they must pray in faith, and upon certaine knowledge that he is guilty; the Law of God and Nature must
then have warranted the whole Saints, Women and Children, to meet in a grand jury, and Inquest, either to have the fact proved by Witnesses, or to hear his own confession; else how could they pray in faith, if it was not sure to their conscience that the man had done this deed? Here is a Jury of men and women, I am sure unknowne to the Apostolique Church. 2. A greater abridging of the Magistrates power then we teach. The Church shall take away the life of a Subject, & never ask the Magistrates leave. 6. It is against Christ's minde, Mat. 18.34. Erastus expoundeth it, that Christians should go any further against an offending brother, then implead him before an Heathen, though he add, injurie to injurie. But this way maketh the Holy Ghost sharply to rebuke all the Saints when they are offended, before the barre of Heaven, by crying miserable, bloodie vengeance upon the Offender. 7. It is evident this man repented, and that the Corinthians confirmed their love to him, and did forgive him, 2 Cor. 2.7.10. Ergo, He was not miraculously killed. But we never read, where it was, Gods will, and Law that an infidels life should be spared, though he should repent, because his taking away is for example that others may fear. 2. That evil, and as it is here, leaven may be taken away; if then it had been bodily death, I see not how Paul and the Corinthians could have proceeded with it. 8. Erastus doth not, nor can he confirme his unknown Exposition by any parallel Scripture of the Old and New Testament, which I objected to him in his Exposition of Matth. 18. Let the Reader therefore observe how weak Erastus is, in arguing against pregnant Scriptures, for Excommunication.

Erastus. You must prove, that to mourn, because the man is not taken away, is all one, as to mourn that he is not debarred from the Sacraments by the Ministers and Elders.

Ans. That is denied; to be debarred from the Sacraments, is but a consequent of Excommunication; 2. It is a putting of the men from amongst them, not by death, that we have refused; not from eating and drinking with him. onely, that I improved before: Ergo, it must be a Church out-casting.

Erastus. Paul might deliver the man to Satan, though he did Repent; as the Magistrate did punish Malefactors, whether they Repented or not.

Ans. But his being delivered to Satan, was willing it of God, and not for his sake.
An. Ergo, he repented, and was pardoned by the Corinthians, 2 Cor. 2. 10. after he had been killed, which is absurd.

Eras tus. If to deliver to Satan, were nothing but to deliver the man from the Sacraments, ever while he should repent; Why should Paul with a great deal of pains and many words, have excised himself to the Corinthians, 2 Cor. 2. and cap. 7. and as if were deprecate the offending of them; for they should know, that this manner of coercing and punishing, was; and ought to be exercised in the Church; if it was but a saving remedy and invitation to repentance. Why were they sad? They should rather have rejoiced, as the Angels of Heaven doth at the Conversion of a sinner, then Paul must have extended another thing.

Anf. This is a meet conjecture as Eras tus granteth most he faith against the place is; for he faith, Aliam conjecturam etiam addidit, such a violent remedy of repentance, as is the cutting off of a member from Christ's body, being the most dreadful sentence of the King of the Church, nearest to the last sentence, was to Paul, and ought to be a matter of sorrow to all the Servants of God, as the foretelling of sad Judgements moved Christ to tears, Matt. 23. 37, Luke 19. 41. 42. And moved Jeremiah to sorrow, cap. 9. 1. And yet Christ was glad at the home-coming of sinners, Luke 15. 6. 7. &c. These two are not contrary as Eras tus dreameth, but subordinate; to wit, (That Christ should inflict the extremest vengeance of Excommunication, which also being blessed of God, is a saving, though a violent remedy of repentance;) and (To rejoice at the blessed fruit of Excommunication, which is the means repentance:) And the Apostle 2 Cor. 7. professed his sorrow, That he made them sad, ver. 8. and also rejoiceth at their gracious disposition who were made sorry: He is far from excusing himself, as if he had done any thing in weakness; this were enough, and it is an Argument of our Protestant Divines, to prove that the Books of the Macabees, are not Dired by the Holy Ghost, as Canonick Scripture is; because the Author 2 Maccab. 15. 38. excuseth himself in that History, as if he might have erred, which no Pen-man of holy Scripture can do: And Eras tus layeth the like blame on Paul, as if he had repeated that he made them sorry, by chiding them, for not praying for a miraculous killing of a Brother: This is enough to make the Epistles of Paul to be suspected as not Canonick Scripture; yes, Paul faith the

Contrary,
contrary, 2 Cor. 7. 9. Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance, for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive dammage by us in nothing, and 2 Cor. 2. 8, 9. he exhorteth them to rejoicing, at the mans Repentance, and to confirme their love to him, (which demonstrates that he was now a living man, and not miraculously killed,) and commendeth their obedience, v. 9. in sorrowing, as he did chide them that they sorrowed not. 1 Cor. 5. 2. So that Paul is so farre from accusing himselfe for making them sad, that by the contrary, he commends himselfe for that, and rejoiceth thereat. And if the matter had been Excommunication, while the man should repent, (faith Eras tus) they knowing this ought to be in the Church, they should rather have rejoiced, then be sorry. And I answer, if the matter had been a miraculous killing of him, that his Spirit might be saved in the day of the Lord: should they not rejoice at his saving in the day of the Lord, whether this saving be wrought by bodily killing, or by Excommunication? And so this conjecture may well be retorted. 2. They were not to be sor-ry at the mans repentance, but to rejoice; yet were they to be sorry, at the violent mean of cutting him off from Christ's body, as a father may be glad at the life and health of his childe, and yet be sorry that by no other mean his health can be procured, but by cutting of a finger, or a hand of his childe. 3. They knew that miraculous killing (as Eras tus dreameth) was also a saving ordinance (the remaining in the Church, or not remaining is all one) because Paul chideth them, (as he dreameth,) that the man might be miraculously killed.

Eras tus. What need was there that the Corinthians with such diligence should intercede for the man, if they knew when he repented, he was to be received againe into the Church? Now that they interceded for him is clear, for Paul saith, 2 Cor. 2. 10. To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also. Answ. Because there is a great hazard in Excommunication, of an higher degree of obduration and condemnation; if the party be not gained. 2. I see no ground for this conjecture, that the Corinthians interceded for him at Paul's hand, for if he ought to have been miraculously killed, then whether he repented or repented not, both Paul, and the interceders sinned; Paul in being, broken,
broken, they in request for a dispensation of a Law, in which God would not dispence, as he that would request to spare the life of a repenting Murtherer against Gods express Law, should sinne; and Paul should sinne in pardoning upon request, where God would not pardon.

Erasinus. How excusest Paul himselfe that he would try their obedience, that c. 7, he would have their care for him made manifest, if he had not commanded a greater thing, then to debarre a wicked man from the Sacraments?

Ans. This is but a shadow of a reason against the Word of God, for to be cast out of Christs body, and not acknowledged for an Israelite of God, and that in heaven and earth: and so to be debarred from the Seals, is a higher thing then bodily killing, as to be received as a Member againe, and to be written amongst the living in Jerusalem, is like the rising from the dead, as may be gathered from Rom. 11. 15. and is farre more then deliverance from miraculous killing.

Erasinus. These words, ye was made sorry according to God, that ye might receive dammage of us in nothing, cannot agree with the purpose, they shoud have suffered no losse by obtaining pardon to a miserable man excluded from the Sacraments, while he should repent; but if he was to be killed, they should have lost a brother, and so suffered dammage.

Ans. The hazard of losing his soule, repentance not being so easie, as Erasinus imagineth, had been a greater losse, then the losse of a temporall life, the soule being to be saved in the day of the Lord.

Erasinus. Paul requireth his Spirit, and the power of the Lord 1e, Page 45, su to this worke; Ergo, It was more then to debarre from the Sacraments.

Ans. Erasinus should prove; Ergo, It was more then to Excommuniate. 2. Ergo, It was rather more then bodily death. His seventh reason I hope after to examine.

Erasinus. Paul saith, he decreed to doe this, and does not command the Church to doe it, or that the Church alone should doe it: We never read that Paul, whether alive or dead, did write to one, or many, to deliver any to Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that was proper to the Apostles onely, as the gift of healing was, Act. 5. and c. 13.
and he writeth, he will come himself with the rod, and be himself. 

1 Tim. 1. delivered Hymenæus and Alexander to Satan.

Thus much for us, you never read that Paul did write to one or many, and did chide them, because they prayed not that he might work this and this particular miracle; or that without error he might write this or that Canonicke Scripture, and therefore because this delivering to Satan, was commanded to the convened together Church, with his Apostolique spirit, and warrant to deliver such a one to Satan, and to judge him. v. 12. And to purge him out, and cast him out, therefore am I persuaded it was no miracle proper to Paul only. 2. How prove you that Paul, his alone, without the Church. Excommunicated Hymenæus? Paul faith that Timothy received the gift of God, by his laying on his hands, 2 Tim. 1. 6. Ergo. By the laying on of his hands only, and not of the whole Presbytery? It followeth not, the contrary is, 1 Tim. 4. 14. 3. Delivering to Satan, v. 5. is all one with purging out, v. 7. as is clear by the Ilation. I have decreed, though absent, to deliver such a one to Satan. Hence his consequence, v. 7. and decrete our Purge out therefore. 2. To deliver to Satan, is either all one with judging those that are within, v. 12. And so with judging this man, and with putting of him out, v. 13. or it is not all one; if there be all one, then hath the Church a hand in this delivering to Satan, and so it is not a miraculous killing. Erasius granteth the consequence, if these be not all one, this is two judgings of the man, one of Paul's v. 5. by miraculous killing, and another of Paul's and the Church, v. 12. This latter must be some Church judging of those that are within the Church, common to Paul and the Corinthians, as the words clear, and which is opposed to God's judging of those that are without; and this is so like Excommunication, that Erasius must make some other thing of it. Now we cannot say that there was any miraculous judging of this man, common to Paul as an Apostle, and to the Corinthians, the ordinary believers and Saints, as Erasius yeeldeth. 3. ἡμακαρία to put away the man, which is expressly commanded to the Church of Corinth, v. 13. must be the same ἡμακαρία and putting away, in Ezech., in the same word in Exod. 25 that is, v. 2. But that taking out of the midst of them is a miraculous killing of the man; as Erasius faith, now this cannot be, for then the people must be joyned in the same
fame work of miraculous killing with the Apostle Paul; now both we and Erastus must disclaim this; Ergo, there must be some common Church casting out, common to both.

Erastus. To put away out of the midst of them, is not to debar from the Sacrements, but to kill; if it were but to extrude the man out of the society of the faithful, what need was there of publick mourning? and if he had been to be cast out amongst the heathen, how could the spirit be saved? as is said, for without the Church there is no salvation.

Ans. To put away out of the midst of them, is to put the man out of the Congregation, as the word Careb is expounded before, and is not to kill; were Hymenius and Alexander delivered to Satan, that they might learn not to blaspheme? what learning or Discipline can dead men be capable of? 2. There's need of mourning when any is cut off from Christ's body, it being the highest judgement of God on earth. 3. Without the visible Church altogether as Heathens are, there is no salvation; But to be so without the Church, as the casting out is a medicinall punishment, that the soul may be saved in the day of the Lord, is a mean to bring the soul in, to both the invisible and visible Church, and put them none in that state, that they cannot be saved, but by the contrary in a way to be saved; so the man periret, nis periret.

Erastus. It would seem, it may be proved from the Text, that the man periret, not in that wickedness, for the Text saith, ποινήσαντες τοῦτο καὶ τῶν ἀδελφῶν; He that hath done, and that hath wrought this deed, not he that doth this deed; and therefore it seems Paul would inflict punishment as a good Magistrate useth to do (even though the man repent) and he saith, that his spirit may be saved, then the man repenteth.

Ans. 1. Reconcile these two (Paul was as a good Magistrate to kill the man, though he should repent) and (yet at their intercession (faith Eustathus) he did forgive him;) durt Paul at the request of men, pardon a Malefactor contrary to the duty of a good Magistrate? 2. Can Paul intend, in miraculous killing, only the saving of the man's soul, and knowing that he was saved, and having obtained his end, yet he will use the mean, that is, he will kill him? or is he intended another end also, that others might fear, how could he not kill for this end? A good Magistrate zeal should
not be softened and blunted, for the request of men.

Erasius he saith, He decreed to deliver the man to Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the soul may be saved; no, ἐστίν οὖσα σατανᾶς ἵνα ἀπολέσῃ τὸν χρυσόν, to give over, to permit; here a person given, a person to whom, a person giving, to Wit, Paul, and the end, wherefore, that the spirit may be saved; it is, as if I would give my son to a Master, either to be instructed, or chastised, so 1 Tim. 1. Act. 27. 28. Matth. 5. 18. Matth. 24. ἐστὶν δὲ οὖσα τὸν Χρυσοῦν, ἵνα ἀπολέσῃ, Mar. 15. The brother shall deliver the brother to death, and the Lord faith to Satan, behold Χρυσοῦν, I give him to thee, this is to deliver one afflicted, killed, condemned.

Ans. All this is needless; to be delivered over, is to be recommended and taken in a good sense also, Act. 14. 26. Commended to the grace of God, Act. 15. 40. ἐκδίδοντες τὸν αὐτὸν ἐκ τῆς ἔκδοσεως. and we deny not but to be delivered to Satan, is to be delivered to be afflicted, but the question is, what affliction is meant here, the affliction of the flesh say we, or of the unrenewed part, opposed to a saved spirit.

Erasius. It is impossible that the word ἀπολέσῃ destruction, can be shown to signify the destruction of the desires of sinfull flesh in all the New Testament, it always signifies the killing, death, destruction, nor doth the thing it self compell us to take it otherwise here, nor for killing and death, as 1 Thes. 5. It is true Saul now Rom. 8. ἐκδίδοντες ἐκδίδοντες to kill, destroy, crucifie, are so taken, but never ἀπολέσῃ or ἀπολαύσῃ in either sacred or prophane Authors.

Ans. I conceive Chrysostom knew Greek better then Erasius, the man was delivered to Satan, ἐκδίδοντες τὸν κακὸν ἐκ τῆς ἔκδοσεως, that he might scourge him (as he did Job) with a burn full boyle or some other sicknesse. Hence as that learned and judicious Divine, who hath deserved excellently of the Protestant Churches, Petrus Molinensis saith on the place, Chrysostom, Homo Graecus eloquentissime Romam exemplum, A rare example of Grecian eloquence, doth think per ἀπολέσῃ by the word destruction, not death, but some heavy torment to be meant; And I am sure Hieronymus, a man in the tongues incomparably skilled saide, by destruction here, was meanet jejuna & egrotations, fasting and diseases: 2. Nor need we contend for ἀπολέσῃ, which in all Authors of the world, signifies destruction, for ἀπολείπω is to destroy, the question will rather be, what...
what is meant by the flesh, but certainly it is in prophane Greek Authors as unusual (I except sacred Greek Authors, such as Basil, Chrysostom, who knew what mortification meant) to speak as Paul doth, Rom. 8:13. If ye mortifie the deeds of the flesh, ye shall live. Let Erastus finde me a parallel to that in the New Testament, in the magisterial doxologia. I think Erastus may not deny that this is to mortifie the sinfull works of the body of sin, yet Aristotle, Plato, Lucian, Plutarch, Hesiod, Homer, nor any prophane Greek Author ever spake so: We shall therefore deny that ἀθλητής signifies never to Greek Authors any thing but bodily death: for a Thess. 1:9. ἀθλητής diabolos everlasting destruction, is some more then bodily destruction. 3. We lay it is impossible that ἀθλητής can be shewen to signific in either Old or New Testament, a miraculous destroying of the body by Satan; we retort this reason back upon Erastus, his Exposition is not tollerable, because it wanteth a parallel place, it is his own reason.

Erastus. The destruction of the flesh must be the destruction of the body, nor of consupersence, because he addeth that the spirit mortua may be saved, here the soul is opposed to the body.

Ans. Though we should grant, that by the flesh is meant the body, yet it followeth not, it is the miraculous killing of the man, as I observed before. 2. It maketh nothing against Excommunication; for many learned Protestants teach, that though to deliver to Satan were a bodily punishment or conjoineth therewith, as the Learned Augusti.


Ambrosius lib. 1. de penitentia.

Hieronimus in c. 5. ad Gal.

Augestii. 6. de for. domi in Mont. cap. 38. Chry.

sofom hon. 15. in 1 Cor.

Molinus loc cit. Pifatov 1 Cor. 5. Zanchius com. in a Thess. 3.

cirche these words, iCor. 5. 3. 4.

for Excommunication.
it is to be observed that crisply, Erastus insisteth most on those points and syllables of a Text, whereon all Divines, Ancient and Modern do place least strength for Excommunication; I might therefore passe all Erastus his force against Excommunication in these, and he shall be not a whit nearer his point. 2. But I shall follow him; when οὐξ ὁ σῶμα, and ψυγή, the spirit are put together, I see no reason that the one should signify the body, the other the soul: I know the contrary to be, Rom. 8. 1. Thos that walketh not after the inordinate affections, and lusts of the flesh, are opposed to those that walk, νομίζω τῷ πνεύματι after the Spirit, and Gal. 5. 17. the flesh, (ὡς ἐκαίνω) lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit ὑπερνομίζω against the flesh, Joh. 3. 6. That which is born of the flesh, ὁ γεννάς ἐστιν is flesh, it is not that which is born of the body as body, and that which is born ἐν τῷ πνεύματι of the Spirit is Spirit, so Rom. 8. 9, 13, 14. Erastus should have shewed us such places wherein οὐξ and ψυγή the flesh and the spirit signifieth the body and the soul, when the matter of salvation is spoken of as here, That the spir is may be saved, ver. 5. then οὐξ ὁ σῶμα is for the most part, if not always, taken in an evil part, for the corruption of man's nature.

Erastus. How could they desire the Apostle not to deliver him to Satan, that he might (as Beza expoundeth it) destroy his flesh, that is, bring him to repentance? How could Paul assent to such a Petition? How could the Apostle write that he did forgive him? Did Paul by forgiving him, permit him not to mortifie and destroy his flesh, and sinful lusts?

Ans. Let Erastus answer, How could the Corinthians beseech Paul not to kill him, that his soul may be saved in the day of the Lord? How could Paul grant such a Petition, as that the man should not be saved in the day of the Lord? How could Paul by pardoning the man, permit, that he should not be saved in the day of the Lord? for the saving of the man's soul, is no less a fruit of this delivering to Satan, then is the destroying of the lusts of the flesh. 2. They might well desire that upon the man's repentance Paul would take a milder way and course to effectuate these two desirable ends, the mortification of his lust, and the saving of his soul, then the last and most dreadful remedy, which is the censure of Excommunication. 3. The destruction of the lusts of the flesh is a Scripturall remedy
remedy for saving of the soul in the day of Christ, as is clear, Rom. 7.7,8,9,10. Gal. 5.24,25. But whether miraculous killing be such a mean ordained of God is the question, and ought to be proved by some word of God, beside this place in controversy.

Eraus. These words, that the soul may be saved in the day of the Lord, do hold forth, that the miserable man was presently to die. Theol. 59. Pag. 49.

Ans. That they hold forth no such thing, is evidently proved, for how were they to cast him out and judge him? And how was Paul to pardon him, and they and Paul to confirm their love?

2. When Peter faith, 1 Pet.1.7. That your faith may be found unto praise, honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ? Were all these presently? Because Paul and the faithful Philippians were waiting for their Saviours second coming, who should change their vile bodies, were they to die presently? When Paul prayeth, that Onesiphorus may finde mercy in that day, 2 Tim. 1.18. I pray you, will it follow that Onesiphorus was presently to die?

Eraus. The word εμβασμα rebuke, doth not signify rejecting from the Sacraments. 1. Rejecting from the Sacraments is never put for punishment in Scripture. 2. It is but a rebuke inflicted by many; and Paul, 2 Cor. 2. absolveth him from this as sufficient punishment, a rebuke is no punishment.

Ans. 1. To be debarred from the society of the faithful, as Hagar was, as Cain was; as David was, Cast out of the Lords inheritance by Saul; yea, to be rebuked, Ezek. 3.25,36. are evils, but they are not evils of sin; Ergo, He speaks not like a Divine, who will not have them punishments; if to injoy the Sanctuary, Church, holy things of God, and the society of the Saints be a rich blessing of God, as the Scripture faith it is, Psal. 42.4. Psal. 27.4. Psal. 84.10. Psal. 110.3. Psal. 63.1,2,3. Cant. 1.7,8. Cant. 2.16,17. Cant. 5.1. Cant. 6.1,2,3. Rev. 2.1. and to deny this be a symptom of prophaneity, then to be separated from these as a Heathen, must be to the children of God, the greatest evil of punishment and matter of sorrow on earth, it smelleth not of piety to deny this.

Eraus. If the man was only rebuked; How was he to be delive-red to Satan to be torment and killed? Some Ancients answer, he was but delivered to Satan to be afflicted in his body with sickness, and as length delivered by Paul, others say more congruously to the minde of Paul; that Paul purposed not by himself to deliver the man to Satan, but to do it, with the Church congregated together, and
When the Church saw him swallowed up with griefe, they deferred while they tryed Paul’s minde, and obtained pardon to him, and in the mean time threatened him, if he should not repent; and obtained at length, that Paul should pardon him. Anf. Many learned Divines hold the former, yet so as they conclude Excommunication out of this Chapter; of this I say no more. But Erasmus hath a way of his own. To which I say, 1. There is no Scripture; but this controverted one to warrant that the Apostles who had the gift of Miracles, 1. Suspended the working of Miracles, either on the prayers, or free consent of the whole multitude of believers. 2. That the execution of a miraculous work, was committed to Deputies and Substitutes under Paul, who had it in their power miraculously to kill, or in their free will and Christian compassion, to suspend the miracle, and not kill. 3. That the Apostles in acts of miraculous justice, sought advice of any, or might be broken by requests, to defer from miracles as they saw the party repent, or not repent, or friends intercede, or not intercede. 4. So many circumstances of the text, laying a command on the Church of Corinth, to put him out and judge him, and yet the matter remaine a miracle. These to me are riddles, if God had told us such a History, I could have beleived it; but to gather these by uncertaine conjectures, without any ground of other Scriptures, is a thing I can hardly beleive. But since Excommunication is an ordinary censure, the Church might well, as they see the man penitent, or contumacious, cast him out, or not, pardon, or not pardon.

Erasmus. Paul delivered to Satan Hymenues and Alexander, that they might learne not to blaspheme, not that the dead are capable to learne, or to be blasphemed; but this he saith as a Magistrater, when he saith he will give an indor to the hangman, that he may learn to-steale no more, and to rob no more.

Anf. 1 Tim. 1. 20. I delivered them to Satan, ina μακρυσθηνειν εις εξασσομαι. It is like to edifying discipline; and agreeable to Paul’s use of the rod of discipline, 2 Cor. 11. 8. Though I should boast somewhat more of our authortie, which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for destruction. Now it were safer to give a sense congruus to the intrinsccall end of discipline, which was not for destruction of the body, but for the edifying of souls. 3. Yes,
so Paul had no less the Sword, then the rod of the Word. Nero had not so heavy a sword, as miraculous killing; Should not Paul speak rather as a Pastor of Christ, then as a bloody Magistrate?

Eraust. If to deliver to Satan be all one with debarring from the Supper onely, yet it is not all one, with being cast out of the Church, without which there is no salvation, but the Supper is not absolutely necessary to Salvation.

Answ. Nor doe we put that necessity on the Sacraments, but where the man is excluded from the Sacraments for such a sinne as if he repent not, he is excluded from Salvation; it concerneth him much to thinke it a weighty judgement to be excluded from the Seales.

Eraust. These two are inconsistent which you teach to wit, that he is not debarred from the Sacraments, who desireth them, and that his desire whether it be a right, or a wrong and unlawful desire, shall depend on the judgement of others, to wit, the Presbytery.

Answ. Eraust should have made others see how these two fight together, I see no inconsistenece, no more then to say a childeth that desirous food is not debarred from food, and yet his desire of food may be subject to wise Stewards, whether every desire of food be right or no, as whether he should be answered by the Stewards, when he desireth poynson or bread, not to eat, but to cast to dogs; and this will fight against preaching of the Word, the Professor that longeth for the comforts of the promises of the Gospel is not debarred from them, yet are preachers to try whether threatenings be not fitter for him in his security, then the comforts of the promises.

Eraust. Paul, 2 Cor. 12. and 13. threateneth not exclusion from the Lords Supper, to those who had not repented of their schisme, drunkenesse, denying of the resurrection, but he saith he would severely punish them according to the authority and power given him of God, and he did this frequently, but we read not of exclusion from the sacraments.

Answ. 1. It is true, he threateneth those who had not repented of their uncleannesse, and fornication, and lasciviousnesse, 2. Cor. 12. 20, 21. and 13. v. 2. threateneth that he will not spare, but use his authority, but doth Eraust read that he either threateneth or doth actual.
actually, miraculously kill any of the believers at Corinth? and let him answer why the Apostle did not write to the Church, that they would convene, and take course with them, as he did with the incelous man, 1 Cor. 5. 2. When he faith, He will not spare when he comes, he must be expounded according to Erastus, to come as a miraculous Magistrate to kill them. 3. He faith not they were impenitent, but he feared it should be so. 4. We hold, if any should be contumacious, he would not only deny pearls to such Swine, as his Master commanded, Mat. 7. But also follow that rule, Mat. 18. 4. Erastus himself grants, if there shall be found a man that tramples upon the Pearles and holy things of God, as there must be some one or other, which is such as deserveth to be miraculously killed: By this Argument he grants (I say) that such a one should not be admitted. Hunc ego mihius admittendum censeo, but how shall he be not admitted by this Argument?

Page 207.
Page 223.
Page 224.

Erastus. There were many amongst the Ancients who deferred their Baptism to the end of their life, when therefore it is not written, that these are damned, who are excluded from the Supper, against their will, and not those who willingly exclude themselves from Baptism, why should the one more than the other be delivered to Satan? for he is in a better condition, who is excluded by the Presbyters against his will from the Supper, than he who doth of his own free will exclude himself from Baptism.

Ans. That the Ancients in the Apostolique Church, which is our rule, did deferre baptism till they died, Erastus cannot prove, the Ancients after them is not our rule. 2. That these were admitted to the Supper, a Sacrament of the nourishment of those in whom Christ liveth, before they were baptized, which is the Sacrament of Regeneration, and our first birth, cannot be defended by Erastus, and so he argues from an unlawfull practice. 3. We teach not that any is damned, because he is excluded from the Supper, that Exclusion is a punishment; men are damned for sins, not for meer punishments, but his sin is bound in heaven, because of a great scandal; such as incest, and that, if he repent not, is the cause of damnation: and therefore Erastus should have compared sinne with sinne, the scandal with sinfull refusing of Baptism, and not have made a halting and lame comparison, an argument that conclude itself nothing. 4. Though those who
who deferred baptism till death, should not have been delivered to Satan, yea, will Erastus say, they should not have been otherwise cen- nured? for these behooved with Socinians to hold Baptism but an indifferent rite, and by this many lived in the contempt of a necessary ordinance, (though not simply necessary) and so died with the sinful want of Baptism many times.

Erastus. The exclusion of men from the Sacraments did creep into the Church when men did ascribe salvation to the Sacraments, therefore the Supper was given to dying men, though excommunicate; as the denial of the Supper dammeth, Ergo, the receiving of it saveth. And so of Baptism they reasoned.

Answ. Erastus nameth this his own probable conjecture. But it is to beg the question, he may know how singular Augustine was of the necessity of Baptism, and how many of the Ancients were against him in it. 2. He may know this consequence to be a conjecture, and that it is not stronger, because it is his own. 3. He granteth that exclusion of the unworthy from the Sacraments is ancient, to much gain we by his conjectures.

Erastus. When the Church wanted a Magistrate and the sword, Paul commanded that the Corinthians might obtain by their prayers, that she insectious man might be put from among them, that is, she might be killed; if he command not that she man be killed, but cast out of the Church only, he should say as much as if one should bid preserve the chastity of a Virgin by casting her out of the society of chaste men, into a bordell-house; and Paul biddeth not the Corinthians deliver the man to Satan; but only that they would convene, that she might not, as present in Spirit, deliver him to Satan; and that they would deliver him to Satan, and put him out of the midst of them, by prayers and mourning; for in my corrected Thesis, I said, that this put away evil out of the midst of you, Deut. 13. was in syllab. Deut. 17. & 19. 21, 22. ter. & c. 24, once, and &c. is in them all.

Answ. 1. That the Church wanted the sword is no wonder, the Church as the Church, hath no such carnall weapons as the sword, and that Peter in killing Ananias and Saphira, and Paul in striking Elymas with blindness, did supply the place of a Christian Magistrate which the Church then wanted, so as it was the Christian Magistrate his place, if there had been any to strike Ananias and Saphira with sudden death. I do not believe upon
Erasius his word, because I finde Nadab and Abihu killed immediately by the Lord from heaven with fire, Lev. 10. 1. and at that time when there was Moses and ordinary Magistrates to have killed them, and God immediately caused the earth to open her mouth and swallow up quick Corah and his company, and yet there was a Magistrate to doe justice on them, for their treasonable conspiracie; and I see not how this may not warrant Ministers, when either heathen or Tyrannous Magistrates refuse to use the sword, to fall to as Pastor, and in an extraordinary manner use the sword against murthurers in the visible Church. It is true, Peters miraculous killing of Ananias, may possibly hold forth the duty analogically of punishing ill doers, in a Magistrate, where he is a Christian member of the Church. But it is a conjecture without Scripture, that here Paul doth call the Corinthians in to come and be co-actors with him by their prayers in a particular miracle which was never wrought; for Erasius granted he was never killed. 1. Paul reprehendeth their not mourning, v. 2. And you are professed up, and have not rather with sorrow mourned. This was an ordinary, Christian, not a miraculous duty, which they should have performed as a Church, though he should not have written to them. Let Erasius declare how Paul chideth them, for want of an habituall Faith of Miracles, and of a sorrow proportioned thereunto. 2. That Gal. 5, 12, & 13. Would God they were cut off, that trouble you? if this was in Pauls power, by a miracle to cut off the false Apostles, how could Paul wish to doe a miracle and did it not? 2. If he wished these should be cut off by the Galathians, then as Beza de Presbyter, page 82 faith, it was in the Galathians power so to doe; and why should not they have prayed miraculously for the destruction of such? 3. In all the word, to deliver to Satan, is never to kill by Satan; as Beza faith, and Erasius can answer nothing to it. 4. That Paul here tooke the Magistrates Sword, because the Magistrate was a Heathen. 5. That the Church, when a Magistrate doth not his duty, is to pray, that God would by some miraculous and immediate providence, supply the Magistrates place. 6. That Paul doth rebuke the Corinthians, not for the omission of an ordinary duty, and the want of an ordinary faith, but because of the want of extraordinary sorrow, and of the faith of Miracles, in
old and young, and women who could pray for the miraculous killing of this man, all these look beside the Text, for ver. 2, he faith such ainous sin is committed, and ye are puffed up, πλασματικος blown up, and have not rather ἀπελωνισταε mourned: this is the defect of an ordinary grace, and hardneffe and security that Paul rebuketh in them, as the first word signifies, 1 Cor. 8. 1. ἐγερθαι knowledge puffereth up, 1 Cor. 13. 4. Love is χριστιανς not blown up, 1 Cor. 4. 6. 1 Cor. 4. 18. Col. 2. 18. and the other word signifies ordinary sorrow, Mat. 5. 4 Blessed are they that mourn, διὸ προσφέρεις, Luk. 6. 25. 2 Cor. 12. 21. Jam. 4. 9. Mat. 9. 15. There is not one word of praying by the faith of miracles in the Text (for such a faith is required to such a prayer) that God would miraculously destroy the man, or that Paul rebuked them for not praying in this miraculous faith: it is the way of Erastus to obtrude Expositions on the Scripture, so unknown and violent, as they are darker and harder to be believed then the Text. 5. The Apostle commandeth them to put out the man εὐαγγελιον, that is, to kill him: What killing is this? to pray to God that Paul miraculously may put him out, and kill him, give us any word of God, that εὐαγγελιον in the Old or New Testament signifies any such thing, there is not one word of Prayer in the Text: 6. They were to conveen, not simply, as Christians, to pray, but with the vertue of his spirit, as present in minde, but absent in body; this must put some more in them then a mourning spirit, for the want of which he rebuked them; it is as much as he and they together were to joy in putting out the man and judging him, as he speaketh, ver. 12. 7. Nor is this all one, as to put a woman out of her company of chaste Matrons to the bordel house to keep her chastity, no more then the wisdom of God in Paul doth, Rom. 16. 17. 2 Thess. 3. 14. 15. put unordinate walkers out of the society of those who walk according to the truth of the Gospel, that they may preserve their found walking, especially when exclusion from the godly causeth shame, and so humiliation, and this reason is against Gods wisdom, as much as against us: 8. That to put away evil, εὐαγγελιον, Deut. 17. and 19. and 21. and 22. is to kill, is not denied, and that in divers places, but not to pray that evil may be miraculously put away, as Erastus faith: But we are to see, whether יען in the Hebrew (of which Language Erastus professeth his ignorance) signifies that always: The contrary I have already shown.
Arguments for Excommunication, from 1 Corinthians 5. 12-13.

R. Everend Beno said, The world is the Kingdom of Satan, and he that is delivered to Satan, is cast out of Christ's Kingdom into Satan's Kingdom.

Erasistrus faith. It is not easier to heal them by remaining in the Church, having the Magistrate to command them to their desire, than to cast them out of the Church. The world is a kingdom of wickedness and impurity; may you not more easily reform a lustful and luxurious virgin within the house, than by casting her out of the house into a Bordel? Will not slaves of Satan be more easily healed amongst the children of God, than amongst wicked men?

An. Whether, to be delivered to Satan, be to be put formally in his power, that he may vex the spirit, that the man may be troubled for sin, or if it be to be given to Satan only, confirmed and cast out of the Church, that is, Christ's office-house of Grace to live in the world, of which, 1 Peter 2. 31. John 14. 30. It is not much to be disputed: But this also is against the wisdom of God, who hath appointed another
Excommunication vindicated.

And Erastus might as well say to Paul, Why dost thou command the Saints not to eat and drink with those that are called brethren, and yet are fornicators, covetous, extortioners, 1 Cor. 4:11. and such as cause divisions, and walk inordinately, as Rom. 16. 17, 2 Thes. 3. 14, 15. and to withdraw from their company? they must then converse only with the slaves of Satan, and the wicked of the world, when they are deprived of the society of the godly, and that is the way to loose them; were it not better to command the just contrary, that the godly should eat, drink and converse with inordinate walkers, for they may turn them from their evil way; for will an unchaste virgin be made chaste by being cast out of her father's house into a Bordel-house? will not slaves of Satan rather be healed amongst the children of God, than amongst the wicked?

But Erastus feeleth not, that God's aime in this separation, is not only, that the cast out man may be ashamed, 2 Thes. 3:14, 15; and so humbled and brought to repentance, when he findeth he is deprived of the blessings of the Saints, of their society, Ordinances: But also God hath a higher aime, to the end, the whole lump of Christ's body, be not leavened and infected with the contagion of one man, 1 Cor. 4:6, 7, Gal. 5:9, 10.

Eras tus. The similitude of a rotten Member, proveth nothing: for 1. There be no such sinners desperately incurable, of whom there is no hope so long as they live, except pertinacious Heretics erring in the foundation of salvation, and such as sin against the holy Ghost: 2. It is not necessary, that men using reason and free will, be defiled and corrupted by other sinners, as the whole Member is by the rotten Member; for as a Tree cannot but be burnt by the fire that leaseth on it, so neither can the Members continued by touching, escape corruption. 3. None can be cast out of the Church into the world, as it is the kingdom of Satan, for if they keep the faith, though they were amongst Turks, they are not in the world, that is, in the Kingdom of Satan, nor in the world. 4. Paul would not have him cast out into the world, that his soul may be saved, for this were to make the weak despair, and make them hypocrites.

Ans. This similitude is the holy Ghosts in the very sense we use.

The similitude of a cut off member to hold forth Excommuication vindicated.
it, 2 Tim. 2.17. Their word shall eat as a canker; a Metaphor (as Calvin, Piscator, Marlorate observe) from a rotten member that corrupteth the whole body, and to say, because a man hath reason and so free will, that he will not be corrupted; whereas the whole member by necessity of nature cannot but be corrupted by a rotten member, is to speak not like a Divine, but as Pelagius speaketh; for except we use the remedy appointed of God, to eschew the contagion of the wicked, and eschew their company, as we are commanded, and as the godly have done, and the wicked have not done, and therefore have been infected with the way of other evil men, Prov. 22.24, Prov. 5.8, 9, Ps. 26.4, 5, Esa. 2.6, 7, Ps. 119.63, Ps. 139.21, 22, Rev. 18.4, 2 Chron. 19.2, (though we should not actually be corrupted) yet we sin and tempt the Lord, in that we seek a temptation to our selves; yea, as all the reasons of Erastus are natural and against the wisdom of God in his Ordinances, so expressly this, God forbiddeth his people to marry with the Canaanites, or to make Covenants with them, Exod. 34.12, &c. Because (faith the Lord) they will ensnare thee, and draw away thy heart after their Gods: May not Erastus say, But men have reason and free will not to consent to the enticing counsels of the Canaanites, though they be joined in Covenant, and marriage with them: Preterea non est nece sse sic aliis a malis contaminari. 3. It is good, that Erastus granteth, that pertinacious Heretics, because uncurable, may infect others, for so the word expressly saith, what shall be done with them? Erastus granteth they be rotten members: Ergo, either they must, by Excommunication be separated from the body, as we teach, or the body must separate from them; if this latter be said, all that Erastus inferreth against us, shall fall against himself: 1. We shall not need to be infected with the Heresie of such: Utinam ratione, we have the Armour of reason and free will, against this rotten and rotting member, faith Erastus: 2. We shall expose Heretics to the Kingdom of Satan, and the world, by which they shall be hardned in their pernicious Heresies: Beside 3. We make them Hypocrites: 4. I see no warrant Erastus hath to say, That Heretics erring in fundamentals are more contagious and rotten members then slaves of Satan, failing against the Second Table: 5. He that is cast out of the Church, though amongst the Turkis is in the world, but not of the world. If he keep the faith, and if he do so; he shall
repent and come home to Christ's visible Kingdom, but because he keepeth the faith, yet he is not a member of a visible Church, except he professeth, and repent; for even the sound in faith; if obstinate in Scandals, may deserve Excommunication. 6. There is nothing said against Excommunication in the two last Reasons, but what striketh against Timothy his public rebuking, and threatening wrath against those that sin openly, for they may through their own corruption, do farre abuse publick threatnings, as they may be led on despaire and hypocrisy. Now Erastus as we shall hear, granteth those are to be rebuked openly, who sin openly.

7. We say not to deliver to Satan any man, is to deliver him to the World, but to cast him out of the Church, that consequenter he may be left to the World; but that he should sinne, and be led away with the World, is neither the intrinseall end of Excommunication, or of the Church, but an event or end by accident: the intrinseall end is the Salvation of the man.

Beza saith, that Paul speaketh of a spirituall punishment, and not of a corporall.

Erasmus saith, When Peter killed Ananias corporally, was not this corporall punishment? When Paul gave some to Satan for the demolition of the flesh, and God punisheth our sinnes with temporall death, how shall you prove that God, and the Apostles punisheth not sinnes with corporall, or politike punishment?

Ans. The instance of Peter's killing Ananias is in vain brought in: its but a begging of the question, for it is not said Peter delivered Ananias to Satan, that his Spirit might be saved. Who revealed this secret to Erasus, that Peter used the Ministry of Satan in killing Ananias? We have as good reason to say, Peter delivered Ananias to a good Angel to be killed, as Erasus hath for his draame. 2. We deny not, but God and the Apostles did punish with corporall punishment, but let him now with the bounds of the place in controversy; (for we must except Scripture by Scripture) where ever the Church convened in the Name of the Lord Jesus, did judge and miraculously kill any member of the Church, that the Spirit may be gaved in the day of God.

Beza saith, This killing by the people, would be ground of a great Calumny, so make many say, Christians did usurpe the Sword of the Magis-
Magistrate, and that they were not subject to the Magistrate.

Eras tus. We give this power of miraculous killing only to the Apostles.

Ans. Yea, but the calumny standeth so long as Eras tus giveth to all the people the faith of Miracles to conveene and pray that Paul might miraculously kill those that offended the Church, and its probable when the enemies objected to Christians, all they could falsely, they would not have omitted this, that the very people by their prayers meet in one Church-jury, to kill Cephas Subjects. Beza said, The Christian Magistrate should by this kill all the drunkards, fornicators, and the like with the Sword.

Eras tus answereth. 1. All faults deserve not killing, but some other punishment of a lower degree. 2. The Lord himself appointed that the Magistrate should compell men to doe their duty, why then should Beza speak against God, and call this a compelling of men to be Hippocrates?

Ans. If other sins, as drunkenness, fornication, extortion, do infect the Church, and be scandalous to the very Gentiles, as the Apostle faith of incest; 1 Cor. 5. 1. 6. 7. Upon the same reason Paul should have rebuked them, because they did not from the faith of Miracles pray that Paul might inflict some miraculous judgement by the Ministry of Satan, though lesser then death for other Sins. But I pray you, Paul had either a warrant from God to kill this man, or he had none at all: If he had a warrant, why did he not that which is the part of a miraculous Magistrate without the prayers of the Corinthians? Did Paul chide them, because they prayed not to God that he might doe his duty; if he had no warrant at all, Why should he chide the Corinthians, for that they prayed not that he might doe a duty, which was not his duty? For that is not Paul's duty, for the doing whereof he hath no warrant from God; if it was his duty onely conditionally; 1. What warrant is there in Scripture, to say, Paul should have miraculously killed the incestuous person, upon condition that the Corinthians had by the faith of Miracles, prayed that he might worke that miraculous slaughter, which because they did not, Paul was either exonered of that as no duty, or then Paul chided them, because they prayed not to prevent Paul's sinfull neglect? 2. How was this revealed to

the Corinthians, that they should pray that God by Paul, as by his Magistrate might revenge this inceit, and not revenge their附件, covetousness, extortion, Idolatry, especially seeing the faith that, v.9. He had written to them in another Epistle, nor to keep company with such? Whence I think it evident, that Paul in another Epistle, had ordained separation of Fornicators, Covetous persons, and the like, from amongst them, and so censures for all scandalous persons: And how that we believe he would not teach them to cast out inceituous persons, that are far more scandalous? And if so, he must have written in another Epistle of this miracle, that they were to pray he might work: Is it not evident by this, that Erasmus his way, is full of Conjectures and groundless uncertainties.

2. We deny not that the Magistrate may compell men to do their duty: nor doth Beza deny that: But that the Church hath or had any influence in the blood of an inceituous person, and in working of miracles for the bodily destruction of any, is most false, and cannot be proved by this Text: Nor do we think that the Church (the weapons of whose warfare are carnall) can compell any man by corporall punishment, to duties by the Sword; for in their Spiritual way, which is terminated on the Conscience, should lead men to Hypocrisy in profession of the truth, for so reasoneth Erasmus; the Magistrate with the Sword rather punishest sins committed in Gods Service, then forceth to duties: The fifth Argument of Beza is vindicated already.

Erasmus. We say not that Paul was to deliver the man to Satan, that he may be saved, but that Paul was to punish this high transgression with the Sword, to the terror of others: but only he set bounds to Satan, that he should only kill his body, but not meddle with his soul; but because the man repented, Paul hoped well of his soul, that his soul should be saved in the day of Christ.

Ans. 1. Here Erasmus doth more fully reveal the vilenesse of his opinion, for he granteth the intrinsecall end of this miraculous killing, is not the Salvation of the mans soul, but the revenging of the wickednesse of the sin, for the terror of others: Which is 1. Contrary to the Text, which faith, He was to be delivered to Satan, in order, that the spirit may be saved. This noteth that the intrinsecall end of this delivering to Satan, was the Salvation of the mans soul: But the Text, faith nothing of Erasmus his end, that o-
Of the Leaven, 1 Cor. 5. Cap. XI. Q. 7.

...thers may be terrifised, though that may be an end. It is a wonder to me, that since Erastus granteth the man repented, even when Paul did in this Chapter chide with the Corinthians, that they delivered him not to Satan: For Erastus faith, 'Aνιους, He that hath done this deed, not he that continueth pertinaciously in it (faith he;) hence it is clear, that he repented at this time. How doth Paul chide them for not delivering a repenting man to the Devil? that his Spirit may be saved, if he repented, his spirit was saved; Ergo, Paul was in the fault, and chid them without reason; if they say, though he did repent, yet for example to terrifie others he should have been killed, 2 Cor. 2. faith, He was not killed; and Erastus faith it; Ergo, yet Paul failed, and they also. 3. It is against the intrinsic end of that power which Erastus faith is miraculous: For Paul faith the end of that power is for Edification, not for Destruction, 2 Cor. 10. 8. Now the intrinsic end of bodily killing, is peace, and terror to others, that they may be afraid to do so any more: But the intrinsic end, and finis operis, is not Edification, but finis operantis only, for acts of Magistrates are not acts of the first Table which kindly, and per se, regardeth edification, but acts of the second Table, if their foules be saved who die; for their enormous crimes by the hand of the Magistrate: It is not from the violent death, as if it were an intrinsic end and ordinance appointed of God for conversion: But because God giveth to those who die that way, repentance. Yea, it is no more a mean of saving of the soule, then if they should die in their beds by some disease.

To the examples of Hymenius and Alexander, that they were not killed miraculously, I answered before. Erastus addeth no new reply to Beza.

CHAP. XI. Quest. 7.

Of the leaven, 1 Cor. 5. Erastus his sentence in his l. 3. c. 6. and c. 7. Examined.

Erastus, I shall grant (since Beza will have it so) that Paul expounds the Ceremony of leaven, in the celebration of the

Passover, and that he doth not only allude to it; Paul compareth the feast of unleavened bread to the pilgrimage of our life in this world, and leaven signifies wickedness; Hence as the Jews all the time of the feast might eat no leavened bread, so all our life are voue to leave and forsake the world and journey toward our promised Canaan, we are never to live wickedly. What can hence be collected but as he that eat unleavened bread, was to be killed, so should every wicked man be killed? He that eat leavened bread in these seven days, was not commanded to be debarred from the Passover. And the Passover was the beginning of this feast, as faith in Christ was the beginning of our spiritual eating of Christ crucified for us, and of our new Christian life.

Ans. I hold that learned Beta hath well expounded the leaven here; he compareth the scandals of wicked men to leaven, the holiness of the Saints to unleavened bread, and the publick Congregation to the feast of the Passover, and Excommunication or putting away to the removing of the leaven; for a scandalous man corrupteth the whole Church: so the Jews and Rabbines, as Buxtorfius faith, that the Rabbins call natural concupiscence. Rabbi Alexander said after his Prayer: Lord, It is known to thee that it is my will to do thy will: But what retardeth me? the leaven in the mass or lump, and Buxtorfius citeth the same place, 1 Cor. 6. and Gal. 5.9. And least we should think that he meant nothing but natural concupiscence; he faith in the Targum, They take the word רעב for wickedness, and folly; he citeth Medrash Koheloth, cap.7. ver.8. except R. Samuel, had been long suffering. The Persian that he taught, had returned to folly, or his old wickedness. Paul faith the same, Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump: He speaketh to the Church convened. 2. The comparison runneth so, that the Corinthians were to purge out the old leaven of wickedness, and cast out the incestuous man that they might be a new lump; and this if it must always be done, far more when they are to celebrate that feast that came in place of the passover: Not is the Apostle only Teaching what they could not lawfully do, all their life, as they were single Christians, but what was their duty as Christians, avayd, convened together in a Church way, for Paul doth not command one single Christian to cast him out, but he commandeth the Church, gathered together...
in the name of the Lord Jesus, with Paul's spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, ver. 4.5. To purge out, not the leaven of sin in themselves, but the man, ver. 2. That he that hath done this deed may be put out, and ver. 7. Purge out the old leaven, and that the Apostle's precept is to cast out the man, he saith it in express terms, ver. 13. ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ ἡ πομήγγειν ἐξ ὑμῶν ἐκβάλετε, Cast out that wicked man from amongst you, and ver. 12. They were to judge him, as one that is within. 2. Because without convening together in their daily conversation, they were to purge the leaven of malice out of their heart, it was a ridiculous thing for Paul to command them to convene altogether, to lead a godly life: 3. There was no need that they should convene with Paul's spirit, and in the name and power of our Lord Jesus Christ to lead a godly life, and for a personal purging of every man his own soul from this leaven. 4. They were to judge this man, ver. 12. Therefore this cannot be meant of a personal judging every one of themselves, but of a Church-judging of an offender. 5. If Erastus grant that Paul expoundeth the Ceremony of leaven, and putting away leaven in the Paschal: Let him see how he can apply this to killing of every single man that liveth wickedly: We apply it to the casting out of the scandalous out of the Church, as leaven was to be put out of the houses of all who were to eat the paschal.

Erastus. I care not much whether the Lord himself immediately, or the Magistrate was to kill him, who eat leavened bread at that time: But I rather think that God killed him; for we find none killed for this cause: 2. Because Paul wrot of those who did unworthily eat, 1 Cor. 11.

Ans. There is no ground that God any way would have them to be killed; that did eat unleavened bread, and that we finde none for that cause ever killed, is much for us: for then God did not execute any such Law, which (as Erastus saith) was broken by many. It is like God never made any such Law: 2. Because it is said, he shall be cut off, who eateth leavened bread; it followeth not that therefore this was done immediately by God; for it is said, Lev. 18.29. Whosoever doth any of these abominations, even the soul that committeth them, shall be cut off from amongst the people; if that be killing; it is known, the Magistrate was to kill such as committed incest, & did lie with beasts; But Vatablus expoundeth it of Excommunication.
munication; thus, lde, Deus non agnosces illum quamquam Israelitam & circumcisionem: and Vatballus understood the Hebrew Tongue better, then Erastus who professeth he understandeth nothing of it.

3. That which Erastus faith of Paul, That God himself killed these as Corish, who did eat and drink unworthily; may as well infringe the Magistrate should kill with the sword. all that communicateth unworthily (which is absurd) as it can prove, that those that eat leavened bread were immediately killed of God.

Erastus. Those that eat leavened bread were debarred from the passover: But leavened bread signified, scelera, wickedness; Ergo, wicked men should by us be debarred from the Sacraments. 1. It is false that those that eat leavened bread were debarred from the passover by God's command: These two differ much: he that eateth leavened bread shall be cut off, and be that eateeth leaven shall be debarred from the feast of the passover, even as these two; the childe that littereth in time of Sermon, shall be whipped with rods, and the childe that littereth in time of Sermon shall be excluded from bearing Sermon; when the Master forbiddeth to litter in time of Sermon, under a punishment, be biddeth them not be absent from the Sermon: so when God forbiddeth to eat leaven, under a punishment, be forbiddeth not to exclude the man from the passover, the Lord commandeth both to be done.

Ans. 1. This is Erastus his Argument, not the Argument of Beza, for eating of leaven signifieth a scandalous and openly wicked man; and if this be the Assumption, it is true, but the Sylogismso formed, shall conclude against Erastus: 2. It is certain that God commandeth the Priests not to violate his holy things, Ezck. 22, 26, Hag. 2.11, 12, Ezck. 44, 8, 9, 10, 11. Else how failed they, in keeping the charge of the Lord, in not differing between the clean and the unclean? Now to eat the passover with leavened bread is an express violation of the holy things of God.

Exod. 12, ver.8. You shall eat the flesh in that night, rost with fire and unleavened bread, ver.11. And thus shall ye eat it—ver.15. Seven days shall ye eat unleavened bread, even the first day, ye shall put away leaven out of your houses: 2. He that is unclean is forbidden to eat the passover, Lev. 9.13. The clean only is to keep it: And he that is clean, and not on a journey, and keepeth it not, that man shall bear his sin; Ergo, the unclean are excepted; and he who is sanctified according to the puri-
purification of the sanctuary only by the Law, is to eat, 2 Chr. 30. 9. Therefore Hezekiah prayed that God would pardon them that were not so cleansed, ver. 18. To crave pardon presupposeth a sinne, Num. 9. 3, 4, 5, 6. But so it is, That he that eateth unleavened bread in any of these seven days, was unclean, and to be cut off for his uncleaness, and transgressed this Ceremonial Law, Exod. 12. 8. 15. Levit. 9. 13. Ergo, he was not to be admitted to the holy things of God, except the Priests and those who had the charge of the Passover, should know him to be purified, Ezek. 22. 26, Hag. 2. 11, 12. And we know it was the Priests part to pronounce any clean or unclean, & that the passover was one of the chief of the holy things of God. 3. Erastus his conjecture, That he that did eat leavened bread, was not to absent himself from the Passover; but to come as in mode, according to the Law: As the childe that clattereth in time of Sermon, is not bidden be absent from the Sermon, may prove as well that no unclean, no heathen, or uncircumcised, are forbidden to eat the Passover; for no Law of God forbiddeth either to eat the Passover, except this, that only the circumcised and the unclean were forbidden; when the Lord in his Law putteth an expresse and a differencing, or discriminative character on those that eat, to wit, that they be circumcised and clean who shall eat; Ergo, God, in that putteth an evident inhibition on those that are uncircumcised heathen and unclean, that they are not to eat, as when God Commandeth every Male to be circumcised; we infer then no Female were to be circumcised. And by this means the uncircumcised Moabite, the Philistine, were not by the Priests and Porters debarred out of the Temple, or from the Passover, so they would be circumcised and turn Jews: Even as the childe is not excluded by a command of the Master from hearing Sermon, only he is forbidden to clatter in time of Sermon: But a Jew was both forbidden uncleaness Ceremonial by an expresse Law, and by another Law he was forbidden to come to the Passover; and a heathen, as heathen, was both forbidden to eat, and the Priests forbidden to admit him.

Erastus. Though we should grant, That those that eat leaven were debarred from the Passover; yet it shall not follow, that those that live wickedly, shall be debarred from the Lords Supper, for the Feast of unleavened bread, typified not the Supper of the Lord, but the whole time of our life: Otherwise, faith be, (in his Thesis) we may live wickedly.
Wickedly all our days, except when we come to the holy Supper; as the Jews might eat unleavened bread at any time, except on those days way of leaven.

**Ans.** 1. We contend nor, that debarring of men from any one Ordinance, was signified by putting away of the Leaven: But that by putting of leaven from their houses and Table, was typified (as Paul here expoundeth it) the putting of a wicked person out the midst of the Church, 1 Cor. 5. 2. compared with ver. 5, 6, 7, 13. If the Feast of unleavened bread, typified all our life, that we should be holy; yet it had a special relation to our Purification, when we did partake of the most holy Ordinances of God, such as was the Passover then, and to us the Lords Supper: Else, Erastus might say, God hath forbidden single Christians to live at all, except they lived holily, which is a vain conceit. It is not lawful to Erastus to put significations on types, at his will; and therefore that that Feast pointed out holiness all our life, is utterly denied; for eating of leavened bread, except in these days forbidden, was not a sin, nor any Ceremoniall type at all, no more then our common bread and wine are signes of Christ's body and blood. 2. Paul compariseth the Feast to the lump of the Visible Church; so as the leaven was to be removed out of all houses of Israel; because it did Ceremonially infect, corrupt, and leaven them, and so was to be purged; so did the incautious man, leaven the Visible Church of Corinth, and was to be purged out: Nor do I contend, that the Lords Supper here is meant, though I know no solemn Spiritual Feast that the visible Church now hath, but the Supper of the Lord; But rather I understand, Church-Communion in the dainties of the Gospel, which are set forth to us under the similitude of a Feast, Mat. 22. Luke 14. 16, 17, 18, &c. Prov. 9. 2, 3, 4, 5. Cant. 5. 1.

**Erastus.** The leaven of the Passover does not so signify impurity of life, that Excommunication can be hence gathered: therefore the Apostle alludeth to that place, that or the like way, as the Jews did Celebrate their Passover without leaven; so it becomes us to Celebrate our Passover without the leaven of malice and wickedness; Leaven simply, may either signify good or evil, as Mat. 13. and 16. and Potuit, it might signify our natural corruption. For God not only forbiddeth to eat leaven, but to have it in the house; and leaven signifies...
nifieth not wickedness so to be punished, as you say, even by death.

Ans. The Leaven of the Pasover, signifieth sin impurity, as we are to put out the person that leaveneth the Church, out of the Church, as they were to put leaven out of the house; and not only simply, not to eat it; so are we not only, not to eat and drink with a scandalous man, but he is to be reputed no member of the Church, but a leavening and contagious man; and therefore Paul doth not here, as Erastus dreameth, show what way every one in his own personall practice and duty, as a single Christian is to do, that he may save his own soul; and therefore every one was to celebrate a Christian Pasover in his own soul, laying aside the leaven of malice: Though I grant, That Paul, ver. 8. doth infer and draw a conclusion of a personall purging out of the leaven of malice and hypocrisy out of every mans heart: But Paul doth expressly command the Corinthians as a convened Church, to put out from amongst them another man, for the saving of that other mans soul; And what they should do in a Church society toward the man, nowodula to ἑρμών μου, Who hath done this, to wir, down right they should Judge him, Cast him out, purge him out as a leavening peace. And the world cannot give any other meaning of the words, than that, as the Jews were to put all leaven from amongst them, when they were to celebrate their Pasover: So the Corinthians were to exercise the like work, upon this incestuous man, and to put him out from amongst them, as one delivered to Satan, as a lump of sawre leaven; and we seek no more for Excommunication. 2. Leaven signifieth Matth. 13. good, the Kingdom of God is compared to leaven: But here it is corruption of contagious scandal in this incestuous man; and such leaven as is to be cast out, and purged away. Now, I hope, we must not purge out, and cast away the Kingdom of heaven: and Matth. 16. 6. The leaven of the corrupt and false Doctrine of Pharisees and Sadduces, that corrupteth the hearts of men, is meant, and of this leaven we are to beware: But why doth Erastus strive to bring the reader in a good opinion of leaven, which Paul would have us to detest? I know not a reason, but because the place is so evident for the casting out of an incestuous man from amongst the Corinthians, lest he should infect the flock, and that by the Church convened together in the name and power of Christ, that his soul may be saved; and this is the very excommunication
communication that we assert. 3. This leaven, (faith he) may signify natural corruption: Now Eras tus puteth us to (as may be,) but (as may be) will not do it: For the Text faith nor, I hope, by Eras tus his confession, that the poor man must be delivered to Satan, that is, miraculously killed, for natural concupiscence. All the world thus are delivered to Satan, as being heirs of wrath for sin original, at least in demerit. 2. The man was not judged, purged out, and cast out, as leaven that sourred the Church, for natural corruption. 3. Paul offended not with them, that they were puffed and mourned not for the man's original sin, but for his actual wickedness, because he had gone in to his father's wife, an abomination that the Gentiles are ashamed to name.

Eras tus. Then the man must be killed, as he that eat leavened bread was killed: and though the punishments of Moses Law as such, must not be brought in the Christian Church, yet if God subject men to the Magistrates Sword, men cannot free them from it, though there may be degrees of punishment.

Ans. We deny that those that eat leavened bread with the Passover were killed, but only excommunicated and cut off from the congregation: God never subjected any to the sword, for that cause. 2. We deny that therefore by proportion the incestuous man should be killed, by what consequence will Eras tus prove that those that gathered sticks on the Lord's day, those that are born to Father or Mother, those who commit fornication now in the Israel of God under the New Testament, must be stoned to death by the Magistrate, or miraculously killed by the Apostles? It must be by the same consequence, that Eras tus reasoneth here. But did God kill immediately any offenders at all for original sin, some one more nor other? as Eras tus dreameth this must was killed. 3. What warrant hath Eras tus that the Devil killed? any one of the visible Church now under the New Testament, and any of the children of God, whose Spirit are saved in the day of the Lord? proferat tabulas. Eras tus faith it, neither Prophet nor Apostle in the Old or New Testament ever said it.

Eras tus said, an Analogical sense is not concludent.

Ans. Where the Holy Ghost giveth the sense; it is false, faith.

Eras tus. 2. Why doth then Eras tus conclude miraculous killing from the Types of the Old Testament?
Eras tus. Where I pray you doth Paul say that the punishment of eating leavened bread did typifie your Excommunication?

Ans. The word Excommunication may be by the Church used as the Word, Sacrament, Trinity. But the thing is not ours, but an ordinance of Jesus Christ. 2. Paul saith in this very place, as Israel were to put away leaven in their Passover, so is the converted Church of Corinth in the name and power of Christ to put out, judge and purge out a corrupting and leavening incestuos man, and this is all we seek for Excommunication.


Ans. We are not in such need of that interpretation, as to put the name of the one for the other. But let Erasmus shew where he readeth that the thing, to wit, that the one Sacrament succeeded to the other; and Beza may thence inferre his point, if God would have no man to eat the Passover, with leavened bread, and if eating of leavened bread, and bread it selfe was to be put out of all the houses of Israel, thereby signifying that inc estuos and scandalous persons are to be cast out of the Church, and to from the Sacraments; let Erasmus see what Beza hath said amisse here.

Eras tus. God would have the Israelites to eat the Passover without leavened bread, that they might remember of their wonderfull deliverance out of the hard bondage of Egypt, and of the deliverance of their first borne.

Ans. Reverend Beza faith these two were by past benefits remembred in that Sacrament: But we have the Holy Ghost expounding that the putting away of leavened bread, did typifie the purging out of the incestuos men, and other scandalous persons out of the Church, which is our point, otherwise let Erasmus shew us what is meant by ὅλον το ἔλαιον: the whole Mass and lump, for it signifieth either one single man; Or 2. The Mass and body of the visible Church, of which the inc estuos man was a Member; or some third thing, which Erasmus and his followers must teach us. Now the whole lump can neither signifie the ince stuos man, nor any other single member of the Church. Not the incestuos man, 1. He was not the whole lump in danger to be leavened, for he was the leaven, then he was not the lump in danger to be leavened; for the one is the agent infecting, the other the
the patient infected. The whole lump was the thing out of which the leaven was to be removed, the terminus a quo, the incestuous man was to be purged out, therefore the leaven cannot signify wickedness as Erastus faith, but the wicked man in concreto; for the leaven must signify that which is cast out, in uivo, out of the midst of them, v. 2. Now this was not incest, but the man that had his fathers wife, and had done that deed.

2. Again, the leaven was the person to be delivered to Satan, that had a soul to be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. But wickedness in abstracto is not delivered to Satan, nor hath it a Spirit to be saved in the day of the Lord. 3. The leaven is such a one as is to be judged, as is within the Church, v. 12. and is called a brother, with whom we are not to eat, v. 11. now this cannot be said of wickedness in abstracto. But neither can the whole lump be one single man; 1. One single man needed not the solemn convening of the Church in the Name and power of the Lord Jesus, for his personal purging, for his personal purging is not a Church-affair, but an act of a mans daily conversation and Christian walking. 2. The purging out and the casting out is in uivo, v. 2. out of the midst of them, then there was a society to be purged; Ergo, not a single man only. Much more I said before, which cannot but mislead Erastus, or any his followers, except they expound this whole lump to be the body of the visible Church of Corinth. 2. So Gal. 5.9. he addeth v. 10. he that troubleth you, (the lump in danger to be leavened,) shall bear his judgement; v. 12. I would they were cut off that trouble you. Then the whole Churches of Galatia were the troubled lump, & so it must be here, if this truth be so convincing out of the Text, let any Erastian extricate himself, if he can deny, but here is a Church-lump, a Church of Rulers gathered together in the Name and power of the Lord Jesus, that purgeth out of it itself leaven, not wickedness, in abstracto, as I have demonstrated, but a wicked man named a brother, left he leaven the whole Church, to the end his Spirit may be saved; Judge reader, if this be not name, nature and thing, of what which Erastians deny, to wit, of Excommunication. I humbly provoke them to make good sense of the 1 Cor. 5. and shew me what is the wicked man. 2. The casting out of the midst of you. 3. The saving of his Spirit. 4. The convened together court, instructed with the Name, and authority,
and power of Christ, and if this be not a Church power, efficacious and authoritative, being steeled with the power of the Head of the Church. 5. What is the leaven? 6. What is the act of leavening? 7. What is the whole lump? 8. What is the purging out, putting out, and judging of the man? 3. We know Erastus denieth any Church Government at all, but some acts of punitive justice in the Magistrate. But the Churches praying, consenting that a scandalous person shall be delivered to Satan, or some other waies punished by the Christian Magistrate, and acts of Church government, so proper to the Church, as the Magistrate as the Magistrate, cannot exercise such Acts.

Era'stus. Paul delivered Hymenæus and Alexander the same way to Satan, by miraculous killing of him; and whereas it is said, that they may learn not to blaspheme: Judges speak so when they kill Murtherers and Thieves, that he shall teach them to doe so no more by taking the head from them.

Ans. That word of a judge killing a man for Murther, Sirra, Ile: teach you other manners then to kill, can no waies be ascribed to Paul, who doth not scoufe so at taking away mens lives. Paul who wished to be separated from Christ, for the contumacious Jews, and would not kill any by Satan, since his rod and power was for edification, 2 Cor. 10. 8. and that the Spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord, 1 Cor. 5. 5. he speaketh more gravely and lisse improperly, and without boasting and jeering in a matter of Salvation. 2. In ria quæsition that they may be instructed or disciplined not to blaspheme; cannot be simply that they may blaspheme no more, because killed by the Devil. For let Erastus in the Old or New Testament produce a parallel place for that Exposition, where the word quæsition to be instructed is ascribed to the dead; but this is a common fault in all Erastus his expositions of Scripture, that they want all ground in Scripture, as let me put upon all the followers of Erastus to give a parallel to this Exposition of Matt. 18. Let him be to thee, that is, to thee onely, when Christ speaketh of a general Rule of all that scandalizeth. 2. Let him be as a Heathen. Give a place of Scripture for this. 1. Let him be as such Heathen onely acknowledge Cefar, and his Deputies for lawfull Judges. 2. A parallel for this we seek, Let him be as a Heathen, that is, convince him before an Heathen Judge.
Cap. XII. Q. 8. touching the Leaven, I Cor. 5.

Judge. 3. What Scripture expoundeth delivering to Satan for edification, and not destruction, I Cor. 5. to be a Magistratical killing by the power of the Devill, that others may fear.

4. Put out, purge out, judge those only that are within, are expounded by Erastus, pray for a miraculous destruction by the devill, as the licitor and hangman of the Apostle, that none may be killed miraculously for enormous scandals, no not such as Elymas the sorcerer, who was never within the Church, but those that are within: And did the company of the Saints, pray with the Saints, that signs and wonders, and so miraculous killing might be wrought, not on any but on those that are within the visible Church, not on the enemies, and Jews haters of Christ, and without the Christian Churches, when the Apostles miraculously escaped out of their prisons? Acts 4:29, 30. Acts 5:19, 20, 21, 22. Acts 12:7, 8, 9. Acts 16:25, 26, 27, 28. I might allledge many other such like interpretations of Erastus. 5. and in the New Testament, signifies to instruct and chastise the living, never any such thing is ascribed to the dead. Gal. 5:21, 30. Tit. 2:20. Rev. 3:19. Heb. 12:10. Luke 23:16, 22. 2 Cor. 6:9. Acts 22:3. Acts 7:22. as they are taught to sinne no more by being killed. 6. Robert Stephanus, citeth in the margent, 1 Cor. 5:5. to expound it of excommunicating of Hymenius and Alexander, so doth Piscator, so Calvin, Beza, Marlorat, so Varahus Lath, Quos ejaci ex ecclesia et censuri magis dignos esse ecclesia Sasan quam Christi, i. e. non respiciant. 7. Beza De Presbyter. p. 87.learneth that it is no Grammar; for if the effect of learning blaspheme be suspended upon the miraculous killing of Alexander, then he was first killed, & then learned not to blaspheme. But so Paul could have said he was killed, ut non blasphemaret, that he might not blaspheme, not that he might learn not to blaspheme.

Chapter XII. Quest. 8.
The eschewing of company with the scandalous, vindicated from Erastus his exceptions.

Besides other arguments from Matt. 18. and 1 Cor. 5. for excommunication, we argue thus: Those upon whom the Church
is to put such a publike note of shame or a censure, as they are to withdraw from their company, and not to eat and drink with them, those are cast out of the Church, and so cut off from the body of Christ, and excommunicated.

But the Church is to put such a note of shame, as to withdraw from the company of, and not to eat with those that are named brethren, and yet are fornicators, covetous, idolaters, sectarians, traitors, 1 Cor. 5:11. and cause divisions and offences contrary to the Doctrine of the Gospel, who serve not the Lord Jesus, but their own belly. Rom. 16:17, 18. who walk disorderly, are busy-bodies, idle, and obey not the Doctrine of the Apostles. 2 Thess. 3:11, 12, 13, 14, 15. Ergo.

The proposition I prove, 1 Cor. 5:11. he saith, v. 9. I wrote to you in an Epistle, not to keep company with fornicators, the same word that in the abstract is spoken of the incestuous man, v. 1. by which it is clear Paul had forbidden any company with such incestuous men. Now he had not forbidden them to keep company with dead men, if the man was to be miraculously killed, Ergo, it was his will before, that such a one should be judged, and put out, else he could not so sharply rebuke them, for not casting him out, and if now only he had first taught, and written to them to call him out: as if excommunication had been in this same very Chapter instituted by Paul, and v. 11. Now I have written unto you, not to keep company with one named a brother, who is a fornicator: this must be in the same Chapter, for now I have written, must be in relation to this v. 9. I wrote unto you in an Epistle before: now if here at this present he wrote to them, not to keep company with him, it must be when he commandeth to cast him out v. 13. and to judge him v. 12. so that not to keep company with such fornicators, must necessarily presuppose a casting out, and that the fornicator, with whom we are not to keep company in a familiar manner, is a man cast out of the Church, and so excommunicated. 2. Paul would never forbid brotherly familiarity with any remaining a brother, a member of the Church, and of a body with us in visible profession of the truth, as partakers of one body and blood of Christ, as all the members of the Church eating at one Lord's table are. 1. Cor. 10:16, 17. 3. The Apostle faith such a fornicator is but a (John 1:1) named a brother, and so in the esteem of the Church no brother, and so not of the visible body of Christ. 4. Paul bringeth
bringeth in this as a reason why they should cast out the incestuous man, v. 9. did not (faith he) I write to you before, and do I not now write, v. 11. even now that you are not to keep intimate familiarity with such titular brethren, who are brethren in name only? Therefore put out from amongst you this man, v. 13. the Apostle's argument to infer they ought to judge, and put such a man out of the Church; because they are not to eat with him, were of no weight, if this eschewing of familiarity with one who is a brother only in name, did not infer the Churches casting of him out.

Erasinus, it is false that Paul forbiddeth to eat with him who is cast out, for he forbiddeth not eating with a dead man.

Ans. This is to beg the question, Erasinus should teach us how Paul's argument cohereth; for the text saith, he must be cast out; why? you must not eat with him; then he supposed he must be a living man; for Paul needeth not fear they would eat with dead men, nor can this be Paul's consequence; you are not to eat with the incestuous; Ergo, he must be delivered to Satan, that he may be miraculously killed; for that is a false consequence, for then all covetous persons, all drunkards, all idolaters, all extortioners, should have been killed by Paul, because with none of these we are to eat.

Erasinus, It is false that Paul forbiddeth us to eat meat with such; for in no place he forbiddeth to eat with heathen, but elsewhere granteth it to be lawful, and in this Chapter he permitted private commerce with them.

Ans. 1. Let the reader judge whether Erasinus refuteth Paul, or Beza, Paul forbiddeth to eat with a brother; that is a fornicator: Erasinus saith, he forbiddeth no such thing. 2. Though I think Christians may eat with heathens, 1 Cor. 10. 27, and that Paul did eat with heathen; yet it is no argument to say, it is therefore lawful to eat with one cast out of the Church, because we may eat with heathens to gain them, and we are not bid to abstain from heathens company, that they may be ashamed of their religion, (though Christians are to use no heathens with intimate familiarity as we do our brethren in Christ;) But we are to eschew entire fellowship with a scandalous and cast out brother, to gain him, that he may be ashamed; 2 Thes. 3. 14, and in this a scandalous brother is in worse case then a heathen: But in other respects he is in better condition, as being under the medicine of the Church.

3. Though
3. Though we may have commerce, and buy and sell with heathens, and neglect no duties of humanity to them, as to receive them into our house, and to be hospitable to them, Heb. 13.2. Iob 31.32. Yet this will conclude entire fellowship with neither heathen, or scandalous brethren; Yea, we are not to receive a false teacher into our house, 2. Iob. ver. 10. Yet are we not forbidden to neglect duties of common humanity to false Teachers, though we be forbidden intiresie: of Brotherly fellowship with them.

Erastus. There is not the same reason of holy things, and of private civil things; for this, not eating, belongeth to private conversing with men, not to publicke Communion with them in the holy things of God. One faith, it is in our liberty, whether we converse familiarly with wicked men, or not, But it is not in our power, whether we come to the Lords Supper, or not; And Paul will not have us to deny any thing that belongeth to Salvation; and therefore he saith, 2. Thess. 3. Admonish him as a Brother; and none, I hope, can deny, but the Sacraments are helps of godliness and Salvation.

Ans. 1. It is true, that avoiding of the company of scandalous Brethren, hath in it something civil; but it is a cenfure-spiritual, and a Church-cenfure, two ways: 1. Objectively, in its tendency, Respectu termini ad quem. 2. Effectively, in its rise and cause, Respectu termini a quo, it is a spiritual cenfure Objectively, because it tendeth to make the party ashamed, that he may repent, and become a Brother with whom we are to converse; and therefore is destinated for no civil use, but for the good of his soul, that is a member of a Church, that he may return to what he was. 2. This cenfure, though one private Brother may exercise it upon another, yes, a woman on a man, who yet hath no Authority over the man, is notwithstanding in its rise and efficient cause, a Church-cenfure. 3. If Christ will not have one Brother to condemn another, while first he rebuke him; and if he be not convinced, while he do the same before two or three witnesses; and if he yet be not gained, one private Brother may not after conviction, before two or three witnesses repute him as a Heathen, or complain of him before an Heathen Judge, as Erastus faith; How shall we imagine any one single Brother may withdraw Brotherly fellowship from another Brother, by his own private Authority, while he first be sentenced before the Church? And the Church shall convince him to walk...

Disorderly, to cause divisions and offences, to be a Fornicator, a Covetous person, and so be unworthy of the entire Brotherly fellowship of another? For if this order were not in the Church, every Brother might take up a prejudice at his Brother, and so break all bands of Religious Communion, and Brotherly fellowship, and dissolve and make ruptures in the Churches: Now certain it is, These Texts, Rom. 16. 17, 18. 2 Thes. 3. 11, 12. & c, in the letter, intimate no such order as is Matth. 18. But it is presupposed, as clear by other Scriptures, we are not to withdraw from an offending Brother, but after such an order: Now the places in the letter, except we expound them by other Scriptures, do not bear that we are to rebuke our Brother, before we withdraw from him, contrary to Levit. 19. 17. 2. If I am to withdraw from a Brother, all Brotherly fellowship by these places; then I am to esteem him as a Heathen, and as a Brother in name, not in reality, 1 Cor. 5. 11. Whereas once I esteemed him a Brother, and did keep Brotherly fellowship with him; now this is materially Excommunication: I do no more in this kinde to one who is formally Excommunicated; yea, I am not so strange to a Heathen; Ergo, This I must have done upon some foregoing sentence of the Church, otherwise, I might un-Church and un-Brother the man whom the Church neither hath, nor can, un-Church and un-Brother. 3. Eschewing of Brotherly fellowship to any, is an act of Government distinct from the Preaching of the Word, tending to make a Brother that walketh disorderly ashamed, that he may repent, and of a Brother in name only, may become a Brother in reality, 2 Thes. 3. 14. But this act of Government belongeth not to the Christian Magistrate; for every Brother (faith Erasbus) may exercise it toward his Brother; Ergo, here is Church-Government that the Magistrate hath no hand in, contrary to the way of Erasbus, and not in the hands of Pastors, for it is distinct from Preaching; nor is it in a Colledge of Pastors, Doctors, and Elders, for Erasbus denyeth any such Colledge; Ergo, here every one must govern another, the man the woman, and the woman the man; the son the father, if he walk unorderly, and the Father the Son; this can be nothing, but the greatest Confusion on Earth. 4. To put any to shame, especially publickly, by way of punishment for publike sins, must come from some Judges, or others armed
with Authority, Ind. 18. 7. 1 Cor. 4. 14. 1 Cor. 6. 5. 1 Cor. 25. 34.
Then the Apostles sense cannot be, that every one hath power of
himselfe without the Church, or any authority therefrom to put
his brother to shame; for when a brother is not to eat with a
scandalous brother, he must be convinced by the Church to be scanda-
dalous, and so cast out, 1 Cor. 5. 11, 12, 13. as we have proved be-
fore, and every man here should be his owne judge, and party in
his owne cause, except he put his brother to some shame by an
higher, authority then his owne. The word σωματίζεισθαι, is to put a
publike note or σωματιον upon the offender. So Stephanus, So
Piscator, Nota ignominiosa excommunicationis. Pomponius laetus
Magister. Rom. c. 21. Censure quinto quoq; anno earis solebam, hic
profesu sive sic notabantur, ut qui Senator essec exercetur Senator,
qui eques Romanus equum publicum perderes, &c. Mathem Har-
nish & Geo. Gabrielius, who add to Zachius his Commentary in
2 Thes. say, Est not a quodam insigne, et in aliquem animadver-
tere; ut censores apud Romanos notare aliquem solebam, they ex-
found it the publike note of Excommunication. Beza faith, it is
not omnis to signify and declare, but omnis notare, & velati
innum a nota compungisse. So Calvin, Marlorat.

And I wonder that Erastus can say with any, that it is in our
power to converse, or not to converse with wicked men; are we not
discharged by Gods Spirit to converse with them? As we are
commanded to eat and drink at the Lords Table, and is it in our
power morally to obey, or disobey any Commandement of God?
Except Erastus will say with Papists, that God doth here give
counsels, not commands, Rom. 16. 17. 2 Thes. 3. 14. 1 Cor. 5. 9, 11.

And whereas Erastus faith, Panti will have us 2 Thes. 3: 15. to
admonish this man as a brother; Ergo, In holy things, and in the
Sacraments, that are helpees of piety and Salvation, we are not to
cast him off: It is true, the cast out man is not to be reputed as
an enemy, but a brother. Yet a sicke and diseased brother, under
the roughest Medicine of the Church, to wit, the rod of Excom-
unication, that the Spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord.
But withdrawing of brotherly fellowship, is not a meete civill
unbrothering of him, for if the brotherly fellowship of Christians
must be spiritual, religious, and for the edifying of one anothers
Soules, for abstaining one another, to prevent hardning of heart,
Cap. XII. Q. 8. 
arguceth Excommunication.

for provoking one another to love, and to good works, to teach one another, to comfort and support one another, as we are expressly commanded by the Holy Ghost, Heb. 3. 13. Heb. 10. 24. Col. 3. 16. 1 Thess. 5. 11, 14. Mal. 3. 16. Jer. 50. 5. Zach. 8. 22. Psal. 42. 4. I wonder where Erasus learned this Divinity, to say, the denying of this edifying Communion to a scandalous brother, while he be ashamed and repent, Is to deny nothing that belongeth to his salvation: Admonition is but one of twenty comfortable acts of Communion, which we deny not to him, least the man should despaire, and we should cast off all care, hope, or intention to save his soul, whereas the genuine and intrinsic call intention of avoiding him, and calling him out of the Church, is, that he may be saved: Lastly, we deny not admonition, and preaching of the word to the man, thus cast out, because they be converting Ordinances, simply necessary to work the mans humiliation and repentance; but the Lords Supper is a confirming Ordinance, and denied to the excommunicated while he is in that condition upon that very reason, that it is denied to Pagans and Heathens; and though it be an help of piety, it is no help either to a Pagan, or an excommunicate man, but damnation: But it may be, the excommunicate man hath faith. I answer, To us in the Court of the Church, in which the Seals are dispensed, he hath no more then a Heathen hath; and therefore, in confirming Ordinances, he is looked on by the Church as an Heathen; and if the reason of Erasus be good, The Church is to deny no helps of godliness and salvation to him, though we deny private food to his body, because the Sacraments are necessary helps. Then I, I much doubt, if the Church be to deny the necessary helps of godliness and salvation to a Pagan living amongst us; Ergo, shall we not deny the Sacraments to a Pagan? 2. We are not to avoid his company, Erasus p. and deny the edifying acts of Communion, which I named before, 248. Ceterum sacramenta esse administraria pietatis & salutis, nullus negas, proinde non sunt hae sectanda perennius, &c.

11. He that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh to his.
hymself judgemen. So Erasmius teacheth us, that it may be a sin to 
Swine publickly known to be such, to receive pearles, when it is no 
sin, but the Churches duty to give these pearles to such known 
Swine, which is most absurd and impious.

Erasmius. I said before, that God doth not exclude sinners from the 
Sacraments, but gather them in to them, that they may be more and 
more invited to repentance, and more easily raised up again, for Sa-
craments, and so many Ceremonies also, were for this endordained, 
that they might draw men to the love and care of true piety and holy-
ness, as Moses saith, Deut. 14.

Ans. Erasmius acknowledgeth this to be no new Argument; there-
therefore we may passe it, it is the chief pillar of his opinion: But I put 
it in forme thus, to Erasmius.

Those whom God inviteth to repentance, those he will not ex-
clude from the Sacraments: But now under the Gospel, he inviteth 
all, even many Pagans and Heathen to repentance, 1 Tim. 2. 4. God 
will have all, even Heathen Magistrates, to be saved, and to come to 
the knowledge of the truth; 10 Act. 17. 30. God now commandeth all 
men, every where, even the Idolaters, and blinde Philosophers at 
Athens, who erected an Altar to the unknown God, ver. 23. and who 
jeered at the Doctrine of the Resurrection, ver. 32. even those 
God inviteth to repentance: Ergo, God excludeth not Pagans from 
the Sacraments; but the conclusion is absurd and blaphemous; 
therefore so must one of the premises be, but the Assumption is 
Scripture; Ergo, The Major Proposition of Erasmius must be blap-
phemous. God inviteth scorners to repentance, and rebukes are 
means of repentance; Ergo, we may rebuke scorners; Gods spirit 
faith, Rebuke not a scorners, Prov. 9. 7, 8. His Proposition then must 
be, Those whom God inviteth to repentance, those God excludeth not 
from any mean of piety and sanctity. It is most sallie, God inviteth 
Dogs and Swine to repentance, and commandeth them to be holy, 
and the pearls of the Gospel are means of repentance; and holiness: 
Must we therefore, Cast pearles to dogs and Swine? The contrary 
our Saviour injoyneth, Matt. 7. 6. 2. Moses, Deut. 14. 1. forbiddeth 
diverse Ceremonies and Sacraments of the Heathen by this 
Argument; Ye are the children of the Lord your God; and he saith 
expressly, that the stranger may eat some unclean thing, but the 
Lord saith to them, Ye shall not do so, for thou art an holy people to 
the
argueith Excommunication.

Cap. XII. Q. 8.

the Lord thy God: Whence it is evident, Moses' faith poyut blank contrary to Erastus; for Moses' faith, that Ceremonies and Sacraments are for this end, to draw only the holy and sanctified people of God, to a further love and study of true piety and sanctity; was not the eating of the Passover a mean of Repentance, as well as the eating of the Lords Supper? no question, but God invited the uncircumcised to repentance, but forbiddeth them to eat the Passover.

Beza said, Sinners were indeed called to the sacrifices, but such as professed repentance.

Erastus' faith, Then wee agree, for wee dispute only of those who acknowledge their sins, and promise amendment.

Ans: We are not willing to hold up a needless controversy with Erastus; but Erastus' faith, and his Arguments conclude in the Old Testament, None for Morall uncleannesse, and impenitency were debarred from the holy things of God; Ergo, We are to debar none in the Novo Testament; yea, 2. Paul did never command to debar any, nor did Christ debar Judas, nor the Pharisees debar the loutest Publicans, nor the Apostles Simon Magus from the Sacraments; Ergo, faith he, we are to debar none at all: now here Erastus clearly contradiceth himself, and faith, We dispute only of such as acknowledge their sins and promise amendment: But let Erastus say, Did Judas acknowledge his sin and promise amendment? Did all the morally unclean in Corinth, such as repented not of their uncleannesse, and fornication, and lasciviousnesse which they committed, 2 Cor. 12. 21. acknowledge their sin, and promise amendment? and did those that were partakers of the Table of Devils acknowledge their sin and promise amendment? And yet I brought the very words of Erastus, in which he faith right down in a Catholick assertion, without exception, not any of those are to be debarred from the Sacraments: Why? The Sacraments (faith he) are Adminicula pietatis, et repiipitentiae, are helps to godlinesse and repentance: And I aske of Erastus, doth the Lord invite none to repentance, but those that do acknowledge their sin and promise amendment? And will Erastus have helps of repentance denied to all those who acknowledge not their sins? then let him give us Arguments in the Old or New Testament, by which he can demonstrate, that those who acknowledge not their sins, and promise
not amendment, are debarred in the Old Testament, from all the holy things of God, and in the New, from the Sacraments: Let Erastus extricate himself if he can.

It is worthy consideration, whether Erastus will have all those only that acknowledged their sins and repent, admitted to the holy things of God in the Old Testament; if not, he must shew a difference, why pearls might be cast to Swine, and scorners rebuked, and holy things profaned by the uncircumcised & prophane in the Old Testament, not in the New; this he shall not shew, if they were debarred who repented not, how faith he in all his book, that none were debarred from the holy things of God in the Old Testament for Morall uncleanness?

Erasmus. But we impugne this which you say, that God hath ordained Presbyters or Elders to be judges and examiners of that business: But we say, that God neither commanded in the Old or New Testament, that Priests or any other, should examine those who brought oblations for sin, whether they did truly repent, or dissimulate only; and ye say there be chosen Elders who should try, this in the New Testament.

Ans. 1. Elsewhere I have proved from Scripture, that the Priests did try judicially, those for whom they offered Sacrifice: If the Leaper had not bidden so many days as the Law required, if the Priests should offer for him, he should be partial in the Law, and if the disease be not removed, he cannot offer for him, Matth. 8.4. Lev. 14.3.4.9.10,11,12.

2. Observe good Reader, How craftily Erastus passeth from one question to another: All his Arguments hitherto, both in his Thesis and in his Book, conclude that no man, in either Old, or New Testament, ever was, or ought to be debarred from the holy things of God: Because there is neither precept, nor promise, nor practice in Moses, in the Prophets, or Apostles for it: 2. Because, The Sacraments are helps of repentance. 3. Because all are invited and commanded to come. Now here Erastus flyeth to another Question: Whether the unworthy should be debarred by Priests in the Old, and by certain select and chosen Elders in the New Testament? This is a far other Question: for let him answer our Arguments, by which we prove that pearls and the holy things of God, ought to be denied to all Dogs, Swine, and prophane men, whereas Erastus faith, all those
those are invited to come; and then we shall yeaow with Erasum, or any other, by whom, or by whose authority these pearls ought to be denied: whether by the Church, that is, by the Elders of the Church, and people confenting, or by the civill Magistrate. Now this latter question to Erasum, is no question at all: for if none ought to be debarred from the Sacraments at all; but all must come promiscuously, as their owne good or evill spirit inclineth them, it is a vaine thing for Erasum to make any question at all, by whom they ought to be debarred; for it is all one, as to aske the question, by whom should those who are to be gradued Doctors of Physick, be tryed and examined, whether by the faculty, and Colledge of of Physitians of the place, or by none at all: If you lay downe this ground, that there neither is, nor ought to be any graduated Doctours at all in the world, the other of those, who are to try those who are graduated is vaine; if all be invited to a free banquet, poor, and rich, leaper, and clean: it is a vaine question, whether be there some Masters of the house who should try who are worthy, and to be admitted to the feast, and who unworthy, and to be debarred.

Erasum, it is madness to say, that Paul by forbidding private eating, doth understand nothing but a debarring from the Sacraments; for 1 Cor. 11. be debarreth none from the Sacrament.

Ans. Neither Beza, nor any of ours say, that they are both one punishment; but that where we are forbidden to eat with a scandalous brother, it is presumed the Church doth cast him out of her society: nor doth Paul 1 Cor. 11. invite all to come to the supper.

Beza said, he to whom leffe is denied, as that we cet not wish him, in our private houses, to him more is denied, to wit, that he should not be admitted to the Lords supper.

Erasum saith, that to whom leffe is denied, to him more is denied, is true in gifts, but not in punishments, and in things of the same kind, but not in things divers, and in things free, not in things of which one is commanded by God, and another thing not commanded; it holdeth not in punishments, be to whom the city is denied, and who is banished, his life is not denied to him, he who is punished in his purse, is not killed; for that a father denieth to his son an unworthy thing, yet he denieth not payment to him.

Ans. Erasum in this granteth he wrongeth Beza, as if he had said

How withdrawing from scandalous brethren, may inferre excommunica-
said, to deny a private table, and the Lords table, were one and the same punishment. 

2. If it be true in gifts, that he to whom less is given, more is given, then it holdeth here in our case; because private fellowship with the Saints is a gift of God, and if the Lords body given for us; and to us in the Lords supper, be not a greater gift, it is nothing: so then if a lesse gift be denied, the Lords supper a greater gift is denied. 2. It must hold in the private punishments inflicted for an higher punishments cause; private communion with the Saints is denied, because the man is call out of the Church; Ergo, farre more are the highest priviledges of the Church denied: as liberty is denied to a man, because he is condemned to dye; Ergo, farre more is life denied to him; a mans house is denied to him, because he is banished; Ergo, farre more is his city and country denied to him: But a man is not punished in his purse, because he is condemned to dye, it followeth not; Ergo, he should rather dye, because the one punishment is not relative to the other. 3. Because not eating with a scandalous man is a spirituall punishment, as I have proved: therefore it is of that same kind with excommunication, and therefore it holdeth here. 4. Abstinence from the private fellowship of a scandalous brother is not free, but commanded of God, and so is debarring from the Lords supper, not free, but commanded.

Page 251. 1. Erasmus, when he forbiddeth wine, no not to eat, he forbiddeth, Neer communion of familiarity. 2. Not to eat with them, which is to forbid all signes of neer communion.

Anf. It is clear he proveth they should call him out, because I wrote so you that you should not keep company with such, v.g. no more to eat with such; Ergo, farre lesse (would he say) should he be a leavening member in the lump and maffe of Christs body.

Erasmus, I wrote unto you, that ye should not keep company with such; then Paul speaketh here of a thing, concerning which he had spoken before, though they understood him not: it is like they sought Pauls judgement of their conversing with men: But of delivering the man to Satan, he had not spoken before, as is clear in the Text.

Anf. This is a strong argument for us, if Paul had never spoken, nor written to them of the delivering of the man to Satan, that is, of the miraculous killing of him, how could he in reason and conscience
conscience chide them, because they prayed not, that he might be miraculously killed? in Cap. 8? it is not possible they could mourn for not joyning in a business, that Paul had never revealed to them to be God's will. Yea it is a strong argument to me, that delivering to Satan was excommunication, of which he had taught them before, (else their mourning had been unreasonable) and which he pointed at to them as a limbe of excommunication, to wit, their not familiar conversing with the scandalous.

Eraftus. And when he has shown how they ought to see the company of the scandalous, he returns to his former purpose, commanding the wicked man to be killed: This then he saith, I commanded you to eschew the company of wicked brethren, not of the heathen, whom the Lord shall judge.

Aesf. 1. The Text can bear no such exposition, for the reasons I have given before. 2. The coherence is clear; I wrote before that you should not keep company with wicked brethren: therefore put out that wicked man from among you. But by Eraftus his gloss, there is neither sense, nor coherence in the words.

Eraftus. The end of refusing familiar conversing with the scandalous, is, that he may be ashamed, and you say, that same is the end of depraving from the supper; then it must follow, as private conversing can do the contrary, so that in the brother we converse with, and in us, to the frequent use of the Lord's supper should many vices in us, which were wickednesse to think.

Aesf. This presumeth, that to avoid a scandalous brother, and to debarre him from the Sacraments, must be formally one, which we teach not. 2. Hence it followeth, since they be divers formally, they cannot have the same formal, and instrinsecall ends. 3. The frequent eating at the Lord's table, in a scandalous man, doth dispose him more and more to sinne, as frequently sinning inclineth more to sinne; but this is by the frequent abusing of God's ordaince, and not from the nature of the Sacrament.

Eraftus. Paul forbiddeth not ill men of the company of good men, but he admonisheth good men, to see ill men, that they may be ashamed. But when you deny the Sacraments to any, you command not the Godly not to come to the supper with the wicked, but you forbid the scandalous to come to the supper.

Aesf. There is no solidity in this conjecture, it leanteth upon the perpetuall
Withdrawing from scandalous Brethren, Cap. XII. Q. 8.

perpetual mistake of Erastus in all this dispute, as if we held, That to be debauched from familiar fellowship with the Saints, and from the Sacraments, were one and the same thing: Else, I see no conclusion that Erastus doth, or can infer against us. 2. It is false, that wicked men are not discharged the company of Saints; for in so far as fellowship with the Saints, is a spiritual mean of the gaining of their souls by Teaching, Exhorting, Edifying, Comforting the wicked and scandalous, being Dogs and Swine are forbidden to touch such a Pearl; Yea, God layeth a charge on wicked men, while they remain in that case, not to meddle with Confirming Ordinances (with some Converting Ordinances they may,) as Psal. 50. 16. But to the wicked God said, What hast thou to do to declare my Statutes, or that thou takest my Covenant in thy mouth? 17. Seeing thou hast Instructed Instruction, and castest my Word behind thee. Here the wicked are forbidden to Teach or speak, to the instructing of others, which is a special act of Christian fellowship between Brother and Brother, Col. 3. 16. Heb. 3. 13. Heb. 10. 24. 1 Thes. 5. 11. 14. Because they have to be instructed of others: And you know how Christ speaketh to the unworthy intruder of himself on the secrets and spiritual marrow and comforts of the Gospel, Matt. 22. ver. 12. Friend, How camest thou here, not having thy Wedding garment? Ezra 4. 3. But Zerubbabel and Joshua, and the rest of the chief of the Fathers came and said unto the Adversaries of Judah and Benjamin: You have nothing so to do with us, to build an house unto our God; But we our selves together will build unto the Lord God of Israel: Doth not God expressly forbid David to build an house to his name? 1 Chron. 22. 8. 2 Chron. 6. 9. And we know it is a typical discharge layed upon men of blood, not to touch the holiest things of God; but that men of Peace must meddle with them, Isa. 1. 13. Bring no more vain Oblations, &c. All which holdeth forth, that not only those who have the charge of the house of the Lord, to see that no Swine and Dogs profane the holy things of God, but they are forbidden all private Ordinances and publick, in so far as they can make no other use of them, but to defile them.

Erastus saith, They be wickedly forbidden to come to the Lords Supper, who desire to celebrate the memorial of his death.

Beza Repliceth well, 1. What if be know not what be defies; who can it? 2. What if there be just accusation or clear evidence that he
Cap. XII. Q.8.  argueth Excommunication.

player the Hypocrite?  3. What if it concern the whole Church that his desire be suspended?

Erastus. The first cause is not to purpose, because we speak of these that are well instructed. 2. The second is bred in the brain of Beza; I am compelled to think, that he that publicly professeth he is grieved for his sins, and that he purposeth to live a holy life in time to come, that he skinketh as he speaketh, if he remain not in that purpose: I also remain not always in my good purpose; his desire is an Argument of Piety, which should not be smothered and oppressed, but excited and nourished: And this opinion of Beza dependeth on the Judgement of men; neither hath the Lord committed the Examination of some to Elders: And it is folly to say, It concerns the Church to delay, to do that which the Lord hath Commanded me to.

Ans. 1. Erastus professeth he standeth for their admission to the Lords Supper, who are Reel instituti, & profissentur dolere se propter peccata sua, who are instructed in the grounds of Christian Religion; and repenteth of their sins, or professeth it: And he saith before, as I observed it, If any shall be found who shall trample on the Sacraments, Ego hanc minime admitterem cenfo: I judge such a man should not be admitted to the Sacraments: Whence it is clear, That Erastus professeth that the ignorant and the scandalous should be debarred from the Lords Supper: But, good Reader, Observe that Erastus contradiceth himself in all his Arguments; for he proveth, that not any one Christian in the Visible Church, ignorant, or not ignorant, who professeth their Repentance, or not professeth it, can be excluded from the Sacraments; but that all are commanded by Christ to come. But Erastus faith, Scriptura illis, de quibus nos loquimur, nec a sacrificiis arcat, nec a sacramentis alius ulius: in sub penam capitam mandat, us universi nowes, &c. The Scripture excuseth none from Sacrifices, or any other Sacraments: But commandeth that all the Male Children, Jews and strangers, who are not legally unclean, and from home, should come at Jerusalem thrice a year before the Lord: And pag. 104. In sacrificio literis non tantum non inveniri aliqua quos a sacramentis propter solam visapitidinem, ab altos esse sed contrarium potius probari: And John Baptiz (faith he) Baptized all that came to him, Pharisees and Sadduccees, whom he affirmeth to be a Garion of Vipers, Ex quo intelligimus: Whence we understand, that Ministers are not to deny the Sacraments to those who seek them.
and the Judgement is to be left to God, whether he who professeth Repentance, dissemble, or deal truly and sincerely: Yea, when Erastus faith, That is it not in all the Scripture to be found, Aliquos a Sacramentis propter solam vitæ turpitudinem abassos esse: That any were debarred from the Sacraments for only wickedness of life; but rather the contrary may be proved, either ignorance of God, opposed to due instruction, and professed impenitency, is no wickedness of life, which is most absurd; or then in Scripture, some must be debarred from the Sacraments for wickedness of life only: But Erastus faith plainly, None in Scripture are debarred from the Sacraments, for only wickedness of life: And so they are not debarred, because they profess not Repentance. And Erastus faith, Christ said, Drink ye all of this and Iudas was not excepted: Christ went into the Temple with most wicked men: the Pharisees and Sadduces were Baptized with the same Baptisme of Iohn with them: Then Erastus will exclude none at all, no not those whom Christ pronounced to sin against the Holy Ghost, and the convincing light of their own minde, Matth. 12.

Page 117.
31, 32. Iob. 9. 39. 40, 41. and 15. 24. and 7. 28. Yea, pag. 117. He will have none excluded in Corinth, not those that are impenitent, and those that were partakers of the Table of Devils. Pag. 116. When Christ commandeth all to eat and all to drink, he excludeth none that professeth themselves to be Disciples: But many profess no Repentance, who professeth themselves Disciples: See pag. 117, 118. and the following pages.

Page 116.
2. Erastus faith, He is compelled to think, That he that publicly professeth sorrow for sin, doth think as he speaketh: But to whom shall he profess it? To the Church? Then hath the Church power to accept the confession of scandalous men, ere they be admitted to the Lords Supper: Erastus will stand at this, for it is Government in the hands of the Church; if he must confess to the Civil Magistrate, who made him a Steward of the Seals, and Mysteries of the Gospel? Nor is the Church to think, as Erastus is compelled to think, manifest Hypocrites, and those that trample the Sacraments under their feet, will make profession of sorrow for sin: and Erastus thinketh such are not to be admitted: Erastus faith, they may change their purpose of Repentance, and so may he doe himselfe. Valeat totum, granting all, that is, nothing to us, for any Divinity we have prooef of in Erastus his booke; I should humbly conceive when he speaketh so ignorantly of the work
worke of Repentance; and preparacon for the Lords Supper: he hath been a man non recte institutus, not well instructed, and so without the lights of the disputacon by his owne word, and so not to have beene himselfe to be admitted to the Sacraments.

2. Nor is it in Beza his head onely, that those who desire the Sacrament have true piety, for Christs faith, wicked men are known by their works; otherwisse if trampling the Sacrament, and the ignorant desire the Sacrament, as ignorance is neighbour to arrogance and presumption: let Erasius give us a rul in the Word by which they are to be debarred, all his arguments will prove that they are to be admitted: and if Erasius deny that the judgcon of men either of Church or Magistrate is to be interposed in the excludion of those who are, non recte institutus, not rightly instructed, and duc not profess scorour for their sin, he must speake against sense, if he grant some must judge, who are ignorant, and openly impenitent; then I say to Erasius what hee faith to Beza, your opinion dependeth on the opinion and judgcon of men. 3. If God have not commanded either Elders, or any other (as Erasius faith,) to examine and judge, who are fit for the Lords Supper, who not: Then seeing Erasius faith the prophane, the ignorant, the impenitently scandalous, knowne to be such, are to be debarred. I ask of Erasius, to whom Christ hath commanded the tryall of this, who are ignorant, and non recte institutus? Men cannot be barre themselves from the Sacraments in a judiciall way, molt of man conceiting well of themselves, such upon the ordinances of God, nor knowing that they doe evill: Workers of iniquity, who cry, Lord, Lord, Adulterers, Theeves, Idolaters, who dare come to the Temple of the Lord and cry, The temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord are these, Jer. 7. 9, 10, 11. will also faile and profess Repentance, Esa. 57. 3, 4, 5. even when their wickednes testifioth to their face against them in the eies of all, Jer. 2. 1, Eec. Jer. 2. 34. Esa. 1. 9. and they will desire to partake of the Lords Supper, as is evident, Esa. 57. 2. Now there are none on earth, neither Elders, or any others to debarre them; Erasius faith, Tacce jam, quod Deus non praecipit vel Presbyteris, vel aliis tale examen. Let Erasius answer us in this; and by what charity is Erasius obliged to believe, all that seeketh the Lords Supper, do it in truth? God has given to us mens works, not their words, of which hypocrites are D d d 2 liberall.
liberall, and shall we foment hypocritie, and mens eating their owne damnation, under Erastus his pretence of encouraging, and not suffocating seeming godly desires? Lastly, Erastus faith, it doth not concern the Church, that the man deferre to do that which Christ commands him to do, this is to beg the question. Doth Christ command a man to e.is his owne damnation?

CHAP. XIII. Quest.9.

Other Arguments for Excommunication vindicated.

Eras,us. The Apostle writeth, if any man love not the Lord Jesus, let him be accursed. Ergo, Paul will have the Elders to sit and judge who truly repent, who not, that they may admit the one to the supper, not the other; if this be excommunication, excommunication is grounded on a thousand places: to love Christ is to keep his commandments, Joh. 13. and 15. then who ever saith those that keep not the commandments of Christ are cursed of God, he shall this way excommunicate: then Moses did often excommunicate. But because the false Apostles did strive to make Paul contemptible, therefore Paul saith, God be judge which of us loveth Christ, and let God destroy him who loves him not, this is the true meaning.

Ans. Erastus perverteth the sense of Beza his words, for Beza has no such conclusion as to prove a formall excommunication by the Elders, or Church judicature; this is Erastus fained conclusion. Beza inferreth from these words, that there is here gravissima excommunicationis species, a kind of heavy excommunication, materially, to be eternally separated from Christ, called the great excommunication. And it was to be accursed while the Lord come, and therefore this may prove there is a kind of lesser excommunication, in the Church, and Moses his cursing by way of preaching, may well inferre, that because there be Church censures, therefore there is a Church cursing heavy, and lesse heavy. But Beza intendeth not to prove excommunication by the Church from this, but only that Christ's enemies are cursed, though they be other ways in the Church, and
and this kind of excommunication, of shutting impenitent sinners out of heaven, is in a thousand places of scripture, and nothing can hence be concluded against Beza; and the like excommunication is Gal. 1. And when Job. 2. Ep. forbiddeth to receive a false teacher into your house, if he be a member of the Church, he is to be farre less kept in Christ's greater house the Church; but is to be cast out.

Erastus. When Paul saith, Gal. 5. I would they were cut off who trouble you; he saith not, convene the Elders, and cast such men out of the Church, or deliver them to Satan, but he wisheth that they were cut off by God.

Ans. 1. The place, Gal. 5. 12. I wish they were cut off that trouble you, is expounded by Piscator of cutting off from the visible Church; Yea he faith, convene the Church, when he faith, v. 9. a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump, that is, a little false Doctrine infecteth the whole Church, and v. 10. I am confident of you, that ye will be no otherwise minded; but he that troubleth you shall bear his judgement; who ever he be: then he hopeth well of the Galatians that they will be of one mind to judge, and cast out the false teacher, this is parallel to 1 Cor. 5. though Paul do not so right downe chide them for neglect of Church censures, as he doth 1 Cor. 5.

But faith Erastus, if Paul wished them to be cut off that troubled them, why did he not cut off those false teachers, and deliver them to Satan? Erastus answereth, it was not God's will so to do, and the Apostles could not in every place, and at every time kill miraculously; but when it was profitable, and necessary.

Ans. Then Paul, 1 Cor. 5. farre less could rebuke the Corinthians; because they prayed not that the incestuous Corinthian might be miraculously killed by Paul: for Paul had not power to kill him; because it was not necessary, not profitable: the man repented, and was never killed. 2. Judge if it be probable that Paul would will to work a miracle in killing false teachers, when it was neither profitable, necessary, nor safe for the Church to have them killed. 3. Paul was confident the man who troubled them should bear his judgement. Erastus faith, it was not God's will he should be miraculously killed; Ergo, it was not miraculous killing, but some Church cenasure; or then Erastus must find out another kind of judgement.
And why (may some say) doth not Paul write to Excommunicate him, as he did the incestuous Corinthian? Beza Answereth, Paul would not: 1 Cor. 5. take that Authority to himself, but would do it by the suffrages of the Church: So here he Speaketh what he desirath, but happily it was not expedient that they should be presently cut off: So Beza: Yes, the words do well bear, that Paul thought fit, That they should bear their Judgement who had troubled them, and that that leaven should be purged out. 2. Yes, if this cutting off be miraculous, it is clear, Paul could not Communicate it to others, for it was Paul will that the incestuous Corinthian should be delivered to Satan by the suffrages of the Corinthians: Nor do we read that the Apostles wished to cut off men miraculously, but were not able to do it.

Erastus. It is false, That Paul willed the man to be delivered to Satan by the suffrages of the Corinthians: For he saith 1 Thess. 1. I have already Concluded, ordained, decreed, to deliver him to Satan, though I be absent in body: What then would be have done? The would all the Church being gathered together (not some Presbyters only) by his own spirit, and the power of the Lord Jesus granted to him, deliver the man to Satan, that he might strike fear and terror on others, and that the man might bear the just punishment of his wickednesse.

Anf. Paul chideth them, that they were puffed up, and mourned not, that the man might be put out of the midst of them: Then, whereas it might be laid, we want the presence of the Apostle Paul, and his privy to the business: To this Paul saith, ver. 7. 1 Cor. 5. 3. ἀνέτειλεν τὸν παρακαταθέντα. For me (faith he) I have, as if I were present in body when you are Convened together, &c. Induced to deliver such a one to Satan. Now that this Decree was the judiciall Decree and sentence of Paul as a miraculous Magistrate giving sentence judicially, when Paul himself was absent, and had not convinced the man, nor spoken with him, I do not believe. 1. Because, though signify may signify such a sentence of a man when the guilty is before him, yet the word doth not necessitate us to this Exposition, Luk. 19. 22. Out of thy own mouth will I judge thee; for it doth as often signify a simple act of the minde, and the opinion of any not sitting in judgement, as Act. 13. 46. To judge yourselves unworthy and unworthy of life Eternall, 1 Cor. 2. 2. I determined therefore to know nothing but Christ.

Chrift, Luk. 7. 43. ὑπὸς ἵππων, faith Christ to Simon the Pharifee who was not on the bench, Thus hast judged rightly, Tit. 3. 12. I have determined there to winter, 1 Cor. 10. 15. Judge ye what I say, Act. 27. 1. When it was determined to sail into Italy. 2. We do not read that Apostle, Prophet or Judge, gave out a sentence of death against any, the person condemned not being present nor heard: the Lord himself did it not to Adam, nor to Sodom; he came down to see, he examined Adam: Moses did not so condemn the man that gathered sticks on the Sabbath day: Joshua convinced Achan, the Prophet convinced Gehazi, ere he smote him with Leprifie, Peter convinced Ananias and Saphira to their faces, ere he killed them, so did Paul convince Elymas the sorcerer in his face, so did Christ in his miraculous purging of the Temple, convince them that His Fathres house should be a house of Prayer. Now Paul here giveth a judicial sentence of death on a man, he never spake of being at Philippi whence he wrote, and the delinquent at Corinth, if we beleive Erasius. 3. Erasius judgeth that Paul knew this man to be penitent, and how knew Paul this? It must be a miraculous knowledge, by which Paul at Philippi looked upon the mans heart at Corinth, one of the greatest miracles that ever Paul wrought. For Paul had the knowledge of the mans sinne only by report, v. r. ὑπὸς ἵππων it is reported; between Pauls writing the first verse of that Chapter, and his writing the third verse there must intervenne a miraculous discovery of the incefluous mans heart, Paul being at Philippi, and the man at Corinth; and Paul knowing the man to be penitent, and because of his penitency (as Erasius faith) Paul did not kill him: Yet Paul so farre absten, must have given out a miraculous sentence, as a miraculoust Magistrate. I (faith he) by revelation as having the sword of God now in my hand, have judged, and given out sentence, that this man shall be miraculously killed by Satan, before your eyes, that all may see, and do no more, and yet I know him to be penitent, and that he shall not be killed by Satan; a monstrous and irrationall sentence, if it be laid, that by report Paul had knowledge of his sinne, and by report also he had knowledge of his repentence, and that his spirit would be saved in the day of the Lord, and that this knowledge came not to Paul by any immediate revelation. I answer, Yet the sentence must stand; by Erasius his mind touching κεραυνοι. I have judged and condemned.
condemned him as a miraculous Magistrate to dye upon a report, though I never heard him, and I know he shall not dye for this fault; for can it be said, that Paul retracted a sentence which he gave out as the deputy of God, and he eventhen, when he wrote the sentence, knew there was so much repentance in the man, as he would for it be moved not to kill him. 4. There is no ground in the Text, why Paul should be said to seek the naked presence of the whole people, to do such a miracle before them, he being himselfe absent, for there is more then a naked presence of the Corinthians, as only witnesses that they might be afraid & do no more: for they were present as instructed with the Spirit of Paul, and the power of the Lord Jesus Christ, to deliver such a one to Satan: as the words bear, v.4, εν οπωσις τι κυριε ημων, εις γη εστε σαλβατορ υμων και τι ενω των, ουν τα δωματια τω Κυριου ημων, εις γης. For to be convened in the name of Christ, being spoken, Mar. 18. v.10. of a Church meeting, or in reference thereunto in the same phrase, and to be convened with the power and Spirit of Paul, and of the Lord Jesus, cannot agree to Paul, nor can it be said, I Paul absent in body, and present in spirit, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and with my spirit, and the power of the Lord Jesus, have decreed to deliver such a one to Satan. For, 1. the Grammar of the words cannot bear that, for (being convened in the name of the Lord, with my spirit) are constructed together in the Text. 2. It is no sense, nor any Scripture phrase. I present in spirit, and with my spirit have decreed to deliver such a one to Satan. 3. It is evident that Paul would, as it were absent, recompence his bodily absence, with the presence of the spirit, and road of Church censure, which the Lord had communicaed to them. 5. Erasfts needeth not object, that there was a convening of the Church, not of some Elders, for as there is no word of the word Elders in the Text, so is there no word of ιερος in the Text, and so the debate will be, what is meant by ουσκος, whether Elders, or people, or both; but though every one in their owne place were understood, yet the words beare a juridicall convention, being convened in the name of the Lord Jesus, and with my spirit, and the power of the Lord Jesus.

Erasfts, The questions why Paul did not command to execute case the false Apostles in Galatia? Or why he did not miraculously kill them? are both urgent; But the latter is most urgent, for the
power of miraculous affliction, was given to few men, and to
Apostles: But it is a wonder, if excommunication was ever, and eve-
ry where to be observed in all Churches. Yet Paul neither practised
it here, nor else where, nor commanded others to practise it; now
here be desires they may be cut off, but not excommunicated.

Ans. We say the last is no question, you never read in the New-
Testament, or in the Old, that Prophets or Apostles consulted, or
advised with the people, whether they should work miracles or
not: 2. Though Excommunication was an ordinary power, as the
power of binding and loosing given to the Church, Matt. 16.19.
and 18.18. Iob. 20.22, 23. Yet the actual exercise of Excommuni-
cation, being the highest and weightiest censure, and the most se-
vere of any other on earth, it is no wonder that Paul be as spara-
ing and rare in the exercise of it, as the Apostles were in killing
men's bodies. 3. It is begging of the question, to say, Paul nei-
ther practised himself, nor commanded others to excommunicate,
for he did both.

Erastus. That which is, Rom. 16. Spoken for eschewing of those
who cause offences, is that every one single person beware of false
Teachers; it is not spoken to the Church to Excommunicate those false
Teachers, and therefore there is no such need of such a Presbytery as
you dream of, but only of good and diligent Ministers, who may rig-
ously instruct, and prudently teach their hearers, what Teachers, they
ought to eschew.

Ans. 1. The eschewing of false Teachers is a general, and a du-
ty no question given to all and every one of the Church: But the
place doth no more say in express terms that a single Pastor should
give warning particularly by name, that this man, John, Hymenæus,
Alexander, are those false Teachers to be eschewed, than it faith,
that the Presbytery, which we assert, doth in express terms, (he
what false Teachers they be, who by name are to be Excommuni-
cated and eschewed; but you see, that Erastus is overcome by
truth, so far, as he must say one single Minister may declare that
such a false Teacher, by name, is to be eschewed as a Heathen and a
Publican, and so in effect excommunicated, and put out of the
Church; but he denieth that the Church may declare him a Hea-
then, as Matt. 18. And that many Elders, were gathered to-
gether in the name of Christ, as it is, 1 Cor. 5. may put out a false
E e e Teacher,

To eschew the scanda-
loss is ma-
terially to
Excommu-
nicatethem.
Teacher, or a wolf out of the flock. 2. We grant that it is spoken to every one, that he should eschew false teachers, yea, and 3 Thes.
3. All that walketh unordinarily, all fornicators, extortioners, drunkards, 1 Cor. 5. But that every man should eschew those, whom he in his private judgement conceiveth to be such, before he rebuke them, and labour to gain them, and in case of obstinacy, tell the Church, as Christ commandeth, Matt. 18. is not commanded, but forbidden, Matt. 18. Lev. 19.17. Col. 3.15. For if this should be, that I might immediately, upon my own private grudge, unbrother and cast out of my heart and intire fellowship, every one whom I conceive offendeth me, and walketh unordinately, without observing Christ's order, or previous rebuking of him, I make a pathway to perpetuall Schismes: 2. A violation of all Laws of fraternity, and Christian Communion. 3. A dissolving and breaking of all Church Communion, and it were strange, if Erastus will have Christ's order kept, Matt. 18. in private offences done by one brother to another, and not in publick offences, when a brother offendeth twenty, and a whole Church, as if I were obliged to seek to gain my brothers soul in private and leas injuries, and not in publick, and more hainous offences.

Hence it is clear to me, if we are to reject an Heretick, after once, or twice admonition, and not to receive in our houses false Teachers, and 1 Tim. 6. 3. If any teach otherwise, and consent not unto the wholesome word, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, being given to perverse disputing, as men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, 1 Tim. 6. 3, 4, 5. We are to withdraw our selves from such, and to save, with severity and plucking out of the fire, those that cannot be cured; then certainly the Church of Christ must also turn away from such men, and acknowledge them as no members of the body, whereof Christ is the head; if we say not this, if one hath leave in a constituted Church, to judge and condemn his brother, and then we shall not take the course of the Apostles in the like case, as Acts. 15. which is not Apostolick, for when false Teachers troubled the Brethren, they would not peremptorily, though great Apostles, as Paul and Barnabas, determine against either the false doctrine, or the persons of the Teachers, while the Apostles, Elders, and Brethren did meet in a Synod, and determine against the Error, and against the men, as such as troubled the Brethren with...
Words, and perverted their souls, Act. 15. Now Erastus is willing to acknowledge a sort of Divine Excommunication, not a humane, as he is pleased to call that Ordinance of separating of wicked men from the Church and holy things of God, which yet was in the Church of the Jews, instituted by Christ and his Apostles, and which no Church wanted, as learned Bexa faith, even in the time of persecution: had Erastus explained to us his divine Excommunication, as he calleth it, it were easy to bring most of his owne Arguments with greater strength of reason against it then against ours, which is the truly divine Excommunication.

**CHAP. XIV. Quest. 10.**

Whether Erastus doth strongly prove that there is no Presbytery, nor two distinct judicatures, one of the Church, another of the State?

Erastus. I deny not, First, such a Presbytery, as the Evangelists mention, which is called a Presbytery, a Synedry, a Synagogue; this was the civill Magistrate who had amongst the Jews the power of the sword. 2. I deny not a Presbytery, 1 Cor. 6. When the Church Wanteth a civill Magistrate. 3. I deny not a Presbytery of learned men, who being asked, may give their judgment of doubts: of which yeildeth. Ambrose, there was nothing of old done sine seniorum consilio, without the Counsels of the Elders. But I deny a Senate, collected out of the body of the Church, to judge who repenteth, and are to be excommunicated, and debarred from the Sacraments, and who not; or I deny any Ecclesiasticall judicature, touching the manners and conversation of men, different from the judgement or court of the civil Magistrate, or that there be two supreme Courts touching manners in one Common Wealth.

Ans. One simple head in a moment, may deny more then many wise men can prove in a whole day, it proveth they are more cumbersome in their disputes, then strong; that there was a Jewish Presbytery, that is, a civil judicature, is confuted by Lev. 10. 10. where there is a Court of Aaron's sonsnes, whose it was to judge.
of Church matters only, and to put difference between holy, and unholy, between clean, and unclean. 2. A Presbytery of arbitrators in matters civil, to keep Christians from going to law one with another, before heathen judges: Is not a Presbytery, 1 Cor. 6, one wise man might do that, and he is no Presbytery. 2. There is no judicatures of Officers there; they were but gifted men arbitrarily chosen for a certain business, and were not judges, habitus. 3. A Presbytery for Doctrine only is further to seek in the word, I hope, then our Presbytery; Eras found should teach us where it is. 4. He denieth a Presbytery for manners, then all scandals must come before the civil Magistrate. Who made him a Church officer to judge of the affairs of the Church? Who is to be admitted to the seals, who not? For two supreme Courts, I shall speak God-willing.

Eras. There is no College of Presbyters at Corinth, but every man was to judge himself.

Ans. There is a company gathered together in the name of our Lord Jesus with the spirit of Paul, and the power of our Lord Jesus, 1 Cor. 5, 4, 5. Who did judge those that are within, and put out from amongst them an incestuous man, v. 12, 13. Least he should leaven the whole Church, v. 6. This is a College of Judges. 2. There is a number of builders and labourers with God, 1 Cor. 3, 9, 10, 11, 12. Ministers of God, dispensers of the mysteries of Word and Sacraments of God, 1 Cor. 4, 1. Such as Paul, Apollos, Cephas, and others, 1 Cor. 1, 12, 13, 1 Cor. 4, 6. A number that had power to punish, to forgive, 2 Cor. 1, 2, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 3. A number of Prophets who judged of the Doctrine of the Prophets, 1 Cor. 14, 30, 31, 32. These be very like a College of Presbyters. O but Paul writeth not to those, but to those who were puff'd up, and mourned not, 1 Cor. 5, 2. These were the people and Church. Ans. Yea these were the eyes, ears, and principal parts of the Church, 1 Cor. 12, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Now he writeth to the Church, 1 Cor. 1, 1, 2.

Eras. Before this time, Paul must have instituted this Presbytery, who seeth not that this is false? For so he would have accused the Presbytery, not the whole Church; but he accuseth not the Elders, because they admitted the man to the Lords supper, and there is no word of excommunication here. There is no mention of one judgement, of one election, of one officer, but he chideth the whole Church; because they
they mourned not: it was not the Elders' office to remove this, they dream, who say there is a Presbytery instituted here, and there was none instituted before this Epistle was written; he biddeth them not ask suffrages, whether he should be excommunicated or no.

Ans. All that Erastus faith against a Presbytery, is to improve excommunication: But there may be excommunication by the people, as many hold, where there be no Elders at all. 2. Let Erastus point out the time, when a number of preaching Prophets were instituted at Corinth, whether in this Chapter (which to me is a dream) or before. 3. He had cause to rebuke all; All were secure, the Elders who cast him not out, the people who said not to their Elders, as the Colossians are bidden say, Col. 4. 17. to Archippus; and will Erastus say that preaching Elders, who by office, are the eyes of the Church, 1 Cor. 12. 17, 28, were not to be chief in mourning to God, and praying that the man might be miraculously killed? and yet he reproveth all equally. 4. He reproveth them all that the man was not cast out of the Church; and this includeth a reproose, that he enjoined all the Church privileges, especially the Sacraments. 5. It is tale that there is no mention of judgement, v. 12. Do not ye judge those that are within? for election, there is none in the Chapter, nor any Presbytery instituted in this Chapter; it was before: Erastus hath the like reason to say, that there was no instituted Church at Corinth, because in the 1. or 2. Epistle to the Corinthians: we read not where he instituted any such Church; if we finde the thing instituted, we know it had an institution, and let Erastus shew us when Paul received the institution of the Lords supper, from the Lord: shall we deny he received any such thing contrary to 1 Cor. 11. 23, because we finde not where and how he received from the Lord? 6. There is no asking of suffrages mentioned Acts. 1. at the choosing of Mathias, nor Acts. 6. at the choosing of the Deacons that we reade of; Ergo, there were no suffrages there; it followeth not. 7. And ought not farre rather suffrages to have been asked before the people should take on their heads the mans blood, by confenting thereunto, and praying for it, as Erastus faith?

Erastus. If these words, v. 3. I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, have decreed, &c. signifie, choose out of your company, Presbyters, who are to censure the manners of the people, who shall debarre she
Whether there be two distinct

Answ. I know no man but Erasmius that dreameth of any such sense, there is no institution of a Presbytery in this Chapter, no calling of Ministers; but it presupposeth a ministry before settled. But if these words, I have decreed, &c. have the Erastian sense, I have given sentence as a Magistrate, that the man be killed by the ministry of the Devill; and that you shall be my Heralds to proclaim this sentence: it is a wonder the Text give not any hint of such a sense.

Pag. 261.

Erasmius, v. 12. he speaketh not of the judgement of Presbyters, but of all the people.

Answ. 1. This Erasmius on his word asserteth, without probation: We deny it, it is but parallel with Gods judging. 2. It is an act of the keys. 3. It is relative to casting out by those that are convened in the name of the Lord Iesus, with the spirit of Paul, and the power of our Lord Iesus: Was every Girle, and believing servant capable of this spirit, and power?

Erasmius. I grant before any come to age, be baptized, he is to be examined, whether he understand the Doctrine of faith, and assent to it with his heart: I grant it is profitable that young ones be examined, before they be admitted to the supper, but I deny God hath for cither of those instituted a Presbytery. But there is no ground that a Presbytery must try wicked men, ere they be admitted to the Lords supper.

Answ. 1. We owe Erasmius thanks for granting this; but what if the aged be found greatly ignorant, and incapable of the seals? and some wicked men will trample the seals as swine, and yet they desire the seals. Erasmius said before, such should not be admitted; who should debarre them; either the Church of beleevers, or those that are over them in the Lord, or the Magistrate must debarre them: if the first and second be said; Erasmius cometh to finde some use for a Presbytery; if the Magistrate be an heathen, he cannot examine or debarre any from the seals. Let Erasmius answer, if he be a Christian, how can it be denied; but if the Magistrate by his office is to steward the bread to one of the children, not to another, but he is a steward to cut and divide the word, and seals both aright; and how could Paul make it one of the properties of the Pastor, 2. Tim. 2. to cut the word, and by the same reason to distribute the seals aright, if it depend upon another officer by his office to command
mand him to divide it to this man, whom he hath examined, and findeth in his mind qualified, and not to this man? We judge the Elders of the New Testament do agree in this common and perpetual morality, that both are to put difference between clean, and unclean, holy, and unholy, though many things were unclean to the Jews, that are not unclean to us, and that the Church hath yet a power to bind and loose, Mat. 16. 19.

Erastus. There was never a wiser common wealth in the world
then that of the Jews, Deut. 4 But in the Common vwealth of the Iewes, there were never two distinct judicatures concerning manners: Ergo, There should not be these two different jurisdictions in the Christian common wealth. But all should be given to the civil Magistrate.

Ans. Erastus is seldom happy in his Logick, his Syllogismes are thin towne, all Gods laws are most wise, but if this be a good Argument, was not their Church, their Religion, their Ceremonies, their judicall Laws, all wise and righteous? Then the Christian Church should be conform yet to the Jewish, we should have those same bloody sacrifices, judicial lawes, Ceremonies that they had. The judicatures and officers are positive things, flowing from the positive will of God, who doth appoint one jurisdiction for them, most wise, and another to Christians different from them, and in its kind, most wise. 2. We give two judicatures in the Church of the Jews, concerning manners, one civil, acknowledged by Erastus; another spirituall & Ecclesiastick, ordaining Ecclesiastick and Spirituall punishments upon the unclean, Lev. 10. 10. As to be removed out of the camp, and such like, and Deut. 17. Thou shalt come to the priests, the Levites, and the Judge, that shall be in those daies, according to the sentence which they of that place (which the Lord shall choose) shall shew thee, and thou shalt observe to doe according to all that they informe thee, ver. 12. And the man that will doe presumptuously, and will not hearken unto the Priest, (that findeth there to minister before the Lord thy God,) or unto the judge, even that man shall die, and thou shalt put away his word from Israel. There is here an evident disjunction that clearly holdeth forth, that both the Priests and the civil judge judged in matters of manners, and that he that presumptuously despised the sentence of either was to die: a judicature of the Priests is evidently

The places Deut. 17. and 2 Chron. 19 do prove two different judicatures.
Whether there be two distinct

Eraetus cannot deny, and that the Priest judged in subordination to the civil judge, is refuted by the words, which faith the Priest was immediately subordinate to God, not to the Magistrate: He that will not heare the Priest (that standeth to minister before the Lord) shall die: Ergo, He is the Minister of the Lord; and God called and separated Aaron and his sons, to stand before the Lord, and to minister, and he did call the Levites, the Magistrate called them not to office.

Eraetus. Bezi faith, that Moses, Ioshua, David, Salomon, did not execute the office of the Priests, and therefore the charge of the Priests, and of the civil Magistrates were different offices, and charges; but I said, before the Lord chose Aaron and his sons, to be Priests, they were not so distinct charges, but they did agree to one and the same person; for, Moses to omit the rest, did execute the office of Aaron, Levit. 8. But after that it was not lawfull for any to doe the office both of King and Priest; and therefore Saul and Vzziah were justly corrected of God for it. But what is this? It proved not that the Priests had publike judicatures to punish wickednes of manners.

Anf. Certainly, if Eraetus deny the charge of the Priest and the King to be different offices, because once Moses did offer Sacrifice, (and so was Melchisedeck, both a King and a Priest, Heb. 7.) he must say that Moses offered Sacrifices, Levit. 8., not as a Priest. (Sure I am, Moses was a Prophet, and a Prince and Ruler, but no Priest.) But Moses by Eraetus his way, must as a civil Magistrate have offered Sacrifices, and not as a Priest or priviledged person by a speciall and an extraordinary commandement of God; for to deny the two offices of Priest and King to be different offices, because one man discharged some Acts proper to both Offices, as Moses both did beare the Sword of God, as a Prince, and did also discharge some Acts proper to the Priest, as Eraetus faith he did, Leviticus 8. is a poore and naughty Argument: undeniable it is that Melchisedeck was both King and Priest, but even then to be a King and to be a Priest, were two distinct offices, in nature and essence, because Melchisedeck did not take away the life of a Murtherer, as a Priest, but as King of Salem, Heb. 7. 1. Nor did Abraham pay tithes to Melchisedeck as to a King, but as to a Priest. Tithes in Moses Law as tithes, were ne-
ver due to any but to the Priests: and therefore even in Melchi-

dedeck, the Kingly and Priestly office, were formally distinct Or-
dinances of God, just as David as a King and judge took away
the head of the man who brought Sauls head to him, and not as
a Prophet he did this; so as a Prophet he penned the Psalms, not
as a King: If one and the same man be both a Musitian and a pain-
ter, he doth paint excellently as a painter, not at a Musitian, and he
singeeth excellently not as a Painter, but as a Musitian; and though
one and the same man doe acts proper to both, that may prove that
Musick and the art of painting are one subjectively onely, that they
may both agree to one and the same man, but not that they are not
two faculties and gifts of God different in spece and nature.

2. Though Erastus confesseth that it was unlawfull that Vazzias and
Saul should sacrifice, yet he will have the Kings office, and the
Ministers office under the New Testament not so different; for
he said expressly, Who knoweth not now when Aarons Priesthood is
removed, but we are all equally Priests? Saul and Vazziah sinned
when they were bold to sacrifice and burne incense, but the Magis-
trate doth not therefore sin, who exerciseth the charge of the Mini-
tery, if he might for his business performe both, doth Paul make
exceptions of Magistrates and Potentates, when he saith, 1 Cor. 14.

You may all prophesie? Hence he must grant that the civill Magis-
trate may both preach, baptize, and administer the Supper of
the Lord, and therefore not only hath the Church no Senate, nor Ec-
clesiastical court to punishe faults, and scandals with Ecclesiastcal
sanctions; but there is no Presbytery of Elders to give their judg-
ment in matters of doctrine, for the Magistrates and all Chrestians
may as well prophesie by 1 Cor. 14. as Ministers, saith he, yea the
faculty of preaching is no more proper to the Ministers of the
Church, then to the Magistrates of the city. Now by this nothing
is proper to the Magistrate, as the Magistrate, but to the Magis-
trate as a Christian, and to all Christians. But Erastus conten-
deth that the government of the Church, and punishing of Scand-
als, which we say belongeth to those that are over the people of
God in the Lord, and to Church Rulers, doth belong to the Ma-
gistrate as the Magistrate, and virtue officii, by virtue of his offi-
cine, so that if any Jew or Turke, or any ignorant or extreme-
ly scandalous should attempt to intrude himselfe upon the Seals,
the Magistrate as the Magistrate and virtute officii, is to examine and judge if he be unworthy, & to debar him, or as he findeth him worthy, admit him to the Seals. Now any seeth that it is but a deceiving of the Reader, to say that one man may discharge both the place of the Magistrate, and the Minister of God, as Moses did, and Joshua, & David. For let Erasius and his followers shew us roundly and down-right, whether or no prophesying, debarring the unworthy from the Seals, and all acts of Church government, not proper to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, and virtute officii; And if so, (as indeed Erasius teacheth) it is but a poor shift to say, that one and the same man may both exercise the part of a Magistrate, and of a Minister.

Erasius. Beza for ever shall not prove that there was a Church judicature, that had power to punish scandalous men. Ichohaphar 2 Chron. 19. ordained judges in all the fenced cities, and admonished them of their duty. 2. And did the same at Jerusalem. 3. And ordained judges of Levites and Priests, and heads of families, for the judgement of the Lord, and for every cause; and Amaziah the High Priest was chief in the causes of the Lord, and Zechariah in the Kings causes. This Synedric at Jerusalem was the politicall Magistrate, they judged of brooks, servitude, deaths. But your Synedric judgeb not between blood and blood, it judgeb not of every cause, as Deut. 17. Those that are not well versed in Scripture, are to note two things: 1. That the cause of the Lord, where mention is made of judicatures, is not only a cause of Religion, but any cause proposed in judgement, especially the causes of the widow, the Orphan, oppressed, which the Lord saith he will avenge. 2. The Levites & Priests were no lesser civil judges than others: it is known that only the Levites were Magistrates in the cities of refuge, there was need of men exercised in the Law of God, that the judges might judge righteously.

Ans. If you take putting for inflicting Church-censure, (as we here take it) then all the places that sayes the Priests pronounced the Leper clean or unclean, to put out of the camp, or take in, to judge of the adulterous woman, of the restitution made by those for whom they offered Sacrifices, to judge between the clean and unclean; to hold out of the Sanctuary the unclean, the uncircumcised in heart and flesh, Levit. 15. 3, 4 &c. and 20. 22, and 21. 26. and 30. 44. and 31. 50. Ezek. 22. 36. and 44. 8, 9, 11. Num. 3. 6. and 5. 18, 19. Dem. 17. 12. say the Priests had power to punish.
nith for transgressing of God's Lawes, and where the Prophets
complaine of the Priests mis-government and injustice, it is pre-
supposed they were to govern justly according to the Law, 1 Esd. 5. 31.
2 Kgs. 12. 4, 13. 16. 7, 8, 11. Hag. 2. 11, 12. Ezek. 44. 8, 9, 10.
2. For the place 2 Chron. 19. it is evident that Jehoshaphat doth re-
forme both Church and State, and brought the corrupted Judi-
catures to that which they should be by Law; and v. 5, 6, 7. He set
judges in the fenced cities of Judea: Here is the civill judicature.
And v. 8. Moreover in Jerusalem did Jehoshaphat set of the Levites,
and of the Priests, and of the chiefe of the fathers of Israel, for the
judgement of the Lord, and for controversie, when they returned to
Jerusalem. Now that this second is a Church judicature, I am con-
firmed. 1. Because Jehoshaphat appointed civill judges in all the fenc-
ced cities of Judea; Ergo, Also in Jerusalem the prime fenced city:
Now this civill judicature was not tyed to a place, but was in e-
every city, even all the fenced cities; but the Synedrie of Priests,
Levites and Elders was onely at Jerusalem, in the place that the
Lord shoule choose, Deut. 17. 8. Hence a judicature tyed to no city,
but which is in every fenc'd city, 2 Chron. 19. i. Deut. 17. 8. and
a judicature tyed to Jerusalem, the place that the Lord did choose,
Deut. 17. 8. 2 Chron. 19. 8. must be two distinct judicatures, but
such were these. 2. There is a (moreover) put to the judicature
at Jerusalem, and also in Jerusalem did Jehoshaphat set of the
Levites, &c. This could not have been said, if this had not been a
judicature different from the former, for if Jehoshaphat appointed
Judges in all the fenced cities; Ergo, He appointed them first at
Jerusalem, the Mother city and fountain of justice; now then he
should say the same thing needlessly, and with a moreover, if this
judicature at Jerusalem were not a judicature Ecclesiasticke and
different from the judicature civill, that he appointed at Jerusalem
as one of the prime fenced cities, which was common with the
civill judicatures in other fenced cities. 3. The persons in the ju-
dicatures are different, for v. 5. the members of the court, 2 Chron. 19.
5, 6, 7. are called Judges; these could not be Churchmen,
for of these he speaketh v. 8. &c they are expressly distinguished from
the Levites, Priests and Elders, v. 8. who are all Church-men, for
the fathers of the people were no other thing then our governing
Elders, and these were members of the other court, v. 8. 4. The
objects of these judicatures are very different. The Spirit of God saith of the one ver. 5. That they judge for the Lord, ver. 13. for all the Kings matters, this must be all civill causes, in which the King, and inferior judges under the King doe judge; but the object of the other is higher. The Priests and Levites are appointed by Jehoshaphat, for the judgement of the Lord, ver. 8. And in every matter of the Lord, v. 13. Now whereas Erastus putteth a note of ignorance on all that hath been versed in the Old Testament before him, whereas he confesseth he understandeth not the Original Language, let the Reader judge what arrogance is here, where ever there is mention (faith be) of judgement, there is signified not religious causes, but also other causes, especially the cause of the Widow and Orphane: it bewrayeth great ignorance. For, 1. The matters of the Lord, and the matters of the King, are so evidently distinguished, and opposed the one to the other, by two divers presidents in the different judicatures, the one Ecclesiasticall, Amaziah the chiefe Priest, in every word or matter of the Lord; and the other Zebadiah, the sonne of Ishmael, the ruler of the house of Judah, for all the Kings matters, that the very words of the Text, say that of Erastus which he faith of others, that he is not versed in the Scripture: for then the causes of the Lord, and the causes of the King in the Text, by Erastus should be the same causes, whereas the Spirit of God doth distinguish them most evidently. 2. If the cause of the King, were all one with the judgement of the Lord, and the cause of the Lord, yea, if it were all one with all causes whatsoever either civill or Ecclesiasticall, what reason was there they should be distinguished in the Text? and that Amaziah should not be over the people in the Kings matters, though he were the chiefe Priest, and Zebadiah though a civill Judge over all the matters of the Lord, and causes Ecclesiasticall? 3. The Kings matters are the causes of the widow, and orphan, and oppressed, as is evident, Jer. 22. 2. O King of Judah, v. 3. execute ye judgement and righteousness, and deliver the spoiled one of the hand of the oppressor, and do no wrong, and do no violence to the stranger, the fatherlesse, nor the widow, 10. Esa. 1. 10. 17. Prov. 31. 4. 5. Job 29. 12. 13. &c. Then the Text must beare that every matter of the King is the Judgement of the Lord, and the matter of the Lord; and every matter and judgement of the Lord, is...
also the matter of the King, and to be judged by the King, then must the King as well as the Priest, judge between the clean and the unclean, and give sentence who shall be put out of the Camp, and not enter into the Congregation of the Lord, no lese then the Priests. Let Erastus and all his fee to this, and then must the Priests also relieve the fatherless and widow, and put to death the oppressor. 2. The different presidents in the judicatures maketh them different judicatures. 3. It is denied, that all causes whatsoever came before the Ecclesiasticall Synedrim at Jerusalem, Erastus doth say this, but not prove it; for the place 2 Chron. 19. doth clearly expound the place, Deut. 17: for the causes of the brethren that dwell in the Cities, between Blood and Blood, between Law and Commandment, Statutes and Judgements are judged in the Ecclesiasticall Synedrim at Jerusalem, not in a civil coercive way by the power of the sword. 1. Because all causes are by a coercive power judged, as the matters of the King, the Suprem Sword bearer, 2 Chron. 19. 5. v. 13, Rom. 13. 4. to eschew oppression, and maintain justice, Jer. 22. 2, 3. But the causes here judged in this Synedrim, are judged in another reduplication, as the matters of the Lord differedence from the matters of the King, 2 Chron. 19. 12, now if the Priests and Levites judged in the same judicature, these same civil causes, and the same way by the power of the sword, as Magistrates, (as Erastus saith) why is there in the Text, 1. Two judicatures; one, v. 5. in all the fenced cities; another at Jerusalem, v. 8? 2. What meaneth this, that the Kings matters are judged in the civil judicature, not by the Priests and Levites? (as Erastus saith) for the Ruler of the house of Judah was president in these, and the matters of the Lord were judged by the Priests and Levites? and Amariah the chief Priest was over them? for then Amariah was as well over the Kings matters, as the Ruler of the house of Judah, and the Ruler of the house of Judah over the Lords matters, as over the Kings; for if Priests and Levites judged as the Deputies subordinate to the King, and by the power of the sword, the Kings matters are the Lords matters, and the Lords matters the Kings matters, and Amariah judgeth not as chief Priests, as he doth burn incense, but as an other judge, this truly is to turne the Text upside downe. 2. The causes judged in the Synedrim at Jerusalem, are said to be judged
judged as controversies, when they returned to Jerusalem, 2 Chr. 19.8. and matters too hard, between plea and plea, between blood, and blood, between stroke and stroke, Deut. 17.8. and to doubts of Law, and cases of conscience. Now Mal. 2.7. The Priest's lips should preserve knowledge, and they should seek the Law at his mouth; for he is the messenger of the Lord of hosts, and this way only the Priests and Levites judged, not that they inflicted death on any; but they resolvd in an Ecclesiall way, the consciences of the judges of the fenced Cities, what was a breach of the Law of God Morall or Judiciall, what not; what deserved Church censures, what not, who were clean, who unclean; and all these are called the judgement of the Lord, the matters of the Lord; because they had no near relation to the soul and conscience, as the conscience is under a divine Law. 3. Eras tus faith, it is known that the Levites only were Magistrates in the Cities of refuge, but I deny it; Eras tus should have made it known to us from some Scripture; I finde no ground for it in Scripture.

Eras tus. It is true, that Beza faith, that the Magistrate hath a supreme power to cause every man do his duty. But how hath he that supreme power, if he be also subject to the Presbyters? for your Presbyters do subject the Magistrate to them, and compell him to obey them and punishe them, if they disobey.

Ans. The Magistrate even King David leaveth not off to be supreme, because Nathan commandeth him in the Lord; nor the King of Nineveh and his Nobles leave not off to command as Magistrates, though Jonah by the word of the Lord bring them to lie in sackcloth, and to Faste; all the Kings are subject to the rebukes and threatenings of the Prophets, Isa. 1.10. Jer. 22.2,3. Jer. 1.18. 2 Kin. 12.8,9,10,11,12. 1 Kin. 21.21,22,23. Isa. 30.33. Hos. 5.1,2. and to their commandments in the Lord: If Presbyters do command as Ministers of Christ, the highest powers on earth if they have souls, must submit their consciences to the Lords rebukings, threatenings and Commandment in their mouth: Court Sycophants say the contrary, but we care not. 2. But they punish the Christian Magistrate (faith he) if there be any Church Censure, as we suppose there is, this Objecton should not have been made against us; because of the Magistrates supremacy; it doth conclude with equal strength, that Pastors should use it against no man: Now there
there be some swine that trample the sacraments, some not well instructed in the grounds of Christian Religion; and Erastus said, pag. 207. Such should not be admitted to the Lord's Supper. Now the Magistrate, the King is such; let Erastus say, the Pearles of the Seals of the Covenant are to be given to no swine, except the swine be Magistrates, and that which the Church bindeth on earth is bound in heaven, except it be the Magistrate; Erastus faith, he may go to Hell by priviledge of his place; and that whose sins the Elders of the Church retaineth are retained, except it be the Kings sins, and that we are to put shame upon scandalous persons, and to refuse to eat with them, Romans 16.17. 2 Thess. 3.14, 15. 1 Cor. 5.11. 2 Job 10. Except they be Magistrates; sure God is no accepter of persons.

Erastus. Whereas you say, it is not lawful for the Magistrate to preach and administer the Sacraments; (if he might because of his business be able to discharge both Offices), it is not true: God hath not forbidden it; it was lawful in the Old Testament, for one man to discharge both. Why is it not lawful now also? the history of Eli and Samuel is known; it is nothing that you say, that the tribunals of Moses was distinguished from the tribunal of Aaron: for God gave to Aaron no tribunal at all, different from the tribunal of Moses; he never did forbid the Priests to sit in the Civil judgment after the captivity, the Priests judged the people Ezek. 44.

Answ. That it is lawful for the Magistrate to preach and administer the Sacraments, 1. Destroyeth the Ordinance of Pastors, and a sent and called Ministry under the New Testament, against the Scriptures, Heb. 5.4. No man taketh on him this honour to himself, except he that is called of God, as was Aaron: So also Christ glorified not himself, to be made an high Priest, &c. 2. God often maketh an honour of a calling to the Ministry, that he hath separated them to it, Numb. 16.9. Moses, faith to Korah; hear now ye sons of Levi, Seemeth it a small thing unto you, that the God of Israel hath separated you from the congregation of Israel to bring you near to himself to do the service of the tabernacle of the Lord, Deut. 10. 8. At that time the Lord separated the tribe of Levi to bear the Ark of the Covenant of the Lord, to stand before the Lord to minister unto him, Numb. 8.6, 7, 8, 9. But that same honour is put upon the Preachers of the Gospel, Rom. 1.1. Paul the servant of Jesus Christ, called...
Whether there be two distinct.

Cap. XIV. Q. 10.

called to be an Apostle, separated unto the Gospel of God, Acts 13. 2.
The holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work,
whereunto I have called them: It it be an honour, and no man,
though gifted as Christ was, can take honour to himself: No Magis-
strate can take on him to discharge the office of a Minister.

Object. But when he is called to be a Magistrate, he is called to be
a Minister, and so being called to the one, he is called by the same cal-
ing to the other.

Ans. If being called to be Magistrate, he be also called to be a
Minister, then being called to be a Minister, he is called to be a
Magistrate, and Hoc in quo that he is a Minister, he may usurp the
sword, and usurpe the Throne and the Bench: But Christ being
sent to be a Prophet, and to preach the Gospel, Ephesians 6. 1. Luke 4.
20. 21. ver. 43: refused to divide the inheritance, and to be a
Judge, Luke 12. 13. 14. He would not take on him to be a judge,
except God had made him, and called him to be a judge; if any
say the Magistrate, being the superior place, containeth eminently all
inferior offices, as to be a Minister, a Lawyer, a Physitian, &c. but
the inferior does not contain the superior, I Ans. Then the Magis-
trate being called to be a Magistrate and King, he is called to be
a Priest to burn incense, which the Lord condemned in his word,
in Vzght; then when Saul is called to be a King, he is called to be
an Astronomer, Lawyer, Physitian, Sayler, Tayler: Now God
giveth a spirit to be a King, but no gifts to those officers; Ergo, No
calling therefore, for no gifts argu no calling of God. 2. If a man
called to be a judge, he also by that same calling, by which he is
made a judge, made a Minister; then it is all one to be called to be
a judge, and to be a Minister; and so a Magistrate as a Magistrate
doeth preach and administrate the Sacraments, then 1. All Magi-
strates should preach and administrate the Sacraments, and Nero,
and he then: Magistrates are gifts, acta prima, given by Christ asc-
cending on high, for the edifying the body of the Church, Ephesians 4.
11. 12.

Obj. It is not first to him to preach and administrate the Sacra-
ments, but then he cannot have time for both.

Ans. If God lawfully call the Magistrate to preach the Gospel,
woe be to him, if he preach not, he should lay aside all other im-
ployments and preach, God never gave a talent and calling to any
to preach, but he ought to lay aside other things, and employ that
talent to the honour of God, otherwise he finneth in digging his
Lords talent in the earth, whereas he is obliged to make five ta-
renten. 2. If he preach as a Pastor not as a Magistrate, then he
hath another calling of God to be a Pastor, and another to be a
Magistrate, and certaine it is, as a Magistrate he doth not preach;
because there be farre other qualifications required in a Magistrate,
as Deut. i. 12. that he be wise, and understanding, and knowned,
and a man of truth, hating covetousnesse, Exo. 18. 21. But there
is farre other qualities required in a Bishop, 1 Tim. iii. 1, 2, 3. Erco,
it is one thing to be called to be a Minister, and another to be called
to be a Magistrate. 3. In all the word, Christ never commanded
the Magistrate to preach and baptize; this negative Argument Era-
stus useth often against us, to prove that none ought to be excluded
from the Sacraments, because Priests, Prophets, Christ, Apostles
never excluded any: But Christ commanded the Ministers to preach
and baptize, and gave them the Holy Ghost for that effect, and sent
them as the Father sent him, as having received all power from the
father, Mat. 28. 18, 19, 20. Mark. 16. 15, 16. Joh. 20. 20, 21, 22.
and last we should think this charge was given to Apostles as Apo-
stles, he teacheth that it is given to all faithful Pastors to the end of
the world, Mat. 28. v. 20. Lo I am with you, even unto the end of the
world, Amen. Not to say, that if it be peculiar to Apostles to preach
and baptize, neither Pastors, farre lesse Magistrates can do it, or
then Pastors and Magistrates are Apostles sent to preach to all the
world, and can work miracles, which is absurd. 4. Christ ascend-
ing to heaven, left Apostles, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers,
for the perfecting of the Saints, and work of the Ministry; not
Kings and Magistrates. 5. How shall they preach, except they
be sent? Magistrates as Magistrates bear the sword, and have car-
nall weapons, and are not sent; the weapons of Ministers are not
carnall, 2 Cor. i. 10, 4, 5. For Erastus his Argument, God has not
forbidden Magistrates to preach; Erco, it is lawfull for them to
preach, it followeth not; for such positive ordinances as preaching
Ministers, must be appointed by a positive command, for where hath
God forbidden women to baptize? Erco, they may baptize; is not
the Lords commanding the Apostles to go teach and baptize all Na-
tions, and his not giving any such commandment to others, as

G g g  good
good as a forbidding of them? But I hope this is examined already sufficiently. 2. For Samuel his being both Judge and Prophet, I grant it; but as an extraordinary dispensation of God, which Christ would not take on him to do, Luk. 12. nor is it left to us as a rule. 3. That Aaron's sons had no tribunall of their owne different from the tribunall of Moses, is proved to be false from 2 Chr. 19, 8. 4. That the Priests were Magistrates having the power of the sword, cannot be proved by any word of God, the place Eze. 44 is every way for us, all the power given in that place is Ecclesiastically, none Civill, as to keep the charge of the Lord's holy things, to exclude the uncircumcised in heart and flesh, out of the sanctuary, to come near to the table of the Lord and Minister, v. 16. to enter into the gates of the inner courts, clothed in linen, &c. and many the like, did no more agree to a Magistrate then to burn incense, which to do, Erastus granteth was unlawfull in King Zeziab; yet he would prove that it is lawfull under the New Testament to exercise both, so the Magistrate were able to do both; because Samuel exercised both. But might not King Zeziab exercise both without impeachment of his businesse? and where was he forbidden? but in this God made choice of the tribe of Levi, and of no others, which also he has done under the New Testament, as is proved.

Eras tus. Nor is that true, that whose part it is to preach and dispense the Sacraments, it is his part to judge of those that profane the Word, and seals, so as he has power to punish any that defiles the Sacraments, with the want of the Sacraments: and though it were true, it should prove that Pastors, not a Presbytery of Pastors and Ruling Elders have any power to debarre from the seals.

Ans. 1. Well, then Erastus granteth that the Ministers are to preach the Word and dispense the Sacraments: But not to judge of those that profane the holy things of God, nor to debarre from the Sacraments any who desire them; if Erastus did mean a bodily debaring by the power of the sword, if any openly profane, shall violently intrude himself, we should yield that to the Magistrate as the keeper of both Tables. But Erastus is of that minde, that as the Magistrate may preach and dispense the Sacraments, he may by that power also Ecclesiastically cognose, and judge of the scandals, for which the openly profane are to be debarred, and accordingly debarre. Now Erastus faith he may preach as
as a Christian, because that all Christians now under the New Testament may preach and prophecy, all are Priests and Prophets, so faith he, page 175. So the Magistrate by this as a Christian, and so all Christians women and children, may try and examine all that are openly prophane, and unworthy of the Seals: this can be nothing but popular Anarchy; yet that the Magistrate, as a Magistrate, and not as a Christian, is to examine and try who are unworthy communicants, I conceive is the minde of Erasius, as I have proved before: Which though it be a plaine contradiction, yet it is the pillar of all the Erasian doctrine, that the Magistrate as the Magistrate hath the supreme power of all Church government. Therefore (faith he, page 171.) they doe wickedly who Erasius ib. take from the Magistrate that part of the visible jurisdiction in the government of the Church which God hath given to him, and subject the Magistrate to some other jurisdiction. —— Magistrates are Gods.

Answ. If to preach, dispense the Sacraments, and to judge who are unworthy of the Seals, and debarre them, be taken from the Magistrate as he is a Christian, this power of visible jurisdiction over the Church is now more taken by us from the Magistrate, then it is taken from all Christians as Christians, and in regard of any such power Magistrates are no more Gods and Nursethers in the Church, then all Christians are Gods and Nursethers of the Church: for by the reason of Erasius, p. 175. that all Christians now are Priests and Prophets, and so may examine who are worthy of the seals, who not, then the Civill Magistrate can be, by us, spoyle of nothing that God has given him, as a Magistrate, except Erasius say, that he doth all these as a Magistrate & virtuo officio; which when he or any of his Disciples shall assert, beside that it is contradictory to his way, we are ready to demonstrate that it is blasphemous & contrary to the word of God. But that Erasius does take from the Elders of the Church, and give to the Magistrate a power to judge in an Ecclesiasticall way, who are to be debarred from the seals, I argue on the contrary thus: those who are to cut the word, and distribute it aright, are also to distribute the Seals aright, to the worthy, not to dogs and swine, not to heathens and publicans, for it is evident that the right stewarding and distributing of ordinances doth essentially include the stewarding of them, with judgement and discovering.
ning, to those that are worthy, not to those that are unworthy. But Elders, not Civill Magistrates are to do the former, Ergo the latter also. 2. Those to whom Christ committed the power of the keys to open and shut, to bind and loose, to those he hath given the use and exercise of the keys. But Christ gave the power of the keys to the Apostle Peter, as representing the Rulers of the Church, Mat. 16. 19, & to the Church, Mat. 18. 18, and not to the Magistrate as to the Magistrate; Ergo, The proposition I prove from the Texts, Mat. 18. 18. What ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven, &c. and Gal. 16. 19. the same is repeated: now actually binding is the use and exercise of the keys given to Peter and the Church. But it is presumed the power is given, when Christ faith, v. 19. I will give unto thee, the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. 2. We read not that God giveth a power, a gift, a talent, or an office, but he judgeth it a shame in those to whom he giveth it, not to put forth in acts and in exercise that gift, talent, and office, either by themselves, or his deputies; which latter I speak for the King, who in his own person, and in the person of inferior judges fear by him, do put forth in acts of justice, the Royall power that God has given him. The assumption is Scripture.

Erasimus has no answer to this, but the keys were given to Peter as representing all the faithful, not the Elders, and that all private Christians do bind and loose.

Ans. Besides, this is answered fully above, and is a mere anachronistic Democracy; it, 2. conclueth well that Christ gave not to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, the keys, but to the Magistrate as he is a Christian, making that same Christian confession of faith with Peter, Mat. 16. and as he is an offended brother, who may bind and loose in earth and heaven, so Erasius Theol. 54. p. 42, and so by this the Magistrate hath no more power to debarre from the seals, then all other Christians have. 3. If Christ give the key of knowledge to the Elders, then he cannot give the power of judging, of breaking the bread of life to the children of the house, then he cannot give the power of judging, who are the children of the house, who not, to another.

Ob. But the Magistrate is only to examine the fact, & to punish adultery, incest, and the like, has, deserves to be punished by the sword, but not whether
Cap. XIV, Q. 10. of Church Discipline.

Whether it be a scandal that deserve exclusion from the Sacrament, or not; Ministers are to take the probation of the scandalous fact by witnesses from the Magistrate; so to exclude from the Lords supper, and to deal with the mans conscience to bring him to repentance, so do some argue.

Ans. If the Church be to try the penitency, or impenitency of the fact, and not to cognosce and try whether he hath done the fact, upon the same ground the Magistrate is to try and punish the disturbance of the peace of the Common-wealth, that adhereth to the fact, and not to try the fact. 2. It is not possible that the Church can know whether the man be penitent, or no, except by witnesses they know the fact, for they shall run a preposterous way, to work the man to a godly sorrow, for that sinne which possibly he never committed; now that of which the Church is to convince the man, and from which they are to gain his soul, that they are to find out.

2. This is against the way of Erastus, who will have the Magistrate to exclude from the Sacraments, and none other. 3. The word knowes no such thing, as that Ministers should be led in the acts of their Ministerial duties, to whom they should dispense the mysteries of the Gospel, and to whom they should deny them; by the Magistrate, by as good warrant the Magistrate is to lay a tye on the conscience of Elders, what they should dispence, as to whom they should dispense; sure if the Magistrate as the Magistrate must prosecute to Ministers, to what sort of persons they must dispence word and Sacraments, he must upon the same ground as a Magistrate prosecute what Doctrine they should preach to this man, not to this, whether Law or Gospel; and so the Magistrate, as the Magistrate must be a Pastor to cut the word aright. 2 Tim. 2. 15. Eze. 3. 18, 19, 20. Eze. 13. 19. to command to preach life to this man, death to this man. 4. If the Church must cast him out, and judge him who has done this wickednesse, 1 Cor. 5. 2, 12. and 4. 5, 6, 7. then must they judge of his scandal; that according to the quality of the scandal, they may proportion the measure of the punishment; Eras, you must judge whom they debarre from the seels. 5. The debarring any from the seels, must be proportioned to the end of all spiritual censures, that the man be gained, and his sinne loosed in heaven. Mat. 18. 15. 18. that his soul may be saved in the day of the Lord, 1 Cor. 5. 4. That he may be ashamed, and so humbled, 2 Thes. 3. 14, 15. 2 Cor. 2. 6, 7. that he may learn not to blaspheme, 1 Tim. 1. 29.
1. 20. But the Magistrates excluding of any from the Sacraments is no mean congenius to such an end, for he can command nothing, but the disobedience of which he can and ought to punish with the sword ; now a carnall weapon cannot be congruous and proportionable to a spiritual end. 6. If the Magistrate as a Magistrate must so farre have the keys of Discipline, then as a Magistrate he must catechise, examine, and try the knowledge of the Communicants, and so watch for their souls, as those that must give an account to God. 7. The Magistrate must have a Negative voice in all the acts of the Church, and the man must be bound in heaven, but not except the Magistrate will, and looked in heaven, but not except the Magistrate will, for all must depend upon the consent of him to whom Jesus Christ has committed the suprem, and highest and only power of governing the Church; now this is the Magistrate as the Magistrate to Erastus. 8. The Magistrate as the Magistrate must forgive sinners and relaxe them from excommunication, 2 Cor. 2. 7. and restore those that are overtaken in offences, with the spirit of meekness, Gal. 6. 1. and rebuke publikely those that sin publikely, 1 Tim. 5. 20. and to be a spiritual man, and a Pastor. Neither doth it follow that the Pastors as Pastors only, should debarre from the Communion, though virtute postestatis ordinis as Pastors, they are to keep themselves pure, and not to give pearls to swine, nor to communicate with other mens sins; yet because the Sacraments are Church ordinances, they are to be dispensed by the Church, that is, by the Elders with consent of the people: it is one thing to dispense ordinances to those that receive them, and another thing to dispense them certo ordine after a Church way, the former is from power of order, the latter from power of jurisdiction, and from the Church only.

CHAP. XV. Quest. 11.

Whether Erastus do validly confute a Presbytery.

Erastus. What consequence is this? Lev. 10. God commanded Aaron and his sons to put a difference between the holy and prophane, the cleane and the unclean, this difference they were to teach the people out of the Law; Ergo, God hath ordained a Colledge of Ecclesiastical Senators to exercise the power of the Civill Magistrate? it is like this; God commanded the Pastors to teach the people, and dispense the Sacraments; Ergo, he instituted a Presbytery in place of the Magistrate.

Anf.
Ans. This consequence is so strong (though the consequent be not ours) to prove a Synedrie, that Erastus shall never be able to refute it; for that the Priests might teach the people, they were to judge and govern the people, and were to judge between the holy and profane, not only that the Priests might informe the peoples minds, but that the Priests and Levites might, 2 Chron. 9. 8, 9, 10. Deut. 17. 8, 9. give judgement between blood and blood, between plea and plea, between stroke and stroke, being matters of controversie, and hard to be judged by the inferior judges; these concerned not the instruction of the people as matters of opinion, as Erastus imagineth; but they concerned the governing of the people in justice, that v. 12, the man that will doe presumptuously, or will not hearken unto the Priest or the judge, shall die the death? Was not this to govern the people and to judge them? Certainly Erastus in the same Chapter saith so, to wit, that there was one common Synedrim of civil judges, Priests and Levites at Jerusalem, that the Priests and Levites were Judges in capittall matters, and gave out the sentence of death, de capite & sanguine, and he proveth page 270. 271. that the Priests were civil judges, and did give sentences of blood, of life and death: Ergo, the Priests did not discerne between the clean and the unclean, between blood and blood only, that they might teach the people, but that they might regulate their own practise in judgement, and govern the people; yea that the Priests might pronounce some unclean, and to be put out of the Campe so many dayes, that they might debar out of the Sanctuary the unclean, the uncircumcised, the strangers, and Lev. 10. the end of judging and governing is expressly set down, v. 10. and for a judicature, and the other end, v. 11. that they may teach the children of Israel all the Statutes which the Lord hath spoken by the hand of Moses. 2. From the Elders preaching the Word and dispensing the Sacraments, simply we inferre no judicature at all, farre leffe a politicke judicature, which we doe not ascribe to the Priests, for John Baptist both preached the Word and baptized, and yet was no judge, nor did he erect any Church judicature, but from the power of the keyes given to the Church, and exercisef by the Church, Mat. 16. 19. Mat. 18. 15, 16, &c. 1 Cor. 5. 1, 2, 3, &c. Revel. 2. 1, 2, 3, &c. we inferre a Church judicature, we never placed a Presbytery in place of the Magistrate; for
for it is no more the Magistrates place, then to sacrifice is the place of the Magistrate.

Erautus. I wonder that you seeke your Presbytery in Moses Law, all yours, say the Synedrie, Christ speakes of did rise after the captivity, as least when the sword was taken from the Iewes. They say David and Solomon did punish vices, they approve August. 39. quest. in Deut. that Excommunication doth now what putting to death did of Old, and deny any Excommunication to have bene in the Church of the New Testament.

Ans. Erautus declares himselfe to be a childe, not versed in Protestant Divines, for we except Musculus, Gualther, Bullinger, some except Aretius, all our Protestant Divines goe the way Beza goeth.

2. Let him produce any of ours, who say that the Synedry that Christ speakes of, was Jewish, and ours say that Christ alludeth to the Jewish Synedrie: But all (few excepted) that Christ Mat. 18. speakes of the Christian Church to be erected. 3. The Kings of Israel punished scandals, but that is not enough, did they govern the Church? pronounce who were clean or unclean? or middle with the charge of Ecclesiastick Government committed to Aaron and his sonnes? 4. We say with Augustine, that some that were killed of old, are to be Excommunicated now, Augustus speakes not of all, and what is that against us?

Erautus. Not any but your self (Beza) say that Moses speakes of these same persons, things, and office. Levit. 10. and Deut. 17. in Levit. 10. be speakes onely of the Priesthood, and Deut. 17. of the Judges or Magistrates.

Ans. Beza expandeth the one place by the other, but he faith not these persons, things and office are in both places. 2. Erautus onely contradiceth Beza, and faith Moses speakes of the Magistrates, Deut. 17. But he is refuted by the Spirit of God, 2 Chron. 19. 8, 9. who repeating the very words of Deut. 17. faith the Judges here were Priests, Levites, and heads of Families, whom all men deny to be Magistrates.

Erautus. You say Deut. 17. mention is made of blood, of the cause of Pleas, not because the Synedrie judged of the fact, but because they answered the true sense of the Law; I say, whether they answered of the fact, or of the Law, they sentenced judicailly of life and death, so that there was no provocation from them to the civill judicature, for
be was put to death, who would not stand to their sentence, but you deny, that any politick causes or matters of blood or death, belongs to your Presbytery.

Ans. 1. Beza said well the fact, and the putting of the man to death, which is the assumption and conclusion belonged to the civil judge, not to the Priests; but the question juris, the question of law belonged to the Ecclesiastical judicature of Priests, Levites and Elders; and it is evident, that it was a case of conscience, concerning a matter, or an admirable cause that cannot be determined by the judges in the city, they not being so well versed in the Law as the Priests, whose lips should preserve knowledge, Mal. 3. 7. Therefore it is not a fact, that may be cleared by Witnesses, there is not such difficulty in facts, except in adultery, or secret Murthers, the word commeth from יֵדֹע to admire, or to be separated from sense and reason, Lament. 1. 9. Gen. 18. 14. Is there any thing hard so, or hid from Jehovah? 2. They are called דָּרָם רְחוֹב, ’cause or matters of contention, Vatablus causa insolita et difficilior: Our translation hath it, matters of controversy. 3. It is said, thou shalt come and inquire or diligently search out. 4. The Priests and Levites shall shew thee the sentence of judgement, so it is evident that the Priests and Levites did not so much judge, as declare and resolve the law-part of which the inferior judges did doubt, for the difficulty of the question, as Saul came to Samuel the Seer, to ask concerning his fathers asses, and it is true: bloods and strokes came under the cognizance of the Priests, but as bloods comes before Lawyers, and those that are expert in the civil Law, in the Parliament of England and Scotland, the Lawyers as Judges put no man to death, the King could say, fall upon such an evil doer, and kill him, and the judges and Princes might put to death. But you never read that the Priests, yea or the High Priest said, fall upon such an ill doer and kill him, nor was this any Law of God, that the Ecclesiastick Sanedrim, should put to death and politically condemne any man to die, or command any mans blood to be shed, they but declared and resolved a case of conscience to the judges, and a plea, and said, This is a matter of blood, and deserveth death by the Law of God, and he that hath done such a fact in point of Law, ought to die. But there were two things left to the civil Judges. 1. Whether this man hath done such a fact. 2. A sitting in the Tribunall, and
saying, I or we command and decree such a man who hath shed such blood, hath inflicted such a stroke on this woman who is with child of living birth, to be stoned to death, to be hanged. Eras- 
thus hath not proved, nor never shall prove that the High Priests, 
Priests or Levites; by Gods Law did thus judge any: That Ana-
nias commanded Paul to be beaten, and the lictors of the High 
Priest smote Christ on the face at the command of the Priests, was 
against Law, they had no power so to doe by Law, yea, and our 
Presbyteryes that judge of forceries, witchcrafts, incests, adulteries, 
and other capittall crimes, and of bloods in point of Gods Law, what 
is witchcraft, what is incest, that the husband that striketh his wife 
being with quick child, and killeth the birth is a Murtherer; but 
that they judicially say, such a woman is a Witch, and so ordain her 
to be hanged and burned, and such a husband is a Murtherer, and de-
cerne him to die, is utterly unlawfull, therefore this is an ignorant 
speech of Erastus: This synedrie of Priests and Levites, whether 
in point of Law, or in point of fact, did give out sentences of death, 
therefore they were politicke judges, it followeth not; and that the 
Priests said, this man deverseth to die, and therefore they gave out, as 
civill judges, sentences of death, (for the civill judge draweth not the 
sword with his owne hand,) is a foul consequence; for lawyers do say 
such a man is worthy to die, but it followeth not that Lawyers are 
civill judges to condemn a man to die; for the Priests said, this 
man deverseth to die in point of Law, not absolutely, as this man, 
but upon supposition that he hath committed the fact, deverseth to 
die, and their meaning is, any man whosoever he be, though they 
ever hear, nor see the man who hath committed such a fact, ought 
to die. Now Gods Law never appointed any judge to condemn 
a man to die, whom the judge never did accuse, heare, or see, this 
were extreame unjustice: Now this supposition is, and was to be 
proved and judged by the civill Judge; and whereas Erastus saith, 
the judge draweth the sword with his owne hand against no man;
3. It is not to purpose, for the hangman is in Law the hand and 
instrument of the judge, but he is neither hand nor instrument of 
the Lawyer, of the Priests and Levites, who in matters criminal of 
life and death, judge of the Maior proposition, and of the Law, ex- 
cept Erastus would have a Maior proposition to prove an Asump-
tion, which were to shame all Logick: For the Priest never com-
manded this or this man, because he had done this fault, to be stoned by such & such executioners. 2. It is doubtful whether the judge did never with his owne hand, cast a stone at any stoned to death. Lastly, there was no provocation from the great Sanedrim at Jerusalem, true, in matter of law, what then? Ergo, they were politic judges? it followeth as the like consequences of Erastus doth follow. Yea, for the fact and the judicall condemning of the man, they were neither the highest judicature, nor any judicature at all, the civil Judges of the high Sanedrim did that only. It is true, he was to die who would not stand to the sentence of the judge or Priest in the matter of law, the man being judged to be guilty of the fact by the civil judge, but this shall never prove that the Priests were civil judges.

Erastus. The late Iewes referre to this Sanedrim at Jerusalem questions of making warre, or consecrating the Priest, of tributes, of charges of the Temple, of judging of Tribes, of the summoning of false Prophets, and of Soothsayers, &c. How then is it not a politic judicature in which all causes belonging to worship, Ceremonies, civil policy, bloods, and capital punishments were handled? for when Moles had spoken of the punishing of Idolaters, he presently addeth Deut. 17. If any thing be hard for thee, &c.

Anf. It is like enough, the Iewes referred such as these to the Sanedrim, but we contend for two Sanedrims, one civil, and another of Priests, Levites and Elders, who judged of matters one ty of Ecclesiasticall cognizance, and of bloods, and punishing Idolaters and false Prophets with death, only in a spirituall way, in point of law; and I judge the holy Ghost Deut. 17. hath so framed the words that it is evident, as I have proved that capital crimes belonged to them in point of law; for he faith not, be that refuseth to die when the Priests and Levites condemne him to die, hee shall surely die, and have the benefit of appeal to no higher judicature. Now this he should have said by Erastus his way; but he that will not stand to the sentence of the Priest or judge shall die. Hence it is clear, he speaketh of things in matters of law, in which the guilty might dis-sent, and alledge the Priests had not judged according to Law. But how was it the minde of the holy Ghost that any could refuse the Sentence of death given out by the Priests? for the meaning must be by Erastus his way, he that refuseth.
fash to die, when the Priest condemmeth him to die, he shall surely die.
2. He saith not that the Priests and Levites shall give out sentences of
death and blood against any man, but they shall shew and
teach thee when thou shalt inquire, the sentences of judgement,
even of Idolaters, blasphemers, of Murthers, and blood, accord-
ing to the Law of God, the knowledge of which the Priests lips
should preserve.

Erastus: Moses instituted no other publike judicatures for punishing
Page 270. of Wickednes, but those he maketh mention of Exod. 18. Numb. 11.
Deut. 1.16, 17. But all these were onely civill, not Ecclesiasticall
Judges. The seventy that were inducted with the spirit of prophecy were
given to helpo Moses and ease him, not to be assistants to helpo Aaron,
and it cannot be doubted but Moses his government was civill.

Ans. Both the Major & the Minor is false; the Major is from some
particular places, negative, he should argue from all the Old Te-
Stament, and he argueth from some places onely, he leaveth our
Levit. 10. and all the places where the Priests were onely to judge
the Leper, the unclean, which are spirituall judicatures, not civill.
2. The Assumption is false; Deut. 17, saith the contrary. 3. Though
we could not shew a place for the forsmall institution of an Ordi-
nance, yet if we show the thing instituted, it is sufficient. 4. Era-
stus much doubteoth himselfe, if Moses his government was alto-
gether civill, especially before the Lord separated Aaron his sons
and the Tribe of Levi to teach and governe the people in an Ec-
clesiasticall way, for Erastus said before that Moses prescribed
Lawes to Aaron, sacriﬁced and did that which was proper to the
Priests, though after that God forbade the Kings to usurpe the
Priests offi ce, and punished Saul and Veziah for so doing. (though
I never read that Saul usurped the Priests ofﬁce, you may take it
upon the word of Erastus) and we all know that Moses was a
Prophet of God, Deut. 18. 18. I will raise them up a Prophet from
amongst their brethren like unto me, Deut. 34. 10. And there a-
rose not a Prophet in Israel since, like unto Moses, whom the Lord
knew face to face, Heb. 3. 5. Moses verily was faithful in all his
house as a servant: Now those that will say Moses his government
of the Church was all civill and politically, as a civill judge and
King, and that he acted not in the government of the Church, as
in writing and delivering Laws, and in doing many things, yes in
com-
commanding the will of God, as a Prophet to Aaron, to his sons, and the whole tribe of Levi, to me speaks nonsence.

Eraslus. That judicature to which the inferiours appealed, as to the supreme, is politick.

Answ. It is denied, they appealed to it, as the supreme Ecclesiastick in point of Law and Conscience: Ergo, It was not politique, all the rest are answered before, ye3, Iehoshaphat 2 Chron.19. putteth this as a thing peculiar to the Priests, v. 12. What cause ever shall come before you of your brethren, --between blood and blood, between Law and Commandement, Statutes and Judgements, ye shall even warn them that they trespass not against the Lord; that is, as Eraslus yeeldeth, ye shall teach them what is just and agreeable to, and what is unjust and repugnant to the Law of God. Civill judges lips were not to preserve knowledge, as the lips of the Priests, Mal. 2. 7. and Deut. 17. 11. According to the sentence of the Law that they shall teach thee, and according to the judgement that they shall tell, then shal doe. Hence it is clear that this judicature in civill things was a teaching, a telling, a declaring and resolving judicature, and that in blood they resolved of causes of blood, of stroakes, but judged not persons, nor bloody men, nor violent persons.

Eraslus. Moses and Iehoshaphat speake of one and the same judicature. Moses doth not give teaching and commanding visibly to some, but joyntly to all the Synedrie. Though the Priests were more skilled in the Law, for Moses commandeth to teach the sense of the Law by judging, as he saith himselfe, Exod. 18. 16. I judge between one and another, and I doe make them know the statutes of God and his lawses; Moses putteth them all joyntly together, they shall tell thee, then shalt doe what they shew thee, according to the Law that they shall teach thee; shalt thou doe, not declining to the right-hand, or to the left-hand.

Answ. 1. That Iehoshaphat speaketh of the same judicature that Moses speaketh of, is clear, 2 Chron. 19. 8. 9. 10. The very words of Moses Deut. 17. 8. are the same, both the same judges, and the same causes, compared with v. 5. 6. 7. But Iehoshaphat maketh two judicatures, as I have proved, and Iehoshaphat reformed according to Moses his Lawe, as Eraslus granteth. 2. I cannot be induced to beleive that the judges here teached by judging, it is spoken contrary
A Church judicature

Cap.XV. Q. 11.

Teaching and judging not one.

Contrary to Theology: The end of teaching is to inform the conscience, and Teachers as Teachers watch for the soul; and the end of civil and political judging, is a quiet and peaceful life.

1 Tim. 2. 2. The voice of Teachers are not carnal, but spiritual.

2 Cor. 10. 4. 5. The weapons of civil judges are carnal, for the civil Judge beareth not the sword in vain, Rom. 13. 4. Then these same civil judges did neither teach and judge at once, they taught not as civil judges, but as Priests; they judged not as Priests, but as civil Judges; and therefore there is no ground to say that Moses ascribes these same acts to civil judges, and Priests and Levites, as if they made one Synedry; for in both Texts not one word of teaching, which is proper to the Priests, Mal. 2. 7. Jer. 2. 8. Hos. 4. 6. is ascribed to the civil Judge; and not one word of judging and condemning to death, which is proper to the civil Judge, Num. 24. Deut. 22. 18, 19. Deut. 17. 2. 3. 4. &c. and 21. 19, 20. 1 Kings. 21. 11. 2 Sam. 14. 15. 1 Kings 2. 28. &c. Rom. 13. 4. Luke 12. 13. 14. &c. is ascribed to the Priests and Levites; but the Priest or the judge are set downe by way of disjunction, Deut. 17. 12. which could not be if they made one and the same judicature, and therefore lchoshaphat 2 Chron. 19. clearly distinguishes them in two judicatures, one v. 5, 6, 7. Another v. 8, 9. 10. having two sundry presidents, and two sundry objects to treat about, to wit, the masters of lebovah, and the masters of the King. 3. The place cited Exod. 18. 16. confirmeth much our opinion, for Moses as a Judge, when they have a master, they come unto me, and I judge between one another. This he spake as a civil Judge; and when he saith, And I make them know the Statutes of God and his laws: This he spake as a prophet, for Moses was both a Judge and a Prophet. Now if all civil Judges be such mist persons, as to teach the Statutes and Laws of God, they doe this either as civil Judges, or as Prophets, then there was reason why Malachias should have said, the civil Judges lips should preserve knowledge, and they should seek the Law at his mouth, for if a civil judge, as a Judge teach the people, and watch for their souls, what marvells then he beare the sword to preserve their bodies, as a Prophet, and not as a Judge; and if he beare the sword as a Prophet and Teacher, all Teachers must beare the sword: which is against reason and Scripture, and what reason is there, if Moses teach as a civil judge, but he may as properly be obliged
obliged in conscience to teach, and so he should finde if he impoy
not his talent that way, as he is obliged to exercise the sword as
a judge? and by the contrary, a Prophet as a Prophet should be
obliged in conscience, as kindly and per se, to exercise the Sword
as to preach the Gospel, for nothing agreeth more kindly to the
subject, then that which agreeth to it is void under that reduplica-
tion, as it is such. Now this is against sense and reason, and con-
foundeth all callings on earth: but if Erasius grant that Moses
judgeth as a civil judge, and teacheth the people the Law of God
as a prophet, then to make this Sanedrim a mixt company both to
judge civilly, and to teach as spiritual men by office, must all the
Priests and Levites in this Sanedrim be both Priests and Levites, and
also civil Judges? And all the civil Judges must be both civil
judges, and allo Priests and Levites, which is expressely against the
Text, that speaketh Deut. 17. of the Priest, or the Judge, as two distinct
offices, and so God must have chosen the Judge no less, then the
Priest to minister before him. So, it is false, that teaching and
judging are copulatively ascribed to these same persons, and to the
same judicature, as Erasius faith.

Erasius. He saith Deut. 17. he shall die who standeth not to the sen-
tence of the Priest or judge, by way of disjunction, in regard of divers
times, for the Princes or Judges were not always the same, for often
only the Priests governed, and for the same reason he saith nor. Deut.
17. ascend to Jerusalem, but to the place which the Lord thy God shall
choose, for the Arke was not always in one place, or city; So Deut.19.
When he speaketh of the false witness, he saith, and they shall stand
before the Lord, that is, before the Priests and Judges that shall be at
that time. Who would thinke that there are here distinct and di-
vers Judicatures?

Ans. It is a conjecture of Erasius, that Moses speaketh Deut. 17.
of the Priest or the Judge by way of disjunction, because of divers times,
not of divers and distinct Tribunals, for all Moses his time, and Jo-
sena's time, and for the most part, there were both Judges and
Priests, and we had rather beleive the Spirit of God then Erasius,
for 2 Chron. 19. under Jehoshaphat at one and the same time, there
were both civil Judges, and Priests and Levites, and these two
Judicatures had two different sorts of causes, and two different
Presidents; if then at one and the same time the man was to be put
to
to death, who did not stand to the sentence of the Priest, though he should stand to the sentence of the civil judge; and so if he were to be put to death, who should stand to the sentence of the Priests, and give an outside of obedience to the Ceremoniall Law, if he should not stand to the sentence of the civil Judge, then were there at the same time these two sentences in these two judicatures: but the former is true by the expresse Law of God; Ergo, so is the latter: when God saith, Go up to the place that the Lord shall choose, he meaneth Jerusalem, and one determinate place at once, and if Moses had said, Go up to the place that the Lord shall choose; or to some other place that the Lord shall not choose, then could I inferre well, that at one and the same time, they might have gone to either places, or to both places, having two sorts of causes, as there be ever two sorts of causes in the Church, some Civil, some Ecclesiasticall. 3. Erasius should have shewn a time when onely the Priest as the Priest did governe, and there neither was a civil Judge, nor was that Priest who governed the civil judge: If Erasius shew not this, he sheweth nothing for his owne cause, which is to make one confused Judicature of civil and Ecclesiasticall Judges and causes, which the Scripture doth carefully distinguish. 4. In the place Deut. 19. nothing is said against us, but that onely the civil judge put to death the false witness; which is much for us, that though the false witness was to stand before the Priests, and incurre an Ecclesiasticall censoure, yet the Priest as Priest had no hand in putting him to death.

Erasius. Sometime the Priest was president in this Sancedrim, as Eli and Samuel, without a judge; therefore when it is said, the cheife Priest was over them in all the matters of the Lord, and Zebediah in the Kings matters, they made not twoo different Indicatures; and the high Priest and Zebediah were both over the same Indicature. Iosephus excellently versed in the Levitish lawes, faith, antiqu. lib. 9. c. 1. they were &dquo; fellows or companions &dquo; then they were not in divers Senates. The Levites were equally servants to both, though it may be the Priests were more diligently to goe about the caus- ses of God, and the Judges the causes of the King.

Ans. Were Eli and Samuel presidents in the Sancedrim without a Judge? that is as much as to say, Eli and Samuel, who undoubted-ly by the Testimony of the Spirit of God were civil Judges of
of Israel, 1 Sam. 4.18. and 7.15. and 8.1.7. were Judges without Judges: I conceive Eli was both a Priest and a Judge; and Samuel both a Prophet and a Judge; whether Samuel was a Priest or not, let Erastus determine. Samuel was of the Tribe of Ephraim, not a Priest, though he sacrificed by an extraordinary Privileg; nor was Moses a Priest. 2. I see no reason to say, Eli was a Priest, without a Judge, more then to say he was a Judge without a Priest, for he was both. But this may shew the Reader, that Erastus always confoundeth the office of the Priest, and the Civill judge, so as he maketh them not only subjectively one, which God himself did in the person of Eli, but also one formally; for as I shew before Erastus must say, Eli sacrificed as a Judge, and he condemned ill doers to die & exercised the sword as a Priest; & Samuel prophesied as a Magistrate, & Samuel did judge Israel as a Prophet; for the Magistrate as the Magistrate to Erastus, doth both both the part of a Judge, of a Priest and Prophet of old, and now of a Pastor and Teacher. 3. It is enough to us that Amariah and Zebediah were over diverse causes, in divers Courts, and differenced, 2 Chron. 19. in that the one was for the kings matters, the other for Gods matters. Erastus saith right down, they were both for these same matters. But the one was to care more for the Kings matters, the other more for Gods matters: so Erastus is forced to make a difference: But he maketh it in the comparative degree, and the Spirit of God maketh the difference in the positive degree: But 1. Erastus faith without the Text, Amariah was so care. for the matters of the King, but more for the matters of God: The Text faith no such thing, but the contrary: he faith, Zebediah the Civill Magistrate was to care for the matters of God, but more for the matters of the King: 4. This is against Erastus his way; which is that the Magistrate hath a supreme principali and only care of Church-Government, and the Priests and Levites, and Pastors and Teachers only, as the servants of the Magistrates, & sub Magistrate, as Vtenbogard speaketh, from and under the Magistrate, as the Vicars, Deputys, and Ambassadors of the Magistrate; yea, that Magistrates teach the people by the Pastors, as by their Vicars, then Zebediah should more diligently care for the matters of God, then Amariah as the Lord and Master should more care his own business, then his servant should do: 3. More or less doth not vary the nature of things; then must the

Clar. Vir. Antonius Wale ns. Tom. i. pag. 27. Wtenbogardus. Auranem subjici Moi. Magistratus esse infauratorum, & directores cultus Dei, scendum verbum Dei, sed Doctores esse sanctum religionis Ministros, & Magistratum populum decreto, ecclesia Ministrii; Ministrios autem bec facere a et sub Magistratus.
the Magistrate Sacrifice, Teach, judge between the clean and the unclean, minister before the Lord as the sons of Aaron, and the sons of Levi, but less diligently. But what calling hath he to any of these Acts at all? Hath the Lord chosen the Tribe of Judah, or the Tribe of Levi to minister before him? And by the same reason, the Priests, Levites should do these same things, but more diligently. And again Amariah is to use the sword, and to condemn ill doers to death: But less diligently, these be pleasant dreams. 5. The Priests and Judges are companions, as Moses and Aaron: Ergo, the one is not Master and the other servant and Deputy, as Erastus dreamed, and they are the rather of that in divers Senates. 6. But how proveth Erastus, That the Levites were common Servants both to Priests and Judges? For though it were so, this will never subject the Priests to the Civill Judge, nor confound these two Indicatures: David, i. Chron. 26, divided the Levites, and set them in their courses for service; Ergo, They were King David's servants as King, it followeth not, except Erastus prove David did not this as a Prophet, and that the Lord did not choose the Tribe of Levi. But David did it as a King, and so all Magistrates may appoint offices in the House of God, and call men to the Ministry, by virtue of the Magistrates place: But David, i. Chro. 24, distributed the Priests as well as the Levites; Ergo, the Priests are servants to the King, as well as the Levites. But the Levites are expressly, i. Chron. 26, given by office, to wait on the sons of Aaron, for the service of the house of the Lord; for the purifying the holy things, for the new bread, for the fine flour for meat offerings, and for the unleavened Cakes, and that which is baked in the pan, and for that which is fried, and for all manner of measures and price, to praise the Lord at morning and night; to offer all burnt sacrifices to the Lord, &c. In all which no man can say, they were servants to the King. For then the King sacrificed by them, as by his servants; no Divinity is more contrary to Scripture.

It is true, i Chron. 26. 30, some of the Hebronites were Officers in all the business of the Lord, and the service of the King. But that is because, ver. 26, they had the oversight of the spoile, that the King dedicated to the house of the Lord, for the building of the Temple, and that is called the King's business.

Erastus. Johosaphat, 2 Chron. 19, did not depart from Moses his
Cap. XV. Q. ii. amongst the Jews.

bi Law: But we read not, that there were two distinct jurisdictions commanded and instituted by God.

Answ. If this be a good Argument; all that David and Solomon did for, and in the building of the Temple in the structure, forme, length, breadth, Cedars, gold, Altars, &c. of the Temple shall be without Warrant; Solomon and David departed not from Moses: But Moses spake nothing of the Temple, and a thousand things of Divine institution in the Temple.

But this is our Argument, Jebothaplus did erect no new Indicatures, but restore those that had their Warrant from Moses his Law. But so it is that Jebothaplus re-instituted two distinct Indicatures: Ergo, The Lord by Moses at the beginning did institute these two distinct Indicatures.

Erastus. We are not anxious to inquire what be the matters of God, it is all one with what he said before; to judge not for men, but for the Lord. The Sibyls, the judgements of Capital causes is the judgement of souls, the scriptures namely all judgements most frequently, the judgements of the Lord, Deut. 19. To shall not fear men; for the judgement is the Lord's, Exod. 18. The people came unto me to inquire of God, that is, to seek judgements: Therefore are the Judges, Exod. 21. Phil. 6. called Gods, The master of God, is any cause expressed in the Law of God, and proposed to the Judges to be judged; and the Kings matter, is that which properly belongeth to the King.

Answ. Erastus his anxiety to inquire is little, because he cannot answer: 1. The master of the Lord cannot be all one with this, to judge not for men, but for the Lord: For the matter of the King, or a point of Treason to be judged, is to be judged not for men, but for the Lord. But the Text differeth between the matters of Lord, and the matters of the King. 2. In the former, 2 Chron. 19.5. he speaketh of civil business; but the matters of the Lord are such as concern the Law of God, and the true sense and meaning thereof to be proposed to the conscience; and 3. That is a common thing to all causes, that in the manner of Judging, Judges are to look that they do as men in the place of God, to them as God, if he were judging, would do no iniquity, nor respect persons, nor take gifts, as he saith, ver. 7. So neither should we do iniquity, or respect persons in judgement; and so it is taken.
Now this clearly is the manner of righteous judgement, and Modus judicandi, but the matter of Jehovah is Res judicata; the thing to be judged, which may be unjustly judged; and this matter of Jehovah is not common to all causes, but is distinguished in the Text, from the matters of the King, which in the manner of judging is no less to be judged according to the judgement of the Lord, then the matters of Jehovah.

4. The Chalde Paraphrase, Vis inquirat instructionem, Vatab. Vis consular deum. This is a false interpretation, That to inquire of God, is to seek judgement from God: For it is to ask the Lords mind in doubtsome cases; and this they asked from Moses, as he was a Prophet, not as he was a civil Judge: except Erastus will have the Magistrate of old to give responses, and to have been Oracles by virtue of their Office; which is a clear untruth. Saml. David, Solomon, Joshua, though Kings, did not give responses, and answers when they did go to War, or were in doubtsome perplexities. But did ask Counsell at the Priest and Oracle of God and the Ark, 1 Sam. 15. 37. 109. 9. 14. Indg. 20. 27. 1 Sam. 30. 8. and 23. 24. And by this the Magistrate as the Magistrate should resolve all doubts of conscience now to perplexed consciences, under the New Testament. 5. The Judges are called Gods, because they are under Deputies in the room and place of the great God, not because every judgement of theirs is the judgement, and very sentence of God, and according to that the cause they judge is nothing but the cause of God, for they are to judge the Kings matters, no lesser then Gods matters. 6. For what end Erastus speaketh of the Rabbins here I know not; I think he knoweth not himself; the man was ignorant of them, and innocent of their language.

Erastus. I am not against that the things of God be things belonging to the Worship of God, and the matters of the Kings Civil business. The Priest must especially take care, that there be no error in Faith and Ceremonies; and this belongeth also to the King, as is clear, Deut. 17. So Zebadiah is not excluded from Gods matters: Nor Amariah from the Kings business.

Ans. This interpretation is fully refuted: Zebadiah is in the Text, excluded from judging Ecclesiastically, in the matters of God, as a Priest, Levite or Elder. For if he must judge so, he must either judge
judge as a Priest or Levite, which he was not, or as a Civill Judge: if as a Civill Judge, then is he no lesse over the people in the matters of God, then in the Kings matters: Now the Text could not exclude him from these things which belongeth to his office, and put him in another Sphere, in the businesse of the King, and put such a wide difference between the object of the two men, as the Kings matters, and the matters of the King of Kings. The like I say of Amasiah. 2. The King Deut. 17. as King, is to judge according to the Book of the Law, that he may be a godly King, and fear God, and keep the words of the Law: Esay, he is to teach the people no lesse then the Priest, and to judge between the clean and unclean, and that as King: This no way followeth.

Erastus. If you please by the matters of God, to understand the Page 275. causes of appeals, and by the Kings matters, other judgements, I consider: And because the Priest was better accustomed with the Law of God, then others, therefore the High Priest was set over these, yet so, as Zebadiah was over the Kings business: But I think the two first, especially the first, the best Exposition: But 1 Chron. 26. These same persons are for ever both the Kings and the Lords matters.

Ans. Consider how dubious Erastus is in his three Expositions to elucidate the force of the place. If it was the Magistrates place, virtue offices, by virtue of his office to command the Priests, and to direct them (as Erastus and UTenbugard say) in the internall and specific acts of sacrificing, judging between the clean and the unclean, teaching the people: then the King and the Civill Judge were by office, to be more skilled in the Causes of God, then the Priests, because the Commander and the director, who may by his office exercise those same acts that he commandeth his servants; yea, and is by office, to command him, to do thus, in these internall Acts, and not thus, he ought by his office, to be more skilled in these then the servant. I grant, the King Commandeth the Painter, all the morall equity requisite in Painting, that he endanger not the Common-wealth by profuse lavishing of Gold; and in this, it is presumed, there is more justice and morall equity by office in the King Commanding, then in the Painter Commanded: But if the King should take on him to Command, virtue offices, that the Painter regulateth his actions of art, thus and thus, and direct and Command by his Royall office, as King, that the Painter...
draw the face of the Image with more pale and white, and fierce red
and incarnate colour; in such a proportion according to art, and
not in such a proportion. Then, by office the King as King, might
paint Portrait: himself; and behooved by office to be more skilled
in painting then the Painter. Now Erasmus presupposed, Whate-
ver the Priests do as Priests, in an Ecclesiastical way, (he excepted Sac-
crificing and burning incense, but for a time) that the King as King
may do the same also; so the King as King may teach, give responses
in matters of God, and now, under the new Testament, Preach and
dispense the Sacraments, and judge as King, whether Priests and Pa-
fors do right or no; and that not only in order to Civil, but also
to Ecclesiastical punishments, as deprivation from their offices,
and debarri ng from the Sacraments. Hence it must follow, that
Zebediah should, by office, be better skilled in the matters of God
then Amariah, or any Priest, and by office, he should rather be
over the matters of God then any Priest in the world. 2. Now it is clear
that these same things, to be over men in the matters of God, and in the
matters of the King, 1 Chron. 26, prove nothing, except they be
over these same matters, by one and the same power of the Sword,
as Erasmus faith; Amariah, the High Priest, and Zebediah the Civill
Judge, promiscuously were both of them, without exclusion of ei-
ther, over the people in the matters of the Lord, and in the matters
of the King; and in the same judicature, & by the same coercive po-
wer of the sword, as Erasmus faith. Priests and Civill Judges were
in the same judicature, by the same Civill power. Judges to give
out joyntly, in a judicial way, the sentence of a bloody death, and
to inflict a bloody death by the same power. 3. It is Erasmus his
ignorance of the Original Text, to lay those same words that are
2 Chron. 19, 11 are also, 1 Chron. 26, ver. 30, 32. for 2 Chron. 19.
11, it is said, Amariah is over you in all the matters of the Lord:
Hence the matters of the Lord, were the formall object of his
judging: But 1 Chron. 26, 30, the Hebronites were officers in the
business of the Lord, or, in the business of the Lord, and in the
service of the King. Levites might have been employed in both
Ecclesiastical and Civill business in the Temple, and in the over-
seeing of those spoiles, that David in Wars had taken from the E-
nemies, and Dedicated for building the House of the Lord, which
are called the Kings business; and the construction, ver. 32, is va-
ried

Levites
sometime
employed
in Civill
business.
Cap. XVI. Q. 12. amongst the Jewes.

ried, where it is said, The Hebronesis mighty men of valour, and so fit for war, were made by King David, Rulers over the Reubenites, Gadites, and the half Tribe of Manasseh for every matter; not in every matter pertaining to God: The affixum 71 is here, and the affaires of the King. These Levites seem to be employed in the war, and are called valiant men, which must be some extraordinary case:

But otherwise, when God commanded to number the Children of Israel for war, Numb. 1. 3. 45. The Levites were never numbered, God did forbid Moses to number them, because they were appointed for another service, ver. 48, 49, 50. Yet it seemeth in Davids time, when there were extraordinary warres, that they were not exempted from the warres, for 1 Chron. 21. David commanded to number all Israel from Dan to Beerseba, and v. 6. Levi and Benjamin Joab counted not, for the Kings word was abominable to Joab; Whence to me it would seem, that in some cases they were counted for warre, so a Chron. 23. 7. The Levites shall compose the King, every man with his weapons in his hands, and Ichoiada the High Priest was their leader, to establish Joab in his Throne; but the case was not ordinary. Otherwise the Levites were separated from warre and civill judicatures to the service of the Sanctuary. Numb. 1. 47, 50. and 2. 33. and 3. 9. 12. and 3. 41, 45. and 8. 6. and 9. 10, 11, 12, 14, 18, 19. and 18. 23. Dens. 31. 25. Isla. 14. 3. 4. and 18. 7. 1 Chron. 15. 15. 2 Chron. 8. 14. and 10. 19. and 29. 5, 16, 25, 36. Ezra 8. 9, 10. c. 6. 18. c. 8. 29. Neh. 8. 7, 9. and 9. 4. Ezek. 44. 10. All which places must be answered by Erastus.

CHAP. XVI. Quest. 12.

Whether Erastus profest validly the power of the Civill Magistrate in matters Ecclesiastic?

Before I proceed further, it is needfull to examine Erastus his doctrine of the civill Magistrate.

Erastus. As there is a twofold governance, be two supreme Governors. God is the man, the Magistrate of the outward man.
but two supream Governors of the same Government, so as the one
neither be a part of the other, nor Administer all in the name of
the other.

 Ans. 1. Because a man consisteth of a spirituall part, a conscience
and soul, and of an externall visible part; in which he exerciseth
visible and externall acts of worship; yet spirituall, another, as he
is a civill Agent, therefore there is a necessity there be no supream
externall Governors under the one supream Lord of Heaven
and earth; one that teacheth and informeth the minde, and ruleth by
the sword whole man, as he is a part of a civill society, in all his civill
actions, and this is the Magistrate; another that governeth him, as
he is a member of a spirituall and supernaturall society, and exercis-
eth externall spirituall actions, in reference to God, & in the sub-
jectio of his conscience to him, and this is either a Priest, Levite
or Prophet in the Old Testament, or Pastor, Teacher or Elder in
the New Testament: and it is absurd, that there should not be two
Governors; one over man in relation to his conscience and walk-
ing with God, and his brethren as Members of a spirituall society,
called a Pastor or Teacher; another in relation to his civill actions
of Peace and justice to his brother, as he is a Member of a civill
society, called a Magistrate.

2. It is an absurd thing, for Erasbus to fancy God, and the
Magistrate, two supream Governors; when the Magistrate is not
supream, but a meer Minister and Vassall subordinate to God, the
only most high. 3. It is as absurd to imagine God hath given no Ru-
lers, Teachers, and guides to govern a man as he is a spirituall Agent,
obliged to worship God, and to be edified in the faith, but only
the civill Magistrate; then hath Christ left no shepherd to his re-
deemed flock but the Civill Magistrate, and ascending on high he
hath left no gifts, no Pastors and Teachers, for the gathering of the
Saints to the end of the world, when we shall meet all in the unity of
the Faith; but only the Magistrate contrary to Christ's end, in as-
scending to heaven, Eph. 4. 11, Afs. 20.28. 1 Pet. 5.1,2. and contra-
ry to Christ's compassion to souls, who is moved, that his sheep
want shepherds; for there souls, rather then Magistrates. March.
9.36.37.38. therefore the opinion of Erasbus is like the Divinity
of Epicures or unchristian Moralists, who appoint Magi-
strate to Govern the externall man, but no Teachers to take
take care of their souls, or to lead them to heaven.

Erastus. As there is one measure by which we measure things of
divers natures, as cloath of tissens, of silke, of silver, of gold, and
there is one weight by which we measure things weighable, though of
most divers natures; so is there one visible dispensation and governing
of all visible things, though there be some Laws for the City, some for
the Country, some for the Schooles, as there be no necessity of divers
rulers, and Law-givers, to the City, to the Country, to the Schooles;
so is there no necessity that there should be any other then the Magis-
trate, who should guide things civil and profane, things of Schooles,
and things sacred.

Ans. This man speaketh rather like a Morall, or a naturall
Physitian, than a Divine; the argument were good, if men had no
souls, for then they should not need any to watch for their souls,
as the spirit of God faith they do, Heb. 13. 17. and he with one
stroke, taketh away Pastors and Teachers, and maketh the King
the only Pastor and Teacher in all his Kingdomes. 2. We know
similitudes, especially not warranted with Scripture, proveth noth-
ing, and this may well conclude there should be no ruler at all,
nor any Lawgiver on earth; but God only, and let every man do
what seemes good in his owne eyes, for Gods will is the only mea-
sure and rule of all things. And 3. If all men were to be ruled the
same way, it might have colour. But it is known, that all Chur-
ches, as members of a Common-wealth, are ruled one way,
in giving to every man his own, & in not doing violence one to anoth-
er; but in keeping peace and policy, as all men do in all societies on
everth, and so they have need of Magistrates. 2. Another way they
are considered as Members of a society, called from the state of
sine, to Grace and Glory, and so they have no lesse need of te-
achers for the guiding of their souls, Mat. 9. 36, 37, 38. Eph. 4. 11,
5. 17. Acts. 20. 28, 29. Math. 28. 19, 20. Phil. 1. 1. and by name of
the Elders of the Church, Acts. 4. 5. 23. and 11. 3. and 14. 23. and
15. 2, 4, 6, 22, 23. and 16. 4. and 20. 28. and 21. 18. and 22. 5. Tit. 1. 5.
and that the Magistrate should rule the house of God, is against the
word.

Erastus. One Common-wealth can have but one supreme Magis-
trate, a body wise two heads is monstrous; therefore Papists almoast by
this
this argument do appoint one Pope head of the Church. There cannot be two powers of two swords; both supreme and of equal power: but the Church power must be subject to the more excellent the power of the Magistrate. But because he cannot do all by himselfe, he Government the Schollers, by Docters, the Cities by inferior judges, the Church by Pastors, and all according to right and justice, and the Word of God, and that where the Magistrate and Subjects are Christians; but where the Magistrate is of a false Religion, two different Governments are tolerable.

Ans. 1. This argument destroys all Aristocracy, Parliament, and Senates, where many good men have equal power, and so the Common-wealth may not have 79. Heads and Rulers of equal power, which is against the Scripture, which commandeth subjection to every Civill ordinance of man, as lawful. Rom. 13. 1, 2, 3. Tit. 3 1, 2, 3, 1 Pet. 2. 13, 14. Dom. 1. 16. It maketh no Government lawful, but Popedome and Monarchy in both Church and State. 2. It is to beg the question, that there cannot be two supreme powers, both supreme in their owne kind, for they are both supreme in their owne sphere: as Pastors dispense Sacraments and Word, without subjection to the Magistrate as they are Pastors, and Magistrates use the Sword without dependence on Pastors, and yet is there mutual and reciprocal subjection of each to other in diverse considerations: Pastors as subjects in a Civill relation, are subject to the Magistrate, as every soul on earth is, and Magistrates as they have souls and stand in need to be led to heaven, are under Pastors and Elders. For if they hear not the Church, and if they commit inceif, they are to be cast out of the Church, Mat. 18. 1 Cor. 5. Rom. 16. 17. 1 Thes. 3. 14, 15. If they walk improperly, we are to eschew their company, if they despise the Ministers of Christ, they despise him who sent them, Math. 10. 40. Luk. 10. 16. God respecteth not the persons of Kings, and we finding them not excepted, if the preachers of the Gospel be to all believers equal authors by whom over them in the Lord, 1 Thess. 5. 12. 1 Tim. 5. 17: call it authority, or no Authority, they have some oversight over the Christian Magistrate; and here be two supremes, two highest powers, one Ecclesiastical, another Civill; nor should any deny Moses to be above Aaron, as the supreme judge; Aaron not having the power of the sword, as Moses had; and Aaron must be above Moses.
Moses, in sacrificing, in burning incense, in judging between the clean and the unclean, which Moses could not do. 2. The excellency of the Civill power in regard of earthly honour and eminency in the fifth Commandament, above the servants of God in the Ministry of Christ's Spirituall Kingdom, which is not of this world, we heartily acknowledge. 3. That the King Preacheth and dispenses the Sacraments by Pastors, as by his servants, is wilde Divinity: Pastors then must have Magistraticall Authority and power of the sword committed to them, as the Deputies and inferior judges of the Lords of the Gensiles, which Christ forbade his Disciples, Luk.22.25,26,27. For the servant must have some power committed to him from the principal cause in that wherein he is a servant. 4. What reason is there, that where the Magistrate is a Heathen, two Governments, and so two heads in one body should be? for then there is and must be a Church-Government, where the Magistrate is a Heathen, and that in the hands of the Church: if then the Magistrate turn Christian, must he spoil the Church of what was her due before?

Eraftus. The Lord Jesus changed nothing in the New Testament, and yet, was the most wise Government in the Jewish Church, now there all Government was in the hands of Moses: I say, Moses, that the Magistrate might sacrifice, or do what was proper to the Priests, but he did dispute and order what was to be done by the Priests.

Yet, but Eraftus saith, the Magistrate may dispense word and Sacraments in the New Testament, if he be not leisure: Why might he not sacrifice in the Old Testament also? 2. Pastors do by their Doctrine and Discipline, order and regulate all callings in their Moralls of right and wrong, of just and unjust; yet is not the Pastor the only Governour in all externals, 3. If Christ changed nothing of the Jewish Government, we have all their exclusion of men out of the Campe, their separating of the unclean, and their politicke and Ceremoniall Lawes, which is unfound Divinity.

Eraftus. Moses Ruled all before there Was a Priesthood instituted. God, Exod.4. Numb.12. called Aaron to his office and magistrate him by Moses; nor doth he command him to exercise a peculiar judgement, when he declareth his office to him, and when Aaron
Moses substituteth Eleazar in his place. Joshua c. 3, 4 teacheth the
Priests what they should doe, and commanded them to circumcise Isra-
el: so did Samuel, David, Solomon, and in the time of the Maccab-
bees it was so.

Ans. Moses was once a Prophet and Judge both; Ergo, so it
may be now, it followeth not, except Moses as a Magistrate did re-
veale what was the Priesthood: What Aaron and Eleazer his
sonnes might doe, by as good reason Moses, David, Solomon, Jo-
shua, as Magistrates wrote Canonick Scripture and prophesied.
Then may Magistrates as Magistrates build new Temples typicall
to God, give new Laws, write Canonick Scripture, as these men
did by the Spirit of prophecy no doubt, nor as Magistrates, for why,
but they might sacrifice as Magistrates, and why should Moses ra-
ther have committed the Priesthood, and the service of the Taber-
nacle due to him as a Magistrate, so to Aaron and his sonnes, as
it should be unlawfull to him as a King, and unlawfull to Zeziah
to burn incense, and to sacrifice, and to doe the office of the Priest?
If the Magistrate as the Magistrate doe all that the Priests are to
doe as Priests, and that by a suprem principle, and radical power
in him, he ought not to cast off that which is proper to him as
a Magistrate, to take that which is leffe proper, he calles the care
and ruling of souls on the Priests, and reserveth the lesser part to
himself; to rule the bodies of men with the Sword, all these are
sufficiently answered before.

Eratthus. The King of Persia, Ezra 7. appointed Judges to judge
the people and teach them, but there is no word of Excommunicati-
on, or any Ecclesiastick punishment, but of death, imprisonement, fine;
nor did Nehemiah punish the false Prophets with any other pun-
ishment. Iosephus speaketh nothing of it, nor Antiochus.

Ans. I shew before that there is forfeiting, and separation from
the Congregation, Ezra 10. 8. יְדֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל מֵאֲשֶׁר יָתִלָּה נָהֲרוּ יִשְׂרָאֵל he shall be se-
parated from the Church. 2. If the King of Persia appointed men
to judge and teach the people, why should he deny any judicature
at all? 3. Where ever Iosephus speaketh of the judging of the
Priests, as he doth antiqu. l. 11. c. 7. ant. l. 11. c. 8. l. 12. c. 9. he
hinteth at this.

Page 171.

Eratthus. Christ dischargeth his Disciples to exercise dominion.
Christ would not condemn the adulterous woman, nor judge between

Anf. Let Erasimus be mindful of this himselfe, who yet saith, that the Magistrate may both judge, and (if he have time) dispence the Word and Sacraments; if then the Magistrate by his office may preach and dispense the Sacraments, who made him a judge and a Ruler? Will this satisfy his conscience? The Magistrate as the Magistrate may play the Minister; but the Minister may not play the Magistrate: Now as Erasimus saith, the Minister in holy things, is his servant called by him; may not the Minister be called by him to the Bench also? Erasimus; Eli and Samuel, were both Priests and Judges, and so to Erasimus they are not inconsistent. 2. Ministers ought not to usurp the civil sword; Ergo, they have no power of governing by the sword of the Spirit, it followeth not, the contrary is evident, 1 Thes. 5. 12. 1 Tim. 5. 17. 1 Cor. 12. 28. Rom. 12. 7. 8.

Erasimus, Peter Martyr saith, Com. 1 Sam. 8. Those that live wickedly, may be corrected by the Magistrate. But Papists give one civil Ecclesiastic power to the Pope, and another to the Magistrate, whereas the civil Magistrate is sufficient enough.

Anf. Pet. Martyr. 1 Cor. 5. exprestly asserteth Excommunication, and acknowledgeth a Presbyterie of Pastors and Seniors, or Elders, Peter Martyr condemneth the use of both swords in the Pope, and faith it is sufficient that the Magistrate have the Sword. Page 173.

Erasimus, Christ saith, my Kingdom is not of this world, that is, it is not politicall, external, visible, for Christ reigneth in the world, but his Government is invisible, and spiritual in the Word, and the Spirit.

Anf. Christ denieth only that his Kingdom is of this World, in regard it is not holden up by the civil sword of men, or Magistrates, as Erasimus doth dreame, who maketh the Magistrate with his club to be the onely Catholicke and principal Ruler in all Christs courts; which Christ refuteth, when he saith, If my Kingdom were of this world, mine owne would fight for me. Now Erasimus will have no weapon, but the Magistrates sword to hold out, and cast out all offenders out of Christs Kingdom; but it is false, that Christs Kingdom is not politicall, external, and visible; this is to deny that Christ hath a visible Church: Sure exhorting, rebuking, censoring, withdrawing from the scandalous, excommunication, are visible externally, and in a politicall spiritual way exercized.
ercised by Christ in his Ambassadors: for externall and spirituall
are not opposed, nor are politicall and spirituall opposed, as Erastus
dreameth, and therefore this is a non sequitur of Erastus: His
Kingdom is not of this world; Ergo, it is not externall.

Erastus. When Pompeius invaded and possessed Judea, and Gabin-
ins having overcome Alexander, had changed the State of Judea,
the Pharisees did reign wholly at Jerusalem. The Kingly power
was removed and Aristocracy set up, Ioseph. bel.Iud. I. i. c.6. Io-
seph. antiqu. I. 14. c.10. x' & iyi d441aai4iv07 1144 asa 41
The Synedrie for the most part, had its own authority under Hyrcanus, and under Archilaus it was more fully restored,
as is clear by the Evangelists and Iosephus. Claudius in the tenth year
after Christs death, jesteth forth an Edict, &c. &c. &c. &c.


cap. 3. 13. 176, 177, 179.

After Will then Erastus have Christ, Mat.18. to restore the power
of the Sanedrim, in gaining a lost brother; that is to cite him be-
fore the Roman Judges: But 1. the Romans made high Priests from
there to yeere, did Christ acknowledge the Sanedrim to be a re-
stored Judicature in this? 2. Say that the Sanedrim in sacri, in
the holy things of God, had its full power, the Romans not imped-
ing them; hath any man a face to deny, but Pharisees corrupted
both Law, Gospell, Sanedrim and all, and deth Christ
establish their most corrupt government; especially when they
set themselves against the Messiah? Cesar or Pompeius could
give the Sanedrim no more then it had before they were subdued;
but before they were subdued, the Sanedrim was changed and
corrupted. 3. This is to beg the question, to say they kept the
power of the Sword: For 1. We utterly deny that by Gods Law
they ever had any such power, and forsooth, because the High-
Priests servant smote our Saviour on the face, and they scourged
and imprisoned the Apostles; What then? therefore the Sanedrim
had the Law of God for it, and Aaron and his sons might beat,
sourge, imprison, and kill, as they killed Steven, without Law or
warrant, (except the Law that they had from the Roman Empe-
rors, for which cause I judge their Sanedrim was then a mixed
Judicature,) surely this is a vaine consequence. 4. It is like enough

Claudius
Claudius and Tiberius both, gave them liberty of their own Religion, Ceremonies and Customs at their pleasure, and that is much for us, the adversary so do reason from a corrupt, unjust and wicked practice to infer a Law.

Erastus. I have solidly proved, there were not two distinct jurisdictions, but that the Magistrate Governed all. I deny not that the Magistrate took counsel at those that were skilled in the Law. And I have proved that the Sanedrim in Christ's time, when he spake these words, had the power of the sword, in things pertaining to Religion.

An. Let another man praise thee, solidity of the probation to most of Protestant Divines, is plain emptinesse. 2. That the Magistrate took advice of Divines and learned men skilled in the Law, is not like the first pattern of Moses, David, Solomon, who as Magistrates (faith Erastus) did rule all in the Church, gave the Law to Aaron his sons, directed and commanded the Prophets from the Lord, as nearest to him, what they should do, what Laws they should teach the people: Shew us one precept, practice, or promise in the word, where Moses, David, Solomon asked Counsell at Aaron, the Priests, Gad, Nathan, or the Prophets; saying, O sons of Aaron, O Prophets advise us Magistrates, what Laws we should command you, touching your office, your holy garments, your washing your beasts clean and unclean, your leper, your putting men out of the Camp, touching the forme, dimensions, structure, materials of the Ark, Tabernacle, Temple, &c. that we may know what to command you from the Lord; for we are nearer to the Lord, and have a more eminent place, as Church-Officers, than you who are but our Vicars, Deputies, and servants to be directed by us.

Now I. Moses received all Laws immediately from God, and never consulted with any man, either Aaron, Priest, or Prophet; David and Solomon had the forme of the Temple, given to them by the Lord in writing, and advised with none at all; & therefore received from God, and delivered to the Church, what they received of the Lord.

2. What warrant the Magistrates should advise with Ministers; what they should command Ministers, to preach and do in their Ministry, if by vertue of their Office they command Ministers.

3. So like as Christ referreth men to the Civill sword on their bodies to gain their souls, which is the scope of Christ, Matth. 18.
CHAP. XVII. Quest. 13.

Whether Erastus can make good that the Synedry was the Civill Magistrate?

Erastus. When the Priest accused Jeremiah, Chap. 26. of blasphemy, he sate not amongst the Judges, but stood as an accuser before the Magistrate: So Beza. Erastus replieth, Your Synedry had no Civill jurisdiction, because it is a dream: 2. Should Pashur the Priest be both accuser and judge? 3. In Jeremiah's time, there was a Monarch, in whose hand was all power; in Christ's time there was an Aristocracy, the Government being in the hands of some chosen men.

Ans. Certainly, Ier. 26.10. the Princes sate down in judgment, but that the Priests sate with them, we have not one word, only the Priests accused him as worthy to die in the question of Law; and so the people, ver. 8. Now the people undeniably cannot have been Judges. 2. Nor do we say, the Priests were both judges Civill to condemn Jeremiah to die, and accusers: that doth not hinder, but they in an Ecclesiastical way were Judges, touching the question of Law, whether he had spoken blasphemy or not, and also Accusers before the Civill Judges. 3. It is to beg the question to say, that all power even of Church-censuring was in the hand of the King. 1. The King might exclude none of the Lepers out of the Camp, the Priests only could by the Law of God do this, and excluded Uzziah the King, as a Leper out of the Congregation: The King could not judge who were clean, who unclean. 2. That all power was in the hand of the Kings, as if the Kings of Iuda's were by Gods Law absolute, can never be proved, but the contrary is evident, Deut. 17. And that inferiour Judges were essentially Judges, and the Lords immediate Deputies, is clear by Scripture, Deut. 1.16. 2 Chron. 19.5,6,7. Exod. 18.21, &c. Numb. 11:6,17,18. Psal. 82.6,7. Rom. 13.1,2.

Erastus. You ask how Caiaphas, and the Priests had power against...
Iesu: I answer: 1. From God: 2. From the Kings of Persia. 3. From the permission of the Romans: They apprehended him, and bound him, which was a part of civill power, nor was this some of the confusion under the Maccabees: How can this be proved? Christ never rebuked him, nor his Apostles; the contrary is clear in Iosephus.

Ans: A permissive power from God, can prove no Law-power. 2. Persians and Romans could not give to Priests and Levites the power of the sword, to do what the Law of God had exempted them from doing, they were not so much as numbered for the war, but set apart for the service of God's house, Num. 1, 3, 42, &c. they might in some extraordinary cases judge in civil business with the Civill Judges in the same Judicature, but this was no standing Law.

2. Erastus seeketh we would prove, that the practice of bloody Pharisees was not against Law: He knoweth, it is his own Argument, Afirmans is innum. Probaio. 3. Christ and the Apostles rebuked not particularly many other sins. Pilate might have accused them for binding one of Caesar's Subjects, of whom he had said, he found no fault in him. 4. That Ioseph was a Priest, or a Levite, I read not; he was an Honourable Councillor, some think of Pilate's Council. 5. That they had any Law of God to apprehend Iesu, or that Ioseph had any hand in either condemning, or doing any thing in the Sanedrim, but shewing his judgement, as a Judge in the question of Law, what was blasphemy, we must deny. Let Erastus prove it, if so be Erastus make him either Priest or Levite? Iob. 18, 31. The Jews expressly deny the power that Erastus giveth them: Pilate therefore said unto them, take him and judge him according to your Law, which was a flat mocking of them. I know, if you had power, you should not have brought him to me, therefore if ye have power, use it: The Levite therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for me to put any man to death, and the Evangelist addeth, ver. 32. That the saying of Iesu might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die; that is, God had taken power of life and death from the Jews, in his admirable providence, that Iesu might die a Roman death, due for treason, that is, that he might be crucified; Ergo, the Jews had no power to put him to death. It is weak and empty that Erastus saith, They had not power to put him to death; for saying he was King, because the
was a civil crime: But they had power to put him to death, and to stone him for blasphemy; for the Jews lay universally without distinction of causes, with two negations, which in the Greek Language is a strong and universal negation, μή εἰς θέλημα αὐτοῦ (Mē eis thelema autou), we have not power to kill any man. Ergo, the place will never prove that the Church men might not kill him, because the Jews might kill no man: you will say, He and they power with swords and scourges to take the Kings free subject and binde him, which, yet they did? I answer, it was an usurped power, for by Erastus his doctrine, they had no more power to take him and binde him for Treason, which was a civil crime, than they had to kill him for Treason, both was alike unlawfull by the Roman Law, and Pilate being a man willing to please the people, as the event of the business sheweth, did not in a legall way challenge them for binding him; but he durst not be answerable to his Prince Caesar, if he had past by such a high point, as their putting Christ to death: But we desire any Law of God (for practices especially of wicked men are no binding rule) that Priests or Levites, in the Old-Testament, might either binde a Jew or put him to death, and when Pilate did stand so much to put Christ to death, they would have used their own power, malice so necessitating them, if they had had any, and might well have said to Pilate, It is lawfull for us to put him to death for blasphemy, but we will not use our power, we so love to be loyal to Ceasar; but they say the contrary, we have no power to put any man to death. They say indeed, that by their law he ought to die. But that they had no power to put him to death, for the Common people said, that, as may appear, if we compare, Ios.19. ver.5. with ver.12. with Mat.27.25. and with Acts.2.36. Acts.3.12. &c. and yet Erastus will not say that the common people were Members of the Sanhedrim, or had power of life and death, as the Civill Magistrate had.

Erastus. Steven was stoned by the Sanhedrim, not by tumult, for there were witnesses, as the law required, Acts.7. The witnesses (who by the law were to cast the first stone at the man condemned) were here, therefore there was Law-power to stone him, though they did it unjustly.

Ans. Beca meant, that Steven was stoned by tumult, that is, without any Law-power, except usurped, when the Jews were now
now ripe for destruction, and had taken on them the blood of the Lord of glory, and was glowing more daring and insolent against the Roman power, to their own just desolation, that came on them under Vespasian. That they used witnesses, will not prove they had Law to stone Steven, for Timothy had no power of life and death over Elders, one brother hath no power of life and death over another, as Esther will grant, yet with both there is use of witnesses, 1 Tim. 5. 19. Matt. 18. 16. This I hope concludes but weakly, any lawfull civill power, so all this is from a naked practice of them that always resisted the holy Ghost: And the like I say of Paul, who saith Act. 26. 10. of himself, Many of the Saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the high Priests, πάντες αὐτὸν ἐξεισάγων ἐξεπλήρωσαν, suppose it were true that Saul had Law and Authority from the high Priests to imprison the Saints, and to murder the Saints, no high Priest can make over a Law-power to another, which he hath not himself; now certain this Law-power of the Pharisees and High Priests by Gods Law, is the question. Let us see Law or institution, where the High Priests (for of these only the Text speakest) did imprison and put to death, either blasphemer or false Prophet, or, if by Moses his Law, which must be a rule to all the High Priests in the time of persecuting Saul, it was either Law or practice, that the High Priest had power to imprison, or scourge, or put to death any man, and this was most proper to the King, and the Civill judge, and the Elders and Judges in every City, 2 Sam. 1. 14. 15. 16. 1 Kin. 2. 9. & 2. 6. 7. 1 Sa. 1. 23. Ier. 22. 11. &c. Ier. 22. 27. Numb. 35. 12. 24. Deut. 22. 18. & 7. 5. & 19. 12. 13. ver. 18, 19, 20, 21. & 31. 19. 1 Kin. 21. 11. Hos. 6. 8. Zeph. 3. 1. 2. 3. Rom. 13. 4. We know undoubtedly the King, the Civill judge, had power of all bodily punishments, as of scourging, death, stoning, strangling, crucifying, hanging; But they mean any Pestilence, or the least consequence where the Priests or High Priests had such power, or did execute such power in any one man: it is true, Deut. 17. the Priests might determine in Law what was blasphemy, and so what deserved the punishment of blasphemy, which is death: But so the written Law of God, the very letter of it could in many cases clearly resolve the Civill judge, even though there had been no controversy about the fact, whether it was condemned in the Law of God, or not: we know Samuel; or
being judge, but Sain being King and Supreme, Magistrate, &c. curing judgment on the Amalekites, he killed Agag; certainly, all Divines, even Popish not excepted, say, that the Civil Magistrate ought to have killed Agag, & that Samuel not by virtue of his place, as a prophet, or as a Priest, or a Member of the Sanhedrim, (as Estes would say,) but excited by an extraordinary motion of God's Spirit, killed him, 1. Phineas, 2. Moses, 3. Aaron, flow. Num. 25. Jud. and 1. Sam, 7. 8. And Elijah shall kill Baals Priests, 1. K. 18. 40. 2. K. 1. 10. If Phineas by office, and Elias by office killed these all doers, as Estes would dream, The Prophets and Priests by their office were civil judges, and had power to put to death civil doers. Now Estes denies, and with good reason, that the Lords disciples should bear civil dominion over men, as the Lords of the Gentiles, Luk. 22. 24. 25. 26. and that Christ though both a prophet and a Priest could not take on him to be an archdeacon and a Ruler. Luk. 1. 3. Yet here Estes will have the High Priests by a law-power, to imprison and put to death. 2. Brada may in a good reason say, that the high Priests had a law-power by God's institution to punish and to compel Christians to blaspheme God, and to persecute them to change Cities, and to murder and the Saints that believed in the Lord Jesus, for her went to Damascus for this office; 2. 16. 2. 1. Paul, having received one from God, particular mission from the chief Priests, This was not a law-power in general, to punish such as the Law of Moses determined to be blasphemers, but a limited particular commission to murder the Saints, who should bear and obey the Prophet, like some Moses, whose the Lord should raise up. Deut. 18. What have had the High Priest done this? Had they not a law on the contrary? 1. 1. 8. 8. 2. Pha. 18.

Estes. Paul confesseth ingenuously, before the Romans judges, that he persecuted the Saints, and that he had authority and power from the Priests and Elders, to do, Act. 22. 8. 26. and we read not that the Priests or Paul were censured for these things, as having done any thing against the laws or will of the Romans, Act. 5. They send their officer, the captain of the Temple, they imprison the Apostles, they convene a Council, give out a sentence, and agitate the killing
of the Apostles amongst them, while Gamaliel impede them.

Anf. It is true, the Romans heard that the Sanedrim exercised civil jurisdiction, and inflicted bodily punishment. But for false Doctrine, the Romans I conceive took as little care as Gallio did of any of Gods matters, and whether the Sanedrim kept the rule of the Lords first institution, Deut. 17. yea, they looked not much whether the Priests might put to death false Prophets, or if the Civill judges only might do it; and Erastus said before, that the Romans gave the Jews liberty of all their own laws and customes in matters of Religion. 2. What care would the Romans take, whether the Jews killed and oppressed Jews, for questions of their owne Religion, so they remained loyal and true to Caesar? 3. We know Herod, Felix, Festus, Agrippa, being willing to please the Jews, did oversee many breaches of Law in them, especially in matters of the Gospel, Acts 11. 2; 24. 27. and 16. 36, 37, 38, 39, 40. 1 Thes. 19. 15, 16, 17. 4. How doth he prove that the Romans did not take this for a breach of their Laws? Because they accuse not the Sanedrim for this? Surely it followeth not: We read not that the Romans challenged them for a manifest breach of Law, when they scourged and cast in prison Paul and Silas, who were Romans and had not condemned them, Acts 16. 38, 39, 5. We deny not a lawfull jurisdiction of the Sanedrim, Acts 5. But that they had any Law of God, to scourge, and imprison, and put to death the Apostles, is the question; we say, they neither had Gods law, nor durst be answerable to the Romans Laws, for that fact, and so this is a fact brought to prove a Law.

Erastus. If this be an infallible in the Jews which rose from the confusion of the two jurisdictions; how say some of yours, none can be excomunicated without the consent of the Magistrate? Where did Christ divide the external Government of the Church in Civil Government and Ecclesiastical, as you distinguish them?

Anf. 1. That it is expedient, that the Christian Magistrate should be acquainted with the Excommunication of any under jurisdiction, that he may satisfie his own Conscience in punishing him civilly, it is like some of our Divines do teach: But that the Magistrate have a negative voice in Excommunication, none of ours teach. 2. We make no such division as that of the Civil and Ecclesiastical Government of the Church. Erastus may dream of such.
such a distinction: We know, all Government of the Church, as the Church, to us is Ecclesiasticall. There is a Government of men of the Church that is Civill; but we dreamed never of a Civill Government of the Church. All the Government of the Church, as the Church, though external, is Spiritual, Heavenly, and subordinate to Jesus Christ as Lord and King of his own house, as the Government of a house, a Kingdom, an Army, a City is subordinate to the Lord of the house, to the King, General Commander, and Lord Mayor, and it is no more a Civill Government subordinate to the Magistrate and his Sword, then Christ's Kingdom visible and external, or invisible and internal is of this world.

When therefore Erasmi denyeth that there is any Church-Government, he meaneth there is no Spiritual Church Government in the hands of Presbyters; but because we know no Government of the Church as the Church, but it is Spiritual, and the Government of the Church by the Christian Magistrate, is a Civill Government of men as men, and that by the power of the Sword, and so it is no Church-Government at all; and therefore we justly say, that Erasmi denyeth all Church-Government.

Erasmi. When Paul saith, Act. 23. Thou fittest to judge me according to the Law, Doest he not acknowledge the High Priest to be his judge? Paul denieth that he had done any thing contrary to the Law: And Tertullus saith, We would have judged him according to our Law, if Lysias had not without Law violently taken him from us.

Ans. Ananias was to judge him only in an Ecclesiasticall way; and when Paul law that they went beyond their line, to take his life, he appealed from their inferior judicature to Caesar, who only had power of his life. 2. Lysias had Law to vindicate an innocent man accused on his life, before a most uncompetent judicature. Tertullus knew the Jews had favour and connivence in many Lawless Facts.
CHAP. XVIII. Quest. 14.

Whether Erastus do strongly confute the Presbyter of the New Testament.

Beza faile, there was need of some select men in the Apostles time to lay hands on Ministers, to appoint Deacons, for there was no Jewish Synodice, no Magistrate to do it; and when Paul forbidded Christians for things of this life to impede other before the heathen Magistrate, would he send them in spiritual business to such? or must this, Tell the Church, have no safe for a hundred years after Christ? So Beza; yet if the Lord ascending to heaven left Officers for the building and Governing his Church, Eph. 4. 11. and some to be over the people in the Lord, 1 Thes. 5. 12. 13. some to watch for their souls, whom they were to obey, some to feed the flock, and to drive away the wolves, Acts 20. 28, 29, 30. some to Govern the house of God, no less than their own house, 1 Tim. 3. 4. a Presbytery in generall Erastus cannot deny, only he denieth such a Presbytery, and faith, that it is like this, such a one is a living creature; Ergo, such an one is a dog. But if I can demonstrate, there is a Presbytery and they were not all Bishops, as is clear, Rom. 12. 8. 9. 1 Cor. 12. 28, 29. 1 Tim. 5. 17. and if, Tell the Church, by no Grammer, can be, Tell the Bishop, except you make the Queen the Bride, and the servant or friend of the Bridegrome all one; It must follow there is both a Presbytery, and such a Presbytery in the Church, nor do we argue from a generall to specials.

Erastus. The Church may not kill men, but she may pray that God would destroy them, or convert her enemies.

Ans. To pray that God would destroy him, whom we are to admonish as a brother, is a strange discipline; Erastus will never make good from Scripture, that God hath appointed, praying for the destruction of men to be a saving ordinance, appointed of Christ for gaining of souls, (such as we take rebuking, admonishing, excommunication, eschewing the company of scandalous brethren, which have for their intrinsicall end, the repentance of a brother under
under these cenures) and therefore this of Erastus his killing of
men, is a new forged cenure.

Era. Wherever the Scripture speaketh in the New Testament
of a Presbytery, there is no other understood, but that of preachers;
therefore it is false, that the Apostles have commanded any other Elders
beside those that labour in the Word.

Ans. The antecedent is false; 1 Tim. 5. 17. as I have demon-
strate in another place, I repeat it not here, let any disciple of Erastus
answer if he can. 2. The consequence is vaine, for if in every place
of the New Testament, where mention is made of an Elder, the Holy
Ghost mean only a Preaching Elder, it followeth only that any other
officers, as Deacons, and those that labour not in the Word, & yet Go-
vern well, are not called with the name of Presbyters: And so the
Argument is against the name, not against the office and thing.
What if the Presbytery be named from the most principal part, as
is ordinary in Scripture, doth it follow that there be none
members of the Presbytery, but only Preachers of the Word? In no
sort. Paul saith of the visible Church of Corinth, Ye are bought with
a price, ye are justified, ye are sanctified; Ergo, none were mem-
bers of the visible Church, but those that are redeemed, justified,
and sanctified, it is like the consequence of Erastus. 3. I retort this
vaine argument thus; none in Scripture have the name of Apostles,
But the Eleven, and Matthias, none are called the witnesses of
the Lord but they, 1 Cor. 12. Ergo, there be no preaching Mini-
sters, neither Timothy, Titus, Epaphroditus that are, to be called
witnesses of the Lord, but the twelve Apostles, so where doth Era-
thus finde that Jannovia a deaconrie or office of labour in the Mini-
stery is given to any, but to those that labour in the world? Rom. 11.
13. Ergo, must there be no deaconry, but labouring in the world;
the plaine contrary is Act. 6.

Era. Beside Levites and Priests, there belonged to the
Synedry of the Jews other heads of families; Ergo, beside Mini-
isters there must be Prophets and Doctors in the Presbytery, it
followeth not.

Ans. Erastus fancies a conclusion of an Argument that Beza
faith not; for he saith; Ergo, beside Ministers there must be some
chiefe men, which we call ruling Elders, to represent the people,
that there may be (as all our Divines and Scripture teach) a three-fold government in the Church: A Monarchy, in regard of Iesus Christ the only head and King of the Church, as the Jewish Church had their High Priest a Type of him; and Aristocracy, in Pastors and Teachers, as the Iewes had their Priests and Levites; and a Democracy in the ruling Elders, as the Iewes had their Zekenim, and their Heads of families and Elders in the Ecclesiasticall Sanedrim, and we in the Presbytery to represent the people: and of these three the Jewish Ecclesiasticall Sanedrim is made up 2 Chron. 19. 8. of the Levites and the priests חנינא, one of the heads of Fathers, or Masters of families. Now Erastus yeeldeth that good Iehoshaphat departed not from Gods institution in his reformation, all this Erastus pasteth over in silence, being ignorant of the Jewish Church government, and not able to answer, and he addeth something of Doctors not to a purpose, and faith there be no Doctors but Pastors only in the Word; contrary to Rom. 12, 7, 8. Ephes. 4. 11. where they are clearly distinguished.

Erastus. Some chosen men must be in the Presbytery to represent the people; Ergo, these must be Doctors and Prophets, but there is no need of that, for Bishops of old represented the whole Church.

An. Beza hath not any such argument, he contendeth for Ruling Elders, not for Prophets and Doctors to represent the people. Where doth the Scripture speake of such an office as a Bishop having Majority of power above Presbyters? (for since Erastus denieth all Ecclesiasticall Government in Teachers, he must deny all Majority of Ecclesiasticall Government also, he that denieth the positive, denieth also the comparative degree) now this is a Bishop that neither Scripture, nor popishe Antiquity dreamed of. 3. In what is a Bishop the representative Church? The like is Erastus his third Argument.

Erastus. 1 Cor. 12. How is Government a Presbytery? how are Overseers & governments, Doctors & Prophets? There be many kinds of Governoors. I wonder that by divine miracles, you understand not the power of Excommunication, that hath terrified all the World; how are Doctors & Prophets added to Pastors, are they not teachers as well as Pastors, but that they administer not the Sacraments? & how do you prove
prove that? how prove you Overseers to be other than Ministers?

Ans. Governements to us are but a part of the Presbytery. 2. There be many kinds of Governours, but he daunt not venture to shew what is signified by governements, lest he should say, his Magistrate must be the onely Church Governour, but he knoweth that a Magistrate as a Magistrate is no member nor part of the Church, but as he is a Christian; for then Cesar, Herod, Pontius Pilate, as Magistrates must be set in the body of Christ, as Apostles, and Teachers and Prophets, which all the World will cry shame on. 3. Ezech said never that Teachers and prophets are cast to Ministers to make a Presbytery, for by Teachers he meaneth Pastors. 4. Because Paul setteth downe Governements different from Apostles, Prophets, and Teachers, they must be some Officers different from them, we can finde none else, but such as rule well, and yet labour not in the Word, 1 Tim. 5. 17. let Erasius shew us what they are, he dares not open his minde; for he meaneth a Justice of Peace, or a King, or a heathen judge must be in the wombe of this, 1 Cor. 12. 28 let himselfe be mid-wife.

Erasius answering to 1 Tim. 5. 17. faith xomir to labour is to labour diligently, the meaning is like this; I wish well to all Pastors, but especially to those who wish great industrie, fidelity and patience feed the flocke committed to them, as I love all inclined to study, but especially such as watch night and day upon studies, for some are more diligent in teaching then others, heres no Tautologie to say. I love all that sincerely and soundly teach the Word, especially those that diligently teach it.

Ans. I cannot particularly discourse this place, I have done it else where fully 

Due right of Presbyteries, qu. 7. c. 7. sect. 7. page 142. 143. seqs


Officers, for beside labouring in the Word and doctrine, which is preaching, here is well governing, it is a shame then to Erastus to expound this place so, and yet deny all Church Government, except in the hands of the Magistrate.

Erastus. Anciens and moderne Doctors deny two sorts of Elders.

Ans. I have made the contrary appear in the place cited; I will not weary the Reader with reasons set downe at full in another place.

Erastus. Show where the Church hath a judicature, so punishe sins different from the Magistrates judicature, as the Lord made a power of burning incense to the Lord, to be different from the Kings royall power.

Ans. Mat. 18. Mat. 16. Joh. 20. Mat. 28. 19, 20. Eph. 20. 28. 1 Cor. 5. 1, 2. &c. Rev. 2. 1, 2 and 20. 21. Ministers are no lesse separated under the New Testament to all ministeriall acts of feeding, by the word and rod of Discipline, then Priests were of Old.

Erastus. Nathan did not Excommunicate David.

Ans. Nathan had assurance from God that his sin was pardoned; 2. That the Sanedrim did not cast David out, is a fact, and proves not they had no power; for so Priests cast Zechar out of the house of God for a lesse fault, that carried in its face lesse scandal.

Erastus. The Prophets never accuseth the Priests, but they admitted the unclean to the sacrifices and holy things of God.

Ans. The contrary is evident, Ier. 5. 31. Ezek. 22. 25. 26. and 44. 8. 9. 10. contrary to their Office, Deut. 17. 11, 12. Levit. 10. 10.

Erastus. David Psal. 51. saith he would have given Sacrifices, but God crave a broken heart; Ergo, he had power to sacrifice.

Ans. Not except withall he had offered a contrite heart to God.

Paul (faith of Erastus) speaketh of coming to them with the rod, of delivering to Satan, of his comming with the authority God had given him, of his coming to them mourning.

Ans. Where faith Paul that he his alone did use the rod? doth he not ascribe judging and casting out to the Corinthians? 1 Cor. 5. 12. &c. and forgiving of the incestuous man 2 Cor. 2. to them. But faith, this power is necessary to purge the Church, lest it be infected; even to the end of the world, and therefore must be left with the Church.

Erastus. To be gathered in the Name of the Lord is not re-
... referred to the congregations meeting together, but to Paul's act of delivering to Satan, the Corinthians and Paul's Spirit instructed thus with the power of Christ, might have delivered others to Satan as they did this man, if the Apostle had not pardoned them, but they had not Paul's Spirit with them in their convention afterward, because in no place he biddeth them be gathered together with his Spirit, as he doth here.

Ans. Paul doth construe the words v. 4. in the Name of Christ with the Participle ovaxStilou he being convened, and the words τῷ ἱερῷ, are separated from the word ἑαυτῷ (I have judged) by the interposition of these words, ἐν πολλῷ τῷ ηδύναμεν, so Erastus his grammar will be a little confused. 2. What needed the Corinthians be gathered together with the Spirit of Paul, and the power of the Lord Jesus to pray that the man might be miraculously killed? for when they were not gathered together in a Church meeting, but were all separated in their own houses and closets, they had power to judge the man, that is, to pray that he might be miraculously killed. Else Erastus cannot make Paul, in any reasonable manner to reprove them because they prayed not that he might be killed, for Erastus must suppose the power of praying; for this, in faith, was tried to this publick convention of the Church, and Erastus's faith, is no place he biddeth them be gathered together at all. This Spirit of Paul and power of the Lord Jesus, that was in them, was not given to elevate them to any higher or more supernatural acts of miraculous cures: they confessed that the man might be killed, and this act of confession of the power of the Lord Jesus shall be brought so low, as I know not what to make of it.

Erastus. If they had prayed that God would punish this enormous sin, whether God had heard them or not, they had discharged their duty.

Ans. But it is evident he rebuked them not only, for not mourning for the man's fall, and not praying that he might be punished, but for that they confessed not, and did not judge; and put away the...
Cap. XIX. Q. 15. The Magistrate under Church discipline.

the man; Ergo, they had always an ordinary power to judge and
cast out scandalous persons, and Paul rebuketh them for not impro-
vizing this power; then it was not any miraculous power not ordi-

narily in their hand, as powers of that kind are supposed to be.

Eraslus faith, qu. 269. innumis is to be construed with omnibus; as the meaning may be; note such a one in an Epistle, and write
to me, that I may censure him.

Ans. This is throwne Grammar, which the Greek doth not bear
without violence, for Paul faith, If he obey not our doctrine, Writ-
en by Epistle, mark out such a one, and he commandeth them to in-
fect a censure on him, by eschewing his company.

CHAP. XIX. Quest. 15.
Of the use of Excommunication toward the Magistrate especi-
ally.

Eraslus. How many thousands of men have been killed by occasion
of Excommunication in Germany? is both subjected Kings and
Scriptures, and all to the Pope.

Ans. All this may be said of the Gospel and of Christ, that he
is appointed for the fall and rise of many, and that he came not to
But the cause is not in the Gospel, or in Christ, but in men cor-
rupt nature. Excommunication is the Rod of the Kings of Zion,
and we know how impatient men are of the yoke of Christ; Ex-
communication abused by the Pope doth all this.

Eraslus. Excommunication cannot not wound men's consciences, but be page 399.
good in Hypocrises.

Ans. So publick, scholares of those that sin publicly, 1 Tim. 5,
so being abused doth become Hypocrites. Esa 57: 1, 2, 3. Ezek. 31,
32, 33. 1 King. 21. 27, 28, 29. so doth the Rod, the Word, the
giving of alms, praying, being abused to wicked ends; make hy-
pocrises, Mat. 23: 14, 25. Mat. 6: 1, 2, 3. Psal. 78: 20. 34, 39, 36.
Hos. 7: 14. Excommunication is innocent of all these.

Eraslus. I thinke it is not amisse that the Magistrate chuse godly and page 199.
prudent
prudent men, and joyn to them godly Ministers, who in place of the Magistrate may inquire in the life and manners of men, and convene before them loose lives, and rebuke them, and if need be, deferre them to the Magistrate; But this is unjust, that such a Senate be chosen by the Church, which hath no power to chuse them. 2. That they are not chosen in the Name of the Magistrate, but against his Will. 3. That they subject the Magistrate to them.

Ans. Erastus is willing there be a Presbytery: 1. Of mixed men, prudent men, and godly Pastors. 2. Chosen by the Magistrate. 3. That they judge and rebuke Murtherrers, Extortioners, Oppressors, Thieves, &c. But 1. he should give us Scripture for this his new Presbytery. He condemneth ours, because it wanteth (as he faith) the Authority; and the like of his Presbytery in the Old or New Testament you finde not. 2. That Ministers should judge of bloods, thefts, treasons, paricides (for all these are loose lives) and of goods and inheritances, and give an account to the Civill Magistrate, is all one as if the Ministers of the Gospel should be Judges as the Lords of the Gentiles, such as Pilato, Felix and the rest, so they do it at the Command of the Suprem Magistrate; then the King may warrant Ministers to go against the Command and practise of Christ, Luk. 22. 24, 25, 26. and 12, 13, &c. 2 Tim. 2. 4. For this is a Civill Judicature. 3. Then the Ministers rebuking in the name of the Civill Magistrate, may make him to Preach & exhort in the name of the Civil Magistrate. So Ministers are they to hear the word at the Magistrates mouth? I thought Ministers had been the Ambassadors of an higher King, Ezek. 2. 7, 8. and 3. 3. Speak with my words to them, Rom. 1. 1. 2 Cor. 5. 20. 4. If the Ministers rebuke as Ambassadors of Christ: Those to whom they Preach the word of reconciliation, those they are to rebuke with Authority, and all hearers are subject to them: Magistrates or others, high or low: This is clear by 2 Cor. 5. 19. 20. &c. 2 Tim. 4. 1. 2. For rebuking in way of Preaching, or in way of censure, is a part of the Gospel. But Pastors are to Preach the Gospel to all, to great and small who stand in need of Reconciliation, 2 Cor. 5. 20. Acts 9. 15. He is a chosen vessel to me, to bear my name before Gentiles and Kings, and the Children of Israel.

The Magistrate under Church discipline.

Erastus. It is false that the Sword of the Magistrate is not
sufficient to coerce sins, Psal. 101. Kings have put to death those that seek not God: It is nothing that you say, the Priest judged those same sins in a spiritual manner, that the Magistrate judged politically; for it is false, that the Priests judged in a Judicature separated from the Civil Judges, as your Presbytery sitteth. See Levit. cap. 4. 5. 6. God seemeth to have given no Laws of punishing offenders by themselves, as with us, least we should imagine two distinct Judicatures.

Anf. We deny not, but the Sword is sufficient to punish offenders, in its own kind, in order to the peace of the Common-wealth, to remove evil; to cause others fear, to pacify God's wrath, as the Scriptures speak: so David and good Kings purged the city of God, but Ezra cannot deny but God ordained spiritual means of rebukings, putting out of the Camp, eschewing the company of offenders, that they may be ashamed, and those spiritual means have a spiritual influence on the soul to remove offences, to gain the offenders, Matth. 18:15. Psal. 110-2. Isa, 11.4. Psal. 141.5. 2Thess. 3. 14. 15.

2. The word maketh the Priests separated from Civil Judges, Zach. 3. 7. The Angel of the Lord protested unto Joshua the high Priest, if thou wilt walk in my ways, and keep my charge, thou shalt also judge my house, and thou shalt keep my courts. The Civil Magistrate judged not the house of God, the way that the High Priest did. The Divines that note the place, say, The chief part in Ecclesiastical affairs was upon the High Priest, Deu. 17. 12. 2 Chron. 19. 11. The word that is given to the Priest is to judge, to give out sentence in judgement, the very word that is given to King Josiah, He judged the cause of the poor and needy. and in Zach. Jer. 5. 28. They judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, and 3. 7. Jer. 21. 12. O house of David execute judgement in the morning, and the sons of Aaron the Priests, 1 Chron. 24. 5. are made some of them Governors of the Sanctuary, and Governors of the house of God: It is the word that signifies Princes, 2 Kin. 9. 5. A Word to thee O Prince 17:7. 1 Sam. 22. 2. 1 Chron. 11. 6. Jer. 17. 25. Num. 23. 3. 10. All the princes of Moab, Isa. 30. 4. Isa. 10. 8. Are not my princes Kings? and Lev. 4. 5. 6. chapters, judicial acts are given to the Priest.
The Magistrate not a Church officer. Cap. XIX. Q. 15.

Priests that are proper to him as Priests, which none do but he, nor have the Civill Judges any part in it, more then they can offer sacrifices which none do but the Priests; for he was to judge of the quality of the sins, and might not offer any sacrifice for every sin, nor dip his finger in the blood of the bullock seven times, for every sin, this spirituall judicature was the Priests. And neither Moses the Prince nor any Civill Judge on earth could share with the Priests in judging this: all the world will say the judge may use the sword against the Murtherer, and Elders or Pastors have not to do with the sword at all: and the Pastors are to convince, rebuke and work upon the conscience of the Murtherer to gain him to repentance, and no civill judge as a civill judge hath to share with him in this: here be distinct punishments, one corporall and civill, another spirituall, why then must they not flow from two distinct Jurisdictions? or if it displease any man, that we call Church-cenfures with the name of punishment, we can forbear the name, for rebukes, suspension from the Sacraments, Excommunication, because they are intrinsically, and of their own nature such as tend not to the hurt, but to the gaining and saving of the souls of the persons cenfured; they are improperly punishments, as the power and court they come from is improperly a rod, a Judicature, a Court, and those that inflict the cenfures improperly Judges, yet can it not be denied to be spirituall Government, and that there is a spirituall sword, the word of God, and a spirituall cohesion, flowing from Heralds, or servants in the name of the King of Kings and Head of the Church, who reigneth in his own Ordinances, and Ministers.

Eraftus. The priests bade Uzziah not burn incense, because it was their part only to sacrifice: But where is it written that the King was condemned by the sentence of the Priests?

Ans. The Priests were a Colledge of Elders, who not only judicially condemned the Kings fact as against the Law of God, but 2 Chron. 26. Azariah and eighty priests with him withstood him, and resisted him, yea, they gave out sentence against him, ver. 18. It persayeth not unto thee, Uzziah, to burn incense to the Lord, but to the Priests the sons of Aaron, that are consecrated to burn incense; go out of the sanctuary, for thou hast trespassed; they give out the sentence of the Law of God, Numb. 16. 40. Nor might any come in to the
Cap. XIX. Q. 15. The Magistrate not a Church Officer.

the Holy place, but the Priests and Levites, Num. 18. 6, 7. here is a sentence judicial by the voices of 80. Priests in an external court, given out against the supream Magistrate: for they gave not out this sentence as private men, but as Priests, judging according to the Law, and in this the King was subject to Ecclesiastical jurisdiction.

Erastus. It is a vain thing to say, they Excommunicate not the Magistrate as the Magistrate, none but Kata-baptists and such as deny Magistracy to be an Ordinance of God, can say that: Every man might excuse rebellion so, and say, I persecute not the Magistrate as he is a Magistrate, but as he is a tyrant. But I say you may not reproach the Magistrate, Exod. 22. farre leste you may punish him. How can I obey him, whose whole life and actions I may by Power, and coaction limit? The Magistrate so is but a servant to the Preshbytery.

Ans. Erasus scorneth this distinction, to say, the Magistrate not as a Magistrate, but as a scandalous man is Excommunicated: Yet we can make him receive the distinction whether he will or not: For Erasus saith, that Pastors may rebuke, convince, and threaten the Magistrate? Good man, may Pastors threaten and rebuke the Magistrate as the Magistrate? or may they only threaten, and rebuke him as an offending man? Erasus dare not say the first; for so he were a grosse Kata-baptist; for then Pastors were to rebuke the very office, and to condemn it; if he say the latter, as he doth in express words, then he acknowledgeth that Pastors may bind the sinnes of wicked Magistrates in heaven, is this, good Thomas, no Ecclesiastical coaction, no jurisdiction? and this is to receive the distinction whether you will or not. 2. The rejecting of this distinction is a tenet of Royalists, for certainly we use no defensive armes against the King as King, but as he is a misled man; and I think the King will say, he useth not offensive armes against the Parliament as the Parliament, but under another very undeserved notion, as Rebels. 3. It is leste that we may not rail on rulers, which is a sinne, (for to rail upon any curzing-wife is unlawfull) then that we cannot punish the ruler, which is more? To punish the ruler as a sinfull and wicked man, is a work of justice, and so leste unlawfull then sin. Erasus taketh for confessed (as his custome is) that which we deny, that to punish rulers with an Ecclesiastick censure is a sin, as to rail on them, and curse them is a greater sin.

But

Page 301.

Erasus, Quis unquam dubitavit, an Ministris licet improbae agentiae, Magistra-tus, ex verbo Dei, objurgare, argueres, reprehendere, increpare, adequare, et ligaret?
But to bind the rulers sinned in heaven, is a punishment, and this the Elders may lawfully do, and to eschew the company of a ruler, if he be a fornicator, an extortioner, and idolater, is either to punish him, or put shame upon him, 2 Thes. 3. 14. But one private Christian, farre more a Church may do that, Rom. 16. 17. 1 Cor. 5. 9, 10. 2 Thes. 3. 14. except Erastus except the Magistrate from being under a Divine and Apostolick command; this he must say, and so we have the Apostles meaning; withdraw from those that cause divisions, and wax ungodly, and are fornicators, covetous, extortioners, lest they infect you, and that they may be ashamed, and repent, except they be Magistrates; though in the lowest rank; if they be Magistrates, they are gods, and your subjects, and you may in no sort shame them. I should think God both accepted persons, and would not have us to indeavour the repentance and gaining of the souls of Magistrates, because they are above Gospel-rules by this way of Erastus; and because the Presbytery may not rail on Magistrates, for that is sinne, it followeth not, the Presbytery may inflict no Ecclesiastical censure on them; Yet, let me retract this, The Magistrate may not rail on, or curse and revile the Priests; So Paul expoundeth it, Act. 23. 5. against reviling of Priests, nor may the Magistrate revile, or curse any subject, for I conceive reviling to be sinne, Mat. 5. 13. and 27. 39. Job. 9. 28. 1 Cor. 4. 12. 1 Pet. 2. 23. 1 Cor. 6. 10. 1 Tim. 5. 17. Eph. 2. 8. 1 Pet. 3. 9. Jude 9. and the Magistrate is under the Mosaic Law. Hence I inferre by Erastus his reasoning, that the Magistrate may not punish, Priests, Prophets, Pastor, or any subject, though they most haimously trespass against all Lawes, which is absurd. 3. That the Magistrate is made a servant, not a Magistrate, if the Elders may use the rod of Christ against him is a vain consequence; Paul preached himself a servant, in a spirituall Ministry, to all the Christians in Corinth; 2 Cor. 4. 5. and all Elders are thus servants to Magistrates and Flock; Yet Erastus knoweth that Paul had a rod of miraculous killing the disobedient, as Erastus expoundeth, 1 Cor. 5. & 1 Cor. 4. 21. What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love? Suppose there had been a Christian Magistrate at Corinth that should fall in incest, as one did, 1 Cor. 5. 1. Paul could not come to him with the rod; or suppose the Roman Emperor had been a Christian and within the Church, and should have his Fathers
thers wife; Paul could use no rod against him, and should he not have in readiness revenge against all disobedience? 2 Cor. 10. 6. and authority, given him by the Lord for edification, v. 8. against all offenders within the Christian Church; in regard that Christ is head and King of the Church; but he should have neither rod nor revenge in readiness against the disobedience of the Emperor? why, is not the rod of Paul the rod of Christ? 2 Cor. 10. 8. yea certainly, is not then the Christian Emperor the subject of Christ's Kingdom? and subject to the King Christ, and his rod? No, but (faith Erastus) Paul, is the Emperor subject to thee? and if Paul should have a rod to punish the Emperor, then the Apostle could not be the Emperors subject, nor obey him as a God on earth: for (faith Erastus,) no subject may punish the Magistrate. This is done right to make God an accepter of persons, nor can Erastus deny but sharp rebuking was a punishment, Tit. 1. Rebuke them sharply that they may be found in the faith; And this the Apostle urgeth all Ministers and watchmen to do, not being afraid of the faces of Kings, 2 Cor. 1. 7, 18. 1. Sam. 2. 1, 2, 3, 4. 2 Tim. 4. 1, 2, 3. Erastus teacheth Magistrates to break Christ's bounds, and to say, we will not have this man to reign over us, he needed not employ a wicked pen for this, they need no teacher, viae dimentur sine Magistro.

Eras tus. Some of yours say, there is need of the Magistrates consent to Excommunication, but certainly he will never consent to be Excommunicated himself, Theodosius was not willing, nor will good Magistrates consent, when they see the danger to themselves, you would not bring in again the Church-punishments of the ancients.

Ans. 1. We all think the Cumulative consent of the godly Magistrate, is necessary to Excommunication: Because he is obliged to joyne his sanction and authority to all Christ's Ordinances, but we think not the privative, or negative consent is required; so as no man's finnes should be bound in heaven, except the Magistrate say Amen. 2. Put Erastus his Arguments in forme, and you shall see their weaknesse as thus; He whose consent is required to Excommunication, cannot be punished with Excommunication himselfe, because no man will consent, nor Theodosius; nor the godliest man, that he be punished himselfe: But the Magistrates consent (say the Presbyterians) is to be had to Excommunication; Ergo, the 

Nan 2
The Magistrate under

Magistrate cannot be punished with Excommunication himselfe.

Anf. I retort it, he whose consent is required for threatening wrath to, and rebuking of offenders and scandalous men, he is not to be threatened with wrath, and rebuked for his own offences and scandals; because no man, no Theodorus, no godly Magistrate, when he seeth the present danger, will consent, that he be threatened with the wrath of God and rebuked himselfe; we know Nathan was afraid to rebuke a Magistrate according to God's heart, but in the third Person. But Erastus teach that the Magistrate, when he scandalously offends, should be threatened and rebuked; Ergo, the Magistrates consent is not requisite to threatenings and rebukings of Pastors. But the conclusion is against Erastus, for the Pastors preach, and rebuke, and threaten as the deputies and servants of the Magistrate, and as sent by him; and the Magistrate preacheth, rebuketh, threateneth all offenders, and himself also in and through Pastors as his servants, as Erastus teacheth; then he must consent, that they threaten and rebuke himselfe. 2. The proposition is false, it is presumed, all the subjects do consent to lawfull penall Lawes against sorcery, murther, incest in the generall, and virtually, that they shall be put in execution against themselves: yet the Sorcerer will never formally consent, that he himselfe be put to death, though he once, as a subject, consented to the Law, that all Sorcerers be put to death: For when the penall Law against sorcery was enacted, he consented to this. 3. He whose consent accumulative is requisite, that scandalous offenders in generall be Excommunicated, but not that this or this man, possibly the Magistrate himselfe, he is not to be Excommunicated, is most false; he whose consent negative, is requisite for Excommunication, he is not to be Excommunicated himself, the proposition is true; But I assume, the Magistrates consent negative, is requisite to Excommunication, there is nothing more false: For shall that which the Church bindeth on earth, not be bound in heaven, except the King, the Jutice, or Master Constable say Amen to it on earth? We say not that the Magistrates consent as a Magistrate, is requisite, for the Excommunicating of himselfe. For though as a Magistrate he ought to give his consent to Excommunicate all offenders, and adde his civill sanction, as one of the seven wise men of Greece said, Pastere legem, quam ipse tuleris. Yet he is not Excommunicated as a Magistrate (except with Kata-baptists, you
you condemn the Office of Magistracie as an unlawfull Ordinance but as a scandalous man. 3. The old penances, as they do us that service to make good that Excommunication was in the ancient Church, and that Erastus wanteth the authority of the Fathers, and upon his ingenuity should have been ashamed to cite them for his way; so we condemn them as introductory to Popery; but let Erastus forme an Argument from this, and logick shall hide at it. That which bringeth in old satisfactions and penance, is not to be holden. But Excommunication, or the Excommunicating of Magistrates dath this; Ergo, The assumption must be proved.

Erastus. It hath no more truth which you say, that the Magistrate, while he punisheth, cureth not the conscience, for God calleth many by tribulations to himselfe, and farre more then by your Excommunication.

Ans. I would Erastus had drawn up an Argument, which seldom he doth, for this it must be:

That which is a saving mean to gaine scandalous offendors to Jesus Christ, and better then Excommunication, is an Ordinance of God, and the other no Ordinance; But the Magistrates punishing with the sword, the scandalous offendors, is a saving mean to gaine scandalous offendors, and better then Excommunication; Ergo,

Ans. Neither Major nor Minor proposition hath any truth at all. 1. Though the Magistrates sword were a better meane to gain souls, it followeth not that Excommunication is no mean. The Law is lesse powerfull for gaining souls, The Gospel more powerfull. But the Law is not for that no Ordinance of God. 2. Erastus his reason to prove, that the Magistrates punishing cureth the conscience, as a saving Ordinance, no lesse then Excommunication, must be this; That, by which God calleth, and draweth many to himselfe, is a saving mean, to cure the conscience; but by the Magistrates punishing of scandalous men, God doth this as by other tribulations. The proposition must be, a propositio per se; That by the Magistrates heading, and hanging, scourging, and imprisoning of themselves, as kindly and intrinsically saving means, such as rebukes, promises, commands, excommunication are, the Lord calleth men, and converteth them, that is false, God no more useth the Sword of the Magistrate, as a kindly mean of gaining souls, then the sword of an oppressing Tyrant; so Nebuchadnezzars oppressling of the Church
of God, and the Assyrians unjust wasting of the people of Israel, shall be kindly means of gaining of souls; because God blessed the rod to many to humble their uncircumcised heart; but this is accidentall to, and beside the nature of the rod: but it is not accidentall to rebuking, threatening, promises to the preaching of the Gospel, nor to Excommunication to save souls and gains them to Christ. The Gospel, and all the parts of it, are kindly, and of themselves the power of God to salvation: The Magistrates sword to Erastus must be the power of God to salvation, and Christ, Matthew 18. in his order of gaining an offending brothers soul, by this reason must descend, not ascend, contrary to the order of Christ, for Christ maketh the rebuking between brother and brother, to be the first step of gaining an offender to Christ. 2. The rebuking before two or three. 3. Before the Church. 4. Excommunication: Now all these are spirituall means and more efficacious, the second then the first, the third then the second, the fourth then any of them. But Erastus maketh Christ in the fourth step, to descend from three spirituall steps of gaining the mans soul, to a fourth, which is carnall, to wit, let him be as a heathen, & c. this is Cæsar’s sword, which certainly is a carnall weapon, proper to the Kingdomes of this world, Isaiah 10. 18, 36. whereas rebuking, exhoring, promises, and Excommunication, are the spirituall weapons of the warfare of the Ministers of Christ, 2 Corinthians 10. 4, 8, 9. Revelation 1. 16. Isaiah 11. 4. Psal. 45. 4. Rom. 1. 16. The exercise of the sword is a mean of edifying consequenter by removing false teachers, that hindreth edification; but no man can say, it is a mean of itself, and kindly in regard of the man against whom the sword is used; Further, that which is a common mean of conserving peace in all societies and corporations, even without the Church, where the Gospel was never heard, cannot be a kindly mean of gaining mens souls that are within the visible Church.

Erastus. Ambrose following the example of Azariah, cannot be defended in deharring Theodosius from the Sacraments; Yea, it was tyrannical and damnable to deharr a man desirous to hear the word, who otherwise repented and acknowledged his fault, from the means of salvation. It was like the Popes proud fact in trampling on the Emperors neck, he had no cause of wrath against Theodosius, but as Nicephorus faith, the Emperor hated Ambrose.

A. 1. If Erasmus had come to Logick, he refuteth here but a Law by a fact of Ambrose. 2. What if Ambrose debarred Theodosius from hearing the Word; Ergo, there is no Excommunication; it followeth not. 3. That he debarred Theodosius from the Sacrament, after he gave evidences of his repentance to the Church, is an untruth. 4. That after such a cruel fact of murdering so many innocent persons of Thessalonica, Theodosius should have been admitted to the Sacrament, or remained a Member of the Church, to eat and drink his owne damnation, and not be cast out, as 1 Cor. 5. no man but Erasmus could say; so it is cleare, that Ambrose did no more than a faithful Pastor; and Amariab and the So. valiant Priests did, in not suffering the holy things of God to be polluted; Lipsius, no religious man, saith, 1.2. c. 34. de Constantia, quo facto nihil magis impium omnis vetust impius habuit. Beza, Bucer, P. Martyr, Melancthon, Calvin, Aneto. Walerus, Gomaras, commend Ambrose. And truly to kill seven thousand Citizens of Thessalonica, of which the most part were innocent, deserved more than Excommunication, if more could be inflidt by the Church. See Ambrose, Epist. 5. 28, 29. Erasmus had no reason to compare so laudable a fact to the proud fact of an abominable Pope trampling on the Emperor's neck, and abusing the word of God, Psal. 91. to defend his devilish pride.

CHAP. XX. Quest. 16.

A vindication of other Arguments for Excommunication, as from sacrificing, offering of gifts, &c. With bloody bands.

Erasmus. Essay 1. c. 52. c. 66. Ier. 6. 7. Ezek. 23. and 33. Psa. 50. are alleged for Excommunication, to which I answer, 1. The Lord doth not condemn sacrifice, nor he commanded it; but the abuse thereof; as he that commendeth modesty to one that eateth undecency, doth condemn unmanners eating; but commandeth not abstinence from eating; so Christ: Matt. 6. removeth not fasting and praying, but the abuse of them.
them. When the Hebrews propounded two just and right things, of which they approve the one, and deny the other, there is only a comparison understood, as Hos. 6. I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, that is, rather mercy than sacrifice, Prov. 8. Receive my instruction, and not silver, that is, receive rather my instruction than silver: so this is no good consequence. God hateth the sacrifice of the wicked; Ergo, Presbyters are to be chosen, who should hinder wicked men to sacrifice: it followeth not, for then this should be as good a consequence, God hateth the prayers of the wicked; Ergo, Presbyters are to be chosen, who should hinder men to call upon God, to praise God, to rest on the Sabbath, to give almes, except these Presbyters judge them worthy.

Ans. In the following books, Erastus refuseth some Treatises of Authors without names, the books I cannot have, and if he doe them right in repeating their minde faithfully, I know not; but I know in many things, and in this very argument Erastus fancied arguments on Beza, which he would reject as none of his. 1. Sacrificing seemeth to be a confirming ordinance, as eating the Passeover, and the Communion of the Lords bodie and blood; and as there was some examination of the persons for whom sacrifices were offered required in the Priests, as I said before, from Mat. 8. 4. Levit. 14. 3, 4. 9, 10, 11, 12. So there is Morall cleanness required in all that are to partake of the Sacraments, that presupposeth conversion; and I grant the first and native consequence of these is, that it was the sin and hypocrisy of the persons themselves who sacrificed first and principally. But that it was not the sins of the Priests who admitted those that were no better then Sodom and Gomorrah. Esa. 1. 10. and had hands full of blood, ver. 15. is now the question; I conceive that it is a taxing of the Priests and Church Rulers, that is, Esa. 1. 10. no lesse then of civill judges and the people, yea, that he rather taxeth the Priests called Burers, v. 10. and that that is not as Socinians say, a new comman
dement of Christ, but an old, Mat. 5. 23. Therefore if thou bring thy gifts unto the Altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee? What if the Priest should know that he had killed
Cap. XX. Q. 16.

to partake of holy things.

killed an innocent man, and beside the guilt of innocent blood, that
the sad hearted widow, and the weeping Orphanes had any
blood to charge him withall, was the Priest either to offer or sa-
crifice for him, while he were reconciled to the widdow and fa-
therless? Christ addeth v. 24. Leave there thy gift before the Altar,
and go thy way, first μὴ ἔρθῃς be reconciled to thy Brother, and then
come and offer thy gift: I offer it to the consideration of the Reader,
if as the offerer of the gift was to leave his offering, knowing himself
to be under blood, and to have offended his brother, he was to leave
his offering at the Altar, so if the Priest who offered the same
should also know that the same day he had offered his childe to
Molech or the Devill; if the Priest in this case should offer for him,
and if the Priest should not eat this mans sin, and communicate with
the bloody impudent man in offering with him, and for him the
sacrifice of fools; if he should not leave offering for him till he
went and was reconciled with his brother, for the Priest by of-
fice was to forbid such a bloody man to offer; Ergo, he could not
by office, also offer for him. Here an order prescribed that is mo-
rall, perpetuall, and common both to the ordinances of the Old
and New Testament, for Christ doth here expound the Law,
which was corrupted by the Pharisees. 2. He doth not set down
a rule concerning the Ceremonial Law, which was shortly to
be abrogated, but sure he hath an eye to the worship of the New
Testament. What if he that is come to the Table to eat and drinke
with Christ, and both his owne conscience and the Elders re-
member the widdow & orphane have a just accusation against this
man of late, yesterday, he killed their husband and father, shoule
either this man eat and drinke at this time with Iesus Christ? or
should the Elders give these holy things to him? I thinke nor. And
to come to the argument, it is true, Ifa. 1. sacrificing is not conden-
med, but sacrificing by such Princes of Sodoms and Sali modo, by
men of bloodie hands; Ergo, they were not to abstaine from sacri-
ficings, but at that time and in that condition; nor doe we forbid ei-
ther coming to, or debarring from the Lords Table by the El-
ders, but onely hab vice, and onely while ἀργυρ ἐς ὕπατον be re-
ciled to his brethren, and testifie that he repenteth, we never heighten
Excommunication to such an extremity, as it doth totally un-
church the man, and exclude him from the Seals simpliciser and ab-

O o o solute
The scandalous are forbidden

folately, but according to Christ's ἀρετὰ and his order, and therefore the Elders are to exclude for a time just as this, God will have mercy and not sacrifice, that is, rather mercy, first mercy, and first faith and repentance; then sacrifice, that is, then afterward externall worship, afterward receiving of the Passeover, the Lords Supper, and offering of gifts at the Alter. And secondarily even in the second place, in regard of time, he will have all these externalls, whence the man is to debarre himselfe, and by the same reason the Elders as the 80. Priests did to a King, 2 Chron. 26. are to debarre the man while he repent. And 2. This also, I will have mercy, and not Sacrifice, or, I will have mercy rather then Sacrifice, both imply that both mercy and Sacrifice are lawfull, and acceptable to God in their owne order and way. But where faith and God, I will have sacrificing rather then sacrificing with bloody hands, so as both sacrificing, and sacrificing with bloody hands, shall be lawfull and acceptable to God in their owne order. for Sacrificing with bloody hands was never lawfull, never acceptable to God in any order. Nor said God ever he would chuse the coming of those to his Sanctuary, who the same day they came in had sacrificed there sounnes to Moloch: God alwaies hated it, and never chose it; if at the same time both mercy and sacrifice cannot be, as David starving cannot both abstaine from eating Shewbread, as the Law in its letter required, and shew mercie to his life; and the life of his followers, and eate, yea, he is to eate, and the Priests knowing his case, doe give him the Shewbread to eat, & forbid abstinence, as they would forbid selfe-murthering; and self-starving, so here, where at one time eating at the Lords Table, and reconciliation with the widow and fatherlesse, cannot be co-existant together at one time and place, an exigence of divine providence forbidding both, the bloody man is to debarre himselfe from the Lords Supper, it being as sacrificing and lesse necessary if we speake comparatively; and the Elders are not to give those holy things to the bloody man, while ἀρετὰ, first he be reconciled to the widow and Orphane, which now comparing the one with the other is mercy, whereas eating and drinking at the Lords Supper is but Sacrifice, but it should be as sacrificing with bloody hands, which God condemneth and forbiddeth, and the Priests and Elders knowing it to be such a sinne, ought to forbid and to hinder
hinder it: Hence as this, I will have mercy and not sacrifice, hath
this sense, I will have you to omit Sacrifice, when it cannot be done
without neglect of mercy, which is more acceptable to me than all
Sacrifices; so I will have reconciliation to the offended widow and
Orphanes, and not coming to the Lords Supper without the former;
for the former is more acceptable to me, and should be to you
and the Elders in your practice, then the latter; and therefore
the comparison of eating, and eating undecently halteth; for eating
undecently before another, which would procure deadly sicknesse
to your brother, ought to be forbidden by the Ruler, it being
known to be so, and ought to be abstained from hic & nunc, as a
sinne, and a hurting of your brothers health, and yet the Ruler can-
not forbid totall abstinence from meat to him that eateth undec-
ently, as the Elders cannot command totall abstinence from the
Sacraments a\(\text{e}^{i}\)n\(\text{a}^{j}\)t\(\text{a}^{i}\)n\(\text{a}^{j}\) y\(\text{a}^{j}\)s\(\text{a}^{i}\)n\(\text{a}^{j}\)s\(\text{a}^{i}\) always and in all cases. 2. We draw no
conclusion of erecting a Presbytery from those places, but those
two we draw; Ergo, 1. It is a sin to the people themselves to sa-
crifice with bloody hands, because God condemneth such a man-
ner of sacrificing. 2. Ergo, they are to be debarred by some who
hath the charge of the holy things of God, but from the Antecedent,
we neither inferre; Ergo, Presbyters, nor, Ergo, the people, nor,
Ergo, the Prince should debarre them. 3. Calling on God is not to
be forbidden, nor giving of almes, because they are abused, but
the manner of the abusing those ordinances are forbidden by God,
and may be hindered by the Church, and forbidden under the pain of
Excommunication. The Church cannot forbid men of totall absti-
nence from the Lords Supper, but they can command him that is not
reconciled to his brother, and visibly under the guilt of blood, to
leave the Table, as Christ Mat. 5. 23. commandeth the unreconciled
man to leave his gift at the Altar, and goe first be reconciled with
his brother, and then at the next occasion, come to the Lords Sup-
per, so the Church of the Iewes could not forbid the Pharisees
to pray, but they could passe such an act, as is, Alt. 15. 22. We
forbid Pharisees or any other to bring their private prayers to the
Markets and streets, and when they are to give almes, we for-
bid them with sound of Trumpet to make proclamation to all men
that they are the only holy and charitable men in the earth. Nor
doe we thinke that the Church can debarre men from the Sa-
The scandalous are forbidden Cap. XX.Q.16.

craments for inward and and invisible unworthinesse; but only for visible and professed uncleanliness; and Levit. 9. 13. it is clear, the man that is unclean is forbidden to keepe the Passover. Will Erasmus say, O he is not forbidden to eate the Passover, but only he is forbidden to eate it tali modo being unclean? and therefore it is not the Priests sinne if he should give the Passover to the unclean man, and forbid him to eate tali modo, in his uncleannesse? see Erasmus himselfe against this, lib. 1. c. 3. page 103. 104, where he confesseth that the unclean are debarred, and yet uncleannesse in the eaters of the Passover, was an abuse only, and made not eating of the Passover unlawfull in itself.

So the Lord complaineth, Ezek. 23. 38. Moreover this they have done unto me, they have defiled my Sanctuary in the same day, and have prophaned my Sabbaths. 39. For when they had slaine their children to their Idols, then they came נינח דֹּ כֹּ in the same very day into my Sanctuary to prophane it; and too this they have done in the midst of my house. Will Erasmus now say, It was Ceremoniall uncleannesse, not Morall, to kill their seed to Molech; and that Morall uncleanness and bloody murthering of their seed in the same day when a person is to come to the Lords supper, known to be such a Murtherer to the Elders who have power to judge the scandalous and to cast him out, 1 Cor. 5. did not sinne, if they should be instrumentall to lead Murthersers into the Temple? and say to them, Take yee, eate yee, this is the body of the Lord that is broken for you?

Erasimus answereth, The Prophet Ezek. 23. accuses not the Priests or Elders, that they debarred not those Murthersers from the Temple and Sacraments, if there had been any precept for this, some footstep should have appeared in Gods rebuking of them.

Ans. The Lord doth not particularly reprove the Priests by name in every place, in which he reproved the people: But expressly for this same very sinne, the Lord reproved the Priests, Ezek. 44. 7. Let it suffice you, that ye have brought into my Sanctuary strangers uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my Sanctuary to pollute it. 8. And ye have not kept the charge of my holy things: but ye have les keepers of my charge, in my Sanctuary, for your selves. 24. And in controversy they shall stand in judgement (he had spoken of their teaching the people to discerne bet-
Cap. XX. Q. 16. to partake of holy things.

sween the clean and the unclean, v. 23.) and they shall judge it according to my judgements, and they shall keep my Laws and my Statutes in all mine assemblies, and hallow my Sabbaths, so 2 Chron. 23. 19. And Iehohjeda set the porters at the Gates of the house of the Lord, that none which was unclean in any thing should enter in. And shall we conceive that porters, that is, Levites, would hold out those that were only ceremonially unclean, and receive in muruyers who had killed their Children to Molech that same day? there was not to enter in לֹוֵי דָּבָר פָּנָיו the unclean in any matter; the text is generall, excludes idolaters and muruyers, and such as should refuse to enter in Covenant with the Lord, of which the Text speaketh. As for Erastus his consequence, which he unjustly imputeath to us, to wit, Israel sinned in coming to the Lord's temple to profane it, in the very day that they slew their Children to Molech, Ergo, there ought to have been Priests, and now there must be Presbyters and selevted overseers in a Church judicature to debarre muruyers, and like scandalous persons from the Sacraments. I. This is not our consequence. But this we say, if the Priests knew that same day, that they came to the Temple, they slew their Children to Molech, the Priests should have debarred them from coming to the Temple, and from eating the Pasch, as their office and duty was by the Law of God, Num. 9. v 6, 7. Num. 19. 11, 12. Lev. 22. 6. The soul that hath touched any such (unclean) shalbe unclean till seven, and shal not eat of the holy things, unless he wash his flesh with water, 7. and when the Sun is downe, he shalbe clean, and shall afterwards eat of the holy things, because it is his food: Now it was the Priests office, Lev. 10. 10. that he put a difference between holy and unholy, and between clean and unclean; so if Eli knew that his sonnes made themselves vile before the people, and committed fornication with the women at the door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation; Ergo, Eli should as a judge have restrained them, 1 Sam. 3. 13. But from this anteceden, we draw not this consequence, Elies sonnes do publicke make themselves vile; Ergo, there ought to be such an Ordinance as a judge, with Civill power to punish them, and Ergo, there ought to have been no King to punish them, but a judge like unto Eli and Samuel; this consequence followeth not from this antecedent, but only hoc posito, that Eli hath the sword, and be the Civill judge; Ergo, he ought to punish from scandals in the Church, and propha-
ning the holy things of God, we inferre not; Ergo, there must be such a judicature erected, as if the antecedent were the cause of the consequent. But this only followeth; Ergo, supposing there be a Church and Presbyteri invetsed with this powre, they ought not to admit murtherers, or any unclean persons to come and partake of the Sacraments, and to defile the holy things of God: as for the place Ezek. 33. I undertake not from thence to conclude debarring of any from the holy things of God by the Priests, what may follow by consequent is another thing.

Eraftus. Whereas it is said, Deut. 23. the Lord would not have the price of a whore offered to him; Ergo, far lesse would he have a whore admitted to the sacrifice: it followeth not, but a penitent, or a whore, professing repentance, may be admitted to the sacrifices. 2. He forbiddeth only the price of a whore to be offered to him as a vow, or as being vowed, it may be that agree not to all sacrifices: For God forbiddeth a living creature, that is unperfect, in a vow; But Lev. 22. be forbiddeth not such imperfect living creatures to be offered to him, in a free will sacrifice, so God forbiddeth honey to be offered in an offering by fire, but not in all other oblations. But wil not the Lord have a whore to offer to God that which is lawfully purchased, or which is her patrimony? or may not a whore offer her first borne to the Lord, or circumcise him? We find not that forbidden. From things to persons we cannot argue; we may not offer a lame beast to God; Ergo, doth the Lord so abhor a lame man, that he may not come to the Temple? God alloweth not tares amongst the wheat, yet he will not have the eunomous Ministers to pluck up the tares while harvest.

Anf. If the hire received for a whores selling of her body to uncleanesse, must not be applied to the service of God, farre more cannot a whore as a whore be admitted to partake of the holy things of God, for the price or money is called abomination to God, Deut. 23. for the whore, not the whore for the money; and so we may well argue from the things to the persons. 2. It is false that God forbiddeth the price of a whore onely in vows, and not
not in sacrifices; he forbidden it because as Moses saith, Deut. 23. 18. it is an abomination to the Lord, and as Erastus faith, it is money unjustly purchased; Yea, David's practice teacheth, that what we bestow on sacrifices, as well as in vows, it must be our own proper goods, and not so much as gifted to us, 2 Sam. 24. 24. Neither will I offer burnt offerings unto the Lord my God of that which cost me nothing; farre less would he offer the price of a whore in sacrifices; and the Divines of England say on the place, hereby is forbidden that any gaine of evil things should be applied to the service of God, Mich. 7. 1. Vatablus faith the like. 2. For the Lords forbidding to offer in a vow, Bullock or Lambe, or any thing that is superfluous, or lacking in his parts, and permitting it in a free-will offering, by a free will offering, is meant that which is given to the Priest for food, or a free gift; but otherwise, what is offered to the Lord in a vow, or a free will offering must be perfect: for the blind, broken, maimed, having a wenne, scurvy, or scab, can in no sort be offered to the Lord, Lev. 22. 20, 21, 22, 23. There is no word of the Lord in the free will gift that Erastus speaketh of, but only the word בורא is liberall, free, from בורא to give freely to God or man. 3. A whore repenting, or professing repentance, was not debarred from sacrifices; but that is without the bounds of the question, an heathen could say, Quem penitet facit si pene innocens est. Senec. in Tragedy, We debarre none that profess repentance from the seals of the Covenant. 4. When a whore as a whore did offer her first borne being a bastard in the Temple, I conceive neither she nor her childe were accepted, Deut. 23. 2. A bastard shall not enter into the Congregation of the Lord; if the childe was born of Married Parents, the woman repenting, the question now must be far altered. 5. For a lame man to be a Priest, we can say something, but that all the lame in Israel were debarred from the Temple, and the holy things of God, we dare not say; and a difference of things and men we acknowledge, but that is nothing to weaken the argument. 6. How proveth Erastus the tares are not to be plucked up by men? Matt. 13. will bear no such thing; ill men are to be cast out of the Church before the day of judgement, both by the Magistrate and miraculously by the Apostles, and by Excommunication say we, Matt. 18. 1 Cor. 5.

Eras thus. He that possesseth the price of the whore, is not to be debarred.
debarred out of the Temple, though the money could not be offered to God. The Pharisees would not have the price of blood cast in the treasure of the Temple; yet they cast not Judas out of the Temple, which these patrons of Ceremonies would have done, if there had been any Law for it.

Ans. This is to beg the question, the whore who sold her body for a price was unclean, and more unclean than the innocent money, and so in that case excluded from the holy things of God. 2. They admitted doves, oxen, and money changers into the Temple and profaned it, and why should they cast Judas out of the Temple? will their practices prove any thing, they used all divine ceremonies and Lawes of God to their owne carnall ends.

Page 307. Erastus. Heathens were not admitted into the Temple, but a scandalous man is a heathen, Ezech. 16. Your Father was an Ammorite, also, if thou be a transgressour of the Law, thy circumcision is become uncircumcision. Rom. 2. be is worse then an Infidel, 1 Tim. 5. Erastus answereth; but if you look to God's estimation, wicked brethren are worse then pagans. But if you consider the external face of the Church, there be many things in wicked men that agree not to heathen, wicked circumcised men might go into the Temple. Gentiles might not, so the assumption is most false. 2. A circumcised man and a Baptised man, can never turn non-circumcised, or non-baptised.

Ans. I say nothing to the cursing and blessing Dent. 27. Nor do I owne that Argument; it is not ours. 2. Those which are (so our argument runneth) as Heathens and Publicans, as Pagans, Ammorites, whereas they were sometimes Brethren and Members of the Church, are not to be admitted to the Sacraments, nor to be acknowledged as members of the Church more then Heathen, Ammorites, Pagans are to be admitted to the Sacraments and Members of the Church. But wicked men amongst the Iewes, and amongst us Christians, who will not hear the Church and are fornicators, idolaters, railers, drunkards, and extortioners, and walke inordinately, and cause divisions contrary to the Gospel.
Gospel of our Lord Jesus, are to be esteemed as Heathens, Pagans, Amorites, and worse than Infidels; therefore such amongst the Jews were not admitted to the Temple and holy things of God, and amongst us not to be admitted to the Sacraments, nor to be acknowledged as members of the Church. Erastus answereth not to this Argument, either Major or Assumption, but propoundeth an Argument of a nameless Author, as he knoweth best to answer and remove himself. 2 Many things (faith he) agree to Pagans and Turks which agree not to scandalous Christians. True, scandalous Christians are not Amorites and Pagans simpliciter, they differ in profession, the one being baptized, not the other; and once being baptized, they can never be unbaptized; but that is not our Argument, but they agree in this, that they are no more really Christians, being fornicators, railers, drunkards, extortioners, &c. then Pagans, but have the only name and title of such, and are to be esteemed so by us, and are to us appad boc, in regard of Church privileges, as heathens and publicans, and so the Lord of old termed his Apostate people Sodom and Gomorrah, Esa. 1. 10. and as the children of the Ethiopians and Philistines, Amos 9. 7. and as unclean and uncapable in a Church way of the Passover, and now of the Lords Supper to us, as Ethiopians, Sodomites of old, and this day Turks and Pagans are to us. 3. That the wicked that were circumcised might go into the Temple amongst the Jews, de facto, they might, but de jure, by Law, they might not, Jer. 7. 9. Ezek. 23. 39. Esa. 66. 3. no more then by Law they might profane the holy Name of God, or kill a man, or sacrifice a dog to God, or offer swines blood, or bless an Idol. The argument from sanctifying the Sabbath I passe, it hath no sense nor reason as Erastus propoundeth it.

Erastus. Christ Mat. 5. commandeth him who is to offer a gift to leave his gift at the Altar, and first to be reconciled to his brother: Ergo, he will have us not to use the Sacraments while we be first reconciled to our brother. But (Faith Erastus) we should not pray to God, nor seeke forgivenesse of sinnes, while we first forgive those that have wronged us; Christ doth not here speake of the external governing of his Church.
Church, but of the perfection of a Christian man, else we could do nothing that is good and just, and we were all to be excommunicated, he saith not, if the Presbyters shall command, leave thy gift, but if thou shalt call to minde thy selfe, he speakest not of a prohibition of others discharging an instituted vworship, but of that which a man omne minde doth enjoyne him, you may as easily prove the Papists Masse from this, as Excommunication.

Ans. Surely this is to me convincing, if I be discharged by the Holy Ghost to meddle with the holy things of God, or offering a gift to God at his Altar, while I first be reconciled to my brother, then those who have by office power to steward those holy things, in wisedome, and fidelity, putting a difference betweene the precious and the vile, knowing that I am at wrath with my brother, and having convinced me before two or three Witnesses that I have highly trespassed against my brother, are to deny to Steward or dispense any such holy thing to me, while I be first reconciled to my brother; and the like I say of the Sacrament of the Lords Supper. 2. To Erastus his Argument, I answer, it is not alike here as in praying, for praying is so absolutely necessary, that it obligeth by a command of God, even a Simon Magnus to pray, while he is in the gall of bitterness, that the thoughts of his heart may be forgiven, Acts 8. 22. But Erastus, as if he had set himselle to contradict Christ, would insinuate as much, as Christ were not to be obeyed, for his Exposition holdeth forth this sense, when thou bringest thy gift unto the Altar, and rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee, leave not thy gift, depart not, goe not, about to be reconciled to thy Brother, but first offer thy gift; But Simon Magnus, though he should remember that he was in the gall of bitterness, should not delay to pray till he were first delivered from the gall of bitterness, and then pray: Sure if Peter had said to Simon Magnus, First labour to be freed of the gall of bitterness, and so have thy thoughts pardoned, and then pray that the thoughts of thy heart may be pardoned, as Christ faith, First be reconciled to thy brother, and then offer; and (as Paul faith) First, Let a man try and examine himselfe, and so let him ease and drinke, the reply of Eras-
It is true, Christ speaketh not of the externall government of the Church; but it is as false that he speaketh of the internall acts of the minde; but he speaketh of the right ordering of the externall acts of divine worship, which are regulable, though not quaternus, as regulable by the Church, and draweth an argument from the words by necessary consequence, which consequence Erastus cannot elude. 3. But how doth Erastus prove this consequence, if our Exposition stand, and if we were to doe nothing in offering gifts at the Altar, except we bee first reconciled to our brother, and if God approve nothing which we doe, which deviates from this perfection, we should doe nothing that is good and right, and so all must be excommunicated. 1. Is Christ here injoyning a work of perfection, and of supererogation? Is Erastus popish in this? 2. As it is impossible not to offer gifts aright, so is it not to eate and drinke worthily, while first we be reconciled to our brother: Erastus was so surfeited with charity, as we heard before, that if any but desire the Sacrament and professe repentance, he thinketh he is obliged to beleue he is fit for the Lords Supper; and here, if Christ require, but that she partie be reconciled to his brother, ere he offer his gift and come to the Sacrament, this is too great strictness, it should excommunicate us all, and we shall so never doe any thing that is right and good. 4. It is false that Christ speaketh here of internall acts only, and of that which our minde injoyneth, for the Lord speaketh of three externall visible acts; 1. Of offering a gift at the Altar. 2. Of delaying and suspending of the offering. 3. Of a previous visible reconciliation to an offended brother. 5. He faith not, if the Presbyters bid you,(faith he) leave your offering; true, he faith not that in words; but supposing this, that the Presbyters know that the same very day that he bringeth his offering, he had beene killing his owne sonne to Molech,as Ezek.23. 38. 39. Whether were the Presbyters to forbid him to come and offer, while he should testify his repentance, and finding him impenitent; whether should they not judge him both to be debarred from the holy things of God, and to be cast out of the Church, as 1 Cor. 5. Certaine this is Christ's order, Be first reconciled to thy Brother, and then offer; try thy selfe first, and then eate; and if the Church see this order neglected, whether are they to suf-
fer clean and unclean to come and eat, and holy things to be profaned?

Erasstus. He shall expede himselfe out of this doubt easi-ly, who can distinguish the internall governing of the Church, which is proper to God onely who knoweth the thoughts and can judge them without error, from the externall go-vernning of the Church, in qua falli infinitè omnes postu-mus in the which we may all infinitely erre, and in which we can doe nothing, nisi quod mandatum expelles nobis legi-mus, except what wee read to be expressly commanded, for hero he who is not against us is with us, Marke 9. and no man ought to forbid those which God hath commanded, so they bee externally done, all externall actions quoad nos, to us are good which are done according to the prescript of Gods Word, though to God who judgeth the heart they be not good every way, many to day, the Pharisees of old, many in Pauls time preach for gaine, many are ambitious, and some out of envy preach, Christ never forbad them to teach, nor Paul but re-joyced, Phil. 1. that Christ was preached; however since no man can understand the internall actions or thoughts, and without error judge them, there is no punishment by mans Law for them, onely God, without error judgeth and punisheth them.

Ans. There be many untruths here, 1. If this distinction of internall and externall governing of the Church, remove most of the doubts here, he that eates and drankes unworthily, which is an act of externall worship, which may be regulated and ordered by the Church,(for the Church may not administer the Sacra-
ments to Pagans without the Church)is no finte to the unworthy eater, because God commanded that externall act expressly, as E-
rasstus faith, and so it is a good action, quoad nos, even to the un-
worthy eater, for he knoweth not his owne thoughts, nor can he judge them without error, especially being unregenerated.

2. If Erastus himselfe acknowledge this his owne distinction, he must acknowledge an externall Church-government, and who then are the Governours, especially in the Apostolick-Church,
where heathen Magistrates are? Pastors and Teachers no doubt, what meaneth this then? my Brother trespasseth against me and will not be gained? I tell the Church; (Erasmus faith) I tell the Christian Magistrate; but there is no Christian Magistrate, then there was no externall Government in the Church the first hundred, nay, nor three hundred yeers in the Church, or then it must follow, that the Apostles and Pastors were the deputys of heathen Magistrates: Ergo, the heathen Magistrates should with imposition of hands have been ordained the officers, κατ' ἐκκλησίαν, in every Church. And that they were not, it was their owne fault: for the principal officer must be more principally called to office by Christ, and given by him as a gift, when he ascended on high, to edifie the body of the Church, Eph.4.11. 3. Erasmus will have men debarred from judging the inward actions, because God only can judge them, sine errore, without error: But to God only should judge all things internall and externall, and ther shoulde be no Magistrates, because men may erre in judging the externall actions of men, and will not this gratifie the Papists, who say in this; Tell the Church, that is, the Pope who cannot erre. Then the Synod cannot erre, Protestants deny the consequence; Synods may judge, as Act.15. and yet Synods may erre. 4. Erasmus will have us lyable to infinite errors in externall actions: therefore (faith he) we should do nothing in externalls, but what is expressly commanded; but first may we not infiniti falli, infinitely erre in internall actions and thought, and acts of believing? are we more impossible in internall, then in externall actions? New Theologie: and are we not as well tyed to what is expressly commanded in internall as in externall actions? I think the word is as strict a rule, and the Law of the Lord as perfect in the one as in the other. 5. The great error is here, that Erasmus being sleeping when he wrote, thinketh that to eat and drinke unworthily, to offer a gift at the Altar, the offerer being unreconciled to his brother, is an action internall and known to God; and that can no more be known to man, then the thoughts of the heart: A palpable untruth! is not worshipping of Bacchi, murthering, stealing, whoring, killing the Children to Molech, and coming to stand in the Temple of the Lord, which are called a prophaning of Gods holy name, Jer.7. 9, 10, 11. Ezek.23. 38, 39. are not these actions visible, externall, and as seizable to be judged by man.
man, as murder may be judged by a Magistrate? Yea, by this, let a Pagan come to the table of the Lord, we are not to hinder him, why? it is an internal act known to God only, and we cannot then judge whither he has examined himself, or not; if he be not against us here, he is with us faith Efalus, quod dem faceris iustis, ab eo revocari aut retrahili aut hominibus debet: si modo exterius se facias, ut preceptum deo; Yea, for the Magistrate cannot hinder either Pagan or the open enemy, and persecutor, who will example upon the Sacrament, from the Sacraments; the contrary whereof Efalus said, pag. 307. hanc ego minime admittendum confus, and let Efalus give us Scripture, either express, or by consequence, where a Pagan or a persecutor may be impeded by Church or Magistrate from external receiving of the Sacraments, except that we are not to give pearls to swine? But was it not as hard to judge whether Saul persecuting the Church out of blind zeal, was a swine, or a dog, as to judge whether he that killeth his son to Molech out of blind devotion, and cometh the same day to the Temple of the Lord, doth prophan the Name of the Lord? 6. If we must do nothing in externals without the express commandment of God, when we without God's command, either express, or a necessary consequence, admit dogs and swine to the Lord's table. 7. Paul indeed rejoiced that Christ was preached, though out of envy, Phil. 1. but by men called and gifted of God to preach, and therefore ought not to be forbidden to preach, while the Church, for their scandalous life do cast them out; lay they are called Ministers once, the Church is not to cast them out, for this or that particular sin, if they be not contumacious, and Paul saith he, Rejoice that Christ was preached; but he faith not, he rejoiced that they preached Christ, sali modo, out of consent, thinking so well of them. Yet God forbiddeth the external act of preaching, in those that hate us to be reformed, Psal. 30. 16, 17. and forbiddeth the Church to lay hands on, or to call to the Ministry, wicked men that hate us to be reformed, or to keep them in the Ministry; and this hindreth not, but Paul might rejoice at the consequence of their Ministry, to wit, at the preaching of the Gospel, so long as they remained in the Ministry: as we may rejoice in that Christ was crucified for sinners, and not allow that Herod and Pilate did with wicked hands crucifie the Lord of Glory, not yet are
are we to rejoice in their sinne. But all this hindreth not, but he that is at wrath with his brother, and knownt to be so by the Priests, should be hindred to offer his gift while he be reconciled to him. 8. We are not to hinder acts of externall worship, as praying, praising, preaching; nor can the Church forbid them, except where God by his Commandement require that we do them with a speciall visible qualification and order: As first, be reconciled to your brother, first examine your selfe, and then offer your gift, and come and eat and drinke at the Lords table; and in Negatives, Come to my Temple, but come not that very day you killed your sinnes to Molech, while ye repent and be humbled for that sinne.

Eraclius. The godly Kings compelled the people to observe the rites ordained of God, at least externally, and 2 Chron. 15. killed those that sought not the Lord, then they sinne who punish sinnes by debarring men from the Sacrament: for beside that they forbid a thing commanded of God, and as it falleth under mens judgement, that is, as it is externall and good, so they cast their sickle in another mans field, because the correcting of sinnes cast so farre as they are externall belongeth to the Magistrate, and in so farre as they come from a depraved will, they belong to God onely.

Anf. Here is one palpable error, that all externall scandals are punished, either by the Magistrate as the Magistrate; so he must be understood, else he faith nothing, or by God onely, contrary to 1 Cor. 5. 11. Rom. 16.17. 2 Thes. 3. 14.15. For we give a third, they are punished by the Church, but only in a Ministeriall way. It is false that the godly Kings could compel the unclean Jewes, though circumcised to come to the Temple, or the murderers of their Children that same day, to come with bloody hands to the Temple: Yet the very locall and personall presence of a Jew in the Temple, and the very posture of his body in looking with his face toward the Temple while he prayed; was an externall lawfull Ordinance of God: They could not then lawfully compel the Jewes to these rites, except with such and such previous qualifications; they could not compel the Priests unwatched, and having drunk wine to go to the Sanctuary, 2 Chro. 15. It is not said, they were to be put to death that should omit any Ceremony, (though every Religious observance be a seeking of God) but they that would not seek God by entering in Covenant, to renounce idols, and serve the Lord,
or should prove apostates from the sworne Covenant, were to be put to death. 3. If that be a punishment (we contend for things, not for names) which is a privation of good intituled for a sin; then let Erastus see, if the Priests punish not, who debarr’d men from the holy things of God (by Erastus his grant) for Ceremoniall omissions against a Law of God. And if the Priests should not suffer an unreconciled man to offer gifts, and if the Church should deny pearls to apostates, if this be not punishment? and if the Magistrate be to cast out, or inflict Ecclesiasticall cenfures, shall he not punish in so doing?

Erastus. To be cast out of the Synagogue is not to be Excommunicated: For the Synagogue signified sometime all Judea, sometime a particular Congregation, or the place of meeting, or the sermon. By no Law could a circumcised Jew be cast out of all Judea, and sent to the Gentiles, or be compelled to say they were not Jews; Yea, they were killed who denied judaisme. 2 Maccabees so the cast out of the Synagogue were not debarr’d from the Temple. The Church of the Jews was tied to one certaine place, but every particular Church hath alike power: To be cast out of the Synagogue then with the Jews, must be another thing, then to be Excommunicated now, for he that is cast out of one particular Church is cast out of the whole Catholick Church. But it was not so in Judea, for Sacrifices and Sacraments (except circumcision and expiation) were only at Jerusalem, not in Synagogues; how then could they deny Sacraments, which they wanted themselves? they could not deny what was not in their power to give: Moses was read in their Synagogues every Sabbath, No man could be forbidden to heare the word read, this had been against a manifest precept: It is like they admitted heathens to the Synagogue, Acts 13.14.c.12.c.18. But it was not lawfull for heathens to enter into the Temple: And when Moses commanded all the clean to go to Jerusalem, no Synagogue could forbid them to go.

Answ. That the Synod might have divers significations, I deny not, but that to be cast out of the Synagogue had divers significations, we deny; Yes, it signified no other thing but to be cast out of the Church, and the Lord Jesus speaketh of it, and the Evangelists as of a standing cenfure in the Jewish Church, which the spirit of God condemneth no where, except when it was abused, Job.9.22. Job.12.42. Job.16.2. Luke.6.22. Job.9.35, Io is the word μνημονευω.
Cap. XX. Q. 16. was Excommunication.

1. The word Excommunicate means to make a person unclean. See 66:5. Your Brethren that cast you out. Pagurin and Mercer expound it of casting out of the Synagogue, and they cite Heb. 9. and 12. and 16. to make it signify Excommunication. 2. That a circumcised Jew could by no Law be cast out of Judea, seemeth to say, that banishment was not a lawful punishment: Surely David against all Law then did banish Abishai, 2 Sam. 14, 13. and when the King of Persia, Ezra 7, 25, 26. commanded Ezra to restore judicatures, as at the beginning; It would seem that banishment was an ancient punishment amongst the Jews: Therefore Ebramus craftily saith, that no born Jews were to cast out of Judea, but they were compelled to say they were not Jews. Surely we never dreamed of such an Excommunication, that the excommunicated should be compelled to lie, and say that though they were Jews and Christians, yet they should say they were not Jews or Christians. 2. When the people was in Egypt, 2 Mac. they were killed who denied themselves to be Jews, and deservedly, for they denied their Religion and their God. What is this against Excommunication? We plead not for such an Excommunication, as was a local expulsion of a person out of the land of Judea, not for such a one whereby they denied their Nation, that was a sinfull lying. But such, whereby Church privileges were denied to some for scandals. 3. Nor do we expound casting out of the Synagogue literally, as Ebramus doth, to be a casting out of the Synagogue or from the Ordinances there, and from hearing the word or the Law of Moses: for the Synagogue is the Church, and it was to be debarred from the Temple, Passover, and other Holy things, though these should be tried to one certain place, to wit, to the Temple; and I doubt, if the excommunicated be to be debarred from hearing the word; 1. Because the excommunicated is to be admonished as a brother, 2 Thes. 3, 15. and the word preached is a mean simply necessary for the man's gaining. 2. Because heathens were not excluded from hearing the word, 1 Chron. 14, 23, Acts 17, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, &c. Acts 14, v. 15, 16, 17. But from the Temple and Sacraments they were excluded: We have often answered, that all the Morally unclean, though they were ceremonially clean are not only not commanded to go up to Jerusalem, that is, to the Temple and holy things, that they are rebuked, and accused, because they stood in the Lords Temple with their bloods and idolatries, and, other
other abominations in their skirts, Jeremiah 7.verse 9.10. Ezekiel
23. 38, 39. Esay 1. verse 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16.

Erasius. They call Christ a Samaritan, Ioh. 8. Those of
Nazareth not onely cast him out of the Synagogue, but out of
the town, and strove to throw him over the brow of a mountain:
Who doubts then but they cast Christ out of the Synagogue, when
they made a Law, that if any should confess him, he should be
cast out of the Synagogue: Yet never man objected to Christ;
(It is not lawfull to thee to go into the Temple, for thou art cast
out of the Synagogue.) Ergo, to be cast out of the Synagogue
was not to be excommunicated.

Ans. All these are poor conjectures, for Erasius granteth there
was such a censure as casting out of the Synagogue, But he sheweth
not what it is. But I retort this argument; if Christ had been cast
out of the Synagogue, those that called him a Samaritan, and cast
out of their Synagogues, such as confessed him, would have some-
time said, (It is not lawfull to thee to go into the Synagogues and teach,
for thou art cast out of the Synagogue.) But by the contrary, Christ
till the day of his death, openly taught in the Synagogues, Ioh.18.
20. I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the Synagogue and
in the Temple, whereas the Jews always refrest, Luke 4.15. he taught
in their Synagogues, Luke 4.16. as his custome was, he went into the
Luke 13.10. and therefore it is a demonstration to me, that they nev-
er cast Christ out of the Synagogue; what hindered them, saith Erasius?
I answer. Let him shew me what hindered them to stone him, Ioh.10.
and not to put him to death till his house came. Erasius speaketh
not like a divine, who scoffeth at the secret Counsell of God: For
God had the sufferings of his owne sonne Christ, in a speciall man-
er, determined and weighed, in number, weight, and measure.
And therefore though they made a Law, that all that confessed
Christ should be cast out of the Synagogue, and though those that sinned
against the Holy Ghost, Mat. 12. called him a Samaritan, and
out of a sudden passion, those that wondred at the gracions
words that proceeded out of his mouth, would cast him over
the brow of a Mountaine; Yet I hold, they never made any Law, nor
did
did execute any Law, nor did cast out of their Synagogue, or ex-
communicate the Lord Jesus. I leave Erasmius to his conjectures.

Erasmius. Aet. 4. and 5. The Apostles were scourged and pag. 314.
est out by the high Synagogue summa Synagoga, yet present-
ly they teach in the Temple, and use the Sacraments. Aet. 21.
When Paul Act. 21. was to go to the Temple to sacrifice, the
Apostles who conselled him so to do, do not object, that he was
excommunicated, and so could not by Law do so; His adver-
saries accuse him that he taught against the Law, and that he
profaned the Temple, by bringing in the Gentiles, he openly
faith, he had done nothing against the Law. Then to be cast out
of the Synagogue is not to be excommunicated, for one cast out
of the Synagogue, could not but do against the Law, if he should
go to the Temple and sacrifice.

Ans. If Erasmius would argue logically (as to me in my humble
apprehension, he is still weak in all his book in this) we should find
frothy grounds: as thus, If those who were scourged and cast out of
the Synagogue (to wit, unjustly and against all Law of God for
preaching Christ Jesus) were never accused for going into the Tem-
ple and using the Sacraments, and say, truly they did nothing against
the Law, then the cast out of the Synagogue might lawfully go to
the Temple and partake of the Sacraments; the proposition is the
greatest untruth that can be. 1. Erasmius must prove that the Jews
accused the Apostles of all and every thing, which they conceived
to be against the Law. I conceive this is a conjecture, and false.
2. The other part of the proposition is as false as to say, light is
darkness; if Paul cast out of the Synagogue, and excommunicated
against all Law of God and Moses, yet go to the Temple and sac-
crifice, and partake of Sacraments, say he doth nothing against
the Law; then casting out of the Synagogue and Excommunication
doth not exclude any from the Temple, sacrifices and Sacraments:
this is as much as Paul should say, unjust Excommunication against
all Law of God and of Moses for righteousness sake, doth exclude
no man from the Temple and the sacrifices and Sacraments; Ergo,
casting out of the Synagogue and Excommunication rightly admi-
minated, doth exclude none from the Temple, sacrifices and Sacra-
ments.
Casting out of the Synagogue

Navtr. in
Enchirid.
3. G. 1.

ments: Surely it is abominable to ascribe as much to unjustly administered ordinances, as to the just ordinances of Christ. Erastus must lay down the Popish ground of Navar and Gregory, that Excommunication five de justa, five de injusta causa, either for a just or an unjust cause is to be feared, and hath force. Might not Paul though he had been unjustly excommunicated, go to the Temple and Sacraments, and yet say he had done nothing against the Law? might not the man whom Jesus found after he was unjustly cast out of Temple and Synagogue, Joh. 9. 39, say, I have done nothing against the Law, nor do against it, though I go to the Temple? 3. How will Erastus prove that the Apostles, Act. 4. and 5, or Paul were cast out of the Synagogue or excommunicated? I never could read it: They commanded them neither to preach in Temple or Synagogue any more in the name of Jesus; But that they cast them out of the Synagogue, or cast Paul out of the Synagogue, where is it to be read? let Erastus teach us.

Erastus. It is hard to say, what it is to be cast out of the Synagogue, is it not Excommunication, is there to be some note of infancy, Joh. 1. or a particular banishing them out of a town, and Jesus seemeth, Luk. 4, to be banished by the Nazarites, and is seemeth to be a depraving of right of the City; so as the cast out of the Synagogue bad them more esteemed for a true Jew, but as a prophet; Prelates divide amongst the Jews, and had right to those same holy things with them, yet were they distinguished from the Jews; so it seemeth to be that which is Ezra. 10, to be separated from the Congregation of those that had been carried away captive. It agreeeth with that Deuteronomy 23, where the Children of Edom were admitted to enter into the Congregation of the Lord in their third generation. Its absurd to think that God who is an acceptor of Persians, will not have one cast off, a Bastard, an Ammonite, a Moabite received into his Kingdom: So the Lord refused not that they should be circumcised and admitted to the Sacraments; but he would not have them counted for true Israel; He would have Egyptians and Edomites received in their third generation: to their Father, Grand-father, and great Grandfather had been circumcised, otherwise to the thousand generation they were not received, and dimension, space, and demerit upon them to cast out, or to be cast out of the Synagogue are meager words: show so condemne, cast out, excommunicate; and though the Pharisees should debar
barre from the Sacraments those that are cast out of the Synagogue; we are not to imitate the examples of ill men.

Ans. 1. If it be hard to determine what it is to be cast out of the Synagogue, it is hard to deny it to be Excommunication; for to be a Member of the Synagogue, as an Elder or a Ruler of the Synagogue, was to be a Member of the Church, and a Church privileged; Ergo, to be cast out of the Synagogue must be to be unchristed, and made no Member of the Church, and this is very like Excommunication; however, Erastus cannot deny it to bee some Church caution like to Excommunication as any thing can be. 2. That it was a civil banishing out of a Towne, or that Christ was banished by the Nazarites out of Nazareth leaneth upon Erastus his is a videtur, so it seemeth; To which I crave leave to say, non est a videtur, it appeareth to be no such thing. Christ came againe to Nazareth, and till his death was never banished from Synagogue or Temple, John 2. v. 18. 20. They should rather have been said to cast Christ out of the Temple and banish him from Jerusalem, for Iob 10. 22, 23, 31. They took up stones to stone him; v. 39. Then to banish him out of Nazareth, or cast him out of the Synagogue.

3. Prophkres had all the right that Jews had by Gods Law, what men denied them, is not the question. Erastus spake nothing from Scripture or Gods Law, that was one and the same to the born Jew, and the stranger that came in and was circumcized, and gave his name to the Israel of God. 4. To be deprived of the priviledge of a city is a civill punishment; Ergo, to be cast out of the Congregation or Synagogue, which was a spiritual and Church punishment was no such thing. 5. The separating from the Congregation, Ezre 10. 8. was Excommunication; the Annotation of the English Divines say it was Excommunication, such as casting out of the Synagogue, Job 9. 22. 6. If it agree with Deut. 23. 8. To enter in the Congregation of the Lord, is to be a Member of the Church of God, and therefore the Hebrew readeth it, מיתיכם נחיכו into the Church of God. The Chalde Paraphrast יוחי אלוהים erim mundi ut ingredientur Ecclesiam Domini, They shall be clean that they may enter into the Church of God. Sure this was not Physical or civill channelle, but channelle spiritual according to the Law of God: so the seventy translate it, ουσιουσίας in iuxtandam with Hieronym. intrabunt in Ecclesiam Domini. Vatablus in Nov. erit de consor-
Annot. an. 1645. on Deut. 23. 1. 

The English Annotators cite for this Næbi. 13. 1-2. the Law is, that the Moabite and the Ammonite should not enter into the Congregation of the Lord for ever. It is said v. 3. They separated from Israel all the mixed multitude, so that clear it is, to enter into the Congregation is to become a Member of the Church; then to be separated from the Congregation, must be to be cast out of the Church, and deprived of the holy things of God, as heathens and strangers were, according to that Levit. 22. 10. There shall no stranger case of the holy thing: What is this but Excommunication? Call it with another name, we care not, it is really to be separated from the Church. 7. It is admirable to me to hear Eneasius say, It cannot be that God who is no acceptor of persons, will not receive into his Kingdom a Bastard, an Ammonite, a Moabite. Is not this to reason against the Law of God, and the wisdom of God? Deut. 23. 1-3. who faith, that he will not receive such into his Church, which is his Kingdom, and a company of Kings and Priests unto God, which he hath freely loved, Exod. 19. 5, 6. Psal. 149. 1. Deut. 7. 7. Deut. 26. 16, 17, 18. as for the rejecting of men from his heavenly Kingdom according to God's decree of eternall Reprobation, I deny Excommunication to be any such rejection of men; it being onely a casting them out from the visible Church, and the speciall Church privilidges, that their Spirits may be saved in the day of the Lord; and what can be more contrary to the Word, then that Eneasius should say God declared not, that it was his will that Moabites, Ammonites should not be circumcised, and admitted to the Sacraments. Why then did hee not chuse Moabites and Ammonites for his people, and make a covenant with them, and give Circumcision a Seale of the Covenant, as he dealt with the Iewes? if he mean God will not exclude Moabites and Ammonites from the Sacraments, so they repent and turne to him: but now Eneasius fights with his own shadow. Who denieth but Iewes and Gentiles, so they call on him, are welcome to all the holy things of God, and not to be cast out of either Church or Synagogue. 8. To say, to cast out of the Synagogue, is a meeker word then to Excommunicate, is but to beg the question. Yes, but faith Eneasius it is lesse and a milder thing then to destroy, and pro deplorase habet- re, to esteeme a person lost, we say Excommunication is not to de-
Cap. XXI. Q. 17. Ministers subject to the Magistrate.

Stroy or to give for lost, but though it be the most violent, yet it is
a saving remedy that the man may be ashamed, humbled, and his
Spirit saved. 9. We reason not from the fact of Pharisees, if they cast
any out of the Synagogue for a just cause, they ought also by Gods
Law to debarre them from Temple and Sacraments, and therefore
if they did not debarre, it was their sinne, not our Rule.

CHAP. XXI. Quest. 17.

Divers other Arguments vindicated, as from Communion with the
Church, subjection of Magistrates and Ministers: The Ceremoni-
ally unclean from Matt. 18. Tell the Church.

Erastus, Christ hath given a power to his Church to loose,
Ergo, also to binde: The Church admitteth Believers into
Communion; Ergo, they cast out the impenitent. Erastus Ans-
swereth, Such a power as they have to loose and to admit, such and
no other have they to binde and to cast out; but it followeth not,
Ergo, it is a power to debar from the Sacraments, and to
Excommunicate: it is a Genere, and Speciem affirmativè.

Ans. Erastus is mistaken, and forceth the Argument as he
pleaseth. The Church pardonneth as a Church, and receiveth into
her body believers to participate of Church-priviledges and Sa-
craments in a Church-Communion; Ergo, the Church hath power
to binde and cast out from this same Church-Communion, those
that leaveneth the whole lump; as a City may admit a stranger to
to all the City priviledges; Ergo, the same City may for offences a-
gainst the City, cast out and deprive of City priviledges offen-
ders: is this a Genere ad speciem affirmativè? If the Church have
a power to cast out ex. mwm from amongst them a Member, we shall
not contend for the name of Excommunication.

Erastus, The Ministers have none, by whom in their office they can
be corrected: But saith Erastus, If every soul be subject to the higher po-
wers, how are Ministers excepted? if Ministers correct Ministers,
they play to others hands, spare thou the nails, and I will spare the teeth.

**Ans.** The Author doth not except Ministers from civil subjection to Magistrates: But only he faith, In Ecclesiastical censures, the Magistrate is not to judge the Ministers; because a Ministry being an Ecclesiasticall office, as such, it is not liable to the civil power, only the Ministers as they erre and sin in their persons, are liable to civil punishment, but not to Ecclesiastical, to be indicted by the Magistrate. 2. Through the corruption of mens nature, every one may wink at anothers faults: It is true, But consider if this flow from the nature of Gods Ordinance, to wit, that the Citizen obey the Laws of the City whereof he is a member. This is an Argument against any Senate, Parliament, Counsell of State, or War, or Aristocracy on earth: if of an hundred Lords of the States Generall, one or ten play the Traitor to the State, who shall take order with them? Their Colleagues and fellow-Senators. Partially judging falls out here through mens corruption: spare thou the nails, and Ie spare the teeth: and from Eras tus his way, (if you Argue from mens corruption) the same will follow: May not the Magistrate say to the Minister, Honour me before the people, and Preach not against the sins of King and Court, and I will oversee and Wink as thy Pluralities, non-residences, soul-members? And may not the Minister say to the Magistrate, Let me be above all Civil Laws, and be Lord Prelas, and sit on the necks of my Brethren, and deprave, oppress, and I shall be silent and preach nothing against the Idolatry, oppressions, Sodomy, uncleanness of Magistrate and court.

P. 318. 319. **Eras tus.** The Ceremonially unclean were excluded from the Sacraments; Ergo, far more the Morally unclean; But how (faith he) doth this follow? You Excommunicate none but the obstinate, for those that were Ceremonially unclean against their will, were excluded from the holy things; Ergo, far more he that is Morally unclean is to be debarred, though he be not obstinate: How could Paul Excommunicate the incestuous man, 1 Cor. 5, he was never admonished; or Peter Excommunicate Annanias, as you say?

**Ans.** All Types or companions hold only in that for which the spirit of God doth bring them: Now the Ceremonially unclean were
worse debarred from holy things, to signify how much God detests filthiness. 2. Filthiness, polluting and leavening others; Now, the lese will in any sin, the lese sin, and so the lese contagion to others; and therefore, where there is much infirmity, lese will, and no contumacy, it rather followeth, Ergo, there should be no casting out, no Excommunication.

Erautus. The Ceremonially unclean were not counted as condemned and lost, as your Excommunicated persons were; they were admitted to Sacraments and the yearly expiation.

 Ans. This is Answered fully: The Excommunicated, because Excommunicated, are to us in a way to be saved under Medicine, and not given for lost, no more then those to whom the Pastors do threaten eternal wrath, or those with whom we will not eat, because of their inordinate walking are given for lost, though conditionally they are in danger of damnation if they repent no. 2. It is denied that the Ceremonially unclean were admitted to the Sacraments. Philo Judaeus, no lese well versed in Jewish Antiquities then Josephus, Tract. de Sacerdotibus honoribus, faith, Nushi homicida Lucbas introire Templum: and Josephus, l. 19. c. 7. faith, Herod Agrippa who beheaded James the brother of Christ, accused one Simon, who being a wicked man, went into the Temple, Qui templum non nisi purum et dignum patuerit: he witnesseth the same, De Bel. Judaic. l. 4. c. 13.

Erautus. The comparison holdeth not between two sins, which have both of them their own appointed punishment, but when both is punished with one punishment: for it is like this, He that killed any, imprudently, was compelled to flee to the City of Refuge, which was a lese sin; Ergo, he that unrighteously and wilfully killeth, should rather flye to that City, or a drunken man is to pay a fine; Ergo, a bloody Robber is far rather to pay a fine.

 Ans. When the comparison is made between a Ceremoniali breach, which is punished with a punishment Ceremoniaily, or mystically significant: the comparison to a mortal sin punished with punishment real, signified by that Ceremoniali punishment, is inconsequent: But when both sins have the same punishment in the general, in genero, it followeth not, that both should have the same,
in specie, in nature, as a drunkard ought to be punished with stripes: 

*Ergo,* parricide ought rather to be punished with death; but not 

*Ergo,* a parricide ought rather to be punished with stripes only: And so the consequence is sought, the leper was punished with being put out of the camp seven days. It followeth not, *Ergo,* he that is defiled with the soul-leprosy of murder, forcery, should far 
rather be punished only with being put out of the camp seven days: 

Because there is a higher punishment ordained for morall, then for a Ceremoniall transgression, *Ceteris paribus.*

**Erasmus.** If Peter Excommunicated Ananias, as you say for a 

private, far more should Christ have Excommunicated Judas for a 

more damnable private sin.

**Ans.** We say not that Peter Excommunicated Ananias, but that 

his killing of him pointed at the punishment of wicked men in the 

behave of the Church. 2. Gods punishing of sinners both in the 
time when, and in the manner, with what kind of punishment, is 

no rule to the Churches or Magistrates punishing. If God spare 

*Job* all David’s time, it followeth not, *Ergo,* David the Magistrate 
ought also to spare him. If God command to kill the man that 
gathereth sticks on the Sabbath: it followeth not, *Ergo,* the Church 
or Magistrate may do the like now, if any should gather sticks on 
the Sabbath.

**Erasmus.** Let every man try himself, be speaketh of the secrets of 

Conscience. **Erasmus.** That is (saith he) false, be speaketh of open sins 
of Schismatics, of those that came drunk to the Table, and eat 

things Sacrificed to Idols.

**Ans.** **Erasmus** mistaketh close the Authors meaning, which is to 
speak of the private and personal self-examination that every Com-
municant is to enter in before he eat, not of the publick trying. 

**Ans.** 5. men are to make a secret tryall even of publick sins; so 

though the sins were publick, yet was the tryall secret and per-
sonall, but did not exclude a publick examination by the Church, 
if need were. 

**Erasmus.** Though those that come to the Supper profess Repentance, 

yet many hypocrisses come: So Isa. 1. these Hypocrisses might have said, 

We testifie by our sacrificing, that we have hands full of blood; If we 
deal Hypocrisically or sincerely, God who knoweth the hearts only must 
judge, men must judge the best. **Erasmus** saith to the place, Isa. 1. We
have answered before: But (faith he) if they had said, It is true, our hands are full of blood, but we repent and are sorry, O Prophets, pray to God so have mercy on us, and we shall pray? They could not be debarred.

Ans. The man that was unreconciled to his brother might say all that at the Altar to the Priest. Yet Christ seeketh some more of him, he will not have him admitted to offer his gift, but he must leave it there, and give more than words to both God and the Priest; he must go and humble himself to his offended Brother, and be reconciled to him: And so the Prophet, Isa. 1, seeketh more of them, ere he will have them to sacrifice: Wash you, make you clean, put away the evil of your doings, cease to do evil, learn to do well: All this is not done in a moment at the Altar.

Erasius. Tell the Church, that is, Tell the Magistrate, if he be not a defender of a wicked Religion: For I suppose, 1. Thus Christ speaketh of the Church in Index, which the Disciples understood where to judge is: Now the Disciples understood so well the Church, that shilly put no Question to Christ of the matter. 2. Peter only saith, How should my Brother offend and I forgive him? Now Peter and the Disciples knew nothing of the spiritual Fraternity of the Gentiles before his Resurrection: For they knew only Jews were their Brothers, and they were forbidden to preach to the Gentiles or Samaritans now. 3. Let him be to thee as an heirben and a Publican; thus w., Let him be as a man most opposite to the Jews: Heathens and Publicans did grievously oppose them, and made the Roman yoke very burdensome to them.

Ans. 1. Erasius doth suppose, (which is most false, as I have Answered before) that Christ speaketh to Paul from heaven and Ananias also, of bearing the Name of Christ to the Gentiles; and Paul neither knew Name nor thing, Act. 26. 15, 16, &c. and 9. 15, 16, &c. He speaketh to his Disciples of the promise of the Father, and of the Testimony of the Gospel they were to Preach, Luk. 24. 46, 47, &c. which they knew not till afterwards. And what was the use of the holy Ghost to be pow'd on them? Was not this one of the chief? Joh. 14. 26. He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you: Then Christ spake many things to them that they both forgot, & knew not till the holy Ghost came upon them. And their not asking...
Questions will not prove they understood all he spake, sometimes they were afraid to ask him. 2. The Jews and Christian Church have not such essential differences, but they knew by the ordinary notion of the word Church, a Convention that professed the Doctrine of the Prophets, and of the Law and Gospel. And what such great difference is there between a brother, and a brother Jew and a Brother Gentile, as they behoved to understand the one, and be utterly ignorant of the other? And what necessity to restrict it to Jews only? Christ had often spoken to them of the incoming of the Gentiles, as Matt. 8, 14, 16. Matt. 10. 18. Did the Disciples know the Kings, Councils, Judicatures of the Gentiles, that Christ said they should be converted before? Matt. 10. 17, 18, 19. And because Erastus is so confident that the word Church here is the Civill Magistrate: Let any Erastian teach me, what is meant by ecclesia Church, Matt. 16. 19. Is it the Civill Magistrate? Is the Civill Magistrate built on a Rock? Shall the Ports of Hell never prevail against the Civill Magistrate? Can no Magistrate make defection from the truth? And doth Erastus or his believers in their conscience, that the Disciples understood Christ, Matt. 16. (for he spake of both to the Disciples) to speak of the stability and strength, and perseverance of the Christian Magistrate: And that the Ports of Hell should never prevail against the Jewish Sanhedrim and Church, which crucified the Lord of glory, and perfecuted his Apostles, and all professing the Name of Jesus, to the death? 3. Heathen and Publican in general, were names as opposite to Christian Brethren as to Jewish Brethren, as I have proved before.

Erastus, The word Church to the Hebrews signifieth either a multitude, or the Senate, or Magistrate, as Num. 35. Church is four times, Josh. 20. Psa. 60. Psa. 82. Once: and it signifieth the Magistrate. So one say, the Empire hath done what the Empeorv wish the States of the Empire hath done. So the Church or Convention think so, because the chief amongst them think so, the Common Wealth hath done this, because the Senate hath done this.

Ans. The word יהו is Num. 35. 12. But in all that Chapter include is not, but any. Now how this signifieth one Magistrate, which ever signifieth a collecting or multitude of rulers, I leave
Cap. XXI. Q. 17. Tell the Church, &c. discussed.

leave to the learned: so Erast. faileth yet in his probation. 2. Suppose the word Church significeth the heads of the people; how shall Erastus prove that יִדְוָל signifyeth the senate of Civil Magistrates, or in this Congregation were the Priests and Levites, especially, that judge between blood and blood, voluntary or involuntary homicide, Deut. 17:12, 13, 14. 2 Chr. 19: 8, 9. It is true also that the man that killed another unwittingly, was to be protected in the City of refuge, while he should stand before the faces יִדְוָל of the Congregation. But let Erastus, and all who will have the Bishop or the Pope the representative Church, know that יִדְוָל the Congregation, ever, and always be a collective word, as popular the people, significeth a multitude, & never by Grammar, one single man, hoc nomen (faith Pagnine) certum convenient, sic est certum Collegium, it always signifies a Societie; as the Princes of the Congregation Num. 16:2, all the Princes יִדְוָל in the Congregation, Exo. 34: 31. here is a number and a societie, יִדְוָל faith Aristotle can be attributed to no fewer than to three at least. Speak to all the Congregation of Israel יִדְוָל, and the Congregations of peoples יִדְוָל shall compass thee about, Psal. 78: 8. Nor shall sinners stand יִדְוָל in the Congregation of the just, Psal. 1: 5. Thou hast made desolate all my Congregation, 1 Ob. 16: 7. 2. The word is from a root that signifies to convene and gather together יִדְוָל. Therefore 1 Th. 4: 8. a swarm or a Congregation of Bees, is called יִדְוָל a Congregation. And that the word יִדְוָל Church since the world began, never signified one single man, either King, Magistrate, Pope, or Prelate, But always a multitude either of rulers or people, I appeal to Demosthenes, Homer, Phoebides, Hesiod, Lucian, Pluto, Aristotle, to Suidas, Stephenus, Scalula; or for the word, Cetus, Congregatio, to all Latine Authors, to the seventy interpreters in the Old Testament, to Hieronymus, all the Greek Fathers, and to the Evangelists and Apostles in the New Testament, to Acts 19: 32. Eph. 5: 23. Acts 8: 13. Rom. 16: 5. 1 Cor. 1: 2. 2 Cor. 1: 1. Gal. 1: 2. 1 Thess. 1: 1. 2 Thess. 1: 1. Acts 15: 3, 4, 22. Acts 16: 5. Acts 14: 23. Rev. 1: 20. Rev. 2: 1. and for Psalm 82. יִדְוָל there is a Congregation of Gods or Magistrates, and v. 6. All of you are Children of the most high, he speakest evidently of a multitude of Judges. 3. Suppose the Empire be said to do what the Senate, Parliament, or great Council of the Empire or Kingdom doth: This will not prove that the word Church
in either of the Original tongues Hebrew or Greek, doth signify one man, so as Tell the Church, must be all one with, Tell one single Magistrate, or, Tell one Prelate or one Pope, and he that will not hear the Magistrate, that is, the King, or one single Magistrate alone, without any fellow Magistrates, he being a Christian, is to be dealt with as an heathen, and a publican, and not as a Christian brother: For what the King doth alone without his Senate, is never called the deed of the Senate, farre lesse the act or deed of the whole Ecclesia, of the Kingdom, produce any shaddow of Grammer for this: Now to Erastus, Tell the Church, is all one wish, Tell the single Christian Magistrate alone separated from Fellow-judges, or Council, Senate, Parliament, Ecclesiasticall Assemblies, and if he bear not and obey not this one single Christian Magistrate, let him be to thee as a heathen and a publican: For Erastus will have the Civill Magistrate, though the whole Church and Pastors should judge the contrary, to have power by vertue of his office to determine against Pastors and Elders: Yea, by his office he is to command them to preach, and synodically to determine this and this, and what they determine they do, doe sub Magistrate, under, and from this one single Magistrate as his servants, instruments, Vicars and deputies, and therefore the Magistrate cannot sentence in the name of Pastors, Elders, when they are but his servants: And, 2. When he may by his office, do contrary to what they judge in conscience ought to be done: So Tell the Church, to Erastus is, Tell the one individual single Magistrate, who by office may judge without, and contrary to the advice of all the Church Pastors, Dotters, Elders, yea, people and all: Now though we grant, that what the Emperour doth as Empe- rour, and the Magistrate as Magistrate hath done, that the Empire, City, and Incorporation doth, (which yet is never true in the Church, which hath no King as a Church, save onely the head and King Iesus Christ) yet Erastus hath not proved, what the Emperour doth without, and contrary to the advice of all the Empire, that the Empire hath done that.

Erastus, Christ neither understandeth by the Church she whole multitude of Jerusalem, or then the Magistrates: But he understandeth not the multitude, 1. Because Christ would not change the Government of heathens, farre lesse of that which his Father had appointed in Juden, in which the people did never Govern: Yea, the Apostles to
their death did nothing against Moses his Law, and how they sake Christ to speak of a Church to be founded of new after his resurrection who beleeved not he should die and rise againe; and after his resurrection knew not what a kingdom, whether worldly, or spiritual, he was to have, cannot be conceived.

Ans. 1. Many will deny the Major, for he understood the rulers of the Christian Church, not excluding the content of the Christian Church of beleevers in the matter of Excommunication. 2. I deny that Christ doth here re-establish a Synedry, and bid them Tell the Scribes and Pharisees, and those that were to crucifie himselfe, and to perfecte the Apostles to the death. Christ knew those to be miserable healers of scandals betwene brother and brother. 2. He knew this Sanedrim to be the Disciples of Christ's capittall enemies, he warned the Disciples to beware of the leaven of their corrupt Doctrine, he prophesied this Sanedrim should be destroyed as a degenerated plant, that his heavenly father had not planted, and was it like Christ would direct them a perishing, and degenerate remedie against scandals, that he would have removed by his Church, even till the end of the world? 2. It is most false, that the Apostles did keep to death the institutions and ordinances of Moses, Act. 15. They abrogated all the ceremonial Law, except that of blood and things strangled, and Paul said, he that would amongst the Galatians be circumcised, was false from Christ, see Col.2. Gal.4. Heb.13. and elsewhere the contrary. The Government was now to expire with Christ's death and ascension, in so farre as it was pedagogical. 3. Christ spake often of his kingdom to them, and they understood nothing but an earthly and temporall Kingdom, and that they understood perfectly: All this time the Church of Pastors, Teachers, Elders, Deacons, beleevers in Christ, is denied; Let Erastus answer, when Christ said Mat. 16. He would build his Church on a rock unprejudicable and insuperable to hell: If the Apostles understood a Church to be founded after the resurrection, and when Christ said, Lor I am with you to the end of the world, if Christ meant not he would give his presence to the Christian Church, noe then founded, for even after his resurrection they dreamed of an earthly Kingdom, Act.3, and that our divines do rightly expound that place, I am with you, All the faithful Pastors, Doctors, Church-officers and beleevers to the Lord's second appearance, is clear. 

Erastus.
Erasillus. Christ bade, Tell the Church which hath power to con-

There was no more a right constituted San-

Erasillus. But, Tell the Church is all one with this. Appoint

Erasillus. Christ bade, Tell the Elders that then were, else he did not accommodate himself to their

Anf. 1. (Tell the Church) cannot in any sense, have such a mean-

Anf. Ergo, the Church hath a spirituall judicature. This is for us.

Page 327.

Page 326.

Page 327.

Page 327.

Page 328.

Page 328.
2. Tell the Elders of the Christian Church, may as well be meant in these words, Tell the Church, as the Jewish Church can be understood. 3. The word Church, and to convene offenders, hear Witnesses, give one sentence, were all plain Language to the disciples, though they knew not the frame of the Gospel Church, as yet, Christ being now teaching an ordinance of a Church, and the tenure of Excommunication that was not to fall under practice, while Christ should ascend to heaven; and therefore though this Church was not, yet it followeth not, that the Lord Jesus speaketh of the Sanedrim. 4. Say that he meaneth the Sanedrim: Ergo, say we, he speaketh nothing of the Christian Magistrate. 1. Because there was no Magistrate now, but Jewish Magistrates as Eras tus cannot deny. 2. Because this Sanedrim that gained souls of offending brethren, was Ecclesiasticall, not civil, 3. By proportion, and Analogie Christ must understand the Church of Christians, though the Sanedrin was to be removed shortly.

Eras tus. It is a great controverse, wheare to be chosen out of the bodie of the Church to excommunicate judiciailly.

Ans. The controverse was moved partly by Eras tus, partly by Morellius, not in the reformed Churches.

Eras tus. Some say the Magistrate should chuse the Elders at least at the first, even though the Church doth consent, but how can they sit in place of the Church and judge, who were against the will and minde of the Church chosen to be Judges? For though the Magistrate be a chief Member of the Church, yet to Tell the Church, is not to Tell the Magistrate (as you say) but to Tell the whole Church, and it is no excuse that the Magistrate doth but once chuse the Elders, for if hee have no right nor Law from God to doe it, he can never doe it, and if he have Law from God to doe it, he ought always to doe it.

Ans. Here Eras tus reasoneth against some Author that inclineth to the way of Morellius.

If there bee no formed Church ended with knowledge and discretion to chuse their owne Elders, if there be godly men fit to be chosen, they are to convene and chuse from amongst them Elders.
Elders, the godly Magistrate is to joyn his Vote and Power, because there is a Church not yet constitute, it is now Periturbutum qui corruptus Ecclesia status, and I ever judged it a golden saying of that great Divine Fran. Ininus, that when the Magistrate will not concur, the Church in that extraordinary case may doe somewhat, which ordinarily they cannot doe; and againe, when the Church doth not their duty, the Magistrate in that case may do something more then ordinary, to cause the Church doe their duties; for its a common Law, to ills out of order, remedies out of the road way may be applied. So if the Priests and Levites be corrupt, Iehosaphat and Hozekiah, and Jozab, may reforme: And therefore though the godly Magistrate, jure communis, by the common Law of Nature, imploie his power to appoint Elders, all Errors and confusions in the Church are in some measure out of order, yet it followeth, that jure proprio, and ordinarily he should always doe this. 2. Elders are not properly Representators of the Church to me, while I be better informed, for power of feeding and ruling is immediately given by Jesus Christ to the Elders, and not by the intervening mediation of the Church, but only by their designation to the office; this power is given by the people. 3. The Magistrate as the Magistrate, and by virtue of his place, is neither a Member, farre leefe a chief Member of the Church, for then all Magistrates should be Members of the Church, even Heathen Kings and Rulers, which no man can say. The Christian Magistrate as a Christian is a Member of the Church. But that is nothing to helpe Erastus.

Eraslus. Because the multitude can doe nothing in order; therefore (say they) they have power to choose Elders to whom belongeth the power of Excommunication. But how prove they this? Though a company wanting a Magistrate have this power, shall it follow, that a company to whom God hath given a godly Magistrate should have this power? But because confusion would follow, therefore Elders are to be chosen; Ergo, Such Elders as make up your Presbyterie, à generæ ad speciem affirmativè nulla est consequitio.
Ans. 1. Not only from necessity of effecting confusion, but from the positive Ordinance of God, we infer Presbyters; we do not own any such consequence: Prelates and Papists argue for a Monarchy in the Church, from order: we know no creatures of the like frame: Erasius is for a Bishop, he may so argue, not we: We finde Christ hath placed such organs in his body, as Eph. 4. 11. 12. 1 Cor. 12. 28. 1 Tim. 5. 17. 1 Tim. 3. 1, 2, &c. Act. 6. 1, 2, &c. and 14. 23. Ergo, they ought to be, for we think the Church cannot govern it self. a. If the Church wanting a Magistrate as the Apostolick Church did, have power to chuse Presbyters, and by a Divine Law: how dare Erasius say, That is, followeth not, when the Church hath a godly Magistrate, she should keep the same power? Can the godly Magistrate when he cometh into the Church, take any Divine power from the Church? Is the Magistrate given to the Church as a Nurse-father to preserve that power that Christ hath given to his Spouse? or is he given as a spoiler at noon-day, to take to himself the power, and make the Ambassadors of Christ, his Ambassadors and Servants to preach in his Name; whereas before when they had no Magistrate, Pastors did preach only in the Name of Jesus Christ?

Erasius, Sure the Lord hath concredited to the Magistrate, the Command and all power of externall Government; so as he hath subjected not only Civill, but also Sacred things to his power, that he may manage the one according to the Word of God, the other according to Justice and equity; which sine is is Commanded in the Old Testament, and practised by all holy Judges and Kings, and we finde it is not changed in the New Testament; we safely say that the Church that hath a godly Magistrate, cannot by Gods will choose a new Senate or Presbytery, to exercise publickly Judgement; for God hath not armed subjects against their Magistrates: Nor hath be Commanded them to take any part of their power from them and give it to others, and to subject them to externall Dominion.

Ans. Sure the Lord concredited to the Priest, not to King Zenaib to burn incense, and to the Priests to rebuke Zenaib and command him to desist; and this is no lesse externall Governing of the house of God, quæ ad hoc, in this particular then Excommunication: for to Excommunication on the Churches part, as Excommunication, is no more required, but that the scandalous and murderings Magistrate
gistrate should not come to the Table of the Lord, or remain in the
society and Church-fellowship of the Saints as a Member of the
Church. Now if the Magistrate obey not, the Church as the
Church can use no bodily coercion or restraint to hinder the Ma-
gistrate to obtrude himself upon the holy things of God: though
other, either fellow-Magistrates, or the inferior Magistrates, (if
the party Excommunicated be the suprem Magistrate) or, the Par-
liament may and ought to use their power as Magistrates, by the
sword to hinder the holy things of God to be profaned; for I think
it easie to prove, if this were a fit place, that inferior Magistrates are
essentially Magistrates, and immediately subject to the King of Kings
for the use of the sword, as the suprem Magistrate or King:
and therefore there is no more external dominion used in Excom-
unicating a bloody and scandalous Magistrate, than in rebuking
and threatening him. Now Erastus granteth, That Pasters may re-
buke and threaten according to the word of the Lord, even Magi-
istrates and Kings. 2. If because Judges in the Old Testament, as
Eli and Samuel sacrificed, and we finde this not changed in the
New, and nothing extraordinary in this, Ministers in the New Te-
ment may do the same: Then the Justice of Peace, and Mayors of
Cities, and every constable, may by virtue of their office Preach
the Word and dispense the Sacraments, which is against the word,
15. 3. Where doth Erastus read in the New Testament, that
Kings may not write Canonick Scripture, as King David did, and
build a Typicall Temple to the Lord as Solomon did; and give out
Laws of Divine institution as Moses did? Kings in the Old Testa-
ment did these, and he can finde the contrary no where written.
4. If the Church as the Church cannot chuse a Senate of Elders to
Govern themselves without wronging the Magistrate; how did the
Apostolick Church without so much as asking advice of the Civil
Magistrate, set up a new Gospel, new Sacraments, new officers, a
new Government? Did the Lord tell his and the Gospel teach them
to spoil Cesar? —Christ hath said the contrary, Give unto Cesar those
things that are Cesar's. 5. To subject Magistrates to Excommunic-
ation, is no more to subject them to external dominion, then to subject
them (as Erastus doth) to rebukes, warnings and threats: for
the former hath no more of coercion, of dominion, or of coercive
power,
power, then the latter: yes, if to subject Kings to the rebukes of the Ministers of Christ, be nothing but to subject them to internall and spiritual dominion; no more is suspension from the Sacraments and Excommunication, any thing but internall and spiritual dominion. In this sense, that neither of these two are bodily dominions, no more then rebuking of Kings. 2. Yet both these work upon the conscience in a spiritual way, for the humiliation of the king, and proving him to shame and fear. 2 Thes. 3. 14, 15. that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord, as rebukes do work, 1 Tim. 5. 20. Gal. 2. 11. 1 Cor. 5. 6. Jude ver. 23. Yea, to say to a King, He shall be buried with the burial of an Ape, as Jeremiah did, cap. 23. And to call the Rulers, Princes of Sodome, Isa. 1. 19. And King Herod a Fox, and Rulers and Princes Dogs, Psa. 22. ver. 16. and Butts and Lyons, ver. 12. 13. and Wolves ravishing for the prey, Ezek. 22. 27. putteth no least shame upon Magistrates before men, and so externall dominion on them, and over them, then Excommunication and banishing from the Seals of the Covenant doth. Now Erasmus subjecket Magistrates to rebukings, threatnings and reprehensions no less, then we do. Well, Erasmus will have one single Minister to exercise externall dominion over the Magistrates, because this is manifest out of the Word: but because he would flatter Princes as much as he can, he denies that a College of Elders may rebuke the Magistrate, or convene him before them, though he were the mostflagitious Prince that lived, and yet one man may summon him before the Tribunall of Christ; and charge him to come to hear a sermon, and rebuke him in the face of the Congregation, and pronounce the Judgments of God against him openly. Is not this the Lord arming one single man against and confusion on him, for his sins? And should do this, This were to arm the subjects against the Magistrate, and to take the power from him that God hath given to him, as Erasmus talketh.
chap. xx. quest. 18.

of exclusion from the sacrament, of profession of repentance, the judicial law bindeth not christians. the sword not a mean, of conversion. of idolaters and apostates in the judgement of aratus.

erastus I. in this chapter erastus disputeth against a treatise written in the german tongue, in which he acknowledgeth, there is more Jesuizing and truth then in the other writings. all the opinions that erastus ascribeth to this author, (justly or unjustly, I know not, but erastus his faith may be justly suspected,) I cannot defend.

erastus. teaching those to be admitted to the sacrament, we speak mistakes; delinis falsis, &c. of those only who rightly understand the doctrine of the gospel, and do approve and imbrace the same, and who desire with others to use the sacraments aright; in regard of the externals, of which only the church can judge, for the heart is rightly known to God only; so the author and I agree.

ans. the agreement is but poore by your owne relation: But 2. Let erastus answer, what is the christian magistrate as abab be a dog, and fell himselfe to do wickedly: What if he understand not the doctrine of the gospel? Magistrates: as magistrates by virtue of the throne, or place, are not priviledged to be orthodox and holy. let one italians once a christian, yet turning a sower, an enemy to the gospel be witted, if we descend to the justices, and to master constables; it may be we finde even of those dogs and swine in their conversation, though their place be a power, lawfull, and ordained of God; we think (faith erastus,) the customes of the church should be observed: What? by the customes of the church only, by no precept or command of Christ should the holy things of God, the pearls of the gospel be denied to dogs and swine contrary to Christ's command, mat. 7? 2. erastus must exclude the magistrate out of the list of his disputations in six books, and say, if the christian magistrate be ignorant and scandalous, and yet desire to use the sacraments aright, and profess he will learn to know God, and
Cap. XXI. Q. 18. by Erastus his way.

To believe soundly, and walk soberly. Yet the Sacraments are not to be denied to him. Tell Erastus, in sincerity who should debarre the Magistrate? For in all your six books, you by these words, de illis fuis, &c. professe that you plight not that he should be admitted to the Sacraments; who shall exclude him? not he himselfe; for his credites sake he shall desire to come to the Sacraments, as many for gaine and loaves follow Christ, 10b. 6. will they not follow him also to be seen of men, as the Pharisees prayed in the streets? 2. Let Erastus say, when our Saviour said, Give not holy things to dogs. Did he mean to accept the persons of Kings and Judges, and profess, though Kings and Judges be dogs and swine; yet deny not holy things to them? 3. Hath Christ appointed no way in the New Testament, as he did in the Old, to debarre unclean men from our Passover? Or shall there be no Government, no charge in the Ministers of the New Testament to keep the holy things of God from pollution? If Master Justice be an incestuous man, a drunkard, a dog, shall he not be cast out of the midst of the Church? Uzziah, though a King, yet for bodily leprosie was separated from the people of God, and men of high places, though doggs and swine shall be admitted to all the holy things of God under the New Testament?

2. Erastus will have all admitted who desire to use the Sacraments right; As touching all externalls, of which only the Church doth judge: But, 1. Where did we assert that the Church judgeth of internalls? and that they may debarre men from the Sacraments, for only heart-unbeliefe knowne to God only? This must lyue on Erastus, as a calumnie, while he make it good from our writings and Doctrine, that we thus teach, exclude those that are visibly scandalous and prophan, and we are satisfied. 2. He that brings his offering to the Altar, and hath done a knowne offence to his brother, (for it is a sinfull and visible scandal, which scandalizeth one brother) He useth not the holy things of God right, even as touching externals; He that comes to the Lords supper defying, and asking the ordinance of righteousness (as Isaiah speaketh) and prophetic amendment; and yet is openly ignorant and not found in the faith, he useth not arigeth the Sacraments even in externals, of which only the Church judgeth rightly: as he that in the same day commeth to the temple to worship (now the very personall presence of a few
Who are to be admitted to the Sacrament  

A Jew in the Temple which was a Type of Jesus Christ, was a worship and a holy thing of God, whereas our presence in the place of meeting for worship is no such thing, when he hath killed his sonne to Molech, profaned the Temple, and the name of God, even in externals, for the Priests of old who were to put difference between the clean and the unclean, no more were to judge the inward thoughts and heart-dispositions of men knowne to God only, then we can now judge them in the New Testament, 1 Chr. 29. 17. 1 King. 8. 39. 1 Chr. 28. 9. Prov. 15. 11. Hence, that is an ignorant speech of Erastus, Qui statuit malum esse non probitatem ecclesiae factum, ut se penitere prioris vise testetur, at noliorem promissas. That man shall never come before the face of the Church, to testify that he repenteth of his former wicked life, and promise amendment, who purposeth to be wicked; Will not men purpose not to be reconciled to their brethren, and suffer many snares to go downe in their wrath and malice, who come and bring their offering to the Altar; why did then Christ forbid offering at the Altar, without being reconciled to an offended brother? Mat. 5. might not the offending brother offer his gift, and were not the Priests to accept his offering? He could say all that Erastus requireth: I acknowledge I have offended my brother, I promise to crave him pardon, and I desire to offer according to the Law. Then the Priest was obliged to believe he dealt sincerely, and lay his gift upon the Altar, though he should not obey the command of Christ, and go and leave his gift at the Altar, and not offer while he were first reconciled to his brother, and the like I lay of one that hath killed his brother, and cometh with hot blood to the Table of the Lord, and goeth not to the Widow and Orphanes, whose Husband and Father he had killed, to be reconciled: Surely the man that should thus offer, should not come to offer, not to eat at the Lords table rightly; even in regard of externals, which the Church may judge: for he should omit this externall, Be first reconciled to the Widow, and then offer, and eat as Christ commanded, 3. It is against Scripture and experience, that a man that hath a purpose to kill his Father, and in the highest point of treason to invade Kings Davids throne, as Absolon did, to lay he will not profess to pay his vows at Hebron. And might not Judas by his very eating the Passover, profess he beleaved in the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world, and that he would
would serve Christ, and yet purpose in his heart to sell his Master Christ for 30. pieces of silver; They seeme to be little acquainted with the mysterie of the hypocriste naturally in men, who put in print such a position: The Author against whom Eraftus writeth faith, we have reason to rejoice, if we finde any such, who will not profess faith and repentance, though they be Hypocrites; and therefore there is need of Excommunication, and his meaning is, that there is need of Excommunication always, and therefore there will be many who profess Repentance in words, whose life and conversation belie their Repentance; and Eraftus cannot deny this, if he know what it is to have a forme of godlinesse, and deny the power, which forme, many have who are to be debarred from the Sacraments, and to be Excommunicated, in regard they are, lovers of their owne selves covetous, boaster, proud, blasphemers, Godelers to parents, unthankful, with- out naturall affections, truce breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despiers of those that are good, traitors, headie, high minded, &c. 2 Tim. 3. 1, 2, &c. and such they are in the eies of men, otherwise Paul would not forbid to withdraw from such.

Eraftus. The Author I think would yield that the Sacraments should not be denied to those who seek them, and desire to use them aright, and are not excommunicated, for he writeth that the deniall of the Sacraments, is only a Testimony of excommunication. So when we give not a Testimony of a thing, for example of learning, to any to whom the thing is selfe, or with learning doth not agree, we cannot deny the Sacraments to those who are not Excommunicated, for how should not be blessed with a Testimony of a blessed man, who is not declared to be a banished.

The Author I think, would never yield, but the Sacraments ought to be denied to those, who seek for them, and desire to use them aright, if they be otherwise Traze breakers, false accusers, incontinent, traitors, for those have and may have a forme of godlinesse, and ask the Sacraments and desire to use them aright, I mean they may say they desire to use them aright, for of them inward desire, God only can judge, who knoweth the hearts, yet the
Author cannot, he will not say, that such are to be admitted to the Lords' Supper, all that 
Eraistus goeth on as, That the Church is ob-
lided to believe that those doe repent, and use the Sacraments a-
right, who say in word of mouth, they doe so, and therefore are to
be admitted to the Sacraments though they come but an houre
before out of the Bordell-house, and have hands and sword hot
and smoking with innocent blood. Now Dogs, and Swine, Caiv.
Indas, known to be scandalous, may give faire words and cry, Lord,
Lord; and profess all this, it is clear, Esa. 58: 2. Mai. 7: 21, 22.
Rom. 16: 18. Mai. 23. 13. 14. 23. 26. 2. Exclusion from the Sac-
raments is a Testimony of Excommunication, but not testimo-
ny of proprius quartus modo, for some that are not excommunicated:
are to be debarred from the Sacraments as the thing itselfe will
force us to acknowledge; should any come with his sword but
in blood, from killing his father and Pastor to the Lords Table,
I hope the Church knowing this would not admit him to the Sac-
rament, and yet he is not yet excommunicated, and I hope they
would not presently in the same moment that they debarred
him from the Lords Supper, excommunicate him. There shall
be some time required to pray for him, to rebuke, convince,
and lay open his sinne before he be excommunicated, which
used me to thinke that there was necessity of expresse Scripture to
prove Excommunication; but that abatation (as Divines calleth
it) or suspension from the Lords Supper, may well be sufficient.
I proved by Analogie, by consequent and by the nature of the
holy things of God, and Pearles that are not to be given to the
profane. 3. A visible scandal is a sufficient ground of the lesser
excommunication, or debarreng from the Lords Supper, and so we
put a Testimony of one banished from the holy things of God
on him who hath committed a scandalous offence, which is a suf-
cient ground therefor, though the chpider be not formally excom-
municated. This Author faith, without the consent of the Church, no
man, though convicted, should be excommunicated. What this is
against us, or for Eraistus, I see not, we say the same.
He faith, The Magistrate may chuse some of the congregation to
Excommunicate; which if he say, I consent not to him, and see no
warrant for it in Scripture. But I rather believe his sense to be,
That the godly Magistrate may command the Church to Excommu-
nicate
nicate and punish them, if they be negligent in this. But hence it followeth not, that the Magistrate may Excommunicate them, as Erastus inferreth no more then of old; it followeth, King Veziah might command the Priests to burn incense to the Lord, and punish them; if in this they should neglect their duty: Ergo, King Veziah might lawfully in his own person burn incense to the Lord: Erastus himself will deny this consequence.

Erastus faith, It is evident this Author meaneth, That God commanded not a Presbytery to be, but that it is necessary for orders cause. But I had rather that he had proved it from the Authors words: And so I deny it, while Erastus bring his own words to prove it, I believe he fancies many things of this worthy Author, as that he subjects not the Magistrate to the Presbytery: And why? Because he faith, None ought to be Excommunicated without the consent of the Magistrate. Truly it is a weak reason; for if the Magistrate be a godly man, and a Member of the Church, it is necessary that his positive command be had, that he may in light and faith use the sword against him, as against other evil doers. But I give him no negative voice, nor any authoritative or Ecclesiastically judicial voice in Excommunication, which can be due to him as a Magistrate: So the Author doth not at all disagree from us; Erastus is mistaken.

Erastus. God hath Excommunicated Drunkards, Hypocrites from the Sacraments except they repent: But where hath God commanded such, being Circumcised and Baptized to be excluded from the Sacraments? especially if they profess that they repent of their former ways: for it is one thing to be excluded of God, another thing to be cast out of the visible society of the godly.

Answ. God hath Excommunicated Drunkards and Hypocrites, who are not known openly to be such to the Church, and therefore the Church cannot debar such from the Sacraments, and so we grant all, That it is one thing to be Excommunicated of the Church, and another to be Excommunicated of God. 2. He asketh, where hath God commanded to debar such from the Sacraments being circumcised and baptized? I answer then, If they be uncircumcised and unbaptized, God will have the Church to debar them. But let Erastus shew any Scripture for their exclusion, but such as warrant-
profession maketh not men incapable of the holy things of God.

Every profession maketh not men incapable of the holy things of God.

Eth us to exclude the openly scandalous, though circumcised and baptized. 3. What warrant hath the Church or Magistrate, if Erastus so will, to debar all the uncircumcised and unbaptized from the Sacraments; Joll, the Eunuch, are not Excommunicated of God: Ergo, if the Lords non-Excommunication be our rule, we cannot Excommunicate all the uncircumcised and baptized as such. 4. Erastus addeth, They cannot be excluded from the Sacraments, Presertim se repentientes, ante qua existant, especially if they professee repentance. But this presertim, especially, seemeth to infer, though they professee no repentance, but be dogs and swine; they ought not to be debarred from the Seals. Is this piety, or rather prophanity? But only he would say, they are far lesse to be debarred if they professee repentance. But we know, to professee repentance in Erastus his way, is to say by word of mouth, they repent: Now this saying so, may consisit with being openly dogs and swine. Hence we see the contradictive of Erastus his saying, to wit, that the most openly scandalous are not to be excluded from the Sacraments, especially if they say they repent, that is, especially if they lye and dissemble before the Sun, yea, though they mock God and repent no. I should think their saying they repent, when their flagitious and impure conception doth belye their profession, maketh them so much rather worthy to be debarred, being both dogs and Hypocrites: So far I am from Erastus his presertim, especially if they professee that they repent.

Erastus. I grant it fitteth with Gods will, that pardon should be denied to any by the word, and yet pardon sealed to those same men in the Sacrament: But when the word denyeth remission of sins absolutely to those, the Sacraments are not due to them; but the Word denyeth not remission to them, upon condition they repent, and so neither should the Sacraments be denied to them.

Answ. But the word denyeth absolutely remission of sins to dogs and swine, so long as they repent not; and that so much the more, that they say they repent, and their life belies their words, and testifieth to their face, and before the Sun, that they are plaistered Hypocrites, Ergo, the Sacraments should be denied to them.

Erastus. But it followeth not that the Sacraments belongeth not to him.
ism who is not a member of the invisible Church, so be be a member of the visible Church; but as he partaketh only of the externall Communion, so he receiveth but the externall elements, from an externall Minister.

Ans. But if he be visibly no Member of the invisible Church, but in the eyes of the Church visibly a dog or a swine, neither ought the externall symbols, that are even externally the holy things of God to be given to him: for otherwise, this Argument shall conclude, if one be baptised, and a member of the Church, though a dog, yet the pearls of the Gospel are to be cast to such a dog, which Erastus himself denieth: And so this Argument hurteth Erastus as much as us.

That this Author faith, God commanded those that transgressed his holy Law with a high hand, and presumptuously to be killed, lest they should love and profane his holy things; I defend not: But sure Erastus errreth, who will have all such to be killed by the Magistrate under the New Testament, because they were killed in the Old: Then are we to stone men that gathereth sticks on the Lords day; the childe that is stubborn to his Parents, the Virgins, daughters of Ministers that committeeth fornication are to be put to death. Why, but then the whole judical Law of God shall oblige us Christians as Carolusius and others teach? I humbly conceive that the putting of some to death in the Old Testament, as it was a punishment to them, so was it a mysterious teaching of us, how God hated such and such sins, and mysteries of that kind be gone with other shadows. But we read not (faith Erastus) where Christ hath changed these Laws in the New Testament. It is true, Christ hath not said in particular, I abolish the debarring of the leper seven days; and he that is thine and thou unclean shall be separated till the evening; nor hath he said particularly of every carnall Ordinance and judicial Law, it is abolished. But we conceive, the whole bulk of the judicial Law, as judicial, and as it concerned the Republick of the Jews only, is abolished, though the moral equity of all those be not abolished; also some punishments were meere Symbolically, to teach the detestation of such a vice, as the boiling with an Anle the ear of him that loved his Master, and desired still to serve him, and the making of him his perpetuall servant. I should think the punishing with death the man that gathered sticks on the Sabbath was such;
such; and in all these, the punishing of a sin against the Morall Law by the Magistrat,e is Morall and perpetuall; but the punishing of every sin against the Morall Law, satis modo, so and so, with death, with spitting on the face: I much doubt if these punishments in particular, and in their positive determination to the people of the Jews, be morall and perpetuall: As he that would marry a captive woman of another Religion, is to cause her first pare her nailes, and wash her self, and give her a moneth, or lesser time to lament the death of her Parents, which was a Judicial, not a Ceremoniall Law; that this should be perpetuall, because Christ in particular hath not abolished it, ro me seems most unjust; for as Paul saith, He that is Circumcised becomes debtor to the whole Law, Sure to all the Ceremonies of Moses his Law: So I argue, a pari, from the like, He that will keep one judiciaall Law, because Judicial and given by Moses, becometh debtor to keep the whole Judicial Law, under pain of Gods eternal wrath.

We do not teach that men are to be Excommunicated, for whatsoever scandalous sins deserve death at the hand of the Magistrate; whether they openly repent or not; if any give evide of destruction of their repentance for murther, they are not to be Excommunicated, for the end of Excommunication, being one, obtaining which is the visible and known repentance, and saving of the offender's soul, the mean is not to be used, which is Excommunication. But if any commit murther, whether he repent or repent not, the Lord hath made no exception of regenerate or not regenerate; of men repenting or not repenting, he should die by the sword of the Magistrate, Gen. 9.9. It is true, some are to be Excommunicated for the very atrocity of the sin, it being patricide; but that is, because he giveth no positive signes of repentance to the Church, which is contumacy added to his patricide.

Erastus would prove, That God would not have men debarred from the Sacraments, because they commit heinous sins to be punished with death by the Judge: 1. Faci-mora hace xype occultaka, such crimes are often unknown to the world.

Ans. That which is denied, is not concluded a fault in Logick: for only scandals as scandals to the Church, and so known to
to the Church are to be confirmed with Excommunication.

Eraclitus. He thus would prove the same, often these crimes cannot be punished, as David didst not punish the murder of Ishb, 2 Sam. 

3. Often for other causes they are neglected by the Magistrates, as David neglected to punish the incest and murder of Abolon; but shall we think such were not to come to the Temple and Sacraments? so Phil. 14. David saith, There was not one that did good, those were not all punished by the Magistrate; yea were they not removed from the Sacraments.

Ans. Let Eraclitus argue here, and we shall see his logic; Those that commit parricide, forgeries, and desecrate the holy things of God under face, whom ye, the Magistrate dare not punish, because of their power and greatness, these are not to be debarr'd from the Sacraments. But there be many scandalous persons in the Church, such as Ishb, whom the Magistrate dare not punish, for their greatness; Ergo.

Ans. The Major is manifestly false, and a begging of the question: For Eraclitus saith, pag. 107. He thinketh such ought not to be admitted, as the Sacraments, who will trample on the Sacraments and profane them. For though the Magistrate dare not punish them, which is his full neglect, if they be dogs and swine (as often they are), bloody men, such as Ishb, they ought not; yea, they never were by any Law of God, admitted to the Temple and Sacraments, what they did, de facto, or the Priests permitted, is not the question. It was David since that he took not away the head of bloody Ishb when he killed Abner and Amasa. 2. How doth Eraclitus prove that David neglected to punish the incest of Abolon (his sinful self), or his murder I' yield) for Abolon was not in David's power to punish after he committed that incest? possibly he neglected to punish his own. Contraubuses, that is but a conjecture. It is as like Abolon forced the Contraubuses to that incest as any other thing. 3. For that Phil. 14. There is none that doth good, it is spoken of the natural corruption of all mankind, who therefore cannot be justified by the works of the Law, as Paul expounds it, Rom. 3. 9, 10, 11, 19, 20, 21; and not of scandals punishable by the Magistrates, and where this corruption did break out, in bloods within the Church, it ought to have been punished, both by the Magistrates and Church; so is it an argument yet, a false adjuration, and a supporting argument: 4. I ask for what cause does the
the Spirit of God rebuke killing of the Children to Molech, and coming that same day to the Temple? Because it was a sinne and particularly a prophaning of the Sanctuary, which was one special holy thing to God, Ezek. 23.38,39. 4or. 7.8,9,10,11. It was no sin to come to the Temple: Sure it was commanded of God in his Law, as Erastus yieldeth. What was the sin then to come with their hands full of blood, and of the unnaturall blood of their owne Children was the sinne; and yet if they had repented, to come after they had killed their Children, was no sinne, nor any prophaning of the Sanctuary of God. Then all their sinne was, that being Morally unclean, they came to the Sanctuary; Ergo, God forbade such bloody men to come to his Sanctuary; because God forbiddeneth all sinne in his perfect Law; Ergo, those that deserved to dye by the hand of the Magistrate for open murder, deserveth that open murder to be debarred from the holy things of God, what ever Erastus say on the contrary.

Erastus. The adversaries consent, that some are to be excommunicated who defend not to dye; as if any to a little injury, add contumacy; But they should have a warrant for this, for this is a contradiction. (Every one who is clean according to the Law, should help the Passover) and this (some who is clean according to the Law, (to wit, who liveth wickedly and scandalously, and yet is Ceremonially clean) should not keep the Passover.)

Ans. We finde no distinction made by Christ, Matth. 18. and therefore we make none; He that offendeth his brother, (Christ maketh no exceptions of light or small offences) if he cannot be gained by admonitions, and be contumacious against the Church, he is reputed as a heathen and a publican; and this is our warrant.

2. Let Erastus answer this contradiction according to his owne way. Everyone who is Ceremonially clean should come to the Temple. Some who are Ceremonially clean, (to wit, who the same day have slaine their sons to Molech) should not come in to the Temple. The affirmative is holden as a truth by Erastus. The negative is the word of the Lord, Ezek. 23.38,39. 3. It is no contradiction which Erastus propoleoth: For every one who is Ceremonially clean, should not keep the Passover, except also he be Morally clean: For he that dierceth not the Lords body, should not eat; and the Lambe was no leffe Sacramentally the Lords body, then the Bread and Wine is his Body:
body, so the former is false, in rei veritate. The latter, to wit, Every one ceremonially cleans should not keep the passover, so Erastus is false: Now of two propositions contradictent, both cannot be false. Erastus may know this is bad Logick.

Erastus. The Prophets rebuked the abuse and prophaning of the Sacraments, but they interdicted none circumcised of the use of the Sacraments; they said the sacrifices of the wicked were no more welcome to God, then if they offered things forbidden (dogs and swines blood) to God, but they never say the Priests are to be accused for admitting such into the Sacraments. They accuse and rebuke the Priests that they transgressed, and taught not the people aright, but never that they admitted such into the holy things of God: The Prophets say always those things are wicked before God, but not in the face of the Church.

Anf. If the Prophets rebuked the prophaning of the Sacraments, then they also forbade prophaning men to use the Sacraments, could the Prophets rebuke any thing but sin? Ergo, they forbade the sinne which they rebuked: Ergo, they forbade the man that had murthred his sonne to Molech, to come to the Sanctuary, while he repented, for they could not rebuke but what they forbade. 2. If the bloody men coming to the Sanctuary in that case, was nothing more acceptable to God, then the offering of a dog to God; then as the offering of a dog to God, was both forbidden to the people and to the Priest, so was the people and Priest both accused for the bloody men coming into the Temple, the one should sin it coming, the other in admitting him to come. 3. The Priests are expressly accused for this, Ezek. 22, 25, 26. and 44. 23. 24. Hag. 2. 11, 12, 13. 4. Those were not only sinnes in foro Dei, before God, for so when they were secret, they were sinnes before God, but when openly knownen, as Jer. 7. 9, 10, &c. Ezek. 23. 38, 39. they were the Priests sins: The bloody are forbidden to come to the Sanctuary; what then? were not the Porters whose calling it was to hold out the uncleanse, to debar all whom the Lord forbade to come? Certainly, they excluded to their knowledge all whom God excluded, else how had they the charge.
The scandalous amongst the Jews

charge to keep the doores of the Lords House, and the Priests are not onely rebuked for not instructing the people, but for erring in governing, Jer. 5. 31. they are not Prophets, but Priests and Governours both Ecclesiasticall and civill, that the Prophet complaineth of, who did rule with rigour & cruelty over the people, beside that they feed not the flocke but themselves, Ezek. 34. 1, 2, 3. Jer. 23. 1, 2, 3, 4, and 10. 21. and 22. 22. and 50. 6. Micah 7. 1, 11.

Page 341.

Erastus. Though ill doers be not killed by the Magistrate, yet it followeth not that God for any such cause (deserving death) would have them debarred a regio usu, from the right use of holy things by some that are not Magistrates, nor are manifest Idolaters, Apostates, and Hereticks, though they be not putt to death by the Magistrate, to be debarred by these fancied or imaginary Presbyters.

Ans. 1. Erastus taketh ever for confessed, without any probition, that it is rebus usu, the right use of the holy things of God, that men with bloody hands use them, which is a most false principle, for he that killeth his children to Moloch, and that same day cometh into the Sanctuary of God, is to fare from the right use of the holy things of God, that the Lord faith expressly, his coming in in that condition to the Sanctuary & (faith the Lord) the profaning of my Sanctuary, Ezek. 23. 12. is this rebus usu Ceremoniarium? the right use of the holy things of God? It is not. 1. It is a forbidden use of holy things, Is. 1. 13. Mat. 7. 6. Mat. 5. 23. 2. It is a rebuked use of holy things, Ior. 7. 9. 10. 11. Nn. 66. 3. 3. It is a profaning of holy things, Ezek. 23. 38, 39. 4. It is such a use as bringeth damnation to the party that useth it, 1 Cor. 11. 27, 29. and it is all these quondam externa, in external things, 2. Erastus could yeeld they be debarred, but by the Magistrate, not by imaginary Presbyters. But all his Arguments, (as I shew before) doe prove they should be debarred a rebus usu, from the right use of holy things by no man, no more then they should be debarred from giving of alms, or reading the word, this is Erastus his owne Argument; I pray you may the Magistrate, or any on earth by any authority, inbibe a Mulatlass, or a Martyr, who ought to die by the Magistrate to read the Word.
to give almes, to pray for mercy to God, because he hath killed a man?
3. If hereticks, apostates, open idolaters are to be debarred, by
whom shall they be debarred: Erastus, pag. 207. thinketh they ought
not to be admitted to the Sacraments, who shall debar them? The
Magistrate, (faith he) But the Magistrate himselfe is the apostate,
the heretick, the idolater. 2. He that may debarre from the seals,may
admit to the seals; he that may do both, Ex Officio, is the formal
dispenser of the seals by office, that the Magistrate is not. He that
may put out, or take in into the house by supream power, is the
Lord of the house: He who by office may admit some to the Table,
and debarre other some, is the Steward. But the Magistrate is nei-
ther the lord of the Church, nor the Steward of the house, by offi-
cce. We do not hold this consequence; the Lord commanded ill
doers to be killed; Ergo, He ordained in that same command-
ment, that they be Excommunicated? Nor do we say all those who
were to be Excommunicated, were to be killed, as Erastus faith:
Nor that Excommunication in the New Testament succeedeth in
place of killing in the Old Testament; we see no light of Scripture
going before us in these.

Eras tus. It is a wonder that you say, that the godly Magistrate
doth procure the externall Peace of the Common-wealth, but not the
salvation of the subjects, that the Presbyters do only care for.

Ansf. The Sword is no intrinsecall mean of the saving of any
mans soul: It is true, the godly Magistrate may procure a godly
life; but as a cause removens impedimentum, removing idolatry, he-
refie, wolves and false teachers from the flock, and commanding
under the paine of the Sword, that Pastors do their duty. But
Christ ascending on high, gave Pastors and Teachers to gather a
Church; but not Magistrates armed with the Sword.

Eras tus. The Magistrates Sword is a most efficacious mean to bring
men to the knowledge of God, nothing more effectuall then affliction,
and the crosse, when right teaching is joyned therewith; examples,
teach us that in danger of death, men have seriously turned to God, who
before could be moved by no exhortations. But you say all die not in
the Lord, nor repent; nor (say I) do they all die in the Lord, who are
taken away by diseases, or are excommunicated; yea, Excommuni-
cation maketh many hypocrites.

Ansf. 1. Erastus here extolleth the Sword of the Magistrate, as

V u u 2
a more effectual mean to salvation, than exhortations of the Gospel: But I read that Pastors are the Ministers by whom we believe, and that they are workers with God, and fellow-builders; and Bishops to convert, edict to salvation, and beget men over again to Christ; 1 Cor. 3. 5, 9. 1 Cor. 2. 4, 15. Ambassadors of God. 2 Cor. 5. 20. Friends of the Bridegroom. 2 Cor. 11. 2. Joh. 3. 29. Angels, Rev. 2. 1. But I never read any such thing of the Magistrate, and that the Gospel is the power of God to salvation, Rom. 1. 16. The arms of the Lord. 1. Esay 53. 1. Sharpen them a two-edged sword, lively and mighty in operation, Heb. 4. 12. You never read any such thing of the Sword of the Magistrate, the rest are before answered.

Eras tus. Some may be changed in a moment, as the publican, Luke 18. Zac thus. The repenting woman, Luke 7. If therefore they profess repentance, they are not to be debarred from the Lords supper.

Ans. But it is true that; Those who may be changed and translated from darkness to light in a moment, and say, that they repent, are to be admitted to the Lords supper: I assume, But doggs and swine, and doggish and furius perfecutors, who are to be debarred from the Sacraments: As Eras tus faith, pag. 207. may be charged in a moment, and say they repent; Ergo, these are so to be admitted to the Sacraments, who are not to be admitted to the Sacraments, let Eras tus prove the Major proposition. 1. We find no such sudden change in the Publican, Zac thus, or the repenting woman, as Eras tus seemeth to insinuate. 2. Christ who knoweth the heart, and can change men in a moment, can at first welcome persons suddenly converted; Ergo, Must the stewards and dispensers of the mysteries upon a (may be) or a (may not be) reach the pearls of the Gospel to doggs and swine, whom they see to be such? It is a wide consequence, He that bringeth his gift to the Altar, may in a moment be changed; Ergo, He should not leave his gift at the Altar, and go and first be reconciled to his brother; He is presently without more ado to offer his gift, his heart is straightened in a moment, if we believe Eras tus. But the rather of this, that the man is in a moment changed: He is to be debarred, lest his scandalous approaching to use the holy things of God, make the work of conversion suspicious to others. 4. This argument presupposeth that unvisible conversion, giveth a man sight in for Eclesia, in the Churches court, to the seals of the Covenant, and so there should
should be no need of external profession at all, which is absurd.

Eras tus. Shall not these idolaters and apostates be debarred? as we (say he) deny an idolater and an apostate to be a Member of the Church of Christ; so we think the man that defendeth his wickedness, is not to be reckoned amongst the Members of the Church. And as we think the former are to be banished out of the society of Christians, so we think the latter are not to be suffered in that society.

Any. The Idolaters that make defection, and the apostate were once Members of the Church; what hath made them now no Members? Who should judge them, and cast them out? the Magistrate? I answer, there is no Christian Magistrate: If the Church must do it, here truly, is all granted by Eras tus, that he hath disputed against in six books, even this very Excommunication. But if there be a Christian Magistrate; what Scripture is there to warrant that he should cast out a Member out of Christ's body? Here is a Excommunication without precept, promise, or practice in the word; we read that the Church of Corinth congregated together, hath a command to judge, and cast out a scandalous Member, 1 Cor. V. 4, 5, 11, 12, 13. out from amongst the midst of them. Let Eras tus say as much from the New Testament, for his Magistral action casting out. 2. What reason is there by Eras tus his way, for casting out an idolater, and a man that defendeth his owne wickedness? 1. May not God convert those suddenly; as he did the thieve on the cross, and Saul? Ergo, They should not be cast out. 2. The Magistrate cannot more cut off those from being Members of Christ's body; then he can remove their faith and internall communion with Christ. Now for this cause Eras tus faith, the Church cannot Excommunicate. pag. 1. 2 Thess. 3, and 4. 3. Christ and the Apostles did neither cast out Idas, nor Scribes, Pharisees, or Publicans out of the Church, though they were worse than idolaters. 4. No helps of salvation are to be denied even to idolaters, and to men that defend their owne wickedness, but their remaining in the Church amongst the godly, is a helps of their salvation; and God inviteth them to repentance, and the staying in the Church; And the Sacraments are to Eras tus means of repentance, and this casting out must be to save them: for no power is given of God to the Magistrate or Church for destruction, but for edification: Now to put them out of the Church, that they may be saved, is as Eras tus conceiveth.
Idolaters and Apostates are to be, &c. Cap.XXII.

... so as to cast a lascivious Virgin out of the company of chaste Nuns, and she may preserve her chastity: I speak here all in the language of Erastus, who useth all those against casting any out of the Church, by Presbyters; but they stand with equal strength, against his casting out of idolaters and apostates out of the Church, and so do the rest of his Arguments: Therefore this conclusion of Erastus is a granting us the whole cause; after in six books, he hath pleaded none should be Excommunicated, be falleth on Deinominis Trescommunicatur, &c. when he had written six books against justification by faith.

Lastly, why should idolaters, apostates, and obstinately wicked men be excluded from the dispute of Excommunication and suspension from the Sacraments; for he knoweth that Boa, and Protestant Divines do make these the special, though not the whole subject of the dispute: Now Erastus concluding his six books, doth hereby profess he hath never faithfully stated the question, when he excludes those from the subject which questions, who especially heareth not the Church, and ought to be Excommunicated. Thus have I given an account, as I could, of the wits of Erastus, against the kingdom of the Lord Jesus.
CHAP. XXIII.

Of the power of the Christian Magistrate in Ecclesiastical Discipline.

QUEST. XIX.

Whether or not the Christian Magistrate be so above the Church in matters of Religion, Doctrine and Discipline, that she Church and her Guides, Pastors, and Teachers, do all they do in these, as subordinate to the Magistrate as his servants, and by his Authority? Or is the spiritual power of the Church, immediately subject to Jesus Christ only?

We know that Erastus who is refuted by Beza, Vroehogard, whom Ant. Walens Learnedly refuted, Maccovius opposed by the Universities and Divines of Holland, Vedelius Answered by Gn. Apolonius and others; and the Belgick Arminians in their Petition to the States, and Hu. Grotius against Sibundus Lubers. Divers Episcopal Writers in England do hold, that the Guides of the Church do all in their Ministry by the Authority of the Christian Magistrate: I believe the contrary: And 1. We exclude not the Magistrate who is a keeper of both Tables of the Law, from a care of matters of Religion. 2. We deny not to him a power to examine Heresies and false Doctrine: 1. In order to bodily punishment with the sword: 2. With a judgement not Antecedent, but Subsequent to the judgement of the Church, where the Church is constituted. 3. With
3. With such a judgement as concerneth his practice, lest he should in a blind way, and upon trust, execute his office in punishing Heretics, whether they be sentenced by the Church according unto, or contrary to the word of God as Papists dream. 3. We deny not, but the Prince may command the Pastor to Preach, and the Synod and Presbytery to use the keys of Christ's Kingdom according to the Rules of the Word: But this is but a Civil subject, though the object be spiritual: But the Question is not, 1. Whether the Christian Magistrate have a care of both Tables of the Law. 2. Whether he as a blind servant is to execute the will of the Church, in punishing such as they discern to be Heretics: we pray the Lord to give him eyes and wisdom in his Administration. 3. Nor thirdly, Whether he may use his coercive power against false Teachers, that belongs to the controversial concerning Liberty of Conscience. 4. The Question is not, Whether the Magistrate have any power of jurisdiction in the Court of Conscience, they grant that belongeth to the Preaching of the Word: But the Question is, touching the power in the external Court of Censurers. 5. The Question is not, Whether the power of exercising Discipline be from the Magistrate, I mean in a free and peaceable manner, with freedom from violence of men: we grant that power, and by proportion also, that exercise of Discipline is from him: But whether the intrinsic power be not immediately from Christ given to the Church: this we teach, as the power of slaying peaceably from danger of Pirates and Robbers is from the King; but the Art of Navigation is not from the King. But the Question is, whether the Magistrate by virtue of his office, as a Magistrate, hath supreme power to Govern the Church, and immediately as a little Monarch under Christ above Pastors, Teachers, and the Church of God, to judge and determine what is true Doctrine, what Heresie, to censure and remove from Church-Communion the Seals and Church-offices, all scandalous persons, and that if Pastors, or Doctors, or the Church, Teach or dispense censures, they do it not with any immediate subjection to Christ, but in the Name and Authority of the Magistrate, having power from the Magistrate as his servants and delegates?

To this we answer negatively, denying any such power to the Magistrate, and do hold, that the Church, and Christ's courts and
Assemblies of Pastors, Doctors, and Elders, hath this power one-
ly and immediately from Jesus Christ, without subordination in
their office, to King, Parliament, or any Magistrate on earth by
these Arguments. 1. Because in the Old Testament, the Lord di-
finguished two courts, Deut. 17. 8. If there arise a matter too hard
for thee in judgement, 10. Thou shalt come unto the Priests, the Le-
vities, and unto the Judge that shall be in those days, and inquire,
and they shall shew thee the sense of judgement. And thou shalt
doe according to the sentence, which they of that place (which the
Lord shall choose) shall shew thee, &c. There be here two Courts
clearly, one court of Priests and Levites that were Judges; anot-
er of the Judge: Now the King by virtue of his Kingly office,
might not usurpe the Priests office. 1. Zezziah was smitten with
Leprosie for so doing. 2. It is evident in Moses his writing, that
Aaron and his sons the Priests and Levites were separated for
the service of the Tabernacle, to teach the people, to carry the Arke,
to sacrifice, to judge the Leper, and to judge between the clean and
unclean, to put out of the camp, out of the congregation the un-
clean, and so admit the clean, Lev. 1. 7, 9, 12, &c. and 5, 8, and
7. 7. and 23. 3, 4, &c. 23. Numb. 5. 8, &c. and 18. 4, 5, 2 Chron. 29.
11. Thou shalt the Lord choose to stand before him, 1 Sam. 21. 1, 2.
Lev. 21. 1. 10th. 3. 8. 1 Kin. 8. 3. 1 Chron. 8. 9. 2 Chron. 5. 7. and
7. 6. and 81. 24. Zepp. 3. 4. Hag. 2. 11, 12. Mal. 2. 7. Deut. 10. 9. and
10. Psal. 112. 5. In Jerusalem there were set thrones of judgement, the
thrones of the house of David, Mat. 22. 21. Christ commanded to
give to Cesar the things that are Cesar's: and he in his own person
a Judge? and interdicted his Apostles thereof, Luke 22. 24, 25, 26,
and yet appointed for them a judicature of another kinda, Mat.
18. 15. Mat. 16. 19. 10th. 20. 21. 1 Tim. 5. 17. Heb. 13. 17. 1 Cor. 5.
and if any should deny that the Civil Magistrate had another
Court in which he judged, the Scriptures will refute him. 3. It
is evident that Iobobaphes did not institute, but restore those two
courts, 2. Chron. 19. 11. And behold Amariah the chiefe Priest is
over you in all matters of the Lord, and Zebadiah the son of Isma-
al. the ruler of the house of Indub, for all the Kings matters; never
any Brasian could satisfie either themselves or others, to shew us
XXX what
what were those two courts, so distinguished by their two sum-
dry Rulers. Amariah and Zobabiah, the one a Priest, the other a
Magistrate. 2. By the different formall objects, the masters of the
Lord, the masters of the King, and confounded they must be; if
the King and Ruler be a judge in the matters of God, except God
make him both a civill judge and a Prophet, as were Moses and
Samuel, which yet were differentiated when the God of order esta-
blished his Church in Canaan. The Church convenes for a Church
business, 1st. 18. 1. to set up the Tabernacle, but for a civill
business, to make war, the State conveneth, 1st. 23. 12. 15. 16. Indg.
21. 12. and 1st. 26. 8. there is the Church judicature discerning that
Jeremiah was a false Teacher, and they first judge the cause, and
v. 16. The Civill Judicature discerneth the contrary, and under
Zorababel, Ezra, and Nehemiah, they induced different judicatures;
Jesus Christ was arraigned before Caiaphas the High Priest
for pretended blasphemia, before Pilate the civill judge for trea-
sion, but Caiaphas was to determine only by Law, in questions jus-
tie whether it was blasphemia which Christ had spoken, but he
had no power by Gods Law to lead Witnesses or condemn Christ.
Nor is it true, that the Priests had their government solely about
Ceremonials, for they were to judge of Morall uncleanness also,
which even then debarred men from the holy things of God, as is
clear, Hag. 2. 13; Ezek. 44. 9, 10, 23, 34; and if any say that the
Magistrate amongst the Jews did judge of Ecclesiastical things,
and reformed Religion: We answer extraordinarily, the Magis-
trate might prophesie, and did prophesy, as did Samuel, Da-
vid, Solomon: Why do not Erastians bring those examples to
prove that Kings, Prophets, Judges, may now preach the Word,
and administer the Sacraments, which yet is unlawful to them by
Scriptures, for the examples of the Kings amongst the
people of old, yet no Protestant Divine
Pastors may also usurpe the civill Sword.
should object the case is not alike in the Jewis
Church, surely the King of the Church hath no inste
in as Paul and Barnabas for the Ministry now,
Rom. 1. 1, 2. Act. 1. And sent labourers to his vine-
yard, Luk. 10. 2. Matth. 20. 2. & 9. 37, 38. And Ambassadors to
Preach
Cap. XXIII. Q. 19 not subordinate to the Magistrate.

Preach in his Name, 2 Cor. 5. 20. Ministers of Christ, and Stewards of the mysteries of God, 1 Cor. 4. 1. Ministers of God, whose feet are pleasant for their good News, as were the Prophets of old, who were not only girt to preach, but instructed with Divine Authority, as is clear Rom. 10. 14. 15. Isa. 52. 7. & 40. 9. Neb. 1. 15. Yes, and men that feeds the flock, not only by Preaching, but also Govern the Church, so that they must take heed, that Ravening Wolves creep not into the Church, who shall not spare the flock, Acts. 20. 28. 29. Men who must be obeyed because they watch for our soules, Heb. 13. 17. And can govern the Church, as well as they are apt to teach, 1 Tim. 3. 5. 2. Men that labour amongst us, and are over us in the Lord, 1 Thess. 5. 12. And men who are to call to the work other faithful men that are able to teach others, 2 Tim. 2. 2. Such as are separated from the affairs of this life, such as Magistrates are not, 8 Cor. 6. 3. such as Rule well, 1 Tim. 5. 17. and are not to receive acusa- sions, but under witnesses, and are to lay hands suddenly on no man, not to call them to the holy Ministry till they be sufficiently tried, 1 Tim. 5. 19, 20, 22. all which import teaching and governing. Now. All these directions be given to Timothy and other Pastors till the end of the world; then must all these directions be principally written to the Magistrate as the Magistrate; and these Epistles to Timothy agree principally to the Christian Magistrate, and to Pastors and Doctors at the by, as they be delegates and substitutes of the Magistrates; and that, by office, the Emperor of Rome was to lay hands suddenly on no man, and commit the Gospel to faithful men who would teach others, and was not to receive an accusation against an Elder; and certainly, if the Magistrate call to office those that are over us in the Lord, and if those who watch for our soules; especially, but the curates and delegates of the King and Parliament, then the King and Parliament behaved in a more eminent manner to watch for our soules; for directions and commandments of God in this kinde, are more principally given to the Master, Lord, and chief Governor of the house of God, (if the Magistrate be such) then to the servants & delegates. But where is there any such directions given to the Emperor, King, or Christian Magistrate, by any shadow of ground in the Word? It is not much to say, The Magistrate was in the heaven & an enemy at this time, and therefore these could not be orien- gans to him. For 1. No force can strain these two Epistles to Timothy, and

The Epistles to Timothy and Titus must chiefly be written to the magistrates, if Pastors be but Ser- vants of the Magistrate.
and the other to 

Tism, which contain a form of Church-policy to any Christian Magistrate; for then the qualification of the King, if he be the Supreme Governor of the Church should far rather have been expressed, then the qualification of a Bishop and a Deacon, which is no where hinted at. 2. All these directions, notwithstanding this, do not must actus primo, agree to the Magistrate: for his office who is chief governor, &c what he should be is described in the Word. 3. When Christ ascended on high, he gave, as a fruit of his ascension, sufficient means for his intended end, The perfecting of the Saints, the gathering of his Body the Church, and the edifying thereof, even till we all meet in the Unity of the Spirit; and the knowledge of the son of God unto a perfect man, Eph. 4. Now neither in that place, nor in any other place, did Christ give a Magistrate for the edifying his Body the Church; but only those that are but his Delegates, Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, Teachers, if the Magistrate be the only Governor of the Church; and he who sendeth into the vineyard those who edifie the Body; the King should have been first in this role, as the only supreme gatherer, edifier and builder of the Church: It cannot be said The Raising Elder which he do omitted here, should not be the gift of Christ, given to edifie the Church; and by this in must be denied, thus the King the Nurse father of the Church; who is to take care that the Children be fed with the sincere milk of the Word, is given of God to edifie the Church, because he is not named here.

[The following text is unclear and difficult to interpret.]
the people, by the free election of the people; so is the Magistrate be called of God to teach and govern the Church, this calling of his should be in the Scripture, as his calling to the Throne or Bench is, Deut. 17. 14, 15, & 1. 15, 16. Rom. 13. Tit. 3. 1, 2. But in neither the Old nor the New Testament finde we any Prince or Ruler separated for the holy things of God, to be Priest, Apostle, Pastor, Prophet, Teacher by vertue of his office, as if he were a mixed person (as the Adversarie say,) No David is called to Sacrifice, no Constantine to preach and Administrate the Sacraments by vertue of the Magistrates place. 2. If any Reply, that the Christian Magistrate is a means ordained for that spiritual end, the gathering and edifying the Church, in regard he keepeth not only the second Table of the Law, and so promoteth not only the Temporal good of the State in promoting mercy and Justice only, but also in procuring spiritual good to the people in preserving the first Table of the Law. I Answer, That the Christian Magistrate doth both; but 1. Not directly by being the intrinsically means, in actibus eliciens, in elicite and intrinsically acts, promoting edification in both Tables of the Law, of which the Scripture speaketh, Eph. 4. 11. but a far other way: 1. In imperated and commanded acts extrinsically, as he doth command with the sword for Peace sake in all callings, in failing, trading, painting, &c. promoting it by carnally means by the sword, which belongeth not to the officers of Chrisst Kingdom. 2. Not necessarily, as the Pastors and Elders, without which Christ hath no external visible Kingdom on earth, whereas he hath had, & often hath a compleat flourishing external visible Kingdom without Magistrates: yea, where Magistrates have been open enemies to the Gospel. 3. Not directly the Magistrate doth this, but in so far as he admetteth (as Triglandius faith,) the Church of Christ within his State, which he may, and often doth refuse to do, and yet be a compleat Magistrate, and therefore the Magistrate may two ways procure the spiritual good of the Church: 1. By procuring that the Nurses give good and wholesome milk to the Church. 2. Per modum removendi prohibentis, which is also a cause, for he may save the flock from great temptations, when by his sword he driveth away the wolves from the flock. But not any of these bringeth the Magistrate within the list of the number of these intrinsically, 2. Necessary, 3. Spiritual gifts, which Christ ascending on high, 

The Church as such

Cap. XXIII. Q. 9.

gave for the Edifying of his Body the Church.

Arg. 3.

Two powers so different as spiritual and temporal: 2. As powers carnall of this world, and spiritual not of this world: And 3. Both immediately subject, the one to God the creator, the other to Christ the Redeemer and Head of the Church, and so coordinate, and supreme both of them in their own kind, cannot be so subordinate, as the temporal should be the supreme in the same kind, the spiritual the inferiour and subordinate. But these two powers are so different, as spiritual and temporal, carnall of this world, spiritual not of this world, the one subject as supreme immediately to God the creator, the other supreme immediately subject to God the redeemer; Ergo, Those powers of Governing are not so subordinate as the Temporal should be supreme, the spiritual subordinate to it.

The Major is undeniable, for it involveth a contradiction that two supreme coordinate powers should be two, not supreme, but subordinate powers: The same way I prove the Assumption.

1. The Magistrates power is supreme from God, Rom. 13. 1. The Powers that are of God, Prov. 8. By no Kings reigne, for no Ecclesiastical power, nor any power on earth, intervenes between God the Creator, and the power of the civill Magistrates; But God who giveth being to a society of men, because they are a society of reasonable men, hath given to them a power immediately from himself, to design such and such to be their Rulers: Shew us any higher power above the Magistrates, but God the creator making the civill power. Never man dreamt that the spiritual power of the Church doth intervene as an instrumental cause of the politick power. 2. By order of nature, a politick power is first: men are first men in naturall and politick society, ere they be in a supernaturall pollicy, or a Church; and Christ did not make a spiritual power by the intervention of a civill power. 2. The power of the two Kingdoms are distinguished by Christ, John 18. 36. Jesus answered, my Kingdom is not of this world, (then the power thereof is not of this World,) if my Kingdom were of this World, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Lewes. The one power is coactive by the Sword, the other free, voluntary by the Word. Erasmo had no reason to infer thence that Christs Kingdom is only internall and invisible,
invisible, not externall and visible, because Christ opposeth his King-
dom to a fighting Kingdom, using the sword to defend him from the
Jewes, that he should not be taken and crucified, as is clear in the
words, but he opposeth not his Kingdom to an externall visible
Kingdom, for his Church visible consisting of visible Officers is his
Kingdom, Eph. 4. 11, 12, 1 Cor. 12, 13, &c. The Word of the Kingdom
is audible, and it is visibly profess'd, and Ministers are visibly and
externally called to the holy Miniltery, by the laying on of the
hands of the Elders and voices of the People; but he opposeth
his Kingdom to a Kingdom fighting with the Sword, and using
the coactive power of the sword to save him from being apprehen-
ded and crucified by the Jewes: Now this is the Magistrates King-
dome, for be beareth not the sword in vain, Rom. 13, 4. and so Christ
evidently proveth in these words, that the power that beareth
the sword, which is the very essence of the Magistrates office as a
Magistrate, is not a part of his Kingdom, for his Kingdom is of
another World, and Spiritual; but the Magistrates power is of
this World, and useth worldly weapons, as the sword. Then it
is evident that the Magistrate as the Magistrate, 1. Is not subordi-
nate to Christ as Mediator and head of the Church. 2. That when
it was said, All power in heaven and earth is given to the Mediator
Christ: The sense cannot be, the power of the sword was given
to him as Mediator, to be a judge and a Ruler on earth, which he
refused, Luke 12, 13, 14. (though as God he hath the power of the
sword:) 3. That the suprem Magistrate as Magistrate is not the
onely Deputie, Delegate, and Vicar of Christ as Mediator; for
if Christ as Mediator have a substitute and Deputie, such as the
Magistrate as the Magistrate, who beareth his bloodie sword to
cut off the enemies of the Church, and to fight for Christ: then
1. Christs Kingdom surely should be of this World. 2. By the
same reason, since as Mediator he is Priest, and a High Priest to of-
fer a sacrifice to God, as all Priests must doe that are proper Priests
Heb. 8, 5, 6. 9, 7. 10, 14. 6. 10. 1, 2, 3. &c. there must be Priests
under Christ properly so called, to offer some bloodie sacrificial
satisfactorie for sinne, which is blasphemous to say, I meane proper
Priests; for otherwise in a figurative and borrowed sense, all be-
cleevers are Priests to offer themselves to God, Rom. 12. 1. Revel.
1. 5, 6. 3 Pts. 2. 9. but not the Deputies of the High Priest Jesus
Christ.
Christ, and by the same reason, he must have Prophets under him that are Vicars and Deputies, which is unpossible for Christ as Prophet and great Prophet, is essentially Lawgiver, and the Author of Canonick Scripture, and he who really by a supernatural power teacheth the heart, but so he hath no Deputies, nor any Ministers or Prophets, nor any under Law-givers, or under Prophets, which by an action or any active power communicated to them, can as under Lawgivers devise any part of Law or Gospel or any other part of Canonick Scripture, or have any active influence supernatural to make a new heart: Hence all our Divines say, Christ as Mediator and King of the Church hath no Deputies, neither King, nor High Priest, nor Pope, nor Saint. 4. It must follow, that the Magistrate who as Magistrate beareth the Sword, is not the head officer of the Church under the Mediator; for as Magistrate he must act with the sword, upon the Church as the Church, and the Ministers of the Gospel as they are such; whereas when the Magistrate doth act as Magistrate on the Ministers with the sword, he doth it on them as men erring and sinning: But onely so he procureth as a Magistrate the spiritual good of the Church as the Church, indirectly and by the sword, in driving away Hereticks and wolves from the flock.

Argument 2. That Church which is the pattern and rule to all the Churches unto the end of the world, in those things that belongeth to a Church, as a Christian Church, must be our rule and paterne in Government. But in the Apostolick Church of Jerusalem, Asia, Ephesus, Thessalonica, Corinth, Galatia, Philippi, Colosse, the seven Churches of Asia, planted and framed up as perfect Christian Churches, by the Apostles, the Magistrate was not the only supreme Governor of Churches; nor did the Apostles, Elders and Teachers in those Churches, nor the Church, act, preach, dispence the Sacraments, rule, govern as servants, under, and through, and from the Authority of the Magistrate or King, as his Vicars, deputies, and servants: But by immediate Authority from Jesus Christ placed in them without the intervening mediation of Magistrates; Ergo, that Church should be the pattern of our Church, though the adversaries deny the proposition, to wit, that the Apostolick Churches as Apostolick, should be our pattern in all things in regard that the Magistrate were then heathens & enemies to the Church and Gospel, and
and so de facto, actually, and by accident could not be the supreme officers and Governors of the Church; yet now, when we have Christian Magistrates, that are our fathers to the Church, and believers professing the Gospel, such as David, Solomon, Josiah, Jehoshaphat, and Ezekiah, and other godly Princes of Israel and Judah were, and therefore that the Church, as it is a General, both to the Jewish and Christian Church, should be our paterne in government; yet we have (though I say, they deny this Major) a great advantage of the adversaries in these. 1. We have the first Christian Church to be our paterne, and the New Jerusalem that came downe from Heaven, from God, Revel. 21. 10. The mother of us all, Gal. 4. 26. Which is builded upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himselfe being the chief corner stone, Eph. 2. 20. to be our rule and paterne, and all that was prophesiedal, though not completely in all the degrees of the Church of the Apostles, was then fulfilled, as touching the essence of a Church. 2. Yet here the Magistrate was no chief officer. 3. The adversaries must prove Moses, David, Solomon, and those godly Kings, as Kings and Magistrates, and virtuous officers, were supreme rulers and Church-officers, and so that Constantine, and all the godly Princes and Emperours, were, by vesture of their office, as Magistrates, as such Prophets, as were Moses, David, Solomon: for certainly, they as Prophets wrote Scripture, had the form and structure of the Temple revealed to them of God, received Laws from God for the Priests: if our Kings as Magistrates now can do the like, we shall then say something to their Headship over the Church. 4. And if they reformed Religion in the time of the defection of the Priests, when they were holy and zealous, and walked with God, and did right in the sight of the Lord like unto David, such as Jehoshaphat, Josiah, when the Priests were corrupt: we shall grant the like to Parliaments made up of Josiahs and Ezekiahs: when the Assembly of Divines are corrupt, Heterodox, and all the Pastors have corrupted their ways. 5. Civill punishing of Church-men when they are Heretical and scandalous, we heartily yield to Magistrates. But that Magistrates as such should Excommunicate and admit such to the Sacrament, and reject other such, and rebuke, or, that the Magistrate as the Magistrate, did of old judge between the clean and the unclean, cast out from the congregation and camp, and receive in
in, and so govern the Church, is altogether unwarrantable. Now the adversaries, as Erastus, grant that Idolaters, Apostates, and extremely profane men, are to be cast out of the Christian society, and not to be suffered there; and also that Dogs, and Swine, and Apostates, & persecutors, are neither to be admitted to hear the Word, nor partake of the Sacraments: So also Mr. Pryn, if Magistrates must cast them out of the Church by virtue of their office, and judge as Magistrates who are profane, and who truly hate God, and who are dogs and Apostates, who not, surely then Magistrates as Magistrates must discern between the clean and the unclean, as Priests of old, and must separate the precious from the vile, as the Prophets did of old, and so were the mouth of God, and must stand before the Lord, Jer. 15. 19. Then must Magistrates as Magistrates be Pastors called in the Pulpit as well as in the Throne, and the Bench, and that by virtue of their calling, which neither Erastus, nor the reverend Mr. Pryn will own. Now if the Elders of the Church, with the consent of the people, must cast such out of the Church, and from communion in the holy things of God, here is in expresse terms the very Ecclesiasticall Excommunication which Mr. Pryn denieth to be an Ordinance of God, and yet it must be commanded by Jesus Christ in these words, Matt. 7. 6. Give not holy things unto dogs, and therefore keep not in Church communion the profane, and (by the way) Mr. Pryn to me yieldeth the cause, and granteth that Excommunication and suspension from the Sacraments, doth both fall under this precept of Christ, Matt. 7. That which falleth under a command of Christ, to me is a Divine Ordinance. 2. He saith also, reasoning against care suspension from the Sacraments, Obstinate scandalous sinners make no conscience at all of receiving the Sacrament, and voluntarily suspend themselves therefrom, in case they be freely admitted to other Ordinances, it being only the total exclusion from the Church, and all Christian society (not any bare suspension from the Sacraments,) which worketh both shame and remorse in communicant persons, as Paul resolves; 1 Thess. 3. 14. 1 Cor. 5. 13. compared with 1 Cor. 1. to v. 10. 3. This is, in terminis, excommunication, proved from divers places of Scripture, for it is a total exclusion from the Church, and all Christian society, working shame and remorse; as Paul refelveth: We seek no more, Paul's resolution to us is a Divine right. Those
Those words of that Learned and Reverend man have (give me leave by the way to say, for I hope worthier than I am, do answer fully all he hath laid in this subject) all that we crave. For 1. obstinate men will voluntarily suspend themselves from the Sacrament: Ergo, the Church should not suspend them only, but also excommunicate them; I grant all, if they be obstinate, they are to be not only suspended, but also excommunicated; Ergo, they are not sole and only to be suspended, Pro bono, for this time; it followeth no waies, all that this Reverend Lawyer faith against sole suspension from the Sacrament of an obstinate offender, is nothing against us; if he be obstinate, he is not only to be suspended from the Sacrament, but also if he goe on in refusing to hear the admonitions of brethren, and of the Church, he is to be excommunicated: Ergo, he is not first, bene vice, to be suspended from a confirming Ordinance given to those only who are supposed to have the life of faith, and can onely eat and drink spiritually and by faith the body and blood of Christ; It followeth not. I thinke Mr. Pryn would not have Hereticks and Apostates suddenly and at the first totally (as he faith) excluded from the Church, and all Christian society, sure we owen some gentlenes and patience even to them, if God peradventure may give them Repentance to scape out of the snare of the Devil, 2 Tim. 2. 24.25.26. yet if an Heretick and Apostate that same day that the Lords Supper were to be celebrated should deny the Resurrection, and Jesus Christ to be God blessed for ever, and not equal with the Father, nor consubstantial with him, and withall should that same day have offered his childe to Molech, and yet profess his desire to come to the Lords Supper, professing he had trespassed and examined himselfe, and his desire to come to eat and drink with Jesus Christ the great Prophet of his Church; Would not Mr. Pryn thinke he should not be admitted to the Lords Supper, and yet that he should not totally be excluded from the Church, and all communion from the Church and holy things of God? I should think if he cannot be presently excommunicated, yet he should not be admitted to the Sacrament, for sure he cannot but be in a doggish and swinish disposition in one degree or other: And my reason is, he is as Erastian faith, non recte institutus, not rightly instructed, but heterodoxe, and so cannot try and examine himselfe;
while he be better principled in the faith: so a suspension for a time from the Lords Supper, and en natura rei, without toall exclusion from the Church and all Christian society, were as necessary, (whether the Magistrate or Church suspend, I dispute not now) as a degree of punishment, or a preventing of eating of damnation is necessary his & mine: O, but faith Master Primm, Christ knew that Judas was worse than an hare-stick, and yet he denied not to admit him to the Supper; Ergo, though we knew such a one, the Sacrament, being a subversive Ordinance, it followeth not that we should debarre him from the Sacrament.

Q. Whether Judas did eat the Supper of the Lord, or not, I think nothing of the matter; only Master Primm hath duram provinciam, and a very hard task to prove it from Scripture. If I were to examine his book, I should deny his consequences from the Evangelists, for not any of them can prove that Judas did communicate at the last Supper. But, 1. Christ's example in this being an act of Christ, as God, permitting the greatest hypocrite on earth, is no rule to the Church to give the Lord's Supper to Judas; First, Judas was visibly and infallibly to Christ, a man who deferred to be totally excluded out of the Church and all Christian society, and to Christ a knowne traitor, a Devil, an hypocrite; Ergo, as Christ did not exclude him out of the Church; neither should the Saints now exclude from their society; nor should the Christian Magistrate (as Erasmus and Master Primm thinketh) exclude Judasses and knowne traitors, and knowne Devils, and knowne children of the Devil out of the Church; this is to Erasmus and Master Primm both absurd. 2. Christ did eat and drink with Judas knowing him to be all these; Ergo, we may eat and drink with knowne traitors also, the contrary is a truth. 1 Cor. 5. 9, 10, 11. 2 Thess, 3. 14, 15. Rom. 16. 17: evident enough. 3. Christ preached the Gospel to those that he knew sinned against the Holy Ghost, to the Pharisees who persecuted Christ to death and others. Matt. 12. 31, 32, 33, 34. Job. 15. 22, 23, 24, 25. Job. 7. 28, 29. Job. 12. 35, 36, 37, 38. Job. 10. 31, 32. Job. 11. 47, 48. and this is by the exposition of Erasmus de Scipio Pag. 307, 308, and Master Primm his vindication, pag. 38, 39. To give holy things to dogs: so Mr. Primm saith, that by dogs and swine, are meant only such infidels and heathens, who refuse to immubriate and believe the Gospel, or harbour the preachers of
(of which the text is principally intended) as well as the Sacraments, or of such open contemners, persecutors of the Gospel and Ministers, who runne upon and tear the preachers thereof, trampling the ears of the Gospel, and the renderers of them under their feet, as the text resolves in terminis, Mat. 7.6. Mat. 10, 14, 15. Luk. 9, 5. Act. 3, 46. or open Apostates. 2. Pet. 1, 2, 21, 22, &c. hence by this we may give the pearls of the Gospel to such dogs as the Pharisees, or to them Christ rendred the pearl of the Gospel. 4. Christ might have hindered, being God equall with the Father, the Pharisees and Jews to malice him; Ergo, he being above the Lawes that he gives to us, doth not in this example warrant us to cast the pearls of the Gospel to such as we know to be Judases, Pharisees, and malicious haters and heart-murtherers of Christ. 2. There is not the like reason of preaching the word, and dispensing the seals. 1. Because the word is a converting ordinance out of question, and preached to heathen and to the non-converted, though they refuse to imbrace and believe the Gospel, and refuse to entertain the preachers of it: as is clear, Act. 19, 22, 23, 24, 25. Tit. 1, 10, 11, 12, 13. 2 Tim. 3, 25, 26, 27. The Texts that Master Prinne addeth, that the Gospel should not be preached to heathen who refuse to imbrace and believe the Gospel, to wit, Mat. 10, 14, 15. Luk. 9, 5. Act. 13, 46. are to no purpose, for Mat. 10, Luk. 9. is but a Temporary Commandement, given for a time, that the Disciples should depart from those houses of Indea (there is nothing of the heathen; But by the contrary the Apostles are forbidden to go to Samaritanes or Gentiles at all, Mat. 10, 5, 6;) who would not receive the peace of God in the Gospel, which precept the Apostles in the story of the Acts, did not observe; but preached the Gospel to many heathen who refused to imbrace and believe the Gospel: As Act. 16, and 17, and 19, 2. The place, Act. 13, 15. is meant of the blaspheming Jews, to whom Paul preached long after they persecuted and stoned the Prophets, and had killed the Lord of life, Act. 2, and 4, and 8, and 9. Mat. 23. 37, 38, 3. Those places are to better colour of purpose brought by Arminians, and Socinians to prove, that the Gospel is preached to people for their good entertainement thereof, and denied to others for their unworthinesse, and because they will not welcome it; So the Arminians in the conference at Hague, pag. 87, 88, 89. God sendeth the Gospel not according to his absolute will, sed ob alias causas, in hominibus.
mine latenses, for secret causes in man. Arminius against Perkins, p. 199. The will of God in sending the Gospel, hath causes in the will of man according to that, habenti dabitur. So Corvinus ad Wallachius, p. 44. Socinus Comment. in 1. Epist. Ioh. c. 4. p. 307. faith the same: and Mr. Prym is pleased in the same sense to cite them, I conceive imprudently, for I believe that Reverend and learned men doth hate those impious Sects, the Enemies of this grace of God; but truly if this be a rule to Pastors to spread the Gospel, that they are to offer and give the pearl of the preached Gospel to those that willingly receive it, and harbour the preachers, and presently to depart and preach no more the word of the Kingdom to those who refuse it, as the places Matt. 10. 14. & Luke 9. 5. carry that sense, because they are Heathens who refuse to embrace and believe the Gospel, and harbour the Preachers, as (the worthy Divine faith,) conceiving that to be a casting of Pearles to Dogs and Swines. I see not how the Preachers & Spreaders of the Gospel to the Heathen, are to believe that God out of mere grace, & the good pleasure of his will, without respect to good or bad deserving, sendeth the Gospel to some, and denieth it to others. 3. Though the Sacrament of the Supper be a converting Ordinance in this sense, that it corroborateth faith and conversion, where it was once, and so applyeth the Promises to one who before believed, yet it is not a converting ordinance, that is to be administered to one dead in sins and trespasses, as the word is, for then at the first Sermon that ever is preached to a Heathen, if he should say, though for base & worldly ends known to the Church that he desired to have the Sacraments, we are obliged to believe that he sincerely desireth these Seals, and instantly at the same sermon to baptize him, & administer the other Seal of the Lords Supper to him: for how can we deny converting Ordinances to those who desire them? say our adversaries. 4. An ordinance that cannot be dispensed to a Heathen, remaining a Heathen, and to an unconverted man knowne to be an unconverted man, is not an Ordinance that ought to be dispensed, as the ordinance of the Word, and as the first converting ordinance, to so many as we may safely dispense the Word unto, and if it be first a converting ordinance, as the preaching of the Word is; then it is to be dispensed to all those to whom we are to preach the Word; but Baptism and Mr. Prym grant, we may preach the Word to Heathen
then remaining Heathen, and if they deny it, (as they yeld it) the Apostles did preach the Gospel to the Heathen remaining Hea-
then, but they never admitted, nor can we admit to the Lords Sup-
ner Heathen remaining Heathen, nor could the lawes upon the same
ground, admit to the Pess over the uncircumcised: now then the
preaching of the Word to some cannot make the Church and pre-
achers guilty of casting pearles to Swine, and of partaking of their
sin, whose bearing is not mixed with faith; and yet if the Church
and Ministers should admit to the Sacraments Heathen remain-
ing Heathen, they should prostitute holy things to Dogs, and be
guilty of an Heathen mans eating of his owne damnation: Hence
this Affterion of Mr. Pryme must be a great mistake, That Vin-
dication Ministers may as well refuse to preach the Word to such unex-
communicated, grosse, impensent, scandalous Christians, whom they
Would suspend from the Sacrament, for fear of partaking with them
in their sinne, as to administer the Sacrament to them, becausether-
he) unprofitable bearing is as damning a sinne, as unworthy recei-
ving of the Sacrament: 1. Because there is and may be discovered
to bee in the congregation, persons as unworthy as Heathen, such
as Simon Magus, yes, latent Indassers, Parricides, who are in the
visible Church while God discover their hypocritisie; but we may
lawfully preach the Word to men as incapable of the Word as
Heathen, and as unworthy; as Christ and the Apostles did, who
did not controversie that, Cast not Pearles to Swine, yet we cannot
give the Sacraments to men knowne to be as scandalous, unca-
pable, and unworthy as Heathen; but we must prostitute holy
things to Dogs, and partake of their sinne; for this is now cause pro-
causa, that Mr. Prym bringeth, to say we may as well refuse to
preach the Gospel to scandalous impenitens, as to administer the
Sacrament, without partaking of the sinnes of either, because unpro-
fitable bearing is as damning a sinne, as unworthy receiving the Sup-
per; This Because is no cause: it is true, they are both damnable
sinnes, but how proveth he that Preachers partake equally of both?
I can shew him a clear difference which demonstrateth the weak-
ness of this connexion. 1. Unprofitable bearing of the Gospel in
a Heathen is as damning a sin, as hypocritical receiving of the Sac-
rament is a sinne, they are not equalia: pessata, but sure they are
aequ-pessata; but I may preach the Gospel to a Heathen, and
not
not partake of his sin of unprofitable hearing, for I may be com-
manded to preach to a Heathen remaining a Heathen, as Paul
preached to Felix, to the scoffing Athenians, to the persecuting Jews,
and giving obedience to the command of God, freeth me from
partaking of his unprofitable hearing; But I cannot administer the
Lords Supper to an Heathen remaining a Heathen, without sharing in his sin; and suppose a Heathen remaining a Heathen would croud in to the Lords Table, as of old many Heathen fained themselves to be Jews, desiring to serve the time, 1 Sam. 14. 21. yet I should partake of the Heathens unworthy receiving, if knowing him to be a Heathen serving the time, and crouding in amongst the people of God, I should administer the Lords Supper, because I have no command of God to administer the Lords Supper to a Heathen man, nor could Paul administer the Sacrament to the scoffing Athenians, or to Felix, without taking part with them in their prophaning of the Lords Table. 2. The necessity of preaching the Word, it being simply necessary to the first conversion of a sinner, putteth Pastors in a case that they may, and ought to preach the Gospell to Heathen, and to thousands knowne to be unconverted without any participation of their unprofitable hearing, and the non-necessity of the Lords Supper, or the Scale of the Covenant, and the nourishing of their souls to life eternall, who visibly and to the knowledge of those who are dispensers of the Sacrament, proflane, and abominably wicked, putteth those same dispensers in a condition of being companions with them in the prophaning of the holy things of God, if they dispense the bread to those that are knowingly dead in sinnes, the Gospell may be taught in Catechisme to Children, Deut. 6. 6. 7. 2 Tim. 3. 15. Exod. 12. 26, 27. Gen. 18. 19. Prov. 22. 6. because there is a necessity they be saved by hearing, Rom. 10. 14. 1 Cor. 1. 23. but there is no necessity, but a command on the contrary, that the Lords Supper be dispensed to no children, nor to any that cannot examine themselves, and they may be saved without the Sacrament, but not ordinarily without the Word; nor were it enough to forwarne Apostates, and persecutors, and Hypocrickall heathen, and children, that if they eate unworthily they eate their owne dam-
nation, as Mr. Prym faith, and yet reach the Sacrament to those, for the dispensers then should cast Pearls to some Dogs and Swine
contrary to Mat. 5. 6. and they should be free of the guilt in polluting of holy things, if they should give them a watch-word, say they were about to prophane the holy things of God, before they committed such wickedness. Nor do we as Mr. Pryn faith, nor know we, or the Scriptures any such distinction, as sealing externally to the senses of any receiving the Lords Supper, lawfully divided: (sinfully it may be divided, but there is no Law for sinne, no print, no authority of men for it,) from the internall sealing, nor heard we ever of two sorts of conversion, one externall from Paganisme to the externall profession of the faith, wrought extraordinary by Miracles without the Word, and ordinarily by Baptisme in Infants; and another internall from formall profession, to an inward embracing of Christ and his merits. 1. Because the Stewards and Ambassadors of Christ, may not dare to play with the Sacraments as children doe with nuts, to seal to mens senses and fancies Christ and spirituall nourishment in him, and part in his body broken and blood shed, in those who visibly have nothing of faith to their discerning, and of the life of Christ, but only senses and fancies, such as all visibly and notoriously scandalous walking after the flesh, all Heretics, Apostates, knowne and unwathen Hypocrites have, and no more. 2. All heathen and unbaptized have senses, and are capable of externall washing, and externall and Sacramentall eating, as well as others are, but are they capable of the Seals, because they have bodies to be washed, and teeth and stomacke to eat Sacramentally? And have Ministers warrant enough to dispense the Sacraments to all that have senses? But they must be within the visible Church also, ere they be capable of Sacraments, Mr. Pryn will say; but I aske by what warrant Mr. Pryn alledged that the Supper of the Lord is a converting ordinance as well as the Word, and that Pastors may without sinne dispense the Sacraments to those to whom they preach the Word, but they may preach the Word to Heathen remaining Heathen; Ergo, may they dispense the Lords Supper to Heathen remaining Heathen? What more absurd? yet, remaining Heathen, they are as capable of Mr. Pryn his sense-sealing, and sense-converting Sacraments, as any sound beleever. 3. A sealing to the senses cannot be divided from the inward sealing by the Spirit; neither in the intention of God, for the externall sealing without the internall is Hypocrifie, and
God cannot intend Hypocrisie, nor can this division be in regard of the nature of the Sacrament, for it doth seal to us our spiritual nourishment in Christ, except we sinfully separate the one from the other, and sin is no ordinance of God. 4. What word of Christ hath Mr. Pryn for extraordinary conversion of men by Miracles without the Word? He must conceive with Arminians and Socinians, that many are converted that never heard of that precious name of Jesus, without which there is no salvation, Acts 4. i.r. or of a faith in Christ, as Moses Amyraldus dreameth, without the knowledge of Christ, and may write books de salutis Ethnocorum, for this external conversion doth lead of its own nature to internall conversion and salvation: This may make us fancy somewhat of the salvation of Aristotle, Seneca, Cicero, Aristotle, Scipio, Regulus, without the Law or Gospel, this way of extraordinarily saving men by Miracles without the Gospel, is the doctrine of Arminians and Socinians; so say the Arminians at the Synod of Dort, pag. 334, 335. Those whom God hath deprived of the Gospel, he hath not precisely rejected them from a communion of the benefits of the Gospel. Adolphus Venator, adver. Duceasios p. 84. Faith, The heathen are saved without the Gospel, if they can but pray, Ens Entium mei, Socinus proferit. Thiel. c. 3. telleth us of an inspired word that saveth us, called verbis interimis. You may please Schoolmen thus, such as Granatus Contr. 8. de grat. tract. 6. dist. 1. numh. 43. did. Ruiz, de Predicati. se. 8. nomb. 7. Alexand. Alen. 8. p. 9. 69. memb. 5. art. 3. De bonis Philosophis sc credo, sec. Roro. lib. 1. De Providente. quест. 7. n. 50. Vega lib. 13. in Tridents. cipt. 12. Enriquez. Tom. 2. De ultimo fine, c. 14 numh. 6. quodl. lib. 8. quест. 5. Valdez, par. dist. 97. and c. 5. Soto lib. 1. de nat. & grat. c. 18. ad. 2. Franciscus. Sonnus in demonstrat. Tract. 12. de consiliis c. 8. Camerarius lib. 1. de gra. c. 8. & lib. 7. c. 8. who doe all of them send all the good Philosophers and write Morallists to heaven by Miracles, inspirations, extraordinary works of providence, and that without any rumour of Christ and the Gospel; famous Papists to their own shame, yea all that Divine faith cannot be produced by Miracles. Andadius saith oft when they may be false. Maldonatius saith, That no necessary argument of faith can be drawn from Miracles. Gregorius de Valen. saith, Miracles give us no infallible certainty.
certainty of Doctrine. Bellarmine faith, Miracles cannot convince the mind. Durandus giveth a sure reason why miracles cannot produce faith; Because (saith he) suppose it were known of it self, that this miracle of the raising e. g. of Lazarus were true, yet it is not known by it self, that it satisfieith that this is a true Doctrine which be preacheth who worketh the miracle. Mr. Prynne then hath put the Salvation of those who never heard the Gospel upon extraordinary Pillars, when he bottometh them on miracles without the word, which are extraordinary rotten Pillars.

5. The Lords Supper, of which we now dispute, is not the mean of our first conversion, from formal profession, to inward embracing the Gospel: For the word must go before, and not simply the external letter of the word; but the word first believed and received by the efficacious working of the holy Ghost: And so the word is indeed the first converting Ordinance; and so the Lords Supper is given to one who already believes, and the Sacrament concurreth as a mean to make good, corroborare, and increase the conversion which was before. Mr. Prynne might have spared his pains in proving, that the Lords Supper is a converting Ordinance, because it applieth Christ to us: we grant it to be a converting, and quickning, and lively applicatory Ordinance: But how? He may know that what ever Ordinance addeth a new degree of Faith of conversion, of saving application of Christ and the Promises, must be a converting Ordinance: But it is so converting, that it is a confirming Ordinance; and necessarily it presupposeth Faith and conversion already wrought by the word; it is not a first converting Ordinance, such as is the word; but as nourishing or accretion is a sort of vitall generation in the body of a growing childe, so as Physicians make nutrition in children to be Aggregation, or, Congeneration, or a vitall generation with, or in the body, and it presupposeth the first generation, by which life is given to the childe; now nourishing doth not give life, things void of life are not capable of nourishing; therefore nourishing is the continuing of life, and as it were propagated and continued generation: so here, Sacrament: all eating by faith, is a spirituall feeding and nourishing of the soul on the crucified Lords body broken, & his blood shed, it is not the act of our first conversion: Regeneration is sealled in Baptisme, and Christ given as sealing and confirming Regeneration; but the Lords Supper is that
that which exhibiteth Christ to us as food, and sealeth our spiritual growing and coalition in Christ: I say not this, as if the Church could give the Supper of the Lord to none but such as are inwardly and really regenerated, but to shew that the Church taketh such as are externally called, to be internally called when they dis pense this Supper to them; & that they are nearer Christ then those that hear the Gospel (which Heathen may do) ere they can be admitted to the Supper. And this Erast, every where, and Mr. Pryn, in terminis teach when they say, That those that are recte instituti, rightly instructed, who earnestly desire the Lords Supper, profess sincere Repentance, and promise amendment, are only to be admitted to the Sacrament, and those only excus’d who are convicted to be grosse and scandalous, and obstinate offenders. Whence it is clear they profess Repentance, and to the Church they are converts, who are to be admitted to the Supper before they come to the Lords Supper: Now this must be done by the word, preached, and received by faith in profession; Ergo, this Supper in the Church-way, cannot be dreamt to be a mean of their first conversion, far less is foro Dei, in Gods court, can men first receive the Lords Supper having never heard the word, and then be converted, in foro Dei, really, and inwardly, by receiving the Lords Supper; then might the Sacrament, before and without the word, be given, if it be a converting Ordinance belonging to all to whom the word belongeth: For Mr. Pryn, saith, It can be damned to none within the visible Church. And what reason, if it be not the first converting Ordinance, but that it may be administered to those that never heard the word, and are Members of the visible Church? And by this Mr. Pryn cannot deny, but the Lords Supper should be dispensed to infants and children, who cannot try themselves, nor yet discern the Lords Body: Yea, those that are convicted of obstinacy in scandalous sins, are Members of the Church; for how could they be judged, convicted and sentenced, if they be not within? 1 Cor. 5. 12. Ergo, their being Members of the Church, is not enough to admit them to the Lords Supper, except they be to the Church otherwise qualified and fitted for it: And this doth clearly evidence, That the word of the Kingdom may, & ought to be Preached to many within the Church, that they may be converted to whom the Supper is not to be dispensed, that they may be converted, which is enough for our point to exclude pro-
promiscuous admission of all to the Supper: and to prove some other qualification must be requisite, in those that come to the Supper before the Ministers, (without violation of the holy things of God, and being guilty of not distributing at night) can administer the Supper to them; and this is another visible qualification then is requisite in those that hear the word: For Erastus and Mr. Prynne require, That all that come to the Supper be rightly instructed. 2. That they promise amendment of life: But they cannot say, none are to be admitted to hear the word, while they be qualified thus; you exclude the ignorant from the Sacrament, do you exclude the ignorant from hearing the word? Farther, I desire to be resolved, why Erastus and his require any qualification at all in the one, more than in the other, according to their way: For suppose persons Baptized be only negatively blameless, and not visibly scandalous; yet Erastus and Mr. Prynne cannot deny the Supper to such. Suppose they know not whether they be as ignorant of God as Indians, and suppose they promise no amendment, and do positively profess no repentance at all: 1. Ministers can deny no converting Ordinances to persons, because ignorant; for if the Supper of the Lord be a converting Ordinance, it shall convert men from their ignorance; and an Indian ignorant of Christ, ought to be Baptized, to the end, that Baptism may convert him from his ignorance. Now I think our Brethren cannot say this, and therefore they must yield, that Ministers dare not admit all within the Church to the Seals, except they would be guilty of their sin, in eating to themselves damnation; and yet they dare not debar the ignorant within the Church from hearing the word, and so are no way companions with them in the sin of unprofitable hearing. 2. Mr. Prynne may here see some ignorants debarred from the Lords Supper; yet I hope he would not be so rigid as to Excommunicate all ignorants, because ignorant: the most rigid Novatians would, condemn that: and hence is sole suspension without Excommunication, which Mr. Prynne saith is not to be found in all the word of God.

I wondered much when I read those words of the learned and reverend Master Prynne: That God, who bestoweth no Ordinances on men in vain, must intend in instituting the Supper, that visible most all unregenerate Christians, may be converted thereby, as well as real Saints be confirmed: to which I reply: 1. Neither word nor Sacra-
Sacraments, nor any thing on the part of the Almighty can be intended in vain, though the end of the Ordinance be not obtained, I should have expected some such divinity from the pen of Arminians and Socinians, who make God to intend the salvation of all, and every one in both the promises of the Gospel, precepts and Sacraments, and yet he falleth from this end: so you may read, in Arminius Anti-Perkins, pag. 60. that God is disappointed in his end, in both Law and Gospel, and God shooting beside his mark misseth the salvation of many, say the Remonstrants at the Synod of Dort, pag. 216. and in their confession, c. 7. sect. 3. and because Socinus thought it hard thus to take from God wise intentions; he did no less than blasphemously deprive him of his omniscience: So Socinians contra pacium, c. 10. and in prelectionib. Theolog. c. 11. made all things that are contingently to come, uncertain to God: But if you speak of intension operu, non operans, that the Supper, in its nature, is ordained (this may rather be your meaning) that mortal men like Cicero, and Seneca, and Jude, and the like, (for all are alike in regard of the nature of the ordinances, and of that which is the genuine intention of God, but of this Sacrament) then you speak not of the Supper as divided from the word, but as the word going before the Sacrament hath converted the man, and the Sacrament following doth add to and confirm in grace. So, Sir, you depart from the question, for we grant that the Sermon going before in the same day of the celebration of the Supper, may, and doth convert; and thus if an Indian heare a Sermon, to which the celebration of the Supper is annexed, if he be converted by that Sermon (as you teach the heart in those, is only knowne to God, the Church is not to judge) he may forthwith, ere he be baptised, come at the same time to the Lords Supper, which were much precipitation, little speed, and so the word formally converteth, not the Sacrament; But if you mean that the Sacrament formally, as the Sacrament is of its nature a mean of converting a morall Seneca, you mistake the nature of the Seal, very farre, God never intended that food as food should give life to the dead, the Supper as the Supper is spiritual food, and presupposeth the eater hath life, and how gate he life but by the word of God? 2. Doth the Sacrament as the Sacrament humble or speak one word of the Law? doth the Sacrament say any thing here, but Christ died for thee, O Seneca, and
and there is a pledge of his love in dying for thee; and she like it
speaketh to Judas, as Master Prinne thinketh, and can this convert
a morall man never yet humbled for sinne? But I have gone thus
out of the way in this purpose, I returne and desire pardon for this
digression, not (I hope) fruitless at this time.

If the Magistrate be the chiefe Church officer, how is it that the
Church was without Christian Magistrates in the Apostles time?
then is there no exact patern of a Christian Church, what it
should be, de jure? hath Christ in the New Testament not moulded
the Church, the second temple in all the dimensions of it, as Moses,
David, Solomon, did by immediate inspiration shew us the measure
of the first Tabernacle, Sanctuary, and Temple? finally should Cæs-
ar, suppose he had been a Christian, have received imposition of
hands from the Elders, as his deputies the Ministers do? and be
over the Church in the Lord as King? and receive accusations
against Elders, ordaine Elders in every Church, put out and cast
out the unworthy? only for the iniquity of the time, Ministers were
forced to do these? Erasius and his have not one word of Scripture
for this, or were the keys of the Kingdom of heaven given to Cæ-
sar? and because Cesar was without the Church, therefore Peter
received them, Matth. 16. while Cesar should be converted; what
Scripture have we for this? for to rule the Church as the Magis-
trate doth, is an act of the Magistrate performed by power of the
sword: Whether the Magistrate do rule in his owne person, or by
his deputies and servants; Ergo, the Apostles governing the
Church medled with the sword, which Christ forbade; Luk. 22. 25,
now in the exercise of discipline do usurpe the sword; Yea, if they
be the deputies of the Magistrate in dispensing word and Sacra-
ments, they must use the Magistrates sword as Ministers of the Gos-
pel; for what servants do in the name of the suprem swordbearer,
that the swordbearer must principally do by the servants, so Minis-
ters by this use both swords.

5. That the Magistrate cannot be the chief officer of the Church
is thus proved, he who is subject himself to heare the Church; and
to submit to those that watcheth for his soul, and to be put out from
amongst the midst of the Church; if he be scandalous, is not the
principlall Governour and head of the Church to command all:
But
But all Christians, and so the Christian Magistrate is such, for if God accept not the persons of men, those places, Matt. 18. If he bear not the Church, &c. Heb. 13. 17. and 1 Cor. 5. 1, 2, 4, 12, 13. mustые the Christian Magistrate, except God haveexcepted him; but God hath no where excepted the Magistrate, But as David had God, Nathan and other Seers; so the Magistrates now have some to watch for their souls. The proposition is proved, because if the Magistrate be supreme to command Elders as Elders, both in Doctrine and discipline, and in all Ecclesiastical censures, then the Magistrate as the Magistrate cannot be under the Elders and Ministers as such, for that involveth a contradiction; that Pastors as Pastors should watch over the souls of Magistrates that they err, and oppose not in judgement, and that the Magistrate as Magistrate should be over the souls of Pastors to watch for them in the same kind; if any object that the Pastors as Pastors have souls, and therefore they must have some to watch for their souls, and therefore can neither be supreme, nor excepted in those places, Matt. 18. Heb. 13. 1 Cor. 5. It is answered by granting all of this or this single Pastor, but not of the whole company; for when they err, we know not a whole communicat over them, but those of the Catholick visible Church; and if they err, the Kings of the earth here may command them to do their duty under paine of heavily censure, and punish them: But none are above them to watch for their souls, that we know; but they by office, watch both for their owne souls, and for the souls of others, even as the King governeth himselfe and the people both politically.

Argum. 6. 6. Whatever power in matters of Christ's Kingdom or the Government thereof, the Magistrate hath, that must be given of Christ, who only can appoint Elders and officers over his owne house, but no where in Scripture find we any such power given to the Magistrate; Ergo, we are to believe he hath not any such power. The proposition is true, because Christ being a perfect Law giver and King, doth give Lawes for his owne house, as particularly as Moses did for every severall pinnace in the Lords Tabernacle, and David and Solomon for the Temple: the assumption I prove 5, because the Government of Christ's house is spiritually, as the weapons of their warfare are not carnally, 2 Cor. 6. 5. and it is in binding and loosing, forgiving and retaining sinnes, by the power of the keys of the Kingdom
Kingdom of God given to the Church, and to such as are first, as the Rabbins say his Son Christ; Matt. 18. 18. & 16. 19. Job. 20. 22, 23. But Magistrates as Magistrates do punish sinner with the sword, Rom. 13. 4. but not forgive sin, nor bind and loose in earth or heaven, nor exercise any spiritual power, nor deal with the conscience of men, so more than they cure the diseases of the body, though indirectly and externally they take care that there be physicians who can cure diseases.

The power of governing the Church is the supreme power under Christ, which can say to the Magistrates power, we must obey God, rather than man: But no such supreme power agree to the Magistrate as Magistrate; For Ministers as Ambassadors of Christ, can and may preach, bind and loose, Rebuke, Excommunicate according the will of the Magistrate, though he command the contrary, as Prophets have rebuked Kings, Jer. 1. 18. & 22. 1, 2. 3 Sam. 12. 7. 8. 1 King. 24. 18. 19. Mark. 6. 17. 18. The Magistrate as the Magistrate can do none of these; nor hath he power to command the Ministers of Christ by way of privation; but only by way of commutation he may command them to do their duty, and to preach the Gospel speedily, and forbid and punish the preaching of false doctrine the same way.

Whatever power Christ hath given to his Church, that the Christian Magistrate, when he becomes Christian, cannot take from the Church. But Christ gave to the Churches of Jerusalem, Antioch, Ephesus, Corinth, to the seven Churches of Asia, &c. a full power to dispense the Word and Sacraments, to govern the Churches, to condemn Wolves and false Teachers, who draw Disciples after them, in Synods to condemn perusers of Souls, and refute their Doctrine, baptize our accused persons, to Excommunicate such as will not hear the Church, and a power to reject a Heretic after twice admonition, and to rule over the Church, as they should rule their own house, and to rule over, and to judge in the Word and Doctrine, &c. when they had no Magistrates shall to rule and govern them as a Church; now if the Church be a perfect visible body, society, house, city, and Kingdom of Jesus Christ, is of of open part, in being and all Church operations; then the Magistrate, when he cometh to be Christian, he shall and heareth the Church, as a father he cannot take away and pull the keys out of the hands of the stewards, and (Ex. 18.) throw
throw the rod, authority, power to rule, govern, binde, loofe, convene in Christ's courts and Assemblies from the Church, and inthral all the Church: This evidenceth how falsely some say, That the Church as the Church is without a Magistrate, as an Army without a Commander or Leader, a Ship without a Pilot, a body without a head. When the Church in the Apostles times wanting a Magistrate, was a perfect spirittuall body, gathered, edified, attaining to the unity of faith, Eph. 4. 11, 12, &c. I Cor. 12. 28, Rom. 12. 4, 5, &c. Builted upon the foundation of the Prophers and Apostles, Eph. 2. 20. Feed by their own Pastors, Acts 20. 28. Sufficiently secured by Jesus Christ from Wolves, Acts 20. 30. Golden Candlesticks perfect and intire, Christ walking in the midst of them, and praised and commended of Christ, Rev. 1. 20, & 2. 1, 2, 3. ver. 8, 9, 10. cap. 3. 8, 9, 10. Coming behind in no gift, 1 Cor. 1. 7. In Covenant with God, casting out the incestuous, 1 Cor. 5. Separated from Idols, 2 Cor. 6. 16, 17, 18. Epsoused to one husband Christ, 2 Cor. 11. 2. Established in the faith, and increasing in number daily, Acts 16. 5. Ye, the Churches had rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comforts of the holy Ghost, and were multiplied, Acts 9. 31. Now if the Christian Magistrate be their only Head and chief Feeder, and all Elders but his servants, Edifying a & sub Magistrate, from and under the Magistrate: How were they edified, and the compleat house of God, the house wanting a head, and the Church of the living God, without the chief feeder and shepheard the Magistrate, when all this time the Lord set spirituall Pastors and watchmen over them? It is true, it might be some defect, that they wanted a Christian Magistrate, who was their Nurse-father and keeper, and avenger of both Tables of the Law: But this defect was 1. A defect of the Church, as men who may be injured, and do violence one to another as men, if they want one who beareth the sword to be avenged on evil doers: But it is no defect of the Church as the Church. 2. There might be some defect in the Church as a Church, in this regard, that without the Magistrate his accumulative power, the edification of the Church extrinsecally might be slower, Church Laws lefte vigorous extrinsicall without the sword, and evil doers might infect the Church more; but there should be no privation or extrinsecall defect, or want in the Church, either of an officer, or integral part of the Church,
Church, because they wanted the Magistrate. 3. When the first three hundredth year, the Churches wanted Christian Magistrates; afterward Constaninus convocated the Councell of Nice against Arrius, yet professing that he was Episcopius, without. After him the Empire being divided into three, Constaninus, Constantine, and Constans, the second adhered to Arrius & oppressed the godly. Constans and Constantinus lived not long: Though Jovianus, Theodorus, elder & yonger, Gratianus, Martinus, were favourers of the Church, yet most of the Northern Kings were persecuters. In the sixth hundredth year, they began to be oblitinate favourers of Hereufe. In the Wett Antichristianisme, in the East Mahumetisme rose; for the most part the Church wanted godly Magistrates, and alway hath wanted.

Whatever power or means of life Christ hath given to his Church or pastors for the edifying of their soules, either in Doctrine or Discipline; by these is the holy Ghost efficacious on the hearts and conscience of the people of God, as immediately given by Jesus Christ, without the mediation or intervention of any other means. But Christ hath given power and means of life to preach the word, to admonish, rebuke, Excommunicate to the Church and Pastors, by which the holy Ghost worketh efficaciously on the hearts of the people of God, which God hath given immediately to the Church and Pastors, especially in the Apostolick Church, when there were no Magistrates: and the holy Ghost is no wayes efficacious in the hearts of the children of God, by the Laws, Statutes, and Sword of the Magistrate. Ergo, God hath given to his Church and Pastors, & not to the Magistrate, power and means of life, in which the holy Ghost is effectuall, and that immediately and not to the Magistrate. Or thus: Whoever is the supreme officer and head of the Church, having under him all Church-officers as his servants, by such God is effectuall in the consciences of men: But Pastors, Teachers, Elders are such, and no wayes the Magistrate: Ergo,

The Proposition is thus made good by the word of reconciliation, and the rod of the Lords power in the hands of men: The holy Ghost worketh efficaciously in men: Now the question will only be, to whom this word of reconciliation is committed, and the rod of God: the Scripture faith to the Ministers, never to the Magistrate, 2 Cor. 5. 18. And hath committed to us the word of Reconciliation, ver. 20. Now then we are Ambassadors for Christ, 2 Cor. 10. 8. (A a a 2) Though
Though I should boast somewhat more of our Authority which the Lord hath given us for edification, 2 Cor. 3, 13. If I come again I will not spare, 1 Cor. 4, 21. What wilt ye? Shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love? 1 Tim. 5, 17. Act. 20, 28, 29, 30. 1 Cor. 5, 12. Do not ye judge them that are within? Matth. 16, 19, & 18, 18. Ioh. 20, 21, 22. This word is no where committed to the Magistrate, nor is the holy Ghost efficacious by the Laws and sword of the Magistrate to convert souls; we know not Magistrates to be Ministers by whom we believe, but Ministers only, 1 Cor. 3, ver. 5. Nor is the sword a kindly and intrinsic call mean of conversion. This Argument may be further confirmed by all the notable differences that the Scripture holdeth forth to be between the Magistrate and the Ministers and Church. As 1. The Church judgeth only those that are within the Church, 1 Cor. 5, 11, 12. The heathen Magistrate may judge both those that are within and without the Church, and every soul is under his power; Rom. 13, 1, 2, 3. Tit. 3, 1, 2. 1 Tim. 2, 1, 2, 3. I Pet. 2, 13, 14, 15. Matth. 22, 21. And by these same Scriptures, the Christian Magistrate being a lawfull Magistrate, having under him both believers and heathen, may and ought to judge both; Ergo, the Magistrate as the Magistrate cannot judge those that are within, by the word as the Church doth, but only in some common coercive way, by the sword, to compel them to do their duty. 2. The Magistrates Kingdom is of this world, and he may fight with his sword to defend his own subjects, and his subjects may fight for him: But the Church and Kingdom of Christ, are not of this world, nor can the Church as the Church, and the Ministers thereof fight or use the sword, as is clear, Ioh. 18, 36. Rom. 13, 4. The Magistrate beareth not the Sword in vain: but he beareth the sword in vain over the consciences of men, or to judge those that are within; for the Church judgeth those that are within, with no such weapon as the bloody Sword; There is neither sword nor dagger, nor any weapon of War required in the Church of Ephesos, their censoring of grievous Wolves or false Teachers, Act. 20, 28, &c. Nor in the Apostles and Elders determining truth against perverters of souls, Act. 15, 21, 22, &c. and 16, 4. Nor in the Church of Thyatira, their not suffering Jezebel to teach, Rev. 2, 20. Nor in Pergamus, their not suffering those that held the Doctrine of Balaam, Rev. 2, 14. Erastus I. 4, c. 6, p. 285.
faith, The Church can kill men with the Sword. There was no sword ever devised of in rejecting an heretick after the first and second admonition, Tit. 1. 10. Let our Adversaries show what influence the Magistrate should hath here; yes, (say they) The Magistrate may banish the heretick, and of the Church. True.

Abf. Not out of the Church as the Church, but out from amongst his subjects as his subjects, whom he is to defend in peace and godliness. 2. It is evident Titus had no power of the sword, but was an Evangelist: Paul wrote not to Titus to banish the heretick, therefore, the rejecting here is a spiritual censure performed by previous admonitions. 3. What can the Magistrate as the Magistrate do to this? The Magistrate is a Lord, and hath by God's appointment a Lordly dominion over those that are under him, the Minister in only a Minister, a Servant, a Preacher, or Herald; and hath dominion in the Church, Luke 20. 24. &c. Now therefore whom the Magistrate hath a civil dominion as a Magistrate, over those he may execute that Lordly dominion of the Sword: But the Magistrate as the Magistrate, may use no Lordly dominion of the Sword over the Church as the Church, to Preach, Exhort, Rebuke, Admonish, Excommunicate, to judge those that are within, as the Church may do, 1 Cor. 5. 12. Ergo, the Magistrate as the Magistrate, cannot be the supreme and highest Church officer, having under him Church officers, as his servants and deputies to Preach and Exhort, &c. and under and from him, because as a Magistrate he can disallow that which hath any power over the conscience; that is, he can disallow the word of the Spirit, as a Magistrate, but the sword bodily to punish evil doers. 5. He who by office is chief overseer and watchman in the Church, he must by office keep his own vineyard, and not begin to keep the vineyard of others, Gen. 2. 6. He must watch for the souls of those, whom by office he is bound to care over, that must give an account, Heb. 13. 17. He must as a special watchman by his office, Take heed to grievous wolves not shaming the flock, speaking perverse things, Acts 20. 30. And, as a watchman, he must blow the Trumpet, and give early and seasonable warning to the people of the sword, Ezek. 33. 1. 83. Yes, he must watch for the souls of ministers and teachers, and by office, rebuke, admonish, exhort, and punish them, and by office judge of their Doctrine and Discipline, and is over the people in the Lord, and to admonish them, 1 Thes.
1 Thess. 5. And worthy of Honour for well ruling. 1 Tim. 5. 17. But the like the Magistrate as the Magistrate cannot do. 1. He keepeth another vineyard of the Civil State, he is not Pastor to the Church as the Church, over which the Holy Ghost hath set him. Act. 20. 28. 1 Peter 5. 1, 2, 3. He is not to give an account for the souls, and for the souls of Pastors by his office, he may as a Christian be his brethren's keeper, to teach, admonish, Gal. 3. 15. and exhort, Heb. 3. 13. He is not by office to blow the trumpet, as Ezekiel was, Ezek. 33. 7, 8. Ezek. 3. 17. 18. 19. 20. He is not over the people in the Lord to admonish them, as a Magistrate, as a Magistrate he only is either to praise and reward well doing, or take vengeance on evil doing, Rom. 13. 4. nor doth Paul think Nero, 1 Tim. 5. 17. worthy of double honour, all those are proper to Church-officers, the proposition is necessary, because if the Magistrate be the eminent and supreme watchman over the Pastors, as his under deputies and servants, then must the Magistrate more eminently keep the vineyard, and watch for the souls, both of Pastors and people, feed the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath set him, be over the people in the Lord, be worthy of double honour, as one that ruleth well, and is worthy of double honour, and that by office: Now 1. The word never warranted him in the Old Testament, to sacrifice, to burn incense to Minster before the Lord, to carry the ark: But God separated the Priests and Levites for this only, and was it such a sinne for Uzziah to burn incense, and for Uzziah to touch the Ark, and for any to bear the Ark but the Levites, and are not these things written for our instruction? are we all now to bear the Ark, and are we all to dispense the word and Sacraments? When Paul will not have women to teach in the Church, and when God hath no lefe in the New Testament separated some by the laying on of hands, and appointed a Ministry in the New Testament, then he did in the Old? 2. Where hath God in Old or New Testament set downe, that all those qualifications, in an eminent manner, and as principally due to the Magistrate, as he hath described the qualification of the officers of the New Testament in the Epistles to Timothy and Titus, and the Ephesians, Ch. 4. v. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16. 1 Tim. 2. 1 Cor. 12, Rom. 12. 3. Did Christ put upon Church-officers in the New Testament, all the proper titles, privileges and peculiar Characters of their calling, as they are the deputies of Claudius Tiberius,
Tiberius, and Nero; so they had been Christian princes? this the adversaries must prove, and must all the Epistles of Paul to the Churches of Christ, and of James and Peter, John and Jude, which concern Church-officers be written: First and principally to the heathen Emperours, as they be Church Magistrates, and Church-officers iure, though they be in very deed enemies of the Gospel, de facto? It must put Erasmus and all his to pains to prove, that Magistrates as Magistrates were separated in the Old Testament to sacrifice, to burn incense, to bear the Ark of the Lord, and Priests and Levites, and Prophets, were only the under servants and instruments of Kings, and the like they must do in the New Testament: But this is carefully to be observed; that the adversaries, though they speak of Government, and some yield, as Master Prynne doth, that there is such a thing as Excommunication, especially, 1 Cor. 5. yet the truth is, they deny all Church-government: for I desire to know, why they give to Ministers of the Gospel a power to try who are heretics, apostates, and unworthy partakers of the holy things of God; Yea, such as may ordaine Ministers, and reject heretics after admonitions; if Jesus Christ hath given this power of Government beside preaching the word, I aske, quo iure, by what Scripture, if by no warrant of Christ: then it is unjustly given to them, and the Apostles and Teachers then had no right to it; if there be a right, that by office Pastors should know what is soundness in the faith, and integrity of conversation; and so who are to be called to the Ministry, who not; who are to be excluded totally from the Church, as Erasmus and Master Prynne say, who not? Then what warrant hath the Magistrate to limit the Ministers of the Gospel in this Government, such as it is, more then in dispensing the word and Sacraments? Surely except the Magistrate put his hand to the Ark without warrant in the one, he cannot in the other. They answer, the Magistrate may limit the Pastors in preaching, no less then governing; because he may command the Pastor to preach this and this, and if he preach not sound Doctrine, he may punish him; but I answer, this is no limiting of Pastors in preaching; Because this the Pastors may in the name and authority of God, exhort the Magistrate to execute righteous judgement, Jer. 22, and if he crush the poor and needy, and turne a tyrant, an heretick and an apostate, the Pastors may not only denounce wrath from
from the Lord against them, but also judge them dogs and swine, and not dispense to them the pearls of the Gospel, yet this is not the Pastor limiting the Magistrate as the Magistrate doth limit the Pastor, as his Ambassador and Deputy, though the Magistrate take care that Physicians, Painters, Shoemakers, Professors in Academies and Universities doe their duty in their calling, and punish them, if they therein doe amisse, yet he limiteth not the painter to draw this way, nor this way, nor hath he a negative voice in acts of Art, as he pretendeth a negative voice in Church discipline.

2. Nor can the Pastor command the Magistrate in the name of God to execute justice, as if he become a tyrant, an heretick, an apostate, he will not only remove him from the Throne, and the Bench, but he will set himselfe downe in the place of the erring Magistrate, and judge righteous judgement for him, or in his place: for Erastus faith that the Magistrate may dispence word and Sacraments (if he had time and leisure) as lawfully as the Pastor; and I have in another place observed, that many so make the King head of the Church (and the like must be laid of the little heads of inferior Magistrates, as of the great head) as he is a mixed person, partly Civill, partly Ecclesiasticall and sacred, that is, by office, Ruler and Pope.

3. The Magistrate doth limit the Pastors only in positives, and in punishing and inflicting Church censures, as they command to censure scandalous persons in such and such scandals, but in no other scandals more hainous; yet in all the challenges moved by Magistrates against Pastors, The Magistrate never made any challenge against Pastors or Synod, for their sinfull omissions and want of zeal in not censuring drunkards, adulterers, hereticks, court parasites, who injoy many benefices, and leave the flock, and I give instance, in the disputes of the Divines of England making the King the head of the Church; court-divines accused never the Pastors that they exceeded their limits in not censuring corrupt Prelates, non-residents, pluralists, idle and unpreaching Pastors, or idol-shepherds.

4. In the contests of Holland, when the Synod of Friesland gave in a declinature to the Senate, justifying the deposition of Poppin an unsound and scandalous Minister, in all contests with Arminians there, the controversy was ever for positives, that the Church condemned and censured hereticks, never that the Church had been slack in the matter of discipline.

5. In Scotland in Master Blackes
Blackes declinature, and when the Ministers condemned to death and then banished, such as the godly and zealous servants of Christ, Master John Welch, Master John Forbes, and others appealed to the assemblies of the Church, for their standing for the liberties of the Church and Kingdom of Christ. King James did never quarrel with them, thus you have not done in your Ministry, and Assemblies, you have not excommunicated the Marquess of Huntley a bloody man; but it was for positives, thus and thus you have done against the mind and Majeste of the King and Authority. Now corrupt Pastors need as much to be limited in wicked omissions, as is clear: “You are dumb dogs and barks not,” Isai. 56.10. And the diseased ye have not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, &c. Ezech. 34.4. as in exorbitances, in their positive zeal; And this faith, that Magistrates intend to intrude upon Christ’s liberties, in this plea, rather then indeed to procure that the house of God may be builded and edified, or the liberty of the subject vindicated. And therefore the godly ought the rather to stand for the freedom of the Kingdom of the Lord Jesus, which owe not this tribute to earthly Princes; since Christ only is King, and raigneth in his owne Church.

CHAP. XXIV. Quest. 20.

Of the reprocation of the subordination of the Civill and Ecclesiasticall powers to each, and their supremacie and independencie each from other.

For the clearing of the question, I humbly offer these considerations to the Reader.

1. There is subordination of the power, and a subordination of the person indulged with the power, here to be considered.

2. So is there a supremacie of power, and a supremacie of the person.

3. There is a foure fold judgement here considerable; 1. The first apprehensive (apprehensivum) and common to both Magistrate, Christian,
Christian, Pastor, and all which must be given to all to whom we can ascribe conscience. 2. (Discretivum) the knowledge of discretion, the connaturall guide and principle of every mans believe and obedience. 3. (Definitivum) of those that are in Authority, and do command in the Lord. 4. Peremptorium et infallibile, the supreme judgement of the King of the Church, who cannot erre. The first is common to all, Rom.15. The second proper to Christians, and is a judgement of faith, 1 Thess.3. 1 Ioh.4.1. and it must be builded on the first. The third is the Authoritative judgement of the Church, Act.15.28. Mat.18.17. and of judges, and it must be swayed by the second, both in the commander and the commanded. The fourth is Jesus Christ's only, Rom.14.4. I Cor.4.5.

4. It is one thing, that the power of the Ministers be subject to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, and another thing that the persons of the Ministers should be subject: Not any office at all in their power, seems to me to be subordinate to either Magistrate or Minister; because all Lawfull power, and Lawfull and profitable offices, and Arts, in abstracto are from God, some of them immediately; As the the gift of prophesying, healing, speaking with tongues, working of miracles, and the offices of Apostle, Evangelist, Pastor, and Teacher, Eph.4.11. those be xadoum, gifts and graces above Nature, that God without the interveening of human reason, hath devised for a supernaturall end, the edifying of his body the Church; mens will and reason may interveen in the designation of persons to some of those offices, as that John, Thomas, qualified as 1 Tim.3. be Pastors, or teachers. But if we speak of the power of the Ministry, in abstracto, without connotation of the persons in concerto, then the power, or the office it selfe is not subordinate to the Ministers of the Gospel as Ministers; far lesse to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, because it dependeth upon none on earth, Minister or Magistrate; but the only good pleasure of him, when he ascended to heaven, gave gifts unto men, that there is such an office as Minister, Pastor or teacher; And the Church cannot create a new office of a Prelate; because of its nature it tendeth to a supernaturall end, the governing of Christs body, in a way to life eternall, purchased by Christ: Now the question in this sense, whether the power of the Ministry be subordinate to the Magistrate in its constitution, it is alike in its subordination to Magistrate and Minister; certain it is subordi-
subordinate to neither. Other lawfull and profitable offices and Acts are from God, mediately, possibly, by the intervening acts of rationall nature, though Magistracy be from God, Rom. ix. 1. yet it would seeme, God by the naturall reason of men, might devise and constitute the very office of Magistracy in abstraction, and the Art of sayling, painting, &c. yet is there no subjection of power to power here, by way of dominion: Hence the question must be of the subordination of the power, quoad exercitium, whether Ministers in the exercising of their Ministeriall calling be subordinate to the Magistrate as the Magistrate?

5. Dist. A judge is one thing, and a just judge another thing, so here are we to distinguish between a Magistrate, and a Christian Magistrate. As 1. a husband is one thing, and a Christian husband another thing, a Captaine is one thing, and a Christian, and a believing Centurion or Captain, such as Cornelius, Acts 10. is another; a Physician is one thing, and a gracious Physician is another thing; sure a heathen Husband hath the same jus Matritale, the same Husband power in regard of Marriage union, that a Christian and believing Husband hath. 2. A Magistrate and a Christian Magistrate may be one and the same Magistrate, with one and the same Magistraticall power, as being first heathen Magistrate, as Sergius Paulus, Acts i. 7, i. 2. and there after converted to the faith. Paulus was no lesse a civil Deputy, when Heathen than when Christian, and not more a Deuty as touching the essence of a Magistrate, when a Christian believer, then he was before when a Heathen; yet to be a Magistrate, and to be a believing Magistrate, are two different things, even as Christianity is a noble ornament, and a gracious accident, and to be a Magistrate, is as it were the Subject, even as a man, and the accidents of the man, are two different things.

6. There be two things here considerable in the Magistrates office.
1. There is his jus and quoddam Magistraticall power, or the authority officiall, the power of office to beare the sword. 2. There is aptitudo, natura, a speciall heavenly grace of well governing, this is dono, a gift or grace of God, to use that power for Christ. These two make one Christian husband, one Christian captain, Physician, Master, in relation to to the wife, soldiers, sick, servants: Now the Magistrate heathen as Magistrate, even Nero, when the Church of God is in his court.
court and dominions, hath the same just, the same Authority and Official power, to be a keeper of both Tables of the Law, and to defend the Gospell, and to command the Preachers and Synods to fulfill their charge, and to see that the officers doe their duty, and to punish dumbe dogs, Idolaters, excommunicated persons, to drive away with the sword false Teachers from the flock, he hath I say the same Magistratical power, while he is a Heathen, and when he is converted to the Christian faith, and he is equally head of men that profess Christ, when Heathenish as when Christian; but in neither States, is he the Head of the body the Church, and you give not to Cesar the things that are Cesar's, if you make converted Nero, because a Magistrate, now the head of the Church, and deny non-converted and heathenish Nero to be the Head of the Church; for he is a Magistrate with compleat power of the Sword, in the one case, as in the other, that he neither doth, nor can use the sword for the Church, it is from Nero his State of infidelity that he is in as a man, and not the fault of his office, for when Paul faith, the Husband is the head of the wife; doth he mean a Christian husband onely, and exclude all heathen Husbands? No, for then the wife were not to be subject to the Husband, if a Heathen and unbeliever, which is against Paul's mind, 1 Cor. 7, and the Law of Nature. But the converted Magistrate, who was before a heathen Magistrate, hath a new aptitude, faculty and grace to keep both Tables of the Law, and to govern in a civil way, and indirectly the affairs of Christ's Kingdom: Hence the adversaries clearly contradict themselves by confounding those two, a Magistrate and a Christian Magistrate, one while they give supreme power over the Church to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, sometime to the Magistrate as Christian. So Vitenbogard in his book De officio, & authoritate suprmi Magistratus Christiani in rebus Ecclesiasticis p. 7 and p. 8, he addo, ut intelligatur Magistratum, cum religioni Christianam complectitur, non acquirere novam authoritatem, sed quod eam authoritatem, quam ante eum in rebus religiosis, & cultus divini, habebat authoritatem, accepit. Miser: If the Magistrate when he becometh a Christian, acquireth no new authority as a Magistrate, but onely useth well his old Authority, in matters of Religion and of God's worship, which he had before, while he was Heathen, as he faith, then the Heathen Magistrate as a magi-
Magistrate hath a supreme power in Church matters, and yet in the same place he draweth the state of the question to a Christian Magistrate. De solo Christiano Magistratu atatur. The Arminians in their Apologe, fol. 297. (as saith their Declaration) speke only of the Christian Magistrate, and yet page 298. posta- statum enim suprema, sive Architexitonica, qua potestas suprema est, hoc ut competat, ratio ordinis, sive boni Regimini, natura sua postulat. --- si Magistratus quod tali jus hoo competet, ergo multo magis competet Magistratus Christianus. Sure, if the Magistrate, in general, and as the Magistrate, have a supreme Authority in the Government of the Church, such as the Adversaries contend for, then the Christian Magistrate farre more must be Head of the Church, and so the Magistrate as the Magistrate must be supreme Governor, and judge in all Ecclesiastical causes, and in these same causes, he must not be Judge as a Magistrate, but as a Christian.

Nor can they make a Christian Magistrate, a medium per participacionem utrisque extremi, a middle between a Magistrate and a Christian. 1. For where is there such an office in either Church or State? for so a Christian Magistrate as a Christian Magistrate should be Ens per aggregationem, a thing composed of Magistracy and Christianity, as a Christian Physician, a Christian Painter: and then the question should be, whether judgeth he as a Magistrate, or as a Christian? as we may ask whether a Christian painter painteth as a painter or as a Christian: not as a Christian, for then all Christians should be Painters; and a result of both should neither be a Magistrate nor a Christian, but middle between both, which fighteth with reason and sense. Some say, The power of the Magistrate in a Christian Magistrate who knoweth the doctrine of the Gospell, and hath help of the counsell and light of godly Pastors and Teachers, is perfecter than in Heathen Magistrates, and therefore this power as not Christian or heathenish, governs men as men, but as Christian, it governeth them as Christian men. But the learned and worthy professor Jac. Triglandius faith this is said without probation, for (faith he) men as Christians are members of the Church, and so are not governed but in an Ecclesiastical way, and where hath the Lord commanded the Christian Magistrate so govern the sheep of Christ, as the sheep of Christ? Then (say he) 1. The magistrate must govern the Church as the Church, and so rule over...
Subordination of the Magistrate Cap.XXIV.Q.20.

over the conscience of men in relation to eternall happiness, by promising to them temporal rewards, and by compelling them by the sword, to be carried toward eternall beatitude; for to rule the Church, as the Church, is to direct and lead them by spirituall means. Word, Sacraments and Discipline, to heaven, which the magistrate as a magistrate cannot do by the sword; and what he doth as a Christian, that he must do in a spirituall way, not with a secular arm and power as magistrate; and the two powers of a magistrate and of a Christian, cannot coalescere, grow together in one office which is made up of both, as of two parts, being in nature and spece different, no more then of a Horse and a Lyon you can make a third living creature. It is true, by Grace and Christianiety, the power of the magistrate is perfected, and an excellent lustre added to it, but not one degree of Magistraticall power is added to it, by which the magistrate doth rule men as Christians, and as a Church: For as the office of a magistrate doth not promote the man one step nearer to saving Grace; so Christianiety maketh not the Heathen magistrate more a magistrate, nor giveth him a new sword over the Church as the Church, which he had not before; nor doth it take any Magistraticall power from him, nor more then a heathen Husband, Master, Physician, being converted to Christ, is more a husband, more a master or Physician, then he was before: The former power is only spiritualized, and graciously facilitated in its acts, but not one whit augmented in its emotivative degrees of power over the wife, the soldier, the servant, the sick. Triandium excellently: The Christian magistrate conversed, is sanctified, but he acquires no new right over the Church: So meat is sanctified by the Word and Prayer, but it is not more meat, nor doth more nourish, because sanctified.

7. Distinct. The exercise of the Ministerial power in dispensing Word, Sacraments, Discipline, falleth under a fourfold consideration, which, because it cleareth a necessary point, I desire may be carefully observed by the Reader: 1. The simple exercise of that power is considered in, without any qualification, good or evil, Orthodox, or Heterodox, as the Christian Magistrate procureth by his care, that there should be a Ministry to dispense Word, Sacraments, and Discipline. 2. The second Consideration of this exercise, is, The exercise of power soundly and painfully, in the fear of the Lord, the Magistrate exhorting them thereunto for conscience. 3. The third Consideration
deration is the exercise of the same, in a corrupt and wicked way and manner, either negligently or wickedly, or for evil ends. 4. The fourth Consideration is the free and peaceable exercise of this power without bodily violence.

Hence I intreat the Reader to carry along in his eye, 1. The simple exercise of the Ministerial power. 2. The just and godly, found and laudable exercise. 3. The wicked and corrupt exercise, or the abuse thereof. 4. The peaceable exercise.

Hence, our 1. Assertion: The Magistrate as the Magistrate is to procure that there be Preachers and Church-officers to dispose Word, Sacraments, and Discipline: For 1. his end is, that people under him may lead a quiet and a peaceable life in godliness and honesty, 1 Tim. 2. And the Magistrate attaineth his end as a Magistrate, if there be simple exercise of Religion in the quiet and peaceable way, that may consist with the subjects indemnity, and immunity, from rapine, injuries, and violence. 2. The difference between the Magistrates and other callings, is, that the Magistrate was to take care of old, that there were Levites who bare the Ark, and, Priests who should burn incense before the Lord, and Sacrifice; and yet it was unlawful for the Magistrate to bear the Ark on his own shoulders, or in his own person to burn incense or sacrifice; so the Physicians hinder that diseases rage amongst the subjects, and the Magistrates do also hinder that they should rage: But the Physicians hinder them by curing diseases, and the Magistrate hinders them not by curing diseases; for then he should as a Magistrate also be a Physician, but by procuring that there should be Physicians in the Commonwealth. The Magistrate hindreth ignorance, and losing Ships by Tempes, not by professing and teaching Sciences and Arts in Academies in his own person, nor by steering Ships, and guiding them himself to their Ports, for so a magistrate as a magistrate should be a Schoolmaster, a professor of Arts and Sciences in the Universities, and a Pilot or Shipmaster, which were a confounding of all callings; but by procuring that there should be Universities and Professors of Arts and Sciences, and by providing honorable stipends and wages for them, and procuring that in the Commonwealth there should be Sailors who are skilled in Shipping: and so doth the magistrate by his office take care, that the Word, Sacraments and Discipline, be dispensed. 3. But the magistrate, as the magi-
The Magistrate as the Magistrate commandeth the exercise of ministerial power, but not the spiritual and sincere manner of the exercise.

magistrate doth not command sincere, hearty, zealous, and affectionate dispensing of Word, Sacraments and Discipline: But only the dispensing of those without the qualification of the spiritual, or sincere exercise of the power; Because, 1. The Magistrate cannot command that as a magistrate, which he cannot judge of, whether the thing commanded be consonant to his command, or not: But the magistrate as the magistrate cannot judge of the spiritual, sincerity, zealfulness, affectionateness of that obedience, which the Church yieldeth to his command: for if the Pastors dispense word and Sacraments, and binde and lose by the keys following the rules of the word, the magistrate cannot judge the heart or intention, whether they do those with conscience to God, and reverence and subjection of spirit to his holy Law, nor can the manner of doing be proved by witnesses to the magistrate.

2. The Magistrate as Magistrate doth not command what he doth not praise or reward, for well doing is the object of the Magistrates praising and rewarding power, Rom.13:3. But as a Magistrate he doth not praise and reward the qualification or spirituality, or sincerity of Pastors dispensing of word and seals; if they feed the flock, the Magistrate is to take care they be rewarded with wages, nor can the Magistrate as the magistrate withheld praise or wages from labourers in the vineyard, because they preach Christ out of envy, as some did Phil. 1.15, or because they feed not the lambs out of a love to Christ, as they ought to do, Is 21.15,16,17. It is true, magistrates as godly men, may love and commend sincerity in faithfull labourers, and hate the contrary; but this they do as Christian men, not as magistrates, not by their office, and authoritatively.

3. Magistrates command that as magistrates, the not doing of which they can as magistrates punish with the sword, for the object of their vindicative and revenging power is ill doing, Rom.13:4. But if Pastors feed the flock and rule them, the magistrate cannot use the sword against the feeders, for that they want sincerity, love, cheerfulnesse in the manner of doing these things, for the sword of the magistrate doth only reach men for their externall facts, not for opinions in the mind, not for crooked intentions, not for hollow-heartednesse, hypocrisy, infidelity in the manner, or inward principles of the actions.

II. After, when magistrates command Churchmen to do their duty,
duty, and to feed the flock, sincerely, and in the fear of the Lord, they do it not as magistrates; but as touching the manner, they may exhort them to do their duty sincerely, cordially, and zealously as godly men; hence that charge that King Ichobaphas gave to the Priests and Levites, 2 Chron. 19. 9. 'This shall ye do in the fear of the Lord faithfully, and with a perfect heart, is a mixt command, as touching the judging of the people in all causes and controversies that should come before them; the King as King commanded them to do this: But for the manner of the doing of it, that they should do it faithfully in the fear of the Lord, and with a perfect heart; this he commanded them not as a King, but exhortcd them to it, as a godly & religious man: for any godly man might have said this, and the King might have punished the Levites and Priests, if they had not judged the causes according to the Law. But though they had not judged in the fear of the Lord, and with a perfect heart; yet could not the King as King have punished them therefore; nor can any lay, that the spiritual exhortation of Hezekiah, 2 Chron. 29, to the Priests and Levites, came from him as King, but as from a graced and religious man; as King he might command them to sanctifie themselves legally, for so they were to do by office; and he might use the sword against them, if they failed in that; and as King he may command all external duties, not only to Church-men, but to all others; only he cannot punish them for failings in the spiritual manner of doing external duties. 2. A spiritual and Christian exhortation ex condiciones operis, and intrinsically, hath influence on the conscience to turn the soul to God. But nothing that the magistrate can do as a magistrate, hath such an influence on the conscience, all that he doth as a magistrate, and directly, is toward the outward man, by rewards and punishments; if the magistrate remove false teachers and wolves, which would devour the flock, and if that work upon the conscience, it is indirectly and by accident, for, quando ait dominus imperat, he can command that the Gospel, which hath a kindly and intrinsically power to work upon the conscience, be preached; if the magistrate convince the conscience of a murderer, that he hath failed against the Law of God, he doth not that as a magistrate, but as a godly and religious man: he may convince him as a magistrate, that he hath failed against the Lawes of the State, and bands of humane society, and external peace, and

Magistrates as godly men, not as Magistrates command sincerity and zeal in the manner of the exercise of ministerial power.
and scarce that, for ignorantia juris neminem excusat.

Obj. 1. It may be objected against this: If the Elders not only omits
do their duty, but also if they err in the nature and quality of what
do the, the Magistrate is to punish; Ergo, the Magistrate not only
commandeth the Church to do the externall faiths, but also commands
the faiths with such and such qualities: the Antecedent is proved be-
cause the Magistrate notonly punisbeth the omission of a Church duty,
as if Pastors preach not; but also if they preach not: ali modo, Ortho-
dox and sound Doctrine.

Ans. We never denied but the Magistrate commandeth both
the exercise of Church power simply, and the manner and such qua-

cifications as are externall and obvious to the knowledge of the
Magistrate, such as blasphemous and false Doctrine is; But we de-
ny that as a Magistrate he doth command those things that are in-
ternall and invisible, that is, the spirituallity of the actions; he can
exhort and stirre men up to the spirituallity and sincerity of doing
as a godly and Christian man.

Obj. 2. The Pastors and guides of the Church as such, do only com-
mand externall obedience, for they can only in so faro Ecclesiae, in the
Court of the Church confute externall disobedience before men, the
heart and sincerity thereof is no more obvious to the eye of Elders, then
of Magistrates.

Ans. 1. I deny the connexion of the Antecedent; for Elders
may command as Elders, more then the not doing of which they
can confute, which the Magistrate cannot do; for Elders have com-
mitted to them the word of reconciliation, as the Ambassadors of Christ.
Now the word hath an immediate influence on the conscience, on
the thoughts and intents of the heart, 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19, 20. 1 Cor. 3.
5. 1 Cor. 4. 15. Ps. 19. 7. Heb. 4. 12, 13. And therefore their Mi-

nistry hath action on the thoughts; yet can they not in the exter-
nall court of the Church, confute the thoughts, as not being able
to see them, but the Gospel which they preach can arraigne the
conscience and thoughts; 2 Cor. 10. 4, 5. But the Magistrate carri-
eat not such a message, and therefore his Magistraticall command
can reach no farther then his temporall praise and reward, and his
sword; and that is commensurable and of equal latitude with
those.

Obj. 3. The Object of the Magistrates power, is well doing, and ill
doing,
doing, both civill, and also supernaturall; both for the first table, or as well for the spirituall acts of worship and religion in the first table, as for acts of justice and mercy in the second table, Rom. 13:3, 4. Isai. 49:23. and you said elsewhere, that externall peace is too narrow an object for the magistrate, for the intrinsical end of a magistrate is also a supernaturall good, and not only a peaceable, but also a godly life.

1 Tim. 2:2.

Ans. It is true, the magistrate as the magistrate doth care for the supernaturall good of subjects, and the duties of religion, and the first table, but how? intrinsically and as a magistrate, that is, that men worship God according to his word: But, 1. The magistrate as such hath nothing to do with the spirit, nor can he command the sincerity of the worship; his care is that there be a divine worship, that is, materially and externally right and consonant, externally to the rules of the word; and for this cause learned divines make the externall man the object of the magistrates office; but not the externall man as doing the duties of the second table only, but also as serving God in the duties of the first table: for which cause I said Augustine meant the same, when he said, that Kings serve God, as men, and as kings. 2. Magistrates as magistrates are to extend their power, for Christ; that is, that not only there be justice and peace amongst men, but also that there be religion in the land, yea, that the Gospel be preached to all our Divines make the King to be custos et vindex urbisque tabule: Yea, I think he is a keeper and preserver of the Gospel also, and is to command men to serve Christ, and profess the Gospel; and to punish the blasphemying of Jesus Christ: and this is royal and magistratical service that the King as King performeth to God, and to Jesus Christ the mediator, ex conditio operis, in regard that good which he procureth as King, materially and externally, is consonant to the supernatural Law of the Gospel, but it is not magistratical service to Christ ex intentione operantis.

Obj. 4. When it is required that the Magistrates be men fearing God, having conscience, &c., is not this an essentiall ingredient of an King as a King, that he read in the book of the Law, that he may fear God, Deut. 1:16. 17. 18. 19. 20.

Ans. There is a twofold goodness here to be considered, one of the magistrate as a magistrate, another as a good and Christian (Ecc 2).
A twofold good in a Christian Magistrate, essential, accidental.

Magistrate. The former is an official goodness, or a magistraticall prudence, justice, and goodness; this is required of all magistrates as such, to judge the people: so the acts of an heathen magistrate done according to common natural equity, by Nebuchadnezzar, Pilate, Cesar, Felix, Festus, are to be acknowledged as acts of a Lawfull Magistrate, valide and no less essentially Magistaticall, then if performed by King David; and of this goodness the Scriptures speak not as essential to a Magistrate as a Magistrate: But there is another goodness required of Magistrates as they are Members of the Jewish Church, and as they are Christians, and of these the Scripture speaketh; and so Magistrates not as Magistrates, but as good and Christian, are to be such as fear God, hate covetousness, respect not the face and favour of men; so it is declared that the fear of God, hating of covetousness, are essential ingredients of Kings as Kings: For Kings as Kings intend justice, peace, godliness, materially considered, both ex conditione operis, and operantis. But for justice and righteous judgement in a spiritual and an Evangelick way, that belongeth not to the essence of a Magistrate nor ex conditione for ex intentions operis, nor ex conditionis operantis: The Holy Ghost requireth it of judges, as they would approve themselves as truly Holy and Religious, and would be accepted of God, and in this sense Kings as Kings do not serve God, nor the mediator Christ, not yet as men; only they serve God and the mediator Christ as Christian Kings, or as Christian men rather.

After. 3.

III. According to that third member of our seventh Distinction, the unjust and evil exercise of the Ministeriall power, is obnoxious to the magistrate as the magistrate, thus, in that he beareth the sword against all evil doers, Ro. 13. 1. The magistrate as the magistrate doth only command well doing, in order to praise and a good name, or temporal reward amongst men, Rom. 13. 3. Do that which is good and thou shalt have praise of the power, 1 Tim. 5. 17. Matth. 10. 10. Nor can the magistrate as the magistrate promise, or command the Elders to feed the Flock, with the promise of the reward that Peter promiseth, 1 Pet. 5. 4. to wit, That when the chief Shepherd shall appear, they shall receive a Crown of glory that fadeth not away. The magistrate as a Preacher (if he be one, as David and Solomon were both) or as a godly religious Christian man, may hold forth such a promise, but not as a Magistrate, and upon the same ground the Magis-
Magistrate as the Magistrate cannot forbid carelessness, unforced preaching, and rigorous and tyrannical ruling or rather domineering over the flock, under the pain of death eternal: for he can but kill the body, and hath but the carnal and temporal sword, Rom. 13.4, and so he can inhibit ill doing only in order to temporary punishment, and though the duty of the former be spiritual, and the sinne of the latter also, yet the external man is capable only of the Magistrate's promises and threatenings, as they respect evil or good temporary; so that it is a wonder to me, that Mr. Pryu or any learned man can lay that magistrates can make laws to bind the conscience, sure it is ill divinity. 3. If there never had been sin, there should have been no government, but of Fathers and Husbands, there should have been no magistratical dominion, nor any magistratical allurement to well doing by temporal rewards, nor any terrifying from evil doing, from fear of the sword, death, stripes, or bands, and God governed the Apostolick Church, and they attained the Crowne and supernatuall end of life eternal, without the accessory hire of a temporary reward from the magistrate, and the subsidy hire of his sword; Bryg, it is evident that the magistrate is neither an essential, nor an integral part of the visible Church as the visible Church, joying all the Ordinances of God, Word, Sacraments, Discipline, Confess, Rebukes, Admonition, Excommunication, Prayers, Mundiallification, in as great perfection, as is happily attainable in this life without yea, against the will of the civil magistrate: Though it be a great encouragement to have the King a rude Father: yet hath not Christ connted it simply necessary to his visible Church joying all the Ordinances of God to the full. 3. If the magistrate do only command the teachers and Pastors to preach and determine synodically, in order to a temporal reward, and forbid them to abuse their ministeriall power in order to temporary punishment, by the temporal sword; then surely the Pastors and Teachers are not subjected to them in conscience, after any Ecclesiastical way, for the power of commanding in magistrates as magistrates must be commenstrable to the power of punishing the transgresors of the command; if the one be in order to a temporary good, the other cannot but be in order to an eternal ill; if ministers command in the name of Christ, in order to an eternal reward, they cannot threaten the transgresors in order to a temporary.
Subordination of Magistrates

550 Subordination of Magistrates Cap. XXIV.

20. 

rary punishment, but it must be in order to an eternall punishment: so that it is most clear, that the magistrate though he be in some sense a little God, and invested with the authority and Majesty of God, in that he commandeth and threateneth upon proposal of temporary reward, and temporary good, the very same duties that God injoyeth, and forbiddeth the same evils of sinne that God forbiddeth; yet he holdeth not these out to the soul and conscience of the subjects, as the Ambassador of Jesus Christ, upon condition of eternall life, if they obey, and of eternall death, if they disobey; but he holdeth out to the external man these that are materially divine commandements & divine inhibitions, but in another consideration, but formally only they are the mandates of the Magistrates in order to temporary reward and temporary punishment. Then the Ministers as Ministers in preaching and Synods, forbid adultery, incest, murthe; but they propose them to those that are within the visible Church; And that, 1. to their consciences; 2. Under the paine of eternall wrath. 3. As the Ambassadors of Christ craving spiritual subjection of conscience, and divine faith to those charges: But Magistrates as Magistrates hold forth, in their Law abstinence from those same sinnes of adultery, incest, murthe; But, 1. Not to the consciences of their subjects, but to the outer man as Members of the common-wealth. 2. Not under the paine of eternall wrath and condemnation, before the judge of quick and dead: Magistrates as Magistrates have neither calling, office, place nor power to threaten or inflict eternall punishment; if Magistrates do perwade the equity of abstinence from adultery, incest, murthe, in their Statutes, or Acts of Parliament, from the word of God, from the sixt and seventh command of the Decalogue, from the judgement and eternall punishment that followeth these sinnes, they so perwade not as Magistrates, but as Divines, and as godly and Christian men; yet my sense is not that the Magistrate can Lawfully command obedience in matters of Religion not understood or knowne by the subjects, that were to exact blind obedience; but my meaning is, that the Magistrate as the Magistrate holdeth not forth his commandements to teach and informe the conscience, as Pastors do, but be presupposeth that his mandates are knowne to be agreeable to the word of God, and proposeth them to the subjects to be obeyed. 3. Magistrates as Magistrates hold forth in their Law, abstinence from
from these sinnes, not as the ambassadors of Christ, craving submission of conscience and divine faith to those charges, but only external obedience: for though Ministers, as Ministers, crave faith and submission of conscience to all commandments and instructions, as in Christ's stead, 2 Co. 5. 19, 20. yet the Magistrate as the Magistrate doth not crave either faith or submission of conscience, nor is he in Christ's stead, to lay divine bands on the conscience, to submit the soul and conscience to beleive and abstaine, he is the deputy of God as the God of Order, and as the Creator, and founder, and another of humane societies, and of Peace, to exact external obedience, and to lay bands on your hands, not to shed innocent blood, and on your body not to defile it with adultery, or incest, nor to violate the chastity of your brother; hence it is evident, that the adversaries are far out, who would have Ministers who hold forth commands, that layeth hold on the conscience and craveth faith and soul-submission under the paine of eternal wrath, to do and act as the deputies and Vicars of those who have nothing to do with the conscience, and have neither office nor authority to crave soul-submission, or to threaten or inflict any punishment, but such as is circumscribed within the limits of time, and which the body of clay is capable of; yea, when the Magistrate punisheth spirituall sinnes, heeretic, idolatry, he punisheth them only with temporary punishment.

Obj. 5. When a Minister speaketh that which is treason against the Prince in the Pulpit, by way of Doctrine, the Church only doth take on them to judge him, and censurn him, and he will not answer the civil judge for his Doctrine, but decline him, and appeal to a Synod; and yet if another man in private speak these same words of treason, he is judged by the civil judge, and can give no declination against this civil judicature; this must be unequall dealing, except the civil judge may by his office, judge whether the Minister spoke treason or not.

Ans. It cannot be denied, but that which is spoken by way of Doctrine by an Ambassador, speaking the word in publick; and that which is spoken in private, although the same words, are very different: for a private man in private to slander the Prince may be treason, he hath no place; not calling to speak of the Prince, but a Pastor hath a calling: as the watchman of the Lord of hosts to reprove.
buke Herod for inceft, and in a constitute Church, the Church is
to, try whether John Baptist preached treason or not. 2. If it be a
flander of the Prince and treason indeed, the Prophet who pre-
ached it, is first subject to the Prophets, who are to condemne and
censure him, and then the magistrat is to inflict bodily punishment
on him for it; but the Church should labour to gaine the slanderers
sole, before the civill judge take away his life.

IV. Assert. The Magistrate de jure is obliged not only to permit,
but also to procure the free exercise of the ministry in dispensing
Word, Sacraments, and Discipline, and owe his accumulative power,
to convene Synods, to adde his sanction to the lawfull and necessa-
ry constitutions and ordination of worthy, and to the Deposition
of unworthy officers in the Church. 1. Because he is a Nurfe-father
in the Church, Is. 49. 23. 2. And by office, as a Publike father,
to procure the good of the soules of the subjects in his coactive
way, that we may lead a quiete and peaceable life in all godlines
and honesty, 1 Tim. 2. 2. 3. He is not onely to permit, but also po-
sitively to procure all peace, in the exercise of all lawfull and pro-
fitable trades and Arts; Ergo, faire more that glory may dwell in
the Land, and that the Peace thereof may be as a River, Is. 48. 18.
by the presence of Christ walking in the midst of the Golden Can-
dlesticks.

V. Assertion. When the Magistrate commandeth painfull and
found administration in preaching and governing, with provision
of the praying and rewarding of well doing, he doth not subor-
dinate to himselfe the Ministry in its exercise. 1. Because this
promise is accumulative, and of a temporall reward, for the Ma-
gistrate as the Magistrate cannot promise that which Peter promis-
seth; that 1. 1 Pet. 5. 4. When the chiefe sheepshard shall appeare,they
shall receive a crown of glory that faeth not away, he may as a
Christian promise that, but for a temporall reward for men, no
man for being faithfull in the house of God, hath that unsepara-
bly annexed to his labours, by a literall promise in Scripture, and
therefore it is onely accumulative. 2. Right and sound preaching
and governing in Gods house, cannot from this be said to bee
subjected to the Magistrate as a Magistrate, in regard that this is an
accidentall hire, and an externall and accessor good, which the
Church as the Church, and the most faithfull Prophets, Apostles,
and
and Pastors have wanted, and yet have attained the end of a Church as a Church visible, nor is this a promise made to the Church as the Church or the Ministers thereof as such, for the Apostolick church that was most poor, had neither thing, nor name, nor promise, but by the contrary, the Kings and Rulers did conspire against the Kingdom of the Son of God.

VI. Asserion. Though the Magistrate may both threaten to inflict, and actually inflict the ill of temporal punishment on Ministers, if they be either idle or unsound in their administration; yet thence can onely be concluded that the male administration of the ministerie is subjected to the Magistrate as such, but not the Ministerie itself, or the exercise thereof. 1. The male administration of any office is accidentall to the office. 2. This subjecteth the erring person, not the teaching Minister to the civil Magistrate. Nor doth this make the Ministers in the exercise of their office, properly subordinate to the Ministers, but onely so farre as the spirits of the Prophets are subject to the Prophets.

VII. Asserion. There is a twofold subordination of the exercise of Male administration of Ministers; one civil, another Ecclesiasticall: These two differ, so as the former must be subordinate to the Magistrate who is to inflict bodily punishment, but the latter is onely subject to the Church. The Judicail determination according to the Word of God, for the informing of the conscience and gaining to the truth the erring Ministers, is proper to the Colledge of Ministers; and in this if the colledge of Ministers erre, they are also punishable, and the Magistrate is to command them to judge and determine, de novo, over again: The Magistrate in a constitute church is to determine civilly, and sentence, and civilly punish the Ministers that either are dumbe dogs, and will not barke, or that perverts the souls of people with false doctrine, and where the Church is constituted, it is presumed that the Priests, whose lips should preserve knowledge, have determined in an Ecclesiasticall way, the very same which the Judge civilly is to determine, not because the Church hath so determined, but because he judgeth in his conscience it to be according to the Word of God.

VIII. Asserion. The Ministers are in no sort the Ambassadors or servants of the Magistrate, but of Jesus Christ, and immediately in their ministerial acts subordinate to the King of Kings. 1. They declare (D D D)
declare the truth in the Name of Christ, their master and Lord, not in the name of the Magistrate, as the Arminians make the steps of the subordination. 1. The Word of God. 2. The Magistrate carrying God's sword. 3. The Preachers of the Gospel; for then the Preachers should hear the word of the Magistrate first, and have the minde of Christ spoken and revealed to them immediately from the magistrate, but mediatly onely by the mediation of the Magistrate, the minde of Christ. 2. There should be in every Christian Kingdom, where there is a King, a civil Pope, having directly both the Swords, not with the distinction of Levites, of directly and directly, and as they say, the Pope hath the temporall Sword, indirectly and in ordine ad spiritualia, in order to spiritual things, and how many inferior Magistrates, so many civil Popes, onely they shall not be infallible. Arminians say that this collection is from envie, Because we (say they) deny a headship and supremacy of power of Government, to your Pastors and Elders in all your Parishes, which maketh the Church a Monster with many heads; therefore you put this, for envy upon the Magistrate, who yet hath the Word of God above him, which the Pope hath not, who setteth himself above the Word of God.

Anf. 1. If we give a supremacy royall, and princely to the Ministers, which they call Archielenonca, as the adversaries doe to the Magistrate; multitudes ofPopes behoved to be in the Church, but we make them meet Heralds, Trumpeters, and Messengers to relate the will of God, void of all royall power and having neither earthly majesty, power, nor Sword. 2. It is not our Argument, that in which they conceive we repose, to wit, that we think the adversaries resolve all ultimate, and last which concerneth the government of the Church, in the will of the Magistrate, as on an infallible rule, we grant they teach that the Word of God is to rule the Magistrate in the matters of the first Table, and justice and equity in the things of the second Table, but they lay this in words onely, but the Magistrate as Magistrate may mould out of his high dominion what Church government he will, and this by consequent revolveth all in the Magistrates will; and that they teach, that when the Magistrate doth command against the Word of God, then it is better to obey God then men. And 2. This we infer as an absurdity that they cannot shun that there is such an
new officer, a new Church head, a creature most like a Pope in every Christian Kingdom brought in the Church, who is above Bishops, Pastors, Doctors, who by office must carry the mind of God to Pastor and people, who hath the keyes of the House to make and unmake, call and send, recall and exantrate ministers as his Servants and Heralds. 3. Looke what power the Magistrate hath in civill affaires, the same hath he in dispensing Word, Sacraments, admitting to, or rejecting from the Sacraments, calling of ministers, excommunicating by this way, and so by office, he is no lesse essentially a Pastor to watch for the foule, then he is a civill Judge. 4. How doth this confound the two Kingdomes? the Kingdom that is of this world, and fighteth with the Sword; and the Kingdom that is not of this world, and fighteth not with the Sword? if the magistrate as the magistrate and armed with the sword, be the supream Head over both, and as he beareth the Sword have a carnall dominion over the Church as the Church? 5. If God have made the subordination of ministers as ministers, and servants of the magistrate as a magistrate, then the visible Church hath no ordinary right, to Ordinances, Word, Sacraments, discipline, but by the magistrate; and all that the Churches did in the Apostles times, or the first three hundred yeers after Christ, being contrary to the magistrates will, must be either seditious, or then it was by no rule of the Gospell, but by an extraordinary dispensation; and we shall have no warrant for any dispensing of the Word, and of Seals, or Government from the Apostolique Church, because all that must have beene beside the rule and extraordinary. 6. From this pretended subordination, as the supream magistrate may doe all that the inferior magistrate may doe, because the King is eminently all that the inferior Magistrate is, and something more; so may he dispense the Word and Sacraments, in regard that the King is by the same official power over the Church as the Church, in sacra, in all matters of Religion, as in civill things, and containeth in him, in a high and eminente manner, all that the Church and Pastors can doe, as they are such, and because the King hath the same power, in all Arts and Trades, then by his Royal power he might (if he had time and leisure) build houses, because of his royall Eminency over all Trades, he might sit at the helme of any ship, and steer and rule it, he might paint
paint Images, he might plow the ground, because he hath the like Royall power over Masons, Sailors, Painters, Husband-men, carpenters, and the like, as he hath over the common-wealth, and the Church; we must then say that God hath called the King to all these to be a minister, a Mason, a Sailor, a Painter, and if he had leisure, he hath God calling to be a Preacher, a Sailor, as to be a King yea, and that as King he is all these: Now the Apostle clearly distinguisheth between him who exhorteth and teacheth in the Church, Rom. 12: and him who is the Minister of God, and beareth not the word in vain, Rom. 13: and clearly intimateth a distinction of calling, so that God never called one man to all callings, as it is 1 Cor. 7:17. But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk, ver. 20. Let every one abide in the same calling wherein he was called: And it is clear, if the King be a Head in the body, 1 Cor. 12: then he is not the feet, though he have need of the feet, for then the eye should be both eye and ear, and hand, and therefore the King cannot be all. Paren. in Rom. 13: faith, the King cannot doe some things ob defectum juris ex Dei dimensione, He cannot preach. Anf. Ergo, Preaching belongeth by Divine right to another, and its not subordinate to him, jure Divino. 2. Saith Paren., he wanteth law to use the wife of another man as his owne. Anf. Then the right of Husband and Wife is not subordinate to the King, so as he may use the right of a Husband, because it is against the seventh Commandment, nor can he invade the right of Pastors to dispense Word and Sacraments, it being against the second Commandment, he not being called thereto. 3. Other things (faith he) he cannot doe for want of skill, as to teach in a Colledge, and others he cannot doe, because they are for did, as to sewe shoes. Anf. If God have not called the Prince to these, it is not onely fordid, but unlawfull for him to thrust his sicle in another man's field, for God must call to a lawfull calling, else men use a lawful thing unlawfully, so it is fordid and unlawfull for him to judge those, and the like. Erasius I know roundly granteth that the King or any Magistrate may lawfully dispense the Word and Sacraments, nothing hindereth him, but want of time, which is a better Answer then others give, who hold the same principles with Erasius, and that the King hath the same Royall power in things civill and Ecclesiastick, except the adversary flee to our dislin-
distinction of power and persons, and of things civil and sacred, they shall never expede themselves, **But the King (say they) is not capable of 1. The power of Order, he cannot be a Pastor, or a Doctor. 2. He cannot as King be capable of internall power of jurisdictiion, he cannot preach, he cannot dispense the Sacraments, but he is (say they) capable of externall power of jurisdictiion, to governe the Church, excommunicate, to debarre Apostates and Hereticks, from the Sacraments, to create Prelates, Primates, Metropolitans, and such cattell, to call and ordaine, make and unmake Ministers, to make all Canons and Ecclesiastical Lawes, and appoint religious Ceremonies, as holy Surplice, crossing, oyle and spittle in Baptisme, to create holy days, to command men to kneel to bread, and to order all the externall worship of God, and beside the Word, to order many little and smaller things in the borders of worship externall, such as is some little Idolatry, and Superstition: And (for ought I know) by their way, who hold there is no certaine forme of Government of Gods House in the Scripture, some harmelesse and innocent golden Calves, as lawfull as religious symbolical Ceremonies. This power is no more due to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, then to dispense the Sacraments, as I have said before: Nor doe the Arminians much honour the Magistrate, who walking in the steps of Erastus doe hold, that the Magistrate having power of publique places, Preachers are obliged not to preach in publike places, if the Magistrate forbid them, but they may preach in private places. But 1. These same Arminians hold that Pastors are to preach whatever in their conscience seems to be the truth of God; a principle of those who are for tolleration of all Religions, though Judaism & Turcism, a way (I am perswaded) most abominable, and which the Lord of his Church will crush, when he shall bring down other Antichristian untruths to the ground. Now it seems to the conscience of Papists and many Heretical teachers, that they are obliged to preach Turcisme, & Judaism in the Temple, and in publike, & that distinction is false & vain, as it is in very deed contrary to the truth of God, to preach what they think the truth of God, & to preach it in publike or private, or in any place is indifferent as touching the place. 2. The Lord hath no more given to Magistrates power of places, or actions religious in places, then he hath given to them power of truths: *Erre, they must be obliged in conscience, rejecting a vain
and sapleffe distinction, to preach in publike places: for as that judicious and learned professor Iac. Triglandius faith, The place is accidental to the worship, and changeth not the nature of it; and truly as that learned professor faith, it is a poor honour that they put on the Magistrate, to limit all his power to places and stipends. 3. The Apostles knew not this distinction, for they not only preached truth, the Scribes and Pharisees forbidding them; but in publiblic places, and in every place, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ, Acts 6.2.4. & 4.120. & 5.20,21. The Magistrate being Antichristian forbiddeth not preaching of saving truths, because of the place, be it private or publick; but he forbiddeth them, because they are saving, and if Jesus Christ have called a man to preach in publick, in the house tops, the Magistrate hath no power from God to silence him in publick more then in private; the Magistrate forbiddeth that any teach false Doctrine, but for the place, but because it is injurious and hurtful to humane societies that men should be principled in a false Religion, and cannot but disturb the publick peace.

IX. After. The Christian magistrate must here come under a threefold consideration. 1. As the Object of that high office is meerly and purely civill, and positive relating only to a civill end of Peace: as in importing, or exporting of goods, of woolly, waxe, moneys for the good of the common-wealth, the crying up or crying downe of the value of coined Gold or Silver, the making of Lawes meerly civill; as not to carry Armor in the night in such a City: So in Warre, Commanders, Captains and Colonels are Magistrates to order the Battle, lay stragamens, the way of besieging Townes, of fortifying Castles, of issuing out mandates for the Navy; The Parliament's power in disposing of Fouling, Fishing, Hunting, Eating of Flesh, or not eating at such a time: all these, is the Word of God doth not particularly warrant the one side more then the other, are meerly civill and positive: It is sure the Magistrate hath a supremacy, and an independency above the Church or Ministers of the Gospel in all these; and as these preceede from all Morality of the first and second Table, I hold that neither the power nor person of the Magistrate is subordinate to the Church and Church assemblies, and Ministers of the Gospel should not exceed the limits and bounds of their calling, if they should
should meddle with these; as the Church should exceed their bounds, if they should make Canons touching the way of saying, painting, tilling the earth according to such and such principles of Art, for these are without the sphere of the Churches activity; in this consideration that learned and grave Divine Doctor Andrew Riviens in Decale in c.5. faith well, pag.204. That as we believe a man well skilled in his own Art, so that his judgement is a suprem rule; so the suprem authority of the Magistrate to us in things positive, is a rule; for indeed it cannot be denied but there be Arcana Imperii secrets of State that are not to be communicated to Pastors or to any, in which the Rulers have a Supremacy. The Magistrate falleth under a second consideration, as he giveth out Lawes just or unjust, and executeth judgement in the morning, or suffreth the eyes of the poore, the widdow and Orphane to faile for want of justice; and in these he is not subject to the Church and Pastors so, but only as if he sinne in making Lawes, the Pastors may humbly supplicate that he would recall those unjust Lawes, and judge over againe righteous judgement, and this exhorting of the Pastors is a subjecting of the Magistrate to the Pastors quoad actus imperatos; so have Generall assemblies in the Church of Scotland humbly supplicated the King and Parliament to retreat Laws made against the liberties of the Church, in favour of Antichristian Prelates and Ceremonies; but quoad actus elicitos: The Church and Pastors themselves cannot usurpe the throne, and give out civill Lawes that are righteous, and judge righteously: for the poor in the place of King, Parliament and Judges; for in this also the judges are suprem and independent, and subject only to God the Creator, as his Vicars and Deputies in Gods universall Kingdome of power called universale regnum potentiae, by Divines; they are Gods, and the shields of the world, and here only as they erre, not as they judge, are they subject to rebukes and threatnings, and admonitions of the Church and Ministers of the Gospel: Even as the Magistrate may command the Pastors to preach and dispense the Sacraments aright, but the Magistrate himselfe can neither preach nor dispense the Sacraments: so the Schoolmen say, that the actions of the understanding depend on the will, quoad exercitium, the will may set the mind to think on this or that truth; but not quoad specificationem. The will itselfe can neither assent, nor dissent from a truth, nor can the will command.
command the mind to assent to a known untruth, or dissent from a known truth; the mind or understanding naturally doth both, and this distinction holdeth in acts of the civil power, and in acts meerly Ecclesiasticall. The third consideration of the Christian Magistrate is as he is a man, and a member of a Christian Church who hath a soul to be saved, and in this, he is to submit to Pastors, as those that watch for his soul, Heb. 13.17, as others who have souls to be saved.

X. Ass. Hence I am not afraid to assert a reciprocation of subordinations, between the Church and the Magistrate, and a sort of collaterality and independent supremacy in their own kind common to both, for every soul, Pastors and others, are subject to the Magistrate as the higher power, in all civil matters, Rom. 13.1,2,3,4. Tit. 3.1. 1 Pet. 2.13,14. Mat. 22.21. and all members of the common-wealth, being members of the Church in soul-matters, are subject to the Church and Pastors in their authoritative dispensing of Word, Sacraments and Church censures: Nor are any Magistrates or other who have souls excepted, Heb. 13.17. Mat. 16.19. Mat. 18.18. Job. 20.21. Acts. 15.20,21,22,23. Mat. 10.40,41,42. So Protestant writers who have written on this subject Teach: As the learned Walens, judicious Trig, that most learned Divine, And. Rivetum; the grave and learned professors of Leyden, Zipperus, Calv. Petr. Cabel Tavins, reverend and pious M. John Cotson, judicious P. Mar. D. Parkes, all the Protestant confessions. The Augustinian confession distinctly of Heterodoxy. The confession of Sweden, the Saxon. The English confession and that of Scotland, all our Divines; while Erasmus, Utrech, Hu. Grosius, Vedelinus, (Bullinger, Gualtherm, going before them; yet not every way theirs) did teach the contrary. The Arminians in Holland did thus flatter the Magistrate for their own political ends, and some Court Divines made the King of England Head of the Church, in the place of the Pope, which P. Mar. excused and expounded benignly; some say it is against reason that there should be two suprema collaterall powers, and especially in a mutual subordination. But can we deny this reciprocation of subordinations? it is evident in many things; if the King be in an extreem fea-
CHAPTER XXV.

Commands regarding the Independencies of Magistrates and Churches.

There is nothing more hated by the Adversaries than the confusion of those two dispensations and high powers. All power derivs by the Church, is subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church, in works, in works, subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church. The Magistrates, therefore, are the pillars of the Church, and as such, are subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church. The Magistrates are, therefore, not subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church, but are the pillars of the Church, subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church.

The Magistrates are not improperly the servants of Christ; they are to be obeyed, not as servants, but as servants who obey, and are subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church. The Magistrates are, therefore, not subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church, but are the pillars of the Church, subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church.

The Magistrates are, therefore, not subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church, but are the pillars of the Church, subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church.

The Magistrates are, therefore, not subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church, but are the pillars of the Church, subject to the Word and God within the body of the Church.
the adversaries chief Members of the Church; Ergo, they are that way subject as other Members, as confesseth, Com. Rom. 13. Nor, 3. Will that prove anything that the Pastors are Ministers, not Lords: for to people and Prince as they have souls to be saved, they are Ministers, and by this people should abasively be subject as well as Magistrates: But Veadius freeth Magistrates from subjection to Pastors; because they are subject to the Word of God, not to Pastors, but so are the people subject also the same way.

Obj. 2. Then may the Church censure all sinner, even those, that are most proper to the civil judge, such as sorcery, parricide, sodomy, for which the Magistrate is to draw the sword, and for which the Lord made the land to cast out seven great Nations.

Ans. The case is one within the Church, and another without the Church. 2. It is one in the case of a confused, or backsliding Church, another in the Church rightly constitute and pure; without the Church, God intendeth nothing, either in the intention of the work or the work; but the external peace of humane society: Then, I grant the Magistrate is at the first without any previous labours of religious men, to save the soul of the offender, to take care of peace and the conservation of humane society; but within the visible Church, where the Gospel is preached, it is presumed, that God intendeth salvation in regard of the intention of the work, the Gospel being preached to all within the visible Church; if therefore any within the visible Church, fall in horrible scandals, and such as are capitall, in the intention of God's dispensation, without the Church, God intendeth nothing but peace; But in regard of the intention of God's dispensation, within the Church, where the Gospel is preached, he intendeth both peace by the godly Magistrates care and eternal life, by the preaching of the Gospel; Because therefore life eternal is more necessary then external peace, it is necessary that the Church first labour to try, cognosce of, and cure the mans soul by rebukes, threats, conviction; and (if need be) by excommunication, that the souls of many may be saved from the contagion of scandal, before the Magistrate punish either death, (if the scandal do deserve) or by any coercive way by the sword, the genuine fruit whereof is not repentance and gaining of the mans soul, except by accident and through the co-operation of a higher hand, above nature even of free-grace.)
but the external peace of the common-wealth; hence in a constitute Church, the Magistrate is not to proceed with the sword against the body of any Member of the Church, while the Church first try and attempt how to save his soul; therefore the Magistrate is to sentence none as punishable by the sword, while first he be laboured on by the Church, and upon a previous sentence of the Church; then must the Magistrates judging of a scandalous Church-member be subsequent, and the Churches judging antecedent: But, 2. If the Church be remiss, this is a defect, and somewhat extraordinary; if the Magistrate command the Church to do their duty, and they neglect to do it, the Magistrates cognizance then may be antecedent and not consequent, and the case of a Church erring in a fact, is, as if, in that fact, there were no Church.

Obj. 3. Those are subordinate to the Church, whose judgements and sentences are subjected to the Church, to be tryed or condemned by the Church, but the judgements and sentences of the Magistrate are subjected to the Church; Ergo, and by the like they prove, Pastors to be subjected to the Civil Magistrate, because their preaching, their dispensing of the Sacraments, their sentences in their Presbyterian are subjected to the Magistrate, so as he may absolve, or condemn.

Ans. Pedelus shall never prove the Major, as touching the subjection or subordination in question; he is subject to the Magistrate, whose sentence or judgement is subject, in an antecedent cognizance, and in a coactive corporall way; it is true: But now the assumption is false, in a constitute Church, the sentence or thing sentenced or judged by the Church, is subject to the Magistrate in a subsequent cognizance, and in a corporall coactive way only: But not in an antecedent cognizance, and by a way of Ecclesiastical censuring; we acknowledge a subordination of the Churches sentence to the Magistrate, in regard of the Magistrates externall care to punish iniquity in any; not in regard of intrinsical judging and dealing with the conscience, the Church is to give a reason of their sentence from the Word of God, to the Magistrate when he demandeth it.

Obj. 4. Ministers as Ministers are subjects of the King; Ergo, the King judgeth them as Ministers.

Ans. I deny the antecedent: The Ministry as such is an Ordinance of God, and cannot be judged; nor are Ministers, nor Painters as Painters, nor Musicians as Musicians, nor Sailors as Sailors (C E E 2) subjects;
Subordination of Magistrates Cap.XXV. Q. 21.

Subjects; these reduplications be confounding and deceiving notions; painters as painters are regulated by Art, & subject to be judged by painters, but as men they are subjects, & so are Ministers as men subject to Caesar as Ministers they are the servants of Christ, & not subjects. Ob. As Ministers they are either Magistrates or subjects, but Ministers as Ministers are not Magistrates: He that is not with Christ is against him, M. Coleman in his Brotherly examination, p. 21. faith. He that doth not manage his office under Christ, and for Christ, must manage it under the Devil, and for the Devil; if therefore the Christian Magistrate do not manage his office under, and for Christ, he must manage it under, or for the Devil, which were blasphemyous. Ans. I deny the Major proposition: Ministers as Ministers are neither Magistrates, nor Subjects; but formally the separated servants of Christ, for a part for the work of gathering the Saints: Now to be subjects, is to be judged by the Magistrate in those things, in which they are subjects, that is, in all Civill businesse they are, and false teaching discerned by the Church to be false teaching, or in case the Church corrupt themselves, then are Ministers obnoxious to bodily punishment to be inflicted by the Magistrate; But this is properly to be a subject of the Magistrate, to be lyable to the civill cognizance, trying, and bodily punishment inflicted by the Magistrate, and to be a subject; and a member of the other Kingdom, is to be subject to the Ecclesiasticall cognizance, tryall, and censure of the Church, as a matter that concerneth the soul; hence the former concerneth the body and outward man, the latter the inner man, and the soul. 2. The former concerneth peace with men and edification, to be procured by a mean extrinsicall, to edification, to wit, by the sword; the latter concerneth peace with God, by a spiritual sword, the Word of God. 3. The former is carnall, and of the Kingdom of this world; the latter spiritual and of Christs other Kingdom, that is not of this world, Joh. 18.36. 4. The former worketh by coaction and bodily violence; the latter by removing unwillingness and making a rebellious soul obedient. 5. The former is an act of justice not terminated on repentance, or the mans turning to God, as an end; for whether this end be obtained, or no, the Magistrate is to use the sword, the other is terminated on repentance as its end: He that is not with Christ, is against Christ, and with the Devil; its true, in all professors of the Gospel, as professors, no man, but he must be.
be either on the one side, or on the other, either for, or with Christ, or against him: But it is not true with every reduplication; thus Ministers as Ministers are subjects of, or to the King, and to obey him in the Lord, and so with Christ, both in sense, Ministers essentially and formally are subjects of, or to the King to obey him in the Lord; so as Ministers do lose the essence and formality of the office of the Ministry; if they be not the Kings subjects, and with Christ; this is most false, for Judas should not be a Minister of Christ then, in that he was not subject to the Law of Cesar, that is, that the servant and disciple should be for, and under his master and Lord, it only followeth; Ergo, Judas was not a godly Minister, but under the Devil, not under Christ; Magistrates do neither essentially as Magistrates cleave to Christ, nor fight against Christ; but as holy men they cleave to Christ, as sinfull men they fight against Christ.

2. Master Coleman knoweth that we speak of the office of a Magistrate as a Magistrate, not under the accidents of Christian, or heathenish; there was no reason he should apply his Argument to the Parliament, except to make us odious, as if we did not as much honour or pray for the Parliament and King, as himselfe: But it concludeth equally against all Magistrates, and let him see it in a heathen Magistrate as a Magistrate: for a heathen Magistrate as a Magistrate, doth either manage his office under Christ, and for Christ, or under the Devil, and for the Devil. This I and Master Coleman also shall deny, for a heathen Magistrate as a Magistrate, doth not manage his office under, or for Christ, as mediator; because he is utterly ignorant of Christ, for he hath no more, but what God as creator and nature gave him, faith Master Coleman, pag. 29, and the other horne of the Argument, is as weak for this, The heathen Magistrate as such, manages his office under, or for the Devil, is blasphemous, for so Magistracy and the office should be intrinsically unlawful, and for the Devil: But it is intrinsically the Ordinance of God, Rom. 13: and apply this to God as creator, it shall appear of force. The Magistrate as the Magistrate, doth either manage his office under, and for God creator, or under, and for the Devil. The former part is true, because God creator and not the Devil, the office of Magistracy, apply it to his heathenish husband, Father, Master, Muslim, Painter, under these reduplications and it shall make the relation of Husband Devilish; or this proposition,
tion, (a Husband, a Father as a Father, and a Husband, manage
t heir office, under, and for Christ the mediator, or under, or for the De-
vil) is most false and blasphemous: the former part is false; for
there should have been, and was Father and Husband which did
manage the duties of these relations, for God creator, not for Christ
mediator; though Christ had never taken on our nature, never been
mediator, never been King and Priest of his redeemed Church.
The latter part is blasphemous, for then Adam had managed the
part of Husband and Father under the Devil, and for the Devil,
even before he fell in sinne, and in the state of Innocency. 3. Mr.
Colemans meaning is, that the Magistrate as the Magistrate,
by office is under Christ mediator, as his supreme and
immediate viceroy as mediator; now in this sense, Christ's
saying (he that is not against us, is with us) shall not prove the truth
of the proposition, which must be this, and is most false, to wit,
that (The Magistrate as the Magistrate, by office, is either under
Christ mediator, as the supreme and immediate viceroy of him
as mediator, or he is by office under the Devil.) This we deny, for
one might argue thus of the Apostle Paul, who was either as an
Apostle for Christ, or against Christ; Paul as an Apostle is either
under Christ the mediator, and his supreme and immediate viceroy,
having power of both Swords, or he is under the Devil. The
proposition is most false; for Paul is neither of them, so say we
here; the Magistrate doth neither manage his office, as a Magistrate
under Christ mediator, as his Vicar, and a little head of the Church,
nor yet doth the Magistrate manage his office under, or for the De-
vil, God save the Magistrate, datum servium, he is for Christ as a
Christian, and as a Christian; but as a Magistrate he is not for
Christ as mediator, that is, as having his office of Christ as medi-
ar, and being from Christ a Magistrate, that is, as M. Coleman
expoundeth it an officer, having power of both the Swords: For Mr.
Coleman saith, p. 20. Christian Magistracy, is an Ecclesiastical ad-
ministration; Ergo, he hath the power of the Spirituall Sword, and
Paul, Rom. 13. saith, he hath from God the power of the other
Sword: Yea, we cannot say that a Magistrate as a Magistrate, or
a Minister as a Minister, are either redeemed and saved in Christ,
or no redeemed, or no saved in Christ; but in another reduplica-
tion: The Magistrate as a Magistrate, is not redeemed, but as an
elected
elected man; nor is he damned, or not redeemed as a Magistrate, but as a reprobate and an unbelieving man; and the like I say of a Minister, he that is not with Christ, as his immediate and supreme Swordbearer, is not against Christ, for so all the world except the Prince, should be against him.

Obj. 5. The Magistrate as he defendeth the body, and goods, so also the name of men; hence what is a matter of good or ill report is judged by the Magistrate, who may put ill doers to shame, Judg. c. 18. 7. But Church scandals, blasphemy, heresy, apostasy, are matters of ill report, and of shame; Ergo, they are to be judged by the Magistrate.

Ans. Non consequitur negatum. We deny not but the Magistrate may judge and put to shame offenders, but it is civil shame, by which the Magistrate judgeth any offender to be an evil Citizen and hurtful member of the commonwealth, Judg. 18. 17. The Church hath no power thus to judge, or thus to put to shame: But there is an Ecclesiastical shame, in which the Church judgeth, whether such a man be a sound and faithful subject of the kingdom of Christ, or a hurtful member of the Church, and of this shame speaketh Paul: "Thou shalt keep company with him, that he may be ashamed, and the same way we are to distinguish a good name for it is an honour, that it be said of any man, as Psal. 87. This man was born in Zion."

Obj. 6. What the Magistrate punisheth, that he judgeth discerneth: What he punisheth, that be judgeth, the way he punisheth, for as he punisheth severely, and with the severity so he judgeth in a civil way, not as a Church scandal, but as a civil disturbance. In a constitutive Church, by a subordinate judgemen after those whose lips should preserve knowledge, have judged into be Idolatry; and herefore he is to judge it, and in order to corporal punishment, is true, and thus the Major is granted. But the assumption is false, for the Magistrate judgeth nothing, but scandalous, mild magistrates, nor hereby, with an ascendant judgement, and with orderr in Ecclesiastical punishment to gain the soul: Obj. But as you so ordain judging or punishing required, thus such as the Magistrate instructeth. Ans. This is a false.
a false principle, and verteth all Church Government.

Obj. 7. But so you make two supreme magistrates, the King and the Church, two collateral supreme powers; yet so as the magistrates conscience lyeth under the feet of the Church.

Ans. The Church hath a Ministry, no dominion of Magistracy. 2. There is a collaterality without equality: The Magistrate is highest and worthiest, the other hath no dignity, no supereminency, but to be authoritative declarers of the mind of Christ. 3. The Magistrate is no more tied to the judgement of a Synod, or Church, then any private man is tied in his practice; the eye in Discipline and in all Synodical acts and determinations, is here as it is in preaching the Word, the eye is secondary, conditionall, with limitation in so farre as it agree with the Word, not absolutely obliging, not Papal, yea or because commanded, nor because determined by the Church, and such as Magistrates, and all Christians may reject, when contrary to, or not warranted by the Word of God.

Obj. 8. But Pastors have authority equally independent under God, as the magistrate hath, and hence they must be equal, besides a collaterality, but there is liberty of the Kingdom of Christ, the right, the power of the Church is taken away, so often as the magistrate punishth scandalous.

Ans. Non-subordination can never inferre equality, who denieth that the Magistrate may command the Husband and Wife to do a duty to each other; the father not to provoke the son, the son not to disobey the Father, the Pastor and People, the Master and Servant, the Captain and Souldier, to do a duty each, one to another. And there is a proper right and liberty, and power immediately given by God; without the King or Magistrates interposing of their authority; to all these, the Kings authority maketh not the man's Father, nor the Child subject to the Father, nor the Servant to the Master, nor the Souldier to the Commander. God immediately made those powers, and God in the Law of nature hath given a power to the Father over the sonne, without the Magistrate; yea, though there had never been a Magistrate in the world; so the Masters and Elders by divine institution, have a power and liberty to feed and govern the flock, over which the Holy Ghost hath made them overseers, and set them over all those who must give
give an account to the great Shepherd, Acts 20. 28, 29. 1 Thes. 5. 12, 13. Heb. 13. 17. 1 Tim. 5. 17. now it no more followeth that all Fathers are equal to the Magistrate, all Masters, all Captains to the King, then that the Church or Pastors are equal to the King for Fathers, Masters, Captains, Husbands have immediately from God in the Law of Nature, a supreme, a high and independent Authority as the Church hath, without any intervention of the will or authority of King or any earthly Magistrate, and without any subordination as they are such to the Prince. 2. The emulation between the Magistrate and Pastors is no more in point of government, then in point of preaching, exhorting, rebuking even of Kings and all that are in Authority; now we have both demonstrated from the Word, and have the grant of Adversaries, that in point of preaching and rebuking the Pastors have an immediate supremacy and independency under Jesus Christ; and all emulation here, is from men who will not submit to the yoke of Christ. 3. If the Magistrate should usurp over Husbands, and Masters and Fathers, their just maritale, hierie, Patrem, and spoil them of Husband-power, and masterly and fatherly power, as our Adversaries counsel the Magistrate to take the spiritual right and power of the keys of the Kingdom of God, from the Church and Pastors, the former should complain, as do the inner.

Object. 8. But if the Kingdom be heathenish, and the heart of the King be first supernaturally affected, then Religion beginneth as him as a Magistrate, and he may appoint gifted men after they are converted to preach the Gospel; Ergo, The first rise of Religion is from the Magistrate as the Magistrate.

Ans. If the King be converted first as a Christian, not as a Magistrate, he may spread the Gospel to others, and preach himself but not as a Magistrate, as Jehoshaphat commanded the Levites to do their duty, so might he command those of the house of Aaron, who had deserted the Priest's office, to take the office on them, to which God had called them, so here gifts and faithfulness appealing to the new converted Prince, he is to command those so gifted, (for their gifts and faithfulness is as evident a call as to borne the sponges of Aaron,) to take on them the calling of preaching and of dispensing the Seals. But 1. he ordaineth them not (§ 1 1) Pastors.
Pastors as a Prince, but commandeth them to follow the calling which now the Church not constituted, cannot give. 2. He can preach himself as a gifted believer, in an extraordinary exigence, but he cannot do this as a Magistrate, yea, Moses did never prophecy as a Magistrate, nor David as a King. 3. All the rise that Religion hath from the Prince as the Prince in this case is civil, that men gifted may be commanded by civil Authority, to dispense Word and Sacraments, but nothing Ecclesiastical is here done by the Prince as the Prince. 3. The highest power in the Church as the Church, and the highest amongst men, as men, are much different. The Magistrates power in commanding that this Religion is true and consonant to the Word of God be set up, and others that are false be not set up in his Kingdom, is a civil power, and due to him as a Magistrate, but a highest Church power, to dispense Word and Sacraments agreeeth to no Magistrate as a Magistrate; but it followeth not, that when the true Religion is erected by his power as a Magistrate, that he may as a Magistrate dispense Word, Sacraments, and Synodical acts and censures; except God have called him to preach the Word, and to use the sword of the other Kingdom, as a Member of the Church joined with the Church.

Object 9. But the Magistrate is improperly subject to the Pastor, who is but a mere Herald, servant, and Minister, who hath all his authority from the word of another, and so it is but imperium alienum, a borrowed power, he is subject properly to Christ speaking in his Word. Titius is subject to the King properly, but improperly to the King's Herald.

Ans 1. Let the subject be improper, there can no conclusion from thence be drawn against us, if 1. The Pastors as Pastors have their commissions from Christ and be his immediate Servants, and have no Commission Pastorall from the Magistrate, as the power of the Herald floweth immediately from the royal power of the King, and he is the King's immediate servant; then to obey him in those acts which he performeth in the King's name, is to obey the King; and in those acts subjects do properly obey the Herald; and so here, Heb. 13, Obey those that are over you in the Lord, according to that, He that heareth you, heareth me, he that despiseth you despiseth me. 2. It is enough for our purpose that Magistrates
Magistrates are so to obey Pastors in the Lord, and Pastors are so supreme under Christ as the Magistrate is not above them, and they have their Ambassage, calling, and commission immediately from Jesus Christ, without the intervention of the Magistrates Authority.

Obj. But the obedience of the Magistrate to the Pastors, is not absolute, but conditionall, if they command in the Lord; Ergo, It is no kindly obedience and subjection.

Ans. It followeth not, for so we should give no kindly obedience to Kings, to Parents, to Masters, for we obey them only conditionally in the Lord, as they warrant their Commandement from the Word. Yet Vedelius will not say, it is unproper subjectio on we owe to the King, nor can he say that the Royall power is imperium alienum, a beggad power, all obedience to men this way is begged, and if we come to Logick, if I should say the nature and definition of obedience agreeeth not univocally to obedience to God, and to obedience to the creature, Vedelius should hardly re refute me. It is enough Ministers of the Gospell discharge an Ambassage in the roome and place of God, 2 Cor. 5. 20. God commandeth in his Ministers, a limited obedience, is kindly obedience.

Obj. 20. The keeping of the booke of the Law is given so the King, Deut. 17: and 2 Kin. 11. v. 13. Iehoiaah the Priest gave the booke of the Testimony to King Iehoash, when they made him King, the Priests indeed kept the booke of the Law in the side of the Arke, but as servants of the King, and custodes Templo.

Ans. You may see solid answers to this in Walens, Cabell lavius; and Iac. Triglandius. 1. The booke of the Law was given to the King for his practise, that he might feare the Lord his God, and his heart was lifted up above his brethren, Deut. 17. 18, 19, 20, and this was common to him, with the Priests and all the people of God, but to the King in an exemplary and speciall manner, that the people might follow his Example, and therefore these same words which concern the practice of the King, Deut. 17. 19, are also given to the people, Deut. 6. 2, and 10. 13, and 11. 1, 2, 13, 42, and 12. 1, 2, 28, and 13. 4, and 27. 1, and 28. 1, with a little change, sure no change that by any consequent will make the book of the Law to be delivered to the King to this end, that his lips by his Royall office, should preserve knowledge, and that the people should...
Subordination of the Magistrate  Cap. XXV. Q. 21.

The King and the Priest kept the book of the Law, but in a farre different way. Should require the Law at the Kings month, which was the special office of the Priest, Mal. 2. 7. as proper and peculiar to the Priest, as the Covenant of Levi, ver. 8, and that they should not be partial in the Law, but should teach the people the difference between the clean and the unclean, the precious and the vile in Judgement, in rejecting the persons of faster and master, Ezek. 44. 23, 24, and 22, 26. Lev. 10. 10, 11, Jeremiah 15. 19. Deut. 33. 9. Yea, it was no lesse peculiar to the Priests, then to offer Sacrifice to the Lord, Leviticus 10. 10, 11,12, 13, Mal. 2. 7, 8, compared with v. 2. and with c. x. v. 6, 7, 8. Now the King as King was not a confederate in the Covenant of Levi, to burne incense and teach the people, but in a farre other Covenant, 2 Kid. 11. 17, 18. 9. In which the King was to use the sword in defence of the Law and punishing Idolaters: for 1. the King is neither commanded to teach Priests and people out of the book of the Law; Nor 2. rebuked for his neglect in this; both these we may read of the Priests every where, in the Prophets, Deut. 33. 19, Mal. 2. 7, Lev. 10. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15,16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, and 27. 2. Moses commanded the Levites, which have the Ark of the Covenant of the Lord, saying, 25. Take the book of the Law, and put it in the side of the Ark of the Covenant of the Lord your God. Now if the Priests had beene onely the Kings servants immediately subordinate to the King, and mediatingly only to Jesus Christ, the Ark, all the holy things, the books of the covenant, the burning of incense, before the Lord, had been principally and first injoynd to the King. Yea, the Priest read the book of the Law, not Nehemiah; nor was it ever commanded that the King should read in the hearing of the people, and give the sense of it, as the Priests were; so doe by their office; Hilkiah 2 Kid. 22. found the book of the Law, that was left, and Shaphan the Scribe read it before the King, that they might see their Apostasy, and Iniquities, and accordingly reforme. 2 King. 23. 9, 19.

Obje. 11. Haut 42. Kings shall be the Newe-fathers: Ergo Kings were Fathers and heads of the Church.

Ans. This sent is brought for the Popes Supremacy, but it sheweth Kings. 12. 10. Their Kings shall serve them, this is no domination. And the burdens of Kings, which the Church in so]
is not the sincere milk of the Word, which the King preacheth by himself or others, but the externall strength, dignity, that the King shall add by his Authority to the Church, but the Tutor cannot rob the Pupil of the Law and privileges of the inheritance. 2. The Prince is not a father spirituall of the second birth of the Church, as Paul was, 1 Cor. 4. 15.

Object. 12. He for whom we are to pray, that under him we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty, and procure the good of the Church as the Church; so him as the supreme Officer and Shepherd, is the Church as the Church subject; but the Magistrate is such, 1 Tim. 2. 1, 2. Ergo.

Ans. The Major is false, and the Assumption untrue also, and all that the conclusion can bring forth, is that the Prince hath An externall coercive care by way of dominion to procure the removal of Wolves from the fold. 2. To procure the good of the Church, in order to a natural and civil good. 3. To procure good to the Church as the Church in a coercive way, by the sword, in punishing Idolaters. 2. The Church as the Church is not subordinate to the Prince, but as Subjects of the common wealth, because he by a coercive power may procure the good of the Church as the Church; for indirectly and by the sword, the Magistrate defending godliness, and procuring the good of souls, doth not prove that his dominion and sword extendeth to their souls, or that he watcheth for their souls, as Heb. 13. 17.

Obj. 13. The Kings of Israel and Judah have reformed Religion.

Ans. I cannot trouble the Reader to add here what I have answered elsewhere, but let the Reader see Triplician, Ann. Walmes: Gabel Savius in the cited places, they have in the defecction of the Priests, which is extraordinary, Reformed Religion. 2. They did many things as Propheters, not as Magistrates: 3. They have done much in Religion, quoad alios imperatos non obiciisse by their civil power commanding Priests to doe their duties.

Object. 14. It is true in several respects, he that is a Governor, may be a subject, but in one and the same spiruall respect, to judge and to be judged, to sit on the Bench, and stand at the barre of Christ Jesus, is as impossible as to reconcile the East and the West together, so the Bloody Tenent. I demand of the Church be a Delinquent, who shall judge? It is answered, the magistrate. Again if the magistrate

Bloody Tenent,  Cap. 34. page 112.
Subordination of the Magistrate Cap.XXV.Q.21.

5:74

by a delinquent, I ask who shall judge it? It is answered, The Church. Whence I observe (which is, in most cases of the world, monstrous) that one person, so wise, the Church or the Magistrate, shall be at one time the delinquent at the Barre, and the judge upon the Bench: for the Church must judge when the magistrate offends; and yet the magistrate must judge when the Church offends; whether she contemne civil authority, in the Second Table for thus dealing with him, or whether she hath broken the rules of the first table of which (say they) God hath made him a keeper and preserver, what blood, what tumults hath been, and must be spit upon these grounds? Ib. so the Church calleth one of her members to office, and ordaineth him an officer: The Magistrate opposeth him as an unworthy officer, and according to his conscience suppresseth him, upon this the Church complaineth of the Magistrates violation of her privileges, and that he is turned persecutor, and not prevailing with admonition, she excommunicateth the Magistrate: The Magistrate again, not disposing of such violation of ordinances, he cutteth off with the sword, such prophaneurs of ordinances.

As. All this is but wind, devised against the Magistrates punishing of Idolaters, and I shew the same followeth upon the Magistrates, or Church erring, the one in abusing civil authority, or the other in profaning ordinances, or preaching the word; for instance, The Judges of a land, or of Jerusalem, make grievous and bloody decrees against the poor, the widows, and the Orphan: A faithful Isaiah, a jealous preacher by authority from the Lord, judgeth and condemneth according to his conscience, these judges, and cryeth out, as Isa. 10.1. in the name of the Lord, before all the Congregation: Woe be to you, who decree unrighteous decrees, and write (in the Bench) grievous sentences, to turn aside the needy from judgement, and to take away right from the poor: Now the Magistrate that decreeth these decrees, judgeth in his conscience they are righteous decrees, and he according to his conscience, not inducing that Isaiah or any preacher should thus abuse and prophane so holy an Ordinance of prophecy, and preaching: as to preach lies in the name of the Lord, he proceedeth in his civil court, and cutteth off with the sword such false Prophets, because they slander the Lords appointed, and preach lies of him: is not here a reciprocation of judging in the same cause? What will the Author say to this? O faith he, the Magistrate ought not to use his sword against.
against those Prophets, for they preach according to their conscience the truth of God: But say that Shimei were a Prophet, and he calleth David his Prince a bloody murtherer; and faith, this evil is come on him, for rising up against Saul his Master; The Magistrate may not punish him with the Sword, for railing against the Lords anointed. 2. And if the Magistrate ought not to strike with the sword any Prophet, for preaching according to his conscience, for that is persecution to this Author; how shall the Prophets judge and condemn the Magistrate, for those same decrees which he hath given out according to his conscience? for this is a persecution with the tongue, Mat. 5. 19. Job 19. 22. and it is one and the same spiritual cause, faith this Author. 3. The same very Author and the Parliament do reciprocally judge and condemn one another; for the Parliament make warre against Papists, for drawing the King on their side, and causing him make warre against the Lambs and his followers, that is, against godly Protestants: Now suppose Priests and Iesuits, preach this to the Queen and other Papists, and they according to their conscience make warre against the flock of Christ, and the Parliament according to their conscience make warre against them; this Author sitteth downe, and judgeth and condemneth both sides as bloody persecutors, for point of conscience: Now though the Author in his Bench with his penne condemneth and judgeth both according to his conscience; yet if the Papists or possibly the Parliament, had this Author in their fingers, might not they reciprocally judge and condemn him? I think he cannot deny; how justly they should reciprocally judge the Author, I cannot say. 3. This Author would have a contradiction, such as is to make East and West both one, that one and the same man both sit in the Bench, and stand at the barre, that the Church judge the Magistrate, and the Magistrate judge the Church: But I hope contradictions were no more under the Old Testament to be admitted, nor under the New. Now in the Old Testament the King might put to death the Prophet, who should prophecy blasphemies, and again the Prophet might judge the King, by denouncing the judgement of the Lord against the King; yet the Author say how the King, both did sit in the Bench, and stand at the barre in divers respects: I think Ahab might judge and punish Micaiah unjustly, for prophecy that he should dye at Ramoth Gilead, and Micaiah might
in prophecy give out the sentence of death justly against him; but here be two contrary sentences, the like may fall out in Synodical constitutions. 2. To answer to his reasons. 1. It followeth not that in one and the same spiritual respect, one and the same person judgeth on the Bench, and is judged at the Bar; for the Churches judging is in a spiritual respect, as the officer ordained, may promote the building of Gods House, the Magistrates suppressing him is no spiritual respect; but as it disturbeth the peace of the State, that so unworthy a person is an officer in Gods House, and is hurr-ful to the Church of God in their edification, which the Magistrate is to promote not in spiritual, but in a civil coercive way, by the power of the sword. 3. That one judge on the Bench, and the same stand at the Barre and be judged, at divers and sundry times, is not so impossible, by farre, as to reconcile East and West together; Ahab may judge Naboth to be condemned and stoned for his vineyard to day, and immediately after Elias the Prophet may arraigne him before the Barre and tribunal of God to be condemned, and adjudged to dye in the portion of Zarephath, where the doge may lick his blood: It is true Elias is not properly a judge, but a declarer, in a prophetical and authoritative way of the judgement of God; but this is all the judicaiall power which we ascribe to Church, or Presbytey and Pastors; they are mee Ministers or servants to declare the will and sentence of God. When the Minis-ter preacheth wrath against the King for his sins, he judgeth the King in a Pastorall and Ministeriall way, which is all we contend for, in many officers united in a Church way, and at that same time, the King hath power after that, to judge him for preaching treason for sound Doctrine, if it be found to be treason by the Church, and this reciprocation of judging we maintain as consistent and necessary in Ministers of Gospel and Magistrates: But such a distance betwene them, as between East and West, we see not. The Author should have shewne it to us by his owne grounds: The Church may excommunicate a Magistrate as a persecutor, who car-eth off Idolaters for their conscience; yet the godly Magistrate may judge and punish them with the sword, for abusing the ordi-nance of Excommunication, so as to excommunicate the godly Mag-istrate, because he doth punish; ill doing with the Sword, Rom. 13.4. 4. The Author iners...
these two: But that will not prove these two to be inconsistent and contradictionous; tumults and blood arise from preaching the Gospel; what then? Ergo, the Gospel is a mass of contradictions, it followeth not: The tumults and blood have their rise from mens lufts, who are impatient of the yoke of Christ, not from these two powers to judge Ecclesiastically in the Church, and to be judged civilly by the Magistrates: The Author draweth his instance to the actual judging of the same thing contradictory wayes; for example, the Church ordaineth one to be a preacher, and this they do Ecclesiastically, and the Magistrate actually condemneth the same man civilly as unworthy to be a preacher: It is one thing to say, that the Church hath power to judge righteously in an Ecclesiastical way any matter, and another (that the Christian magistrate hath power in a civil way, to judge righteously the same matter) and a far other thing it is to say, the Church hath a power Ecclesiastically to judge a matter righteously, according to the word, and the Magistrate hath power to judge the same matter civilly in a wrong and unjust way; the former we say, God hath given a power to the Church to ordain Ecclesiastically, Epaphroditus to be a preacher of the Gospel, because these graces and gifts are in him that are requisite to be in a faithful preacher; and God hath also given a power to the Christian Magistrate to adde his civil sanction to the ordination and calling of the same Epaphroditus: But we do not teach that God hath given to the Church, a power to call Epaphroditus to the Ministry in an Ecclesiastical way, and that God hath given a power to the Christian Magistrate to annul this lawful ordination of Epaphroditus: Now the Author putteth such a supposition, that Church and Magistrate have two lawful powers, toward contrary acts; the one of them a power to give out a just sentence, the other a power to give out an unjust sentence in one and the same cause, which we teach not: God gave to none either in Church or State a power to unjustice, ad malum nulla est potestas.

Obj. 14. How can the Magistrate determine, what the true Church and ordinances are, and then set them up with the power of the sword? and how can he give judgement of a false Church, false Ministry, false Doctrine, and false Ordinances, and so pull them down by the sword? and yet you say the Magistrate is to give no spiritual
No Appeal in Ecclesiasticall causes

Cap. XXVI. Q. 22.

Bloody Te. rimall judgement of these, nor hath be any spirituall power for these ends and purposes. Bloody Tenent.

Ans. The Magistrate judges of these as a Magistrate, not in a Pastorall way or Ecclesiastically; for then by office, he should be a preacher of the Gospel, but civilly as they are agreeable, or contrary to the Laws of the Common-wealth made concerning Religion, and in order to the civil praise and reward of stipends, wages, or benefices, or to the bodily punishment inflicted by the sword, Rom. 13. 4, 5. So, though the object be spirituall, yet the judging is civil, and the Magistrates power in setting up true, or pulling downe false ordinances, is objectively spirituall or civilly good, or ill (to speak so) against the duty, or agreeable to that which men owe as they are members of a civil incorporation, a City or Common-wealth: But the same power of the Magistrate is formally, essentially in itselfe, civil, and of this world.

CHAP. XXVI. Quest. 22.

Whether appeals are to be made from the Assemblies of the Church, to the civil Magistrate, King or Parliament? and of Paul his appeal to Cesar.

For the clearer explanation of the question, its possible these considerations may help to give light. 1. There be these opinions touching the point: Some exclude the Magistrate from all care of Church discipline, 1. As Jesuits and Papists will have Princes not to examine what the Church, the Pope and the cursed Clergy of Rome decrees in their Synods, To these the Sorbonists of Paris oppose, and the Parliament of France cause to be burnt by the hand of the hangman, any writings of Jesuits that diminisheth the just right of the Magistrate. 2. Those who in the Low-countries did remonstrate under the name of Arminians, as they are called, hold, that the Magistrate ought to tollerate all Religions, even Turcifme and Indaiisme not excepted, because the conscience of man cannot be compelled: Some of them were Socinians; as Henry Slatian, who faith,
Faith right downe, he that useth the sword, or seeketh a Magistracy, is not a Christian; yea, war is against the command of Jesus Christ, or in any terms to kill any; faith Henry Welsingeus, Episcopius, their chief man will have the Magistrate, going no further than real or bodily multlets or fines, Joan Geisterannus pronounceth it unlawful to be a Magistrate to use the sword: But all say the Magistrate ought not to use the sword against Hereticks, Blasphemers, Idolaters, or against any man, for his conscience or Religion. 3. Those that think the Magistrate bear the sword lawfully, yet do confine him to the defence of the halfe of Gods Law, the duties of the second Table, and not to these all, but to such as border not directly on conscience; for if some should sacrifice their children to Moloch and Devils, as some do, the Magistrate were not to punish them, it being a joynit of their Religion and a matter of conscience; and all these will be found to give to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, just as little as Jesuits do in the matters of Religion, and that is right downe nothing, except possibly the Magistrate be of their Religion only, whom he Govern only as a Christian man; the Magistrate hath more with these, then with Papists. 4. Erastus giveth all in Doctrine and Discipline, both in power and exercise to the Magistrate, even to the dispensing of Word and Sacraments. 5. Others for taking Erastus in a little, But following him in the main, deny power of order. 2. Power of internall jurisdiction granteth to him all the externall government of the Church. 6. We hold that the Magistrate keeps both Tables of the Law, and that he hath an inspection in a civill coactive way, in preserving both Tables of the Law; but that he is not as a Magistrate a member of the Church, but as a Christian only. 2. The exercise of Discipline is one thing, and the exercise of it, (as the modus) the way of exercising of it, either in relation to Ecclesiasticall constitutions, or in relation to the politick and civill Laws of a Common-Wealth, is a far other thing. 3. As the Church is to approve and commend the just sentence of the civill judge in punishing ill doers, but only conditionally in so far as it is just, so is the magistrate obliged to follow, ratifie, and with his civil sanction to confirm the sound constitutions of the Church. But conditionally, not absolutely, and blindly, but in so far as they agree with the Word of God.
4. Hence there is a wronging of the Church as the Church, and a civil wronging of the Magistrate as the Magistrate, or of the members of the Church as such, or of the members of the Commonwealth as such, the former and the latter both cannot belong to one judicature: No more then the failing of a Painter against the precepts of Art, because he hath drawn the colours, proportion, and the countenance beside the samplar, and the failing not against Art, but against the Lawes of the King, in that he hath lavished out too much gold in the drawing of the image, doth belong to one judgement; for the Painter as a Painter, according to the Law of Art, must judge of the former, and the Magistrate as a Magistrate of the latter.

5. An appellation is one thing, and the complaint of an oppressed man is another thing; or a provocation to a competent judge is one thing, and the refuge and fleeing of an oppressed man to a higher power, is another thing; if the Church err and fail against the Law of Christ in the matter, and decree, the man to be a hereticke, who is none, and that to be heresie which is truth; the oppressed man in a constituted Church may have his refuge to the godly Magistrate and complain, but he cannot appeal, for an appellation is from an erring judge to an higher judge, in eadem serie, in the same nature and kinde of judicatures, as from a civil Court to a higher civil Court, and from an Ecclesiasticall Court to a higher; as suppose the Church of Antioch judge that the Gentiles must be circumcised, the godly there may appeal to the judgement of Apostles and Elders, in a Council conveened from Antioch and Jerusalem both: and therefore because the Magistrate can no more judge what is heresie, what truth, as a Magistrate, then he can dispence Word and Sacraments; an appeal cannot be made to him, who is no more a judge, ex officio, nor he can dispense the Sacraments ex officio, but a complaint may be made to the Magistrate; if the Church fail in their judging, the Magistrate is to command the Church to judge it over againe, but the Magistrate cannot judge it himself; as there is a complaint made to the Magistrate that the Painter hath not drawn the image exactly, according to the samplar, the Magistrate judgeth not of the Art of the Painter, nor can the Magistrate as the Magistrate draw the image himselfe; But the Magistrate may judge of the Painters breach of promise, who did pa-
tion to draw it exactly according to the sampler, and hath servants, faith to the man who payeth him wages; and therefore the magistracy may either punish his moral error, his breach of promise, or his error of Art, (the faculty or company of Painters must judge of that,) or then command the Painter to paint the same image again, according as the Painter covenanted: But it may be objected, You then make the Magistrate to meddle no more with matters of faith, and preaching truth or falsehood, and giving one Ecclesiastical rules in Church government, as Act. 15. then be meddleseth with painting according to the principles of Art; now painting according to Art, belongeth not at all to the conscience of the Magistrate, but sound preaching, right ruling in God's house, belongeth in a far nearer relation to the conscience of the godly Magistrate. I Answer, As touching the formal judging Ecclesiastically, and as concerning this, that the Magistrate should say, it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to me, or his dispensing of Word and Sacraments, or his burning incense before the Lord, it no more belongeth to him as a Magistrate, to do these in his own person formally; because God hath not called him to act these, then it belongeth to him to paint an Image, to few shoes, to sit at the helm of a Ship, and direct and guide her to such a Port, as is clearer, Heb. 5. 4. 1 Cor. 7. 17. 21. Rom. 10. 14. 1 Tim. 5. 17. and 3. 1, 2, 3. Acts. 13. 23. and 20. 28, 29, 30. Heb. 13. 17. 2 Chron. 26. 18, 19, 20, 21. But in another consideration, as found or unfound dispensing of Word and Sacraments, as right or unjust ruling in the house of God, may more or less hurt, or benefit the souls of men, which he is to care for indirectly, in ordine ad penas vel premia civilia et corporalia; it belongeth more to the Magistrate, to take care of the Church, of Religion, of preaching and governing God's house, then any painting or Art in the earth: Again, the Church proceeding in these things, that are against common justice in all judicatures, no less then in the Church, as to condemn the party never heard, or not convinced either by confession, or under two sufficient witnesses, or to do manifest unjustly in the manner of proceeding, leaveth a clear place to the wronged party, by the Law of nature; if not to appeal, yet to see and have recourse to the Christian Magistrate, who is Parent patriæ, the father of the Common wealth.

6. The question may either be of any really wronged by the Church,
may appeal to the Magistrate, or whether he
thinketh, or faileth, and faith that
may appeal to the Magistrate.

As different from a Declinature, a Declinature is
nothing to be judged, because the judge is incompetent.
But belongeth not to him; those who follow Erasists,
from the Church, thinking the Church hath no power
to judge or censure the scandalous. An Appeal is properly
the same inferior judicature, to a superiour judge, in eadem
saepe, the same kind, and it is either proper or improper: Pro-
per it is, when a particular Church doth appeal to a Synod of man-
y Churches in the same place: Unproper, when either a wrong-
ged person hath recourse to one or many Pastors of Authority,
as Chrysostome, Flavianus, Athanasius appealed to the Bishop of Rome, that he would request the Church to proceed orderly: Or,
2. The godly Magistrate would command that the Church would
unpartially proceed to right an oppressed man, as Cabeljauius faith.
Or, 3. When there is no Synods to be had, then as Triglandius
faith well from Beza, the Christian Magistrate may provide st
means of relieving the oppressed.

8. This would ever be remembred, that in case of the Churches
erring in judgement, which must be thought of as a sort of extra-
ordinary case, the godly Magistrate may do more, then what ordi-
arily he can doe; and so may the Church, when the Magistrate
oppresseth in judgement, as great Janius faith.

9. We grant when any complaineth to the Magistrate, that they
are oppressed in judgement by the Church, that the Church is ob-
liged to give an account of their doings, but that from common
charitie to remove the scandal, and that they owe to all Christians,
as may be evidently collected from 1 Pet. 4. 15. but this will not
prove a subordination to common Christians as to Judges, nor yet
to the Magistrate. 2: The Magistrate, when his judging is de-
emed scandalous, is to give an account to the preachers of the Gos-
pel, who watch for his soul: as King Saul gave an account to Sa-
muel, (with a false Apologie, I grant) that he had obeyed the Com-
mandement of the Lord; but if Saul had been faultlesse in sparing
Agag and the cattell, yet was he obliged to give an account to Sa-
muel.
But that will not prove that King Saul was subordinate to Samuel to be judged of him, because Prophets are but servants and Ministers to declare God's will, yet is it all the subordination that we require in this, according to that, And the people believed the Lord and Moses. Now all the Arguments before alleged to prove that Pastors as Pastors are not subordinate in their pastoral acts to the civil magistrate, do also prove that there is no appeal from the Church in an Ecclesiastical business to the civil magistrate: For 1. If two Painters contend touching any controversy in the mystery of their Art, they cannot appeal to the King as Judge; the King then should formally be a painter, and which is absurd, not by accident, but as a King and so here, if the King were the judge, to whose determination we might appeal from the Church in a Church controversy, sure the King as King should be a Church Officer; if the Priests in controversy touching burning incense, or offering strange fire to God, should appeal to the decision of the King as the King; sure the King in that as King should be an eminent High Priest, and right of burning incense to the Lord, should belong to him, in as far as the Kings lips in that controversy should preserve knowledge, and they should seek the Law from his mouth, which is proper to the Priests, Mal. 2. 7. Ezek. 22, 26. and 44. 23, 24. Dent. 17. 11.

2. The Church of Antioch should have appealed to Caesar, if he had been a Christian, in the controversy touching circumcision; he should have determined who were perverters of souls, who not, and should have laid by his office, as Emperour, It seemed good to the holy Ghost and to me. 3. We have not any practice, or precept or promise in the Old or New Testament, for any such appeal, except they say, all hard questions belonging to the Priests office were to come before Moses as a civil magistrate, and not as the great Prophet to whom God revealed his minde. 4. If so, then all Church controversies in doctrine and discipline, should be ultimately resolved into the will of the magistrate, speaking according to the word, and faith in most points should come by hearing a magistrate determining against Arrian, that Christ is God consubstantial with the Father, and all binding and loosing in Earth as in heaven, should be from the Magistrate as the Magistrate, he should forgive and retain sins, and Christ should have given
given the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven to the Magistrate as the Magistrate, certainly we should have the doctrine of the Church of Christ, and the building and edifying thereof most obscure in the New Testament, in which there is not one word of such a supreme and chief officer as the Magistrate. 5. The Parliament, college of civil judges, as they are civil Magistrates, should be the Church assemblies, and determine all doctrines, debar the ignorant and Heretics, and Apostates from the Sacraments, and totally cast them out of the Church and excommunicate them; I see not but then the Parliament as the Parliament is the Church, and the two Kingdoms, Job. 18. 36. must be confounded, and no difference at all made between the civil state and the Church, because the Magistrate as the Magistrate is made by the adversaries the chief officer over the Church, the Ecclesiastical head, the mixt Governour, halfe civil, whole Ecclesiastical, in whose power all Pastors, Elders preach, dispense Sacraments, make Church-canons, as his Ministers and Servants; Christ when any brother trespasseth against a Christian brother faith, Tell the Church, never, Tell the christian Magistrate. But truly it is a great mistake in the learned Mr. Pryn to call them Anti-Monarchical, Anti-Parliamentary, and Novators, who deny that the Parliament hath any Nomothetic power in Church-canons. Nor hath he in any measure answered the Arguments of those Learned and godly Divines, Mr. John Goodwin, and Mr. Hen. Burton; he is pleased to cite the practice of many Parliaments of England, who landably impatient of the Popes yoke, have made Church-canons, when the man of sin fate upon the neck of the Christian church; but these numerous citations of Parliaments and Councils in time of Popery conclude nothing against us, who grant when the Church is not her selfe, the christian Magistrate may extraordinarily reform and take from the man of sin his usurped power, but in a constituted Church the case must be otherwise: and 1. Whereas he proveth Emperors and Kings to have a power to convocate Councils; It hath not strength against us, all our Divines teach so. But how, 1. an accumulative civil power, so Jewel, Alley, Bilson, Whitaker, Willet, White, Roger, he might have cited more; but no privative, no Ecclesiastical power, so as Synods may not lawfully convene without the command of the civil Magistrate.
gift rate; our Divines say many Synods and Church meetings were in the Apostolique Church without the consent and against the will of the civil Magistrate; our Divines oppose the Pope, who claimeth the only accumulative, civil, private, and Ecclesiastick power to convocate Synods, and that no Synods are lawful without the consent and mandate of the holiness of such a Beast.

2. Master Prince faith, The Magistrate hath power to direct, for time and place, and to limit for matter and manner, the proceedings, liberty and freedom of all Church Assemblies: But, 1. he assureth this in the most, from corrupt practices. 2. He proveth, Laymen should have hand as well in Synods, as Clergymen, the one having interest in the faith, as well as the other. And then must all the people be members of Synods, for all have alike interest of Faith; but this proveth no interest of defining, which is the question; in dispensing Word and Sacraments, they have interest of trying all things; as well as Pastors; but it followeth not; Ergo, they may dispense Word and Sacraments, no lesee; yea, more principally then Pastors, as Erastus faith, the Magistrate more principally determineth Synodical constitutions: Hence this is easily answered, we may appeal in Church business to him as to the supreme judge, who may punish the erring Church and Pastors; but the Magistrate may in Church business do this. For answer, 1. I retort it, the Magistrate in making civil Lawes, that must in their moralitie be determined by the Word of God, may appeal to Pastors, whose lips by office should preserve knowledge; Ergo, the Magistrate in making civil Lawes, may appeal to the Pastor, which is absurd. 2. If men in Church constitutions may appeal to the Magistrate, as to one who may in his person determine Synodically in Assemblies above all the Pastors. 1. Because Magistrates may punish the Pastors erring and oppressing in Synods. 2. Because the Magistrate and all laymen have interest in the Faith, as well as Pastors, then may people in hearing the Word and receiving the Sacraments, and in all Pastoral rebukings and threatenings, in believing of all Gospel promises and threatenings, and fundamental truths, appeal from Pastors to Magistrates as Magistrates, and Magistrates as such may determine all fundamental truths, all constrained promises and rebukes; and that is, formally they may preach, (for he that can distinguish these hath a good engine) Because Magistrates may punish heretical
hereticall preaching, and superstitions, and idolatrous abusing of
the Sacraments by preachers, and Magistrates and all Laymen have
interest of Faith, in Word, Doctrine, and Sacraments, as in Disci-
pline; yea, the Magistrate may punish the Priest that offered strange
fire to the Lord, offered bastaif incense; and the people had their
interest of faith, in sacrifices offered for their own sins; but can't
follow, therefore the Magistrate might sacrifice and burn incense
in his own person, as Mr. Prym will have him to make Church-
laws in his own person: Other Arguments of Mr. Prym are light;
as, that there were brethren, and Laymen that had hand in the
Council at Jerusalem, Acts 15.

Anf. This is nothing for Magistrates as Magistrates, but all Chris-
tians as Christians so must have hand in Synods, which I grant in so
far as concerneth their faith and practice, that they try all things, and
try the Spirits whether they be of God or not; but will it follow, Ergo,
Magistrates as Magistrates are those only who govern the Church,
and make all Ecclesiastical constitutions, as having in them all
power of Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and deriving it to Bishops
and Pastors at the second hand, as Mr. Prym faith in the same
book.

Obj. But the King is head of the Church; Ergo, he maketh laws
to regulate the Family.

Anf. The Antecedent is false, if not blasphemos; it is proper
to Jesus Christ only, Col. 1. 18. Eph. 1. 22. The King is the head
of men, who are the Church materialiter, he is not formally as King,
Head of the Church as the Church; and therefore we see not how
this Statute agreeth with the Word of God, Henric. 8. Stat.
37. c. 17. The Archbishops, Bishops, Arch-deacons, and other Eccle-
siastical persons have no manner of Jurisdiction Ecclesiastical, but
by, under, and from the Kings Royall Majesty, the only and un-
doubted supreme head of the Church of England and Ireland, to whom
by holy Scripture is given all authority and power, to hear and
determine all manner of causes Ecclesiastical, and to correct all
vice and sin whatsoever; for neither is the subject, the Archbishops,
Bishops, &c. lawfull, nor is the limitation of the subject lawful, for
Ecclesiastical officers are the Ambassadors of Christ, not of the
King.

Anf. All Christians are to try the Spirits; Ergo, Much more
Magistrates.

Obj. All Christians are to try the Spirits; Ergo, Much more
Magistrates.
This proofeth that Christians as Christians, and Magistrates as Christians, may judge & determine of all things that concerneth their practice; and that they are not with blinde obedience to receive things; Mr. Pryn cannot say, that 1 John 4. 1. is meanes of a Royall, Parliamentary, or Magistratscall Royall, John speaketh to Christians as such. But this is nothing to prove the power of the Magistrate as the Magistrate; for though the men were neither King nor Magistrate, he ought to try the Spirits, 1 John 4. 1.

The special objection moved for Appeals is, that which Paul did be a master of Religion, but we may be in the like case, but Paul, Acts 25, did appeal from a Church Judge to a civil and a heathen Judge, in a master of Religion, when he said before Felix Acts 25, I appeal to Cefar; Ergo, so may the Ministers of Christ far more appeal to the Christian Magistrate, and that Paul did this jury, by Law, not by Priviledge, but by the impulsion of the Holy Ghost, is clear, in that he saith, He ought to be judged by Cefar; so, Masovius, so Vida sim, so Venugardus, so Erenfro.

Ans. 1. This Argument, if it have nerves, shall make the great Turk, when he subdueth people and Churches of the Protestant Religion, to be the head of the Church; and as Erenfro saith, by his place and office, as he is a Magistrate, he may preach and dispence the Sacraments, and a Heathen Nero may make Church constitutions; and say, It seemeth good to the Holy Ghost and to me; and by this, Nero by office is to excommunicate, make or unmake Parsons and Teachers, judge what is Orthodoxe Doctrine, what not, debarre heretickes, Apostates and mockers from the Table, and admit the worthie; and Paul the Apostle must have been the Ambassador and Deputie of Nero, in preaching the Gospel, and governing the Church; and Nero is the mine person, and invested by Jesus Christ with spiritual jurisdiction, and the keyes of the Kingdom of Heaven. This Argument to the Adversaries cannot quit its cost, for by this way, Paul appealled from the Church, in a controversy, of Religion, to a Nero, a Heathen unbaptized Head of the Church, and referred his faith over to the will, judgement, and determination, of a professed Enemy of the Christian Church; and Paul must both justify by the Law of God, and the impulsion of the Holy Ghost, appeal from the Church to a Heathen without the Church, in a matter of Relig.
ligion and Conscience; then Nebuchadnezzar was head of the 
Church of Indsh, and Supreme judge and governour in all cau-
ses and controversies of Religion, how can we believe the adver-
sarie, who doe not belieue themselfes? and shall we make Do-
mitian, Dicelsean, Trajan, and such heads of the Church of Christ?

2. It is not said that Paul appealed from the Church or any 
Ecclesiastical judicature to the civill judge; for Paul appealed 
from Festus who was neither Church nor Church officer, and so 
Paul appealthed from an inferior civill judge, to a superiour or 
civill judge, as is clear, Acts 23. 6. And when Festus had carri-
ied amongst them more than ten dayes, he went downe to Cesar, and the 
next day sittin in the judgement seat, commanded Paul to be brought, 
Ver. 10. And Paul said, I stand at Cesar's judgement seat, where I 
ought to be judged; he refused, v. 9, 10. to be judged by Festus at Ie-
rusalem, but faith, v. 11. I appeal to Cesar: Now he had rea-
tion to appeal from Festus to Cesar, for the Jews laid many grievous 
complaints against Paul, which they could not prove, ver. 7. And 
it is said ver. 8. That Festus was willing to doe the lawes a 
pleasure, and so was manifestly a partiall judge; and though the 
Sanedrime at Jerusalem could have judged in point of Law, that 
Paul was a blasphemer, and so by their Law he ought to die, for 
so Caiphae and the Priests and Pharisees dealt with Jesus Christ, 
yet his appeal from the Sanedrim, 1. corrupted, and having ma-
manifestly declared their bloody intentions against Paul. 2. From 
a Sanedrim in its constitution false, and degeneret far from what 
it ought to be by Gods institution, Deut. 17. 8, 9, 10. it now usurp-
ing civill businesse, which belonged not to them; Paul might also 
lawfully appeal from a bloody and degenerating Church judi-
cature, acting according to the bloody acts of men against an in-
nocent man, to a more unpartiall judge, and yet be no contemner 
of the Church; this is nothing against our Thesis, which is, that it 
is not lawfull to appeal in a constituted Church, from a lawfull 
unmist Church Judicature to the civill Magistrate in a matter of 
life and death. 3. Paul appealed from the Sanedrime, armed, with 
the unjust and tyrannicall power of Festus, a man willing to please 
the bloody accusers of Paul, as is clear, v. 9. And Festus willing 
to doe the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul and said, wilt thou go 
up to Jerusalem, and shoule he judged of those things before me?

3. The
3. The cause was not properly a Church businesse, but a crime of bodily death and sedition; I deny not but in Paul's accusation, prophaning of the Temple, teaching against the Law of Moses was objected to him. Materia.illustror the enemies made the cause of Paul's Church businesse, but formally it was sedition: 1. It was a businesse for which the Sacredrim sought Paul's life and blood, for which they had neither authority nor Law by divine Institution; therefore they sought the helpe of Felix, Festus and the Roman Deputies; so Lysias wrote to Felix, Act. 23. 29. I perceived Paul to be accused of questions of their Law, but to have nothing bas'd to his charge worthy of death, or of bonds. Now it is clear the Roman Deputies thought not any accusation for the Jewish Religion a matter of death and bonds, and therefore Gallio the Deutiger of Achaea, Act. 18. 14. faith to the Jews, if it were a matter of wrong and wicked Lustines, O yee Jews, reason were that I should bear with you. 15. But if it be a question of words and names, and of your Law, looke yee to it, for I will be no judge of such matters; Ergo, so the Romans, all the blasphemies of the Jewish law was not a matter of wicked Jewdnesse, nor of death: Now the story is clear, they were seeking Paul's life, and for names and words, the Jews should not reach Paul, nor move the Romans to put to death a Roman, except they could prove sedition or treason against him; and Act. 25. Festus faith to Agrippa, That the Priests and Elders desired to have judgement against Paul. 18. But against him they brought no accusation of such things as I supposed. 19. But had certain questions against him of his owne Superstition, and of one Jesus, who was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive: Here it is clear, all are but words, nothing worthy of death, which the Jews chiefly intended; therefore they accuse him of treason, as we may collect from Paul's Apologe, Act. 25. 8. Neither against the Law of the Jews, nor yet against the Temple, nor yet against Cesar have I offended any thing at all. Therefore Act. 24. Tertullian a witty man burdeneth Paul with that which might cast him his head, v. 5. For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, a mover of sedition amongst all the Jews, throughout all the world, see Act. 21. 38. of all which, though blasphemy according to the Jewish Law was something, yet sedition to the Romans, who only now had power of Paul's life, was all and some; and when the Deputies counted so little of Religion, the
Laws knew sedition and treason against Caesar, he was accused by the Jews, and Paul, seeing they pursued him for his life, appealed to Caesar to be judged in that. Now, except the adversaries prove that Paul referred the resurrection of Jesus, and of the dead, and his preaching Christ, and the abolishing of sacrifices, the Temple, the Ceremonial Law, to be judicially determined by Nero as by the head of the Church, they prove nothing against us: Hence their chief argument is made answerable, in what cause Paul was accused of the Jews, in that he appealed to Caesar. But he was accused not for his sedition, but for his doctrine. Act. 26. 18. Ergo, Paul appealed to Caesar in the cause of doctrine, not of sedition: for, 1. The Major is dubious, for in what cause he was accused of his head, which was the intent of the Jews, in that he appealed, true; but in what cause he was accused, in all and every Article of the points of his accusation and challenge, I deny that; for as touching doctrinal, and his being judged by a lawful Church, and rightly constituted, he appealed neither from the Sanhedrim, nor from Festus, but declined Festus, nor in these did he appeal to Caesar; he only appealed in all cases, which might concern his head and blood. 2. The assumption is false, for he was accused of sedition, as is evident from Act. 25. 8. and 24. 5. 3. Though the Priests and Elders were most corrupt men; yet that they believed, that Caesar, or bloody Nero, his lips should preserve knowledge, and that the Law should be sought from the mouth of Nero, as the head of the Church, can never be proved, which must be proved to justify Paul's appeal in the terms of the adversary.

Obj. But may not Nero accuse Paul, that he dare preach his Jesus Christ in the Emperor's dominions?

Ans. If his dominions be the Christian Church, he conquered by his sword, he may accuse as he conquered, that is, he may oppresse the consciences of men in a conquering, as he oppressed them in their bodies and liberties in the conquering of them: But he may not as a conqueror accuse them for their conscience, he may if he conquer those that worship Satan, cause instruct them in all meekness and lenity: But this he doth by the sword as a Christian ruler, to enlarge the dominions of Christ; for when he conquers their bodies, it is not to be thought that he conquers their souls, or acquireth any new dominion over their consciences: But though the
he do as a Magistrate command them to be instructed, I doubt if he have a negative voice in imposing any Religion that he will, though they be heathens, though some learned Divines say he have a definitive voice, in setting up what Religion he will or tolerating it; I conceive, though he have a definitive voice in erecting the only true Religion in his heathenish dominions, when there be no Ministers of the Gospel there; yet not for any false Religions, that being of perpetually truth. God never gave authority or power of the sword to do ill, admittance won oft poteas what other things Vide: and Visonbogard have on the contrary, are asserted. Hence we ask, 1. If the intrinsicall end of judging and examining Ecclesiastically, be not the inlightning of the mind, the gaining of souls, and if Nero, or Christian, or Heathen Magistrates be appointed for that spiritual end? 2. If Paul, ay me to refer the judging of the Gospel to Nero? 3. If Paul, knowing the Sondarius fought his blood, not the gaining of his soul, might not appeal to the Magistrate to save his life? 4. If it was not the Law of natures dictate in Paul so to do, and not any positive constitution of the Magistrates Headship over the Church and Gospel? 5. If the Ecclesiasticall judicature will stand, without its sphere of activity, to dispose of the life and blood of the Saviour if then the state of the question be not changed; and if then it be not lawfull to appeal and decline, and provoke to the civil Magistrate? 4. Moreover Paul appealed not to Caesar, it ordained at Jerusalem, in order to a Church assembly, as, in thought, the assembly be principally excommunicate, and cast him out of the Synagogue, or judge him in an Ecclesiasticall way; whether he had done or preached against the Temple, and Law of Moses or not, which must be proved; if the adversaries will prove a proper appeal from the Church to the Prince, which is now our question. All this which is our mind is well explicated by our Companions in Phil. Camer, prolectio, in Matt. 18. 15. p.15. Christiani principes sunt principes in Ecclesia in sensu diviso, sunt principes cum in Ecclesia, non in sensu communio, non sunt praecipui Ecclesiasticis: Nono enim ubinam principalis divinitate authoritatis cum Ecclesiasticis, sed in illuc, nec procul vehiculum videtur a cotidiano, quibus iurisdictiones principis, sed quae iurisdictionis non nisi per media Ecclesiasticas personas ad consensum, utique, principes non proclives Evangelium, non signum facta prae saccarese
peccatores, ut de officio principiis essent operari, ut sint qui predicere Evangelium, ut sint qui ligent et solvant peccatores, uno verbo perinde principi essent curare salvum animarum, ac eisdem esse salutis corporum profiscere, non essent principii, qui, providere non merita grauissima dirigit, offerunt medicum, ut indicet principe id studere debeas. Itaque Collegio Navigantium nullo modo Ecclesia dicere possit, in quo quasenam Magistratus est de Ecclesia, subjiciat bac in parte Collegio Ecclesiasticum neque tamens ista inter se pugnare, idem ut imperet Collegio Ecclesiastico, et parcat idem, imperat enim quemadmodum medicum imperat Rex, parcat ut medicum, nami si medicum facientes officium morte mulcet, non faciunt quod deces sapientem principem, sed quod faciant furiosi et insani, sic venum facint officio suppono, faciet quod jus et fas, et quod non facere nonas esse. Sic impri reges et insani prophetas jussent interfici, pris Rex est idem sapientissimus David Nuchanem excutiatur esse. Dictum accipiantur, Caute parendi verbis, Rex enim cum sancta Ecclesiasticum parcat, non parcat, elli obedientia civili que Collegium respiciat, sed obedientia Religiosa que deum respiciat. Sic qui lictori missa, senatus parlaret non parlaret lictori, sed senatus. Yet it cannot be denied, but the same Camerac ascribed more to the Magistrate then is due, for there is no reason why he saith the Prince obeyeth the Church improperly, more then the people; for it is the same obedience that Prince and people yield. He denied that the Magistrate and Pastors differ in their end and object, but only in the way and means leading to the end; and in the same doth that learned Divine Dav. Parens, though both be against the Erastian way: for they say the Magistrates end and object, is not only peace and the good of the body, and of the exteruall man, but also of the soul even a supernaturall good, the exteruall salvation of men, because the Kings of Israel and Judah were to read the book of the Law, and they only did reform Religion. Ans. This doth prove that the Church-teacher and Magistrate differ not in the material object and end, (of the Jewish Kings I add nothing to what I have answered before) but in the formal end and object they differ: Its true, I have said that the intrinsicall end of the Magistrate is a supernaturall good: But, That I speak in opposition to the Author of the bloody Tenent, to Socinians, and such as exclude the Magistrate from all meddling with Religion, or using of the sword against
against Hereticks, Apostates, and Idolaters. 2. That I understand only of the materiall end, because the Prince punishing Idolatry, may per accidents, and indirectly promote the salvation of the Church, by removing the temptations of Hereticks, the doth that, not in order to the conscience of the Idolater, to gain his soul, (for Pastors as Pastors do that) but to make the Church quiet, and peaceable in her journey to life eternall: but all this is but to act on the externall man by worldly power.

But faith Camero, it is not true that the Church must meddle with Camero, 16, every sin that is scandalous; because for the circumstance it may be so bid, that the Church cannot judge it, especially in a matter of fact: A Physitian killeth a man either of temerity or negligence, there is no question but it is a great sin; yet the tryall of this belongeth not to the Church: so the Pastor may exhort the Magistrate to do his duty, but to give judgement what way the King should do this, and when he shall do it, belongeth to him who governeth the Common-wealth; for this must be true, eredendum est artifici in sua arte, Thou must believe every man in his owne Art and calling, otherwise great confusion should follow.

Anf. Observe that Camero doth liberate the Magistrate from being subject to the rebukes of Pastors, but by accident; because the sins of Princes are hidden in the dark obscurity of intricate causes which they judge. But so the sins of Painters and tradesmen are hid, because judges see not the mysteries of trades. This is no Argument, but such as will equally prove, that the poysoning of a Kings son, belongeth not to the King and Parliament; so a medicinal and physiicaly trying, how the Physitian killeth a man, doth properly belong to the Colledge of Physitians; and if it belong not for this physicall reason to the Church court, because it is not their Art to judge of medicinal potions, no more shall it belong to the civill judge to try this murther by poyson: for as Pastors as Pastors are not Physitians, and so cannot judge of the fact; so Kings and civill judges, as such, are not Physitians, and cannot judge for circumstances of a fact of incest, murther, patricide, and of all sins acknowledged to belong to both Church and Magistrate, in divers respects, may make the fact equally dark to all. 2. It is true Pastors cannot prescribe what way the Magistrate should judge; but if the Pastors cannot determine in hypothese, that this is a fact of
of unjustice in a judge, and to rebuke, but credendum artifici in sua arte, we must believe the judge in his owne Art, he faith this is an art of justice: then Iaiiah and Jeremiah should not cry out against unjust decrees, against crushing and oppressing the poor in the gate; because the wickedst judges say, all their decrees are just, they defend the fatherlesse and widow, and do not crush them, and Pastors cannot rebuke the sins of unjust judges, but you must believe they do just and right in their owne art; yea, many villanies and scandals are carried to mysteriously, and in the clouds, that we must believe the sinner in his owne art and trade of sinning, and believe the harlot, who wipeth her mouth and faith, I have not sinned. For the practice of Constantine the Great, in the cause of Donatus and Cecilianus I remit to Eusebius l. 10. c. 5. to Optatus Melitvitanus who wrote the History of the Donatists carefully, to Augustine Epistle 162, and for the determination of the question, see what the Emperor writeth to the Councell of Nice, Zozomen l. 1. c. 16. Rufinus l. 1. c. 2. Eusebius in vita Constant, Deus vos confirmac sacerdotem, et postestatem vos dedit de nobis quoque judicandi es ideo nos a nobis rette judicamur, vos autem non postestis ab omnibus judicari, propter quod Dei solus inter vos exspectate judicium, &c.

That Nestarius was chosen and ordained Bishop of Constantinople by Theodosius Socrates l. 5. c. 8. faith not, but by the contrary consunt et quinquaginta Episcopis qui tum aderant ordinatur. Theodosius l. 5. c. 8. faith he was devised Bishop by the Synod of Constantinople: Antiquity semeth dubious in it, for Nicephorus l. 12. c. 12. Zozomen l. 7. c. 8. Theodorus l. 5. c. 9. Historia tripartita. l. 9. c. 14. say that the Emperor ordained him, the Synod named him; the truth is, the Bishops were devised in judgement; and its like they referred the matter to the godly Emperor: In the mean time Athanasius Epist. de soli vita, Ambros. l. 5. orat ad auxentium, and l. 5. Epist. 32. ad valentinianum. Zozumen l. 6. c. 7. Concilium Tolsthanum. 111. Concilium milevitanum. and divers others which I have cited elsewhere, make the Emperor a Son of the Church, not a Head and Lord, intra Ecclesiam, filium Ecclesie, non judicem, non dominum supra Ecclesiam: I might adde Augustin, Epist. 48. 50. 162. l. 1. de doct. Chrift. c. 18. Cyril. Alexandrinus in an Epistle to the Synod of Antioch, all Protestant Divines of note and learning.

CHAP.
CHAP. XXVII. Quest. 23.

Whether the subjecting of the Magistrates to the Church and Pastors, be any papal Tyranny; and whether we differ not more from Papists in this, than our adversaries? The Magistrate not the Vicar of the mediator Christ: The Testimonies of some learned Divines on the contrary answered.

It is most unjustly imputed to us, that we lay a Law upon the conscience of the Magistrates, that they are bound to assist with their power, the decrees of the Church; taking cognizance only of the fact of the Church, not inquiring into the Nature of the thing.

This Doctrine we disclaim, as Popish and Antichristian: It hath its rise from Bonifacius the III. who obtained from Phocas a bloody tyrant, who murdered Maurice and his Children, as Baronius confesseth: and yet he saith of this murderer, optimorum imperatorum vestigia sequens, he made an Edict that the Bishop of Constantinople should not be called Occumenick nor Universal Bishop, but that this should be given only to the Bishop of Rome: So Baronius yieldeth, this tyranny was enlarged by Hildebrand, named Gregorius the seventh, a monster of tyrannicall wickedness, and yet by Papists, he is sanctissim et miraculissimus. Baronius excollith him, these and others invaded both the swords; Bishops would be civill judges, and trample first upon the neck, then upon the consciences of Emperors, and make Kings the hornes of the beast, and seclude them from all Church businesse, except that with blind obedience, having given their power to the beast, as slaves they must execute the decrees of the Church. Paul the III. the confirmer of the order of Jesuits, who indicted the Counsell of Trent, as Onuphrius saith, upbraideth Charles the V. for meddling with Church businesse: They write that Magistrates do not see in Church matters with their owne eyes, but with Bishops eyes, and that they must obey without examining the decrees of Councils; and this they write of all subject to the Church, Toleram in In-
Subject of Magistrates to the Church  Cap. XXVII. Q. 23

Mr. Prinne triumphing. Remonstr. in apolog. p. 299. c. 13. paparum concilium, id ipsum in quos eis efformata, superbus hierarchias.

Sacerdos. 1. 4. c. 3. Si Rusticius circa articulos fidei credat suo episcopo proponentem aliquod dogmata hereticum, meretur in credendo, liceat fit error. Card. Casanus exs. 1. 6. formon. obediencia irrationalis est consumata et perfectissima obediencia fuisse Inuentum obediens domino. Ib. sententia pastoris ligat te, pro sua salute, etiam si injusta fuerit: Envy cannot ascribe this to us, Calvin, Beza, yes, all our writers condemn blind obedience as brutish: But our Adversaries in this are more Popish, for they substitute King and Parliament in a headship over the Church, giving to the King all the same power in causes Ecclesiastick, that the Pope usurped. 2. They make the King a mixed person, to exercise spiritual jurisdiction, to ordain Bishops, and deprive them; and Mr. Prinne calleth the opinion of those who deny Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, legislative (a high word proper to God only) coercive power of Christian Emperors, Kings, Magistrates, Parliaments, in all matters of Religion, (what, in fundamental Articles of salvation?) Church-government, Discipline, Ceremonies, &c. Anti-monarchicall, Anti-parliamentarie, Anarchicall, as holden by Papists, Prelates, Anabaptists, Arminians, Socinians, &c. Its, that which Arminians object to us, and calleth the soul, heart, and forms of papall tyranny.

But that the Magistrate is not obliged to execute the decrees of the Church, without further examination; whether they be right or wrong, as Papists teach that the Magistrate is to execute the decrees of their Popish councils with blind obedience, and submit his faith to them; because he is a layman, and may not dare to examine, whether the Church doth err, or not, is clear; 1. Because if in hearing the word, all should follow the example of the men of Berea, not relying on the Testimony of Paul or any preacher; try, whether that which concerneth their conscience and faith, be agreeable to the Scriptures or no, and accordingly receive or reject; so in all things of Discipline, the Magistrate is to try by the word, whether he ought to add his sanction to these decrees, which the Church gives out for edification, and whether he should draw the sword against such a one as a heretick, and a perverter of souls: But the former is true, the Magistrates practiseth in adding his civil sanction, and in punishing heretics concerneth his conscience, knowing that he must doe it in faith, as he doth all his moral actions; Ergo, the Magistrate must examine what he practiseth in
in his office; according to the word, and must not take it upon the
merit authority of the Church; else his faith in these moral acts
of his office should be resolved ultimate on the authority of the
Church, not on the word of God, which no doubt is Popery; for so
the warrant of the Magistrates conscience, should not be, Thus faith
the Lord, but Thus faith the Church in their decrees. 2. The Ma-
1,19. To try the spirits even of the Church, in their decrees,
1 Job. 3. 1. 3. We behooved to lay down this Popish ground, that
1. The Church cannot err in their decrees. 2. Its against Scrip-
ture and reason, that Magistrates, and by the like reason, all o-
111. The Church beleeueth with an implicate faith, without inquiring in the warrants and grounds of their decrees,
which is as good Popery as, Magistrates and all men are to be-
leue as the Church beleeueth with an implicate faith, so ignorance
shall be the mother of Devotion; who ever impute this to us who
have suffered for non-conformity, and upon this ground that Synods
can err, refused the Ceremonies, are to consult with their own con-
science whether this be not to make us appear disloyall & odious to
Magistracy in that which we never thought, far lesse to teach and
profease it to the world. 4. Theirchiefe reason is, the Magistrate
by our doctrine, by his office, is obliged, 1. To follow the judg-
ment of the Church, and in that he is a servant or inflamed, Quo
iment judicia aliorum sequi tenetur, is non regis, sed regis, adeque Romani.
servus est, & incipsum bratum eorum, quorum judicium sequi ob in apolig.
lisatur, and the Magistrate (fay they) as such, is neither to judge
nor try what the Church decrees, but as a Burrio, or Hangman to
execute that which the Church hath decreed. But 1. I put it in
forme, and retort it thus, They are servants and slaves who are ob-
lized not so to despise, but to hear and obey, and so to follow the judgement
of the Prophets, the faithfull Pastors of Christ, preaching the Word
of God soundly and Orthodoxy.

But not onely Magistrates, but all within the visible Church are
obliged, not to despise, but to hear and obey, and so to follow the judg-
ment of the Prophets, the faithfull Pastors of Christ, preaching the
Word of God soundly and Orthodoxy; Ego, Magistrates and all
within the visible Church are slaves and servants.
But the conclusion is absurd; *Ergo*, some of the premises, but the Assumption is the word of God, *Iudah was carried captive, because they would not hear the Prophets rising early in the morning and speaking to them*: Also in the New Testament, this is true to the second coming of Christ, *He saith heareth you, heareth me, he that despiseth you, despiseth me*. And this, *He that will not obey the servant of the supreme Magistrate*, *in that wherein he is a servant, and boldeth forth the Lawfull commands of the supreme Magistrate, he will not obey the supreme Magistrate*. The Major proposition is the adversaries, the assumption is expresse Scripture; let them see then to the conclusion. 2. When the adversary shall answer this argument with equal strength made against preaching and hearing the word, they will answer their own argument made against Church-government. 3. This argument is made against Synods Popish, that cannot erre; as our Protestant Divines object; and therefore the adversary is Popish here, not we: Thus they are servants and slaves who are obliged to follow the judgment of Councils absolutely, without limitation; they say it, whether they warrant their declere or not, that is a true Major proposition: But now the assumption is most false, for neither Magistrates nor any other, are to follow the judgement of the Church absolutely, without limitation, and because they say it. The other part is, they are servants and slaves, who are to follow the judgement of the Church and Councils with a reserve, and a condition, and limitation, in so far as they agree with the word; now the Major is false.

2. *He that is obliged to follow the judgement of another, does not rule, but is ruled, true, in that, in which he followeth the judgement of another; the Magistrate in so far as in matters of Religion, that concerneth his conscience, faith, and practice, he followeth Pastors; he is not a ruler formally to those whose judgement he is obliged to follow: But in civil matters he may be, and is a ruler to those same; for we answer to Papists who by this same argument would prove, that Churchmen are not subject to the Magistrate, nor to civil Laws: He that is a sheep, is not to rule and command his shepheard; but the Magistrate is a sheep and a member of the Church, and Pastors and Doctors are shephearders: We answer, a Magistrate as a Magistrate in civil things, is
is not ruled by Pastors and Doctors, but he is to rule them: But a Magistrate as a member of the Church, as a Christian in things that concerneth his conscience, is a sheep and to be ruled, not a ruler to Pastors and Doctors, and so here; and therefore, non concluditur quod est in equum.

3. The adversaries are to answer this also; for if Pastors and Doctors be as such, but servants under the Magistrate; and if he have that same Archetettonica potestas, that supreme supremacy and headship in Ecclesiastical matters, as in civil matters, to command alike in both by the same power. Then, 1. The Pastors and Doctors are obliged to follow his judgement, without appeal or examination, and they are servants and slaves, and ruled, and not præsulútrios not over the Magistrates as Christians, neither over the people in the Lord. 2. The Elders as Elders, are not to examine what the Magistrates as Magistrates command in Ecclesiastical matters or in Religion, they may possibly not as Elders but as Christians, judge with the judgement of discretion, as all other Christians may do; For Videntes, Erasius, and other Adversaries say, the Magistrate may not command what he pleaseth; for in Church matters he may command but according to the rule of the Word, and in civil matters according to equity, justice, and prudence. True: But, 1. The Magistrate as supreme head of the Church, is by office, to judge what government of the Church is most agreeable to the word, what is sinfull, Antichristian, and tyrannical; and the Magistrates lips in thus judging, as he is a Magistrate, and not the Pastors are to preserve knowledge; and both Pastors as Pastors, and the people as members of the Church, and as they may worship and serve God in this government, or may sin, are to seek the Law at the Magistrates mouth, and directions for their conscience from him, as from a Magistrate, and not as from a Christian, not from Pastors as Pastors that handle the Law. And if the government as a way of serving God, may be prescribed and held forth to the consciences of all by the Magistrate as the Magistrate; by the same reason all the ways of God, in which the Church of Ephesus, Pergamus, Thyatira, may to approve themselves to Christ, and as he is to walk in the midst of the Golden Candlesticks, and as a Magistrate, he is to forbid such sins in Government, as may procure the removing of the Candlesticks; and why may be not by the same reason,
reason, hold forth to their conscience all the other parts of the Gospel? If any say, who can deny but the Magistrate as the Magistrate may command that which is obedience to Christ, and reward it, and forbid sin and punish it?

Ans. But the Magistrate as such, forbiddeth not sin as sin, for then as a Magistrate he should forbid sin under the punishment of eternal wrath, which he cannot do as a Magistrate, he onely can forbid sin under the pain of his temporary punishment, which he can inflict, and as it disturbs societies, and incorporations.

Obj. The Magistrate as the Magistrate shall not serve Christ as Mediator, if he do not command the dispensing of Word and Sacraments, as they are spiritual means leading us to a supernatural end, and if he forbids not Idolatry and blasphemie against Christ as they are sins, and Gospel sins done against Christ as Mediator.

Ans. I utterly deny this consequence: For 1. the Magistrate may serve Christ as Christ, and promote and advance the Kingdom of Jesus Christ as Mediator, when he contributes his power to those things that materially conduce to a supernatural end, though he do not contribute any thing that formally conduce to such an end. 2. So you may say a Christian Husband as a Husband; a godly Physician, as a Physician, a Printer who printeth the Bible, do nothing serviceable to Christ as Christ, and in promoting Christ’s Mediatorial Kingdom, when the one begetteth children, that being borne in the visible Church are made heirs of the Kingdom of Christ; and the other when by his Art and skill he preserveth the life of a godly and zealous Preacher: The third, when by his Art he publishes in print the Testament of Christ; the Physician doth somewhat as a Physician that is serviceable to Christ as Mediator, yet (I hope) it is no Ecclesiastical business to restore to health a godly minister; nor to beget a child who is made an heir of Grace, nor to print the Bible; so a Philosopher as a Philosopher doth convince one that worshippeth bread, that the man leaveth his error, and this is materially service to Christ, and a promoting of Christ’s Mediatorial Kingdom; but neither Husband, Physician, Printer or Philosopher are in these acts, the Vicars and Deputies of Jesus Christ, as the Magistrate is holden to be by the Adversary: Nor 2. do they as Ecclesiastical persons formally advance the kingdom of Christ as do the preachers.
of the Gospel, far less more principally do they advance Christ's Kingdom, as the Magistrate is supposed to do. Nor hath their hus promoting of Christ's Kingdom any influence upon the conscience as the Magistrate must have, if he forbids sin as sin; now the Magistrate as such, doth nothing to promote formally the mediatory Kingdom of Christ, for he may doe, and doth all he doth as a Magistrate; yea suppose he were a Turk set over Christians as their Magistrate granting that Christ was a true Prophet, yet may he as a Magistrate, punish those who shall teach that Christ was a false Prophet and an impostor, and though his Magistratical acts be serviceable to Christ materially, yet not formally. 1. Because this Magistrate denieth Christ to be the Saviour of the world, and yet as a Magistrate he justly punisheth the man that blasphemously calleth Christ a deceiver, and an impostor. 2. Because as a Magistrate he believeth him not to be God, and so ex intentione operationis, he punisheth him not for a wrong done to Christ as Christ, and as the Saviour of mankind, but as a wrong done to the common wealth, and as a disturber of the peace thereof; Hence these Propositions touching the Magistrates relation to the Mediator Christ and his Church.

Propos. 1. The Magistrate as a Magistrate is not the Vicar nor Deputie of Jesus Christ as Mediator; 1. Because this is the heart and soul of Popery, that the Papists teach that Christ as Mediator hath left a temporall, an earthly and visible Monarch as his Vicar on earth. Now that learned and singular ornament of the Protestant Churches, Andreas Rivetus hath well said, Christ hath instituted neither Kings nor Princes in the Church as his successors, nor any Vicars with a domination, but only Ministers and Servants, who are to discharge their Embassage, in the Name of the only Prince Christ; for an Embassage cannot be institute other Ambassadors, either Kings or Princes, but only Ministers, who do serve, not reign in the Kingdom of Christ, he himselfe onely reignes; the Servants of this great King promote the Kingdom of their Prince.
nor do they ever usurpe the royall power. Yea, all the arguments of Protestants that are brought to prove that the Pope, a Bishop, and a Church man, because he is a Bishop and a Steward in the Church, and in Christ's spiritual Kingdom that is not of this world, cannot be an earthly Prince and Monarch having power either directly or indirectly in ordine ad spiritualia, to dispose of Kingdomes and crownes, and enthrone and dethrone Kings, doe also prove that the King cannot be head of the Church, nor the Magistrate an Officer of the Church. Doe not Protestant Divines condemn that blasphemous speech of Cardinal Bertrandus, that Christ who was a temporall Lord on earth, should not seem a discreet and wise Prince, if he had not left a Temporall Vicar behind him in the Church, and that of Armacanus to be false, that Christ by birth was the true King of Iudea, and so a Temporary Prince, hence (say they) there should be a temporary Prince, and an earthly Monarch, the successor of Christ as King and Mediator.

This Becanus the Iesuite maketh a speciall ground of the Popes Headship of the Church, and for this Suarez disputeth; yea, the Iesuite Aegid. Communick faith, It is the common and received opinion of all the (Romish) Doctors, that Christ as man hath a true Kingly power, and a direct dominion over all the Kingdomes of the world, to give them lawes, and to exercise all Kingly power over them, though de facto he abstained from it; and is not upon this pillar builded the Popes Supremacy? and that which Augustinus de Anconsa faith, Idem esse dominium dei & Papa, it is the same dominion which God and the Pope hath, because it is the same jurisdiction of the Ambassador, and of the Lord who sent him? I deny not, but many Papists give to Christ an indirect Kingly power, and to the Pope they give the same indirect power in ordine ad spiritualia, as Vasquez, and Pet. Waldinigius and others; but this we say; if Iesus Christ forbid a preacher of the Gospell remaining a preacher to be a civill Magistrate or temporall Lord, as he doth both by precept and practice, Luke 22. 24, 25, 26. and 12. 13, 14. Tob. 18, 36. and 6, 15, then upon the same ground he must forbid the civill Magis-
strate to be a Church Governor, as if God should forbid a Physician to be a Painter, (because the two callings cannot lawfully consist in the person of one man) he should also forbid a Painter to be a Physician; then the Arguments against a Monarchy and Magistratical power in the Bishop of Rome, must fight against any Ecclesiastical power in a Magistrate, if then the Pastors do as Pastors, rebuke, exhort, excommunicate, and censure, as directly subordinate to the Magistrate, then Pastors as Pastors discharge their office as inferior and under Magistrates, and so they partake in so farre of a temporal dominion, being direct instruments under Temporal Lords; and if the Magistrate as the Magistrate doe command them to dispense Word, and Sacraments and discipline, and make and unmake Pastors, and regulate and limit them, and make Lawes to them, then the Magistrate as the Magistrate both partake of an Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and both are forbidden by Christ in the places cited. 2. If the Magistrate be the onely suprem Church Governour under Christ, the government of the Church must be a visible Monarchy, and the Magistrate must have both the Swords, Temporal and Spiritual, and Christ's Kingdom must be of this world, and the weapons thereof carnall to fight for Christ, and the suprem Church-officer as such must bear the Sword, be a valiant man of warre by office, and Christ's Kingdom must be of this world, and the weapons thereof not carnall, but spiritual, Job. 18. 36. 2 Cor. 10. 4. 5. and the suprem Church-officer must be no Striker, no fighter, no man of war, no sword-bearer by office, which are contradictory. 3. We prove the Pope to be no Vicar of Christ, because we read not in the Word of any such Vicar, nor do we read any thing of a suprem Church-officer, who is the Vicar of Christ. 4. No Spiritual Ambassador as such, can substitute other Ambassadors with Majority of power, that he hath in his Name to dispense Word, Sacraments, and Discipline; nor can one great Ministerial Church-head create lesser Ministerial Church-heads, such as Justices, Majors, Sheriffs, Bailiffs, Constables, no more then the High Priest could substitute in his place other little High Priests, if he were sick and absent, to goe into the Holy of Holieft with blood once a yeere, no more then the Apostle called of God can substitute other lesser Apostles immediately.
called of God to act as lesser Apostles, but limited by the higher, in the exercise of power; nor can these lesser Apostles create other Apostles yet lesser, and these in a subalternation yet lesser, while you come as low as a Constable, as the King doth send lesser Kings indue in part with his Royalty or Judges under him, and those Judges may appoint other Judges under them; and because the whole visible Catholick Church hath an external visible policy, if Oecumenick Councils have any warrant in the word, then ought Christ to have instituted one civil Emperour over all the Churches on earth, to convene Oecumenick Synods, to preside in them, to limit and regulate them, to make Lawes to all the world; and that this is not, it falleth out through man's corruption, but it ought to be according to divine institution, no lesse then every single Magistrate is by institution the head of every particular Church, indue as our adversary say with that supreme power under Christ the mediator, that they call Potes as Archibelonica, the headship of the Church.

Propos. 2. The Magistrate as such is not a Vicar of Christ's mediatory Kingdom. Because then as the Magistrates are called Gods in Scripture, Exod. 1. 6. Psal. 82. I Iob. 10. 34. 35. to the Magistrates should be called little Mediators, or submediators, between God and man; little Kings of the Church, little Priests, little Prophets of the Church: for God giveth his name to Magistrates, because he communicateth also to them some of his Majesty and power; now what mediatory, what Princely, Priestly, or Propheticall power hath Christ communicated to Magistrates as Magistrates: Erastus faith, they may dispense Word and Sacraments, if they had leisure: But if they be by office, little mediators, and Pastors under Christ, they should take leisure; for every Magistrate ought so to say: Woe be unto me if I preach not: And Master Coleman faith, that Christian Magistracy is an Ecclesiastical administration; he believinguther was an Apostle; if he mean that Christian Magistracy officer formally, he might say, it is a Mediatorial office, and Kingly office under Christ, to give repentance forgivenesse of sins instrumentally; would Master us how the Magistrates sword openeth the eyes of the blind,
blind, converseth men from the power of Satan to God, begettest men through the Gospel to Christ, as Pastors do; and that formally as Magistrates, we should thank him. 2. Christian Magistracy, if it be a Church or Ecclesiastical administration, then is it formally so either as Magistracy, or as Christian; not as Magistracy, for then all Heathen Magistrates must formally, hoc ipso, that they be Magistrates, be Ecclesiastical persons: so Nero when Rome makes him Emperor, they make him formally a Church-officer, and invest him with power to dispense Word and Sacraments, and Discipline, if he might find leisure for killing of men, and such business, so to do; for quod convenient, id convenit etiam mortis, where both the Old or New Testament hold forth such an office given by Christ, as a fruit of his ascension to heaven. Where do the Apostles shew us the duty of Magistrates, Fathers, Masters, Pastors, Teachers, Rulers, Deacons, Husbands, insinuate any such office? If as Christian, Christian Magistracy be an Ecclesiastical office and administration: Christianity, 1. Is common to the Magistrate with all other professors, Painters, Merchants, Seamen, Lawyers, Mussians; and no more can Christianity make a heathen formally a Church-officer, then it can make a Painter formally a Church-officer? can faith in Christ, and professing thereof, make any to be formally Church-officers? then must all be Church-officers that are members of the Church, for posita causa formali ponitur effectus formali: Now Master Coleman, faith, The heathen Magistrate as a Magistrate is an Ecclesiastical administration; because (faith he) he should, and ought to manage his power for Christ; as the heathen and uttermost parts of the earth are given for Christ's possession and inheritance, and Christ hath given no liberty to a great part of the world to remaine insidels and enemies to him and his Government: I suppose Christ hath all Nations given to him, and all Nations ought to receive Christ, though as yet actually they do not; God and Nature hath made Magistrates, and these Magistrates thus made, God hath given to Christ; But, 1. The title of Christian added to Magistracy, by this is superfluous, and put in only ad faciendum populum, for Christianity, maketh no man formally a Magistrate by Mr. Coleman's way; yet faith he pag. 17. a Christian Magistrate as a Christian Magistrate, is a Governour in the Church: he should say by his way, a Magistrate, Christian as a Magistrate, is a Governour.
not only in the Church, but a Governor of the Church.

Arg. 2. If the Magistrate as the Magistrate be the Vicar and deputy of Christ's mediatory kingdom, then all and every Magistrate as Magistrate by his office, is obliged under the pain of God's wrath, to command that the Gospel be preached, and that men believe and obey Christ as mediator, in all his dominions; that so he may manage his office for Christ: But the latter is utterly false, and contrary to the Gospel; Ergo, so is the former. The Major is undeniable, all service that Magistrates by office do, they sin before God, if they do it not; and so must be obliged under the pain of sin, and God's wrath to do it: And therefore are obliged to command that the Gospel be preached, and that men believe and obey Christ, if by office they be the Vicars and deputies of the mediatory Kingdom. I prove the Assumption, These Magistrates amongst the Americans and other Heathen, who never by any rumour heard of Jesus Christ, are essentially and formally Magistrates: But neither are they obliged to command that the Gospel be preached, nor their people they are over, obliged to believe and obey Christ as mediator; because only those to whom Christ and the Gospel commeth, can be guilty of not receiving Christ the mediator, and of not promoting the mediatory Kingdom: Such Magistrates are obliged only with their sword to glorifie God the creator, and to punish sins against the Law of Nature, nor are they guilty for not punishing the not receiving of the Gospel, or for sins against the mediator, of whom they never heard; for this is invincible and insuperable ignorance, and can make no man guilty, who never heard nor could hear of the Gospel, according to that, Iob. 15. 22. If I had not come and spoken to them, they should not have had sin, but now they have no cloak for their sin, Rom. 2. 12. For as many as have sinned without Law, shall also perish without Law; and as many as have sinned in the Law, shall be judged by the Law; Ergo, they that never heard of the Gospel, or the mediator, cannot perish, nor be judged for refusing the Gospel; and it were strange, if Magistrates were invincibly ignorant of their office, which is to set up the mediator Christ and his Church and visible Kingdom, if yet they never heard, nor ever could hear of the Word of the Kingdom; for then to do and performe the duties of their office, should not only morally, but invincibly and physically be impossible, and so they should not be obliged to do the duties of their office.

Obj:
Obj. 1. When the Heathen Magistrate is converted to the faith, and becometh a Christian Magistrate, he is obliged by his office as a Magistrate, to command his people to honour and receive the Lord Jesus, and the Ministry of reconciliation, and to punish such as blaspheme the mediator Jesus Christ, such as Arians, Antitrinitarians, and others; Ergo, that official obligation lay on him before as a Magistrate: for you say that the heathen Magistrate turning Christian, acquires no new Magistratical power by turning Christian, which he had not before while he was a heathen Magistrate; only Christianity maketh him use the official power of a Magistrate, which he had before, while he was a heathen ignorant of Christ, now for the honour of the mediator Christ, and the promoting of his mediatory Kingdom.

Ans. 1. The Antecedent is denied, for when the heathen Magistrate is converted to the Christian faith, he is not obliged by his office, as a Magistrate to command his people (whom we suppose now to be hearers of the Gospel, and possibly converted also) to believe and profess Christ, nor is he obliged as a Magistrate to promote the mediatory Kingdom of Christ, as his mediatory and spiritual Kingdom (he or his sword have nothing to do with spirits or consciences as they are such, nor with the subjects of a spiritual Kingdom) nor can he punish blasphemers of Christ as such: nay, nor can he punish such as sin against God the creator, as they sin against God the Creator, by virtue of his office of a Magistrate, for so formally he commandeth obedience to Christ mediator, or to God creator, and punisheth sins and blasphemies against the mediator, or against God the Creator only as such obedience and such blasphemies, may promote the external safety, prosperity, and peace of the civil society, whereof he is head, or may dissolve the sinners and nerves of that society. What he doth to uphold that society which is a part of Christ's redeemed Kingdom, he doth it as a Magistrate in a far other Notion then the Pastors and teachers, who by office as spiritual watchmen, are to promote Christ's mediatory Kingdom, as such a spiritual incorporation professing union with Christ the head of the body the Church.

Obj. 2. But yet it will follow that the heathen Magistrate remaining heathen, is invincibly ignorant of his office; for insofar as he remained a heathen, he cannot promote the mediatory Kingdom of
of Christ in any Nation; nay, not so much as it is a mean conduc-
ting to the externall safety and peace of that civill society, whereof he
is head; Ergo, he must, while he remaineth an heathen, and never by ru-
mor beareth of the Gospel, be by office a promoter of Christ's Kingdom,
and by office a punisher with the sword, of all such as blaspheme the
mediator Christ, though through his owne sinfull ignorance he can-
not put forth in acts or exercise the very officiaall and Magistraticall
power, which he hath by office, and actu primo, while he remaineth
an heathen Magistrate.

Ans. 1. It followeth not that the heathen Magistrate, being ig-
norant (while he remaineth in that state) of some acts, which
would conduce to the peace and externall safety of the State, if the
state were Christian, that he is invincibly ignorant of his office; to
be unable to exercise some acts of an office not consistient with an
heathenish state, can never argue invincible ignorance of the office.
2. The consequence is nought, that because he is ignorant of some
acts, and cannot exercise them; that therefore the heathen Magis-
trate remaining heathen, is by office, and actu primo, an officer and
vicegerent of Christ's mediatory Kingdom: for at no time, and in no
state, hath the Magistrates sword any influence in the mediatory
Kingdome at all, but in so far as the sword may procure externall
peace to the society of that Kingdome as they are a civill body,
which peace he might by office procure by other means then by
commanding the Gospel to be preached, or by punishing such as
blaspheme Christ: for though the materiall object of the Magis-
trates sword be the spirituall Kingdom of Christ, yet the formall
object is the naturall and civill peace of this Kingdome as a civill
society, for to promote spirituall means, and to punish spirituall
sins, such as heresie and blaspheming of Christ, do often conduce
very much for civill peace. 3. It is falle that the heathen Magis-
trate is unable to exercise his magistraticall power for the mediator
Christ through his owne sinfull ignorance, his not knowing
Christ of whom he never heard, is not any sin at all, nor is he
obliged to know or believe in him, of whom he never heard,
Rom. 10.14.

Magistracy
from the
Law of na-

gistrate is expounded an humane Ordin-
ance, I Pet. 2. 13. and by a
rationall Nature, yea

Arg. 3. Every Magis-

is appointed by God the creator, and by a

is appointed by God the creator, and by a

faith Mr. Coleman, God and Nature made

faith Mr. Coleman, God and Nature made

Magistrates
Magistrates, he must mean God the Creator and Nature, but I hope God as creator, and Nature made not the Magistrate the head of the Church, the Vicar of the Mediator Christ; this must have its rise from a higher fountain then Nature; Ecclesiastical Offices tend to a supernatural end, Magistracy and humane Laws (faith Suarez) is from Nature, and the Law faith, de jure gentium est omnis principalis. That excellent and learned Lawyer, Ford. Vasquius faith, That all Princesm hath its rise from the secondary Law of Nature, to wit, a jure gentium, from the Law of Nations: Hence Kings, Princes, Parliaments, Judges, Lord justices, Majors, Sheriffs, Constables, &c. in their root are natural, but in particulars, Rulers are from the prudence of humane societies, there is a higher institution for Church officers, Epk. 4. 11. they have not their rise from Nature, and therefore that Celebrious and renowned Antiquarie, D. Salmasius in that learned work of his, De primatu pape condemneth the dignity and jurisdiction of Patriarchs above Metropolitans, as flowing from the Wests of Princes, and Synodical constitutions of Fathers, nor from any Divine Institution, the highest was as Theodore faith, in up nos dominiones. Now God as creator and Nature doth not, sure Nature cannot appoint a Vicar of the Mediator Christ; for if the Magistrate be an Ecclesiastical administration, then it must be an office intrinsically supernatural, and intrinsically and directly tending to a supernatural end; now the Papists for shame do build their head of the Church upon a divine institution, and on Christ's words, Thou art Peter, and on this rock I will build my Church, and I will give to thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven; Christ never said any such thing to a Magistrate; and if the Magistrate be an Ecclesiastical administration, and the head of the Church, and the Vicar of Christ as Mediator, he must have more then, this, and the keys of the Kingdom of God must be given to him above Peter, for all the Apostles, for all Church officers are their part as such, in as sub Magistrate, from and under the Magistrate, as his Vicar, so as the Magistrate in America who lived and died never hearing of the Gospel, nor of his Lord Mediator, is yet by office the Vicar of the Mediator, and obliged as a Magistrate though a meer heathen to beleev in him of whom he never heard, if the adversary say right, which is impossible, Rom. 10. 14. But faith Mt. Coleman, if Christ (U1)
be rightfull King of the whole earth, where did Christ grant a liberty to a great part of the world, to remain Infidels and enemies to him and his Government.

Arg. 4. In Answer to which, I draw a fourth Argument; All the Heathen Magistrates who never heard of the Mediator Christ and the Gospel, cannot by office be the Deputies and Vicars of the mediatorial Kingdom, for they are not the professed subjects of Christ as Mediator, nor given to him as his profession and inheritance, neither actually, nor in God's decree; for thousands of them lived and died without Christ or any obligation to believe in, or serve the Lord Jesus as Mediator, for if Christ be not their rightfull King as Mediator, nor their King at all as Mediator, they cannot be his subjects as Mediator, far less can they be his Deputies and Vicars by office of his Kingdom; but Christ is not King as Mediator in any sort or title of such as are Heathen Magistrates, for as Mediator he is neither King, titulus & jure acquisitio, nor efficac applicatione, neither merito, nor efficacia, he neither gave a price as Mediator to buy them, because the adversaries then must say, that Christ is so King of the whole earth, as he hath died for all and every one of mankind; nor are they his subjects so much as in the profession of the word of his Kingdom, for they never heard it; if the Adversaries can say that Christ died for all and every one of mankind, and so for these Heathen Kings, I can refute this Article of Arminianism; and though Christ had died for them, yet are they not subjects in so much as in profession, and to in no capacity nor obligation to serve with their sword, Christ as Mediator, for they are not in that state obliged to believe in him, nor to know him as Mediator; nor are they obliged by office to serve him as Mediator, except he had revealed himself to them in the Gospel. Hence I need not prove that Christ is their King by efficaciously applying of the merits of his death to them, nor can any say this Argument may prove that Pastors by office are the Ambassadors of Christ, because they are not all the subjects of Christ given to him as Mediator, either in the decree of Election, nor actually redeemed; for many Pastors who are by office the Ambassadors of Christ as Mediator, are Reprobates, as was Judas and others; for the Argument is not drawn from any saving claim to that Heathen Princes who never heard of Christ hath


bath to Christ, but it is drawn from no claim at all, no not so much as in profession; now this claim in profession all Pastors have, else they cannot be Pastors.

It is do[ns]ome that Mafiter Coleman faith, and not to a purpose, That Christ granteth not a liberty to the greatest part of the world, to remain infidels and enemies to him and his Government: For thus he giveth them a liberty negative, so as they are not obliged to believe a Gospel that they never heard, nor is their negative infidelity a sin, for which they are condemned: they are condemned, Because they glorifie not the Creator as God, Rom.1.21. And do not the shewings of the Law, that are written in their hearts, Rom.3.12. 14. Mar.25.42,43,44. And in this sense God giveth to them liberty to remain infidels, but he giveth them not liberty positively to remain infidels and enemies to Christ; that is, he willeth not voluntarie signes; that they should live in a sinfull course of unrewen nature; but they are not positively enemies to Christ and to his Government, who never by the least rumour heard of Christ or his Kingdom or Government: Hence all our Divines say, that private unbelief of those that hear the Gospel, doth condemn, but not the negative unbelief of those who never heard the Gospel: Thus the adversaries must say, except they with Arminians, and especially with Mofes Amyrauld teach, That there be two wayes of preaching Christ, and two sorts of faiths in Christ, one of those that hear the Gospel, and another of those who are to believe in Christ, though they never hear of, or know any letter of the Gospel, who yet by the book of creation and providence are obliged to believe in Christ, which were an irrationall obligation, Rom.10.14.

Arg. 5. All power mediatatory in Heaven and in earth,that is given to Iesus Christ as Mediator, is all spirituall, all Ecclesiasticall power; and therefore Christ upon this receipt of all power, Mat. 28.18, draweth a conclusion, v. 19. Hoc est, &c. Go ye therefore and teach all Nations, &c. but a Kingly power of this world by carnall weapons, and by sword to fight, is not given to Christ mediatior; for he denieth expressly, Tob. 18.36. that he hath such a Kingdom as Mediator, or that he was instructed with the sword as Mediator, Luk. 12.13. Now as God and Creator of the world, Christ could not deny but he had a Kingdom worldly, and that he hath a regnum potestas, an univerfall Kingdom of power, as Lord of Hoats,
The Magistrate no Vicar of Cap. XXVII.O. 23.

...to dispose of all the Kingdoms of the world, and to rule over the children of men, and to rule over the children of men, give them to whomsoever he will, Dan. 4. 25. & 8. 18. Jer. 27. 9. Psal. 24. 1. Psal. 50. v. 12. Nor is this Kingdom and power given to Christ, nor is he made Prince and a King as God; but as Mediator to give repentance to the House of Israel, and forgiveness of sins, Act. 5. 31. I grant it is said, Phil. 2. 9. God hath highly exalted Christ, and given him a name above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee shall bow, of things in heaven, and of things on earth, and things under the earth. What is done in this (say the adversaries) comprehend a royal power given to Christ? and hath not Christ from this power so subsisted? Magistrates in his place, as his vicars under him; as his vicars under him, and as little mediators? I answer, it doth in no sort follow: for that is a spiritual power, as is clear, Rom. 14. v. 9. For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of dead and living, v. 11. For it is written, as I live saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess God. So it is clearly expounded of Christ's exalting at the right hand of God, Act. 5. 31. for spiritual and supernatural ends, I grant as Mediator and King he breaketh his enemies, Devils, and men; Psal. 2. 9. With a rod of iron, and a dart of them in pieces like a potter's vessel, and maketh his enemies his footstool, Psal. 110. 1. But that is no carnal power, such as earthly Kings useth, it is a spiritual power, for the reason is given, v. 2. The Lord shall send the rod of thy strength out of Sion: By which v. 5. as a great Anti-royalist, He strikes through Kings in the day of his wrath: Now Christ as Mediator sendeth not out Kings and Princes to conquer souls to him with their sword: Renowned Salma- flick faith, When Christ sent his Apostles first to preach the Gospel, and to lay the foundation of the Christian Church, did he send out with them lictors, pursuivants, men of war with a bundle of rods, and with axes to compel men to come in to his Kingdom? Commanded he to smite them with swords and axes, who would not receive the Gospel? No, for he would not have them to take with them a staff, a scrip, or shoes: But though Christ subdue all his enemies, Devils, and wicked men, it shall never follow that Christ is for that, King and head of Devils, and wicked men: For Christ is as Mediator King and Head, or mediatory King and Head of those that are the subjects,
jects, and redeemed conquest of this King, and of those who are members of the body of which he is Head, now this body is his Church only, Col. 1. 18. He is the Head of the Body the Church, Eph. 1. 22. 23. And gave him to be Head over all things to the Church, Which is his Body, the fulness of him that filleth all: The Body of Christ to be edified, Ephesi. 4. 12. Till we all (all that body of the Saints to be perfected, v. 11.) come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ, v. 16. from whom the whole Body being joined together, and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the Body unto the edifying of it selfe in love: Now never Divine can say, that Devils and wicked men, who shall bow to Jesus, are the subjects of this Kingdom of Christ, who have right to the fruits of the Kingdom, Righteousness and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost, Rom. 14. 17. far less that they are of the Body; that is, Christ's Body, Christ's fulness, Christ's Body to be perfected, edified, to Come in the unity of faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, into a perfect man, &c.

Arg. 6. These Magistrates that are the mediatory vicars, deputies, and heads of the Head Jesus Christ and his Kingdom, these are of his Body, and subjects under the King and Mediator Christ, the chiefe Head and King: For it is not to be presumed, that Christ will appoint these to be heads and vicars of his Body, and little Kings over his Kingdom, as he is Mediator, who are not members of his Church, nor subjects of his mediatory Kingdom: But Magistrates as Magistrates, are not members of his Church, nor subjects of his mediatory Kingdom: no more then Husbands as Husbands, Fathers as Fathers, are members; and their should have been Husbands and Fathers, though the Lord Jesus never had been Mediator, advocate, and Priest of a redeemed Church.

Obj. But are Pastors and teachers, and Elders as such, members of the Christian Church?

Ans. If eyes and ears be members of the body, and watchmen, members of the city, then are they, ex officio, by their office members of the Church; But if the Magistrate as a Magistrate be a member of the Church, then all Magistrates, Heathers, and Turks are members of the Christian Church, ex officio, by virtue of their office.

Arg. 7:
Arg. 7. That opinion is not to be holden which lyeth ground, that Christ Mediator is a temporary King, hath under him Magistrates, even heathenish, who have nothing to do with a Mediator to bear a temporall sword: for a supernaturall and spirituall end as Christ under heires, he himselfe being the first heir of all such, and so maketh heathens within the verge of the mediatory Kingdom; as if Christ were as Mediator, a King to Heathen, and all and every one of mankind, who must have Magistrates, and so maketh the Kingdom of men as men, and the Kingdom of Grace commensurable, and of alike latitude and extension, and maketh nature and grace of equall comprehension: But such is the former opinion, the proposition cannot be denied, except by Arminians, Socinians, Papists, who do maintain an universall redemption, a grace universall, a Catholick Kingdom of Grace comprehensive of all and every man, of Pharao, Esau, merodach, Belshazer, all the Kings of Romans, Persians, Assyrians, Chaldeans, and of Turk, India, and such as worship the Sunne and Moon, the Devil, and the work of mens hands: The assumption is granted by Master Coleman, who saith, Christ is the rightfull King of the whole earth, he meaneth Christ as Mediator, to whom the Father hath given a Kingdom.

Obj. Doth not Christ as King make all his enemies his footstool, and subdue all things to himself? Ergo, his Kingdom is as large as all things.

Ans. The Lord Iesus Christ's power Kingly, and his power mediatory, which includeth a power as God (for he is Mediator and a mediatory King, according to both natures) doth no way make him King of Devils, of Hell, of sin, of the reprobate, and damned, no more then Davids power over Ammonites, and Moabites, makes him King and feeder of the Ammonites and Moabites: Never Divine said, that Christ was King of Devils, and King of Hell; though he subdue Devils and Hell, and make them his footstool, Col. 2. 15. But as hability and gifts was not sufficient to make Christ a Priest, but he behooved to have Juda authority and a lawfull calling, Heb. 5. 4. 5. so he behooved to be called, set, and establisshed on the Holy hill of Zion, as a King of the Fathers making, Psal. 2. 5. 6. Psal. 89. 26. 27. 28. 29. Luk. 1. 32. 33. ver. 68. 69. 54. 55. And therefore though as King and an eternall King, he subdue all things, even his enemies;
enemies; yet it followeth not, he is King and Mediator, and Head of his enemies.

Arg. 8. All those whom Christ maketh officers, Legats and Ambassadors of his mediatory Kingdom, they have either the word of the Kingdom committed to them, as Pastors and Doctors, and of old, Apostles, Evangelists, Prophets, that they may make work on the consciences of men to make them Kings and Priests unto God, or they are by the word of admonition and rebuke, to deal for the same end, as governors and Elders, 1 Cor. 12. 28. 1 Tim. 3. 17. for the officers of the Kingdom, and sword or scepter of the Kingdom, the Word of God, Psal. 45. 4. Rev. 19. 15. Heb. 4. 11. Rev. 1. 16. which are the means, are congruously proportioned to the end, the gathering of the Saints, the perfecting of his body, Eph. 2. 11. 12. But never did Christ appoint the Magistrate with his sword, and his temporary rewards; and praise of well doing, to have any action on the conscience of men, or to cooperate for so high an end directly and kindly; for sure the sword cannot reach that end, except indirectly and by accident, in some imperated acts: He may procure that these be such means as word and seals, and Church-officers, and so be an intrinsical mean to set up those which are the spiritual and truly intrinsical means, and this in all.

Obj. 1. Was not this the first step of papal tyranny, since the Church-men would be exempted from the power of the Magistrate, and for themselves set up supreme, without all Independent powers in all Ecclesiastical affairs, no the Magistrate, was supreme in all politick business?

Ans. It is a calamitous consequence, Bishops and Teachers will not be judged by the Magistrate, in things doctrinally, but stand to his Ecclesiastical decision, and his lips, as authority. Should preserve knowledge: Exo, Pastors and Doctors do attempt themselves from the Lawfull power of the Magistrate in his civil judging by the sword, it is as they would say, Church-men refuse to submit to an afflicted and unlawful power of the Magistrate; Exo. they refuse to submit to their lawfull power. 5. They bring not the word to prove, that this was the first step of papal tyranny; now a supremacy and independency in doctrine and civil things, the adversaries deny; and for so long time, the Priests of Israel, the Prophets of Israel, and the Prophets prophetic lies, one and
the adversaries agree that King Abab hath a supremum independent power, to judge and punish them with the sword, and if King Abab will take on him to burn incense to the Lord, the Priest and Prophets of the Lord have an immediate supremum independent power, to rebuke King Abab for usurping that which is independently and incommunicably proper to the Priests onely, and they may refuse to bee judged by King Abab, when he would judge them for giving out this sentence, It belongeth not to King Abab, or King Vzziah to burn incense to the Lord, but to the Priests, the sons of Aaron, 2 Chron. 26. Will they say this supremacy of the Priests is a step to papall Tyranny? 3. This is rather papall Tyranny it selfe that the Magistrate is head of the Church, and as an Ecclesiasticall person may as a Magistrate govern, in all externalls, the Church, as he pleaseth, with a, royall, suprem, independent power; and because the Magistrate may send others to rule for him, 2 Chron. 19. 8, 9. 1 Pet. 2. 13, 14. Ergo, he may commit this royall power to a creature called a Prelate as to his Deputie, in his name to judge; as Phocas gave first a supremacy to Boniface the third, which no Bishop of Rome had before; and judge if this be not the first step to papall Tyranny? They possibly may say, The Magistrate can commit no Magistraticall power to any Churchman, for Christ forbid them to take on them the civil dominion of the Lords of Gentiles, Luke 22. 26, 27.

Anf. But this is an Ecclesiastic, not a civil administration; and if it be a lawfull Ecclesiasticall supremacy, why may not the Magistrate who hath power to send Deputies to act in his name, depute a lawfull Ecclesiasticall power, to Ecclesiasticall persons, Pastors and Doctors, who in the mind of the adversaries are all but the Deputies of the Magistrate in all that they doe.

Obj. 2. But doth it not begarye that the Magistrate shall be obliged as a Lictor to execute the decrees of the Church?

Anf. I know noth the Lictor with blind obedience he be to behead John Baptist, or if Doig should kill the Lords Priests; because King Saul commanded him. 2. This Argument concludes that neither Magistrate nor people should believe Articles of faith; because the Church and Pastors faile to, but because it knoweth faith to, nor is the Ruler to believe or enstute what the Church decrees; because they decreed it, but because he believeth it, is the will of Christ, what
what they give out in Name of Christ. 3. Is it not Popery that the Pastors and Teachers should execute the laws of the Magistrate both in dispensing Word, Sacraments, and Discipline? for they may not as Pastors and Doctors judge whether the Ecclesiastical decrees of the Magistrate be the will and minde of Jesus Christ or no. The Magistrate in doctrine and discipline is the only supreme judge here, as in all causes civil, as he exerciseth a sovereignty and a dominion in the on Luke 22. 27. so also in the other, except the Adversaries shew us a difference. Yea as Mr. Prym with the Erastians say, Because there is no certain form of the government of the Church in Scripture, he hath an Arbitrary power as Magistrate to appoint any government in the Church not contrary to the Word, any Officers, Prelates, and Cardinals, any ceremonies as pleaseth him, and may impose them on the consciences of Pastors and people, which is the highest Papall Tyranny on earth.

Obj. 3. If the Magistrate be therefore subject to the Church not as a Magistrate, but as he scandalously transgresseth the Law of God, so that the Church may not rebuke and censure him, as either a Magistrate, or as a Magistrate doing his duty, but only as a Transgressor. Then neither one particular Pastor as a Pastor is subject to the Church, yea no man in a lawful calling or relation as such is subject to the Church, for the Church cannot rebuke or censure a Husband as a Husband, a father as a father, a Painter as a Painter, so more then the Church can censure a Magistrate as a Magistrate; for then should the Church censure and condemn all these relations and callings, as husband, father, painter, Magistrate as intrinsically unlawful. Nor can the Church censure and rebuke husband, father, painter, musician, &c. When they do right, and doe but fulfill their relations and callings, in doing the duties of husband, father, painter, so more then the Church can censure and rebuke the Magistrate when he doth his duty.

Answ. 1. This is not the total, complete, and adequate cause, why the Magistrate in spiritual things is subject to the Church, but the halfe of the cause onely; you must take in the other consideration, he is in spiritualibus, subject to the Church, not only as he doth sine, but x. As he may sin scandalously. 2. As he may be directed, informed, and swayed with precepts, promises, counsels, (92 in 93)
threatenings toward a supernatural end to eternal life; take in all these three, and we grant all. The Magistrate and all in other relations and professions and callings are equally in spiritual things subject to the Church, as the Ministers of Christ, and in all other relations and callings, as fathers, husbands, painters, musicians, are in civil things equally subject to the Magistrate, according to the three former cases in a civil consideration.

Obj. 4. But then you must prove solidly from the word, that the Magistrate is subject to the Church in spiritual things?

Ans. It is enough if I prove that the Magistrate is subject to the Church, to Pastors and Doctors in things belonging to his soul, and as a man and a Christian in civil things are subject to him, which to me is clear in the Word of God, as 1. Because Timothy and all watchmen in their person are commanded to rebuke them that sin before all, and that in the sight of God, and the Lord Jesus, and the elect Angels, without preferring one before another, or doing any thing by partiality; 1 Tim. 5. 20, 21. 2 Tim. 4. 2. And if Levi must not know his father or his mother, in the Lords cause, Deut. 33. 9. and Jeremiah in rebuking not be dismayed of Kings, Princes, and Prophets, Jer. 1. 17. neither must Ministers accept the persons of judges, Christ rebuked his mother to whom otherwise he was subject, Job. 2. 4. Luke 2. 51. 2. There is the practice of the Prophets, Christ and the Apostles, that they have rebuked Kings, Rulers, Magistrates, Priests, Prophets, every page almost of the Old and New Testament faithful this. 3. God hath no whit exempted the Rulers from rebukes, as they be men, they can and do sin. 4. Princes are the sheep of Christ, and redeemed as a part of the flock for which Christ gave the blood of God; Ergo, they are to be fed and watched over, lest they also as grievous wolves prey upon the flock, Acts 20. 28, 29, 30. then there must be some over them, and those who should speak the word of the Lord to them, and so the word of rebuke, and who should watch for the souls of Magistrates, as those who must give an account, whom the Magistrates must obey as others in the same condition who have souls, Heb. 13. 7, 17. 1 Pet. 5. 1, 2, 3. 1 Thes. 5. 12, 13, 14. 5. All the censures of the Church are for the good of soules, that the Spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord, 2 Thes. 3. 14, 15. 1 Tim. 1. 19, 20. 1 Cor. 5. 5, 6. and for edification, 2 Cor. 10. 8. Jude v. 23. Ergo, the souls of Magi-
Magistrates should not be deceived of this mean of edification.
6. Pastors as Ministers, Stewards, Ambassadors, Watchmen, are intrusted with the word of reconciliation, 1 Cor. 4. 1, 2, and 1 Cor. 3. 5, and 4. 15. 2 Cor. 5. 19, 20. 1 Tim. 3. 1. 2 Cor. 4. 7. Ergo, they must divide the Word aright to all within the family, 2 Tim. 2. 15, and rebukes and censures are a part of the word of reconciliation, no less then promises, and they are to prophecy death and life, as God in his word commandeth, Ezek. 3. 17, 18, 19, 20, and 13. 19. and 33. 7, 8, 9, 10.

7. The power of the Lord Jesus in censuring, is extended to men as all doers, not as Magistrates, or not Magistrates, 1 Cor. 5. 2. Gal. 5. 10. the power of binding and loosing is extended to a trespassing brother, who will not hear the Church, Matt. 18. 15, 16, and 16. 19, 20. The Magistrate is a brother, Deut. 17. 15. one of the Israel of God, as Sam was of the Tribe of Benjamin, David of Judah.

8. The Church may judge such as are within the Church, 1 Cor. 5. 12. but such is the Christian Magistrate.

9. Correction is a privilege of Sons and Members of the family, Heb. 12. 6, 7. Rev. 3. 19. Ergo, the Magistrate should not be deprived of that wherein all Christians share, Gal. 2. 28.

10. Discipline is a part of Christ's Kingly government, if the government be on Christ's shoulders as King, as it is Matt. 28. 19, 20. Ephes. 4. 11, 12. Esa. 22, 22. and if the Gospel be the Word and Scepter of his Kingdom, Mark. 1. 14, 15. and 4. 11. Matt. 21. 43. Luke 4. 43, and 8. 1. Acts 1. 3, and 8. 12, and 20. 25. and 28. 31. Psal. 45. 3. Rev. 1. 16. Then if Magistrates be the subjects of Christ as King of the Church, they must be subject to those who preach the Kingdom, carry the Scepter, and rule under Christ as King.

11. Upon the same ground, if they decree grievous decrees, Isa. 10. 1. Micah 3. 1. and be wolves ravening the prey, Ezek. 22. 27. let them have either Royall or Parliamentary power, they are to be rebuked, debarred from the holy things of God, excommunicated, and their life bound in earth, as in heaven, Matt. 18. 18. Matt. 16. 19. Nor should Courts, or Parliaments, or Thrones, be cities of refuge to unjust and scandalous men.

12. Upon the same grounds Magistrates are not to be deprived
of the good of private rebukes, and admonitions, except we hate
the Magistrate in our heart, and strive not to gain his soul, Levit.
19.17. Mat.18.15,16. Luk.17.3,4. Psal.141.5.

13. Erastus himself granteth, that Magistrates may be rebuked;
and when he granteth that Apostates and Idolaters are not mem-
bers of the Church, and that they are to be cast out of the Church,
as he doth also; he must either grant that Christian Magistrates
cannot turn Apostates and Idolaters, which is against Scripture
and experience, or that if they turn Apostates and Idolaters, they
remain no longer members of the Church, but are to be excommu-
nicated; or then Christ must have made some special exception,
that Kings though Idolaters and Apostates, do yet remain mem-
bers of the Church, and are not to be cast out of the Church, which
(beside that Erastus cannot shew) is contradictory to his words:
Hence it is clear, the Magistrate if he turn as Saul did, a wicked
man, he is to be excommunicated: But 1. By whom? by the
Church? Erastus will deny he can be judged by the Church, be-
cause he is above the Church: by himselfe? that is against reason:
By other Magistrates? he is the only suprem in that Church, and
by what reason he is above the Church, he is above the other Ma-
grates, and other Magistrates are guilty of the same fault.

Obj. 5. The suprem and principall power (called Archiseetonica
goeverning the Church in externals, eather agree to the Magistrate,
or to the Church; not to the Magistrate: (as they say) if to the
Church: Then 1. The universall care and inspection over the
Church is taken from the Magistrate, and given to the Church;
Ergo. 2. Then the Christian Magistrate not indirectly only, but di-
directly must be obliged to follow the judgement of the Church, in or-
daining, depriving, punishing of Ministers, or of any excommunicated.
3. The subjects must be obliged not to obey, yea, to disobey the Ma-
grate, if he do any thing contrary to the Church; and the Magis-
trate as a lither and servants must execute all.

Ans. 1. There is no reason to say, that the suprem and prin-
cipall power by way of royall dominion (as the argument supposeth)
in Church matters, should agree to either Magistrate on earth, or
Church; it is a Rote of the Crown of him who is the only King
of Kings, and Lord of Lords, and so the Majest is false: Nor is that
care and inspection which is due to the Magistrate, taken from him
when
when we ascribe to Christ what is his due. 2. Neither doth it follow, that the Magistrate is directly obliged to follow the judgement of the Church, except we did make the judgement of the Church supreme and absolute, and armed with such a dominion as the adversaries give to the Magistrate; in which case it followeth, that the Church is directly and absolutely obliged to follow the judgement of the Magistrate, according to the way of the adversaries; and that if this argument be good, they must ascribe blind obedience, either to the Church or Magistrate, not to the Magistrate they say; Ergo, to the Church: Nor can they take it off by saying that the Magistrates dominion is limited by the Word of God; for they know that we teach, that all the constitutions and decrees of Synods made by the Church as the Church, is limited by the Word of God; yet they cease not to object to us, that we make the Magistrate a servant, and a liector to the Church, and obliged by his place to give blind obedience to the Church, and therefore they are obliged to answer the argument, and remove papal dominion from their way, according to their own argument, if they will be willing to take in to themselves, with the same measure, that they give out to others: But if they give a ministerial power of judging to the Church, (the argument is easily answered) which they cannot give to the Magistrate, except they make his office to oblige the conscience, and his commands as magisterial to be given out under the pain of the second death: Now his sword is too short to reach to this, I hope, except you make the vengeance that he executeth on evil doers Rom. 13, to be eternal fire, and his sword to be no material nor visible sword, but such as commandeth Devils and Hell, which is absurd; for the Magistrates power of judging and commanding, is commensurable to his power of rewarding and punishing, that is, both is temporary, within time, on the body of this world: The Pastors have a power of commanding, though only ministerial, but free of all domination, or externall coercion, which is spiritual, and the punishment is accordingly spiritual, extending in earth and heaven; I borrow one temporal punishment, inferring no such thing properly.

3. If the power of the Church be a spiritual, and of the Magistrate a temporal good; and if the Magistrate have no spiritual power to answer to his temporal end, no more then the Church hath
any temporall power to attain to her spirituall end; is not this a contradiction, that the Magistrate should determine what the true Church and Ordinances are, and then set them up with the power of the sword? for the Magistrate’s power to judge and punish in spirituall causes, must be either spirituall or civill; on shew he hath none, and so acts without commission: Now for civill power, the Magistrate hath it only over the bodies and goods of men, and hath it not over the soul, nor can he have it (say I) in such cases: It is confessed that the Magistrate hath no spirituall power to attain a temporall end, and therefore those who provoke the Magistrate, without either civill or spirituall power to punish, or prosecute, in spirituall causes, are to fear that they come too near to those frogs that proceed out of the mouth of the Dragon and Beast, and false Prophet, who wish the same argument figure up the Kings of the earth to make war against the Lamb and his followers, Rev. x. Bloody Tenent.

Answ. 1. All this argument is builded on a great mistake, and a consequence never proved, except by this one word of the Author. (Therefore say I) and it is this: The Magistrate hath no civill power over the soul, therefore (say I) he hath no power in soul matters, and cannot judge and punish in spirituall causes. Sir, this is a new sequitur. The learned Divine Rivetor saith well, The Magistrates power in spirituall things is to judge and punish, is formaliter, and in its self and intrinsically civill, but objective in regard of the object and extrinsecally, it is spirituall. 1. I ask when the Author and his take a professor into Church-communion, they judge whether he be just, mercifull, and peaceable, when they excommunicate any member, for murther, for unjuste in taking away the goods of his brother? whether the Church doth judge and punish in the causes of justice, mercy and peace, which properly belongeth to the civill Magistrate, not to the Church properly: but only actions found as they are offensive in the Church of God. I ask (say I) if the Churches power in judging and punishing be civill, or spirituall, not civill, for this Author will say, that the Church hath no power over the lives and goods of men, these belong to the Magistrate, and to his civill power: Yet he cannot deny, but the Churches power in judging and punishing here, is formally spirituall, and objectively and improperly civill: so say I the Magistrate power in all causes, is formally civill and objectively only spirituall, and
and he neither hath, nor needeth any spiritual power formally to 
attain his temporal end, nor needeth the Church any power for-
mally civil to attain her spiritual end: The reason is, because 
powers have their specification and nature from their formal ob-
ject, not from the material; because the Magistrate puniseth he-
reties and false Doctrine as they disturb the Peace of the civil 
State; therefore his power is civil, and because the Church cen-
reth injustice, incet, 1 Cor. v. 1, 2. and sins against the second Ta-
ble, because they are scandalous in the Church, and maketh the 
name of God to be ill spoken of, though materially those sins be 
punishable by the Magistrate, yet is the Churches power spiritual, 
because it judgeth those as scandalous and offensive to God; and 
therefore the power is spiritual, because the object, to wit, as scan-
dalous to the Church, and as offensive to God is spiritual, even as 
destructive to civil Peace, is formally a civil object. 2. The 
Magistrate without any spiritual power judges what is the true 
Church and true ordinances, setteth them up by his sword; he 
doeth let them up only for a civil end, because they conduce most 
for the peace and flourishing condition of the civil State, whereof 
he is head; not that the members of his State may attain life etern-
all; for the Magistrate intendeth life eternall to his subjects in set-
ting up a true Church, and true Ordinances, not as a Magistrate, 
but as a godly man: As the woman of Samaria brought out the 
Samaritans, that they might receive Christ in their heart by faith, 
as she had done: But as a Magistrate he intendeth not life eternall 
to his subjects, so a Master as a Master, hireth a man to serve who is 
a believer, and as a Master he judgeth such a one will be most faith-
full, and active in his service; now the Master judgeth him not to be 
a Saint, that he may be a member of the Church: The Church 
only as the Church is to judge, so of this servant, nor doth he 
judge him a believer, that he may obtain life eternall, nor doth he 
love and chuse him as his servant, that he may obtain life eternall; 
Christians as Christians, judge and love, one another that way: So 
the Husband as a Husband doth chuse a believing woman for his 
Wife, judging she will perform the duties of a Wife, better then 
an unbelieving Wife, he judgeth her to be a believer as a Husband, 
and loveth her with a Husband-love as a Husband; but if he love 
her because the image of God is in her, and as an heir of life etern-
...
nall, then he loveth her as a Christian man, not as a Husband, and it is a Christian love he hath to her, as he hath to other godly women that are also co-heirs with himself of life eternall; and this is a lawfull and a Christian love: But if this Husband should bear a Husband-love, such as he doth to his own Wife, to all other godly Wives, it should be an adulterous and unlawfull love: So the Magistrate as a Magistrate, judges, loves, chuseth, and setteth up true Ordinances, a true Church, as means of a flourishing Kingdom, and of externall Peace, and pulleth down the contrary as means destructive to the peace and safety of his subjects: But he judgeth not in a spiritual manner, and with any spiritual power of the sword, of those as fitting and conducing to life eternall, and inward peace of conscience with God; but as a justified and believing Saint, he judgeth, chuseth, and loveth Ordinances, and the true Church in this consideration, and no wise as a Magistrate: If those Relations of Magistrate and Christian had been considered by the Author, he had not compared the Magistrate punishing idolatry to the Dragon, and the godly Pastors who exhort the Magistrate to punish false teachers to the Beast, and the false Prophet, who maketh war with the Lambe: For the godly magistrate who advanceth the throne of the Lambe, is praise worthy; he doth cut off all wicked doers from the city of the Lord, Psal. 103. and doth this as a Magistrate, that his Kingdom might have peace and well grounded prosperity; but as a man according to Gods heart he doth it formally set on high the throne of the Lambe, nor would he have compared those worthy and dear brethren of New England the Saints of the most high, especially reverend Master Cotton to the frogs that proceeded out of the mouth of the false Prophet, Rev. 17. 3. Nor do the Papists use this argument at all, but another argument, and for a contrary conclusion; for the Pope as the Pope is an earthly Monarch, and as Popeth hath power to translate Crowns and Kingdomes, and as Pope the Holy Ghost in him commandeth the Kings of the Earth, to make war with the Lambe and his followers, as Papists teach; do we ascribe any such power be the Church or Churchmen? are Malignants, Prelates, and Papists, the followers of the Lambe?

Obj. 7. If the people may erect what governments they will, and seems most fit for their civil condition; then governments by them so erected
erected have no more power, nor for no longer time then the civill power or people consenting and agreeing shall entrust them with; for people are not deprived of their naturall freedom by the power of tyrants: And if so, that Magistrates receive their power of governing the Church from the people; then a people as a people naturally considered (of what Nature or Nation forever in Europe, Asia, Africa, America) have fundamentally and originally as men, a power to govern the Church, to see her do her duty, to correct her, to redresse, to reform, to establishe, &c. And this is to subject God, Christ, heaven, the spirit, to naturall, sinfull, and unconstant men: Indian and American governments are as true and lawfull governaments as in the world; and therefore their governours are keepers of the Church and of both Tables (if any Church should arise or be amongst them) and therefore (if Christ have entrusted the civill power with his Church) they must judge according to their Indian and American consciences, for others they have not.

Ans. 1. No doubt the power that makes Magistrates, because of vertue and dexterity to govern, may unmake them when they turn tyrants, and abuse their power; and upon the same ground, as men create Magistrates, so Christian men as Christian men, act to chuse Christian and gracious Magistrates: as if a Husband as a man chuse a Wife (as grace perfumeth and spiritualizeth all the common actions of men) so Christian men are to chuse Christian Wives, Christian Masters, Christian servants; so is a Church to chuse a Christian, not an American Magistrate, Deu. 17. they are not to chuse a stranger, but one from amongst their brethren, and men fearing God, and hating covetousnes, Exo. 18. 21. Deu. 17. 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, and 1. 16, and that a Christian Magistrate receive power to govern in the Church (I deny him to be a Governour of the Church) from Christian people, I see no inconvenience: Suppose that a Christian woman chuse a Pagan Husband, she sins in her choice; and as a sinful woman chuseth a Pagan who hath no other then a Pagan conscience, to be the guide of her youth, and her head, and to love her, as Christ loved his Church, and to rule her according to his marital and Husband-power in some acts of her Christian conversation: Yea, when Christians did fight under Heathen Emperours, they gave power as all soldiers do to their Commanders, to those Heathen Captains, to command Christians according to
according to their Pagan consciences, for other consciences it cannot be supposed Heathen have as this Author speaketh; nor do I see such an inconvenience, that men as men chuse a Magistrate who is a Heathen, to see not the Church as the Church; but men of the Church do their duty, and to punish them civilly when they omit Church duties, when providence compelleth Indah: Yes, when God commandeth Indah to submit to a Babylonish or Persian King, who according to his Babylonish conscience is to command them to keep the oath of God, to abstain from murder, yes, to build again the house of God, and is to punish the men of Indah, if they do the contrary: Here evidently the Church is to chuse Heathen Kings, who according to their Heathen consciences, are to judge and punish sins against both Tables; but they chuse them to add there auxiliary power to help and defend the Church, not any private or absolute power to let up what ordinances they will: Nor is it supposed that men as men may give to Indian and American Magistrates, power to judge, by rule of Indian consciences; what is blasphemy against Jesus Christ, what is apostacy from the Christian faith, to Judaisme, and to punish it: For in that case, the Indian Magistrate is incapable of Magistracy in those acts, though essentially he be a lawfull Magistrate in other acts; just as Christian men and Saints by calling may make a Christian Corinthian amongst themselves, their Magistrate, and yet he cannot judge whether Titian the Phylitian in Corinth hath poysioned Sempronius, as he hath a Christian conscience, but not a medicinal conscience (to speak to) or the skill and art of a Phylitian to know what is poysion, what not; yet did men as men create this Christian Magistrate, to judge & punish murthers and poysoning of Christians. 2. Let us also turn the Tables: the Author cannot deny, but Ten thousand Christians and Indians, half of each side, may come to be one civil incorporation, they create with common consent a Christian Magistrate over themselves, this they do as a society of men. The Indians worship their God in that society, by offering their children to the Devil, and this is their Indian conscience; for it is not to be supposed that an Indian can worship his God with other than an Indian conscience: By this Author's way, Indians and Christians give to this Christian Magistrate, to judge of this Indian and bloody worship, with a Christian conscience, for it is supposed he can judge with no other conscience:
science: I demand whether or not this Magistrate be obliged to punish such horrid shedding of innocent blood? If he be, he is set over this incorporation to bear the sword of the Lord, and with a Christian conscience to judge and punish Indian consciences: Is not this as great an inconvenience as what he objecteth to us? Besides that, according to this way, he must not punish the killing of the children to the Devil; why? this is against the will of the meek Saviour in whom the Christian Magistrate believes, to persecute an Indian for his conscience, as this Author thinketh: Now it is no lesse an Indian conscience worship, and no murthert to offer an innocent child to the Indian God, then it was to the Jews to offer an innocent Bullock or a Ram to Jehovah.

Obj. But God hath forbidden in the Law of nature to kill infants to God upon any pretence.

Ans. In the Law of nature God hath forbidden all false worship. 2. The Law of nature hath forbidden to offer any blood to God, that is, the Law of nature will never warrant us to offer in a whole brunt offering an innocent Beast to God, created for the use of man, and it should be against the Law of nature, to kill Beasts for any religious use, or for any use, except to be food or medicine for man: Except God in a positive Law, had commanded whole burnt offerings, and offering of Beasts to God: So the Law of nature forbids Indians to kill infants; but they tell you, there is a positive Law of their God, and in conscience they are obliged to kill their children to this God, and you must convince their conscience, that this is murthert, not right worship, by reason and light of truth, not with a club and force of sword, which hath no influence upon the conscience.

3. It followeth not, that God hath subjected God, Christ, Heaven, the Spirit to naturall men; for an Indian Magistrate remaining an Indian, never received power from men as men, nor from God, to judge of Christian worship: yea, Indian Magistrates as Indians are uncapable of judging or punishing what is against Christ, Heaven, the Spirit, and yet they are Lawfull Magistrates; for their ignorance of Christ excluded them from having any such formal power; what Magistraticall power they have which they cannot put forth in acts, is not to a purpose for this power, which they cannot exercise, shall never subject Christ, Heaven, the Spirit to the (ο ρ η 2)
of all men, Indian Magistrates: this consequence therefore should have been proved, not presumed as a truth.

4. He saith, If any Church should arise amongst those who have Indian Magistrates, Christ should bestow the Indian civil power with his Church. I answer, This is non-consequence also, for the state of heathenship in the Indian, should exclude him from any such trust, if a Church arise they are to be under the Indian Magistrate, while God in his providence free them from under him, that they may choose a Christian Magistrate, who may be a nurse-father to them?

5. The Lord bestoweth his Church to the civil power as an auxiliary power, not to exercise any magistratical power over the Church, and over their conscience; but only for the Churches good, and for their conscience.

These would be distinguished, a governor of, or over the Church. 2. A Governor in the Church. 3. A Governor for the Church; neither Christian nor Heathen Magistrate is a Governor of the Church, or over the Church: An Heathen Magistrate may be a Governor in the Church, giving to the Church in his dominion leave to live under him, as Nebuchadnezzar did to the Church in captivity. The Christian Magistrate is a Governor for the Church; 1. Men are governed as men politically by Magistrates though Heathen. 2. Men are governed as Christians and Citizens of Heaven, and Members of Christ's invisible body, by the inward government of the Spirit and Word. 3. Men are governed as Members of Christ's visible Body in Church-society ecclesiastically, by Church-officers called ἵστετες, Ἰωτήματα, Ἔφραμ, Ἐφραίμ, Ἀσσύρια, Ἐζεκ. 44. 3. 1. The word is called, Matt. 27. 24. It is given to Kings and Rulers, 1 Pet. 2. 14. ὅμως ἦσαν, Acts 23. 24. So it is opposed to ἀναστάσει to one that serveth, Luke 22. 26. No question it is a word borrowed from the seventy interpreters who use it, Joel 13. 21.Mich. 3. 9. Ezek. 44. 3. Dan. 3. 2: the words are used, 1 Tim. 5. 17. Ephes. 6. 12. 8. 1 Thess. 5. 12. are ascribed to Church-officers: Yea, the word ἀρχηγός, a Ruler or a Commander, Acts 23. 5, is ascribed to the High-Priest, who was but a Church-officer, and the title given to Rulers, Exod. 22. 28. from which these words are taken, is Gods: so Luke 10. 35, 36. compared with Psal. 82. 1. Exod. 21. 6. and proveth the same
same, though Church-officers be only Ministers, not Lords, not Princes, having any dominion over the Lords inheritance.

Obj. 8. But is not this an easie way to extricate ourselves out of all doubts, if we say in Church-government, that the doctrinal and declarative part is in the Ministers of Christ, as Mat. 28. Go teach, &c. and the punitive and censoring part in the Christian Magistrate, Rom. 13. according to that for the punishing of evil-doers, as Mr. Coleman saith.

Ans. This Erastian way will intricate us not a little, and is destructive of the Covenant of both Kingdoms. 1. Its a distinction void of Scripture and reason, for the Apostolick Churches by it must have no Government as Churches at all: for to publish the Gospel which is made the one half; Yea, all Church-government (for this punitive part is a dream) is not Church-government, nor any part thereof.

1. Master Coleman desires that the Parliament would give to preachers Doctrine and power of preaching and wages, learning and competency: as for Governing of the Church, let the Magistrate have that, Ministers have other work to do, and such as will take up the whole man. Sermon, Pag. 24,25. Then preaching the Word to the Church, cannot be any part of Governing of the Church.

2. Because Church-government is properly acted by the Church, with the power of the keyes, to bind and loose in earth, as in Heaven by Church-censures, and pardoning of an offender, and committed to many, to the Church, to a society gathered together, Mat. 18.18. 1 Cor. 5,1, 2, 3, 4, 5. But publishing of the Gospel is done by one single Pastor, even to the end of the world, even where there is no Church, even in the hearts of the Athenienses, Ath. 17, 33, 34. of Felix, Ath. 24.25. of the Iayler not Baptised, Ath. 16, 29, 30, 31. of the woman of Samaria, Joh. 4, 28, 29, 30. The Gospel exerciseth a doctrinal and externall government on thousands, the like without the Church visible: yea, and who never are members of a visible Church; is this any Church-government of which we now speak? and in all the Scripture a power of the keyes to govern the visible Church, was never committed to any one single man by Iesus Christ; if an Apostolick-priviledge of Pauls-excommunicating, his alone be objected, I can easily answer, 

Apostles
Apostles continue not to the end of the world. 2. This doctrinal publishing of the word, is the plants and flowers of the Garden, but Church-government is the hedge, and those two are not to be confounded. 3. Paul differenceth them as two distinct qualities of a preacher, 1 Tim. 3, while he will have him apt to teach, ver. 2 and v. 4, 5, one that can rule the Church of God well, and 1 Tim. 5, 17, ruling well, is distinguished from labouring in the Word and Doctrine as a charge worthy of lesser honour, from a charge worthy of double honour. 4. All Protestant Divines distinguish Doctrine and Government, the former belonging to the being and essence of a visible Church, as an essential note thereof, I mean the publike and settled publishing of the Gospel; the other is only a thing belonging to the well being of the visible Church, and an accident thereof; so it is a needless tenent to make the former a part with the latter. 5. When we swear a conformity of Doctrine and worship in one Confession, one Catechism, one Directory, we do not swear the same over again, when we swear to endeavour the nearest uniformity in Church-government, &c. which we cannot but do, if the Doctrine and Worship be nothing but a part of Church-government; or if it be all Church-government: now if Mr. Coleman's punitive part be but his own dream, as I hope is easily proved, there is no Church Government at all. Now how Mr. Coleman did swear to endeavour the nearest uniformity of a Chimera, and a thing that is just nothing, let himself consider.

As for Mr. Coleman's punitive part of Church Government by the Magistrate, this by his way is done by the power of the sword of the Magistrate, faith he, and therefore citeth Rom. 13. He beareth not the sword in vain, &c. Hence either the Apostolique Church had no censures at all, and so no visible government and order, but preaching of the Word was all; and except we would add to our pattern, and be more wise then the Holy Ghost and the Apostles, we ought to have no Church Government, but only preaching the Word; or then the Apostles, Pastors, and Teachers meddled with the sword of the Emperor Nero in discharging the punitive part, for with no other instrument doth the Magistrate punish ill-doers, but with the sword, Rom. 13, 4, 5. This text Mr. Coleman citeth to make bloody Nero a Church-governour: But no ground is for this in the Word, that Paul, Peter, Timothy, Archippus meddled with the Emperours sword, or that the weapons of their warfare were
were carnal; or that Paul was the Minister of God, bearing the sword for the punishment of evil doers: I think Paul speaketh of civil bodily punishing, Rom. 13, and no violence greater can be offered to the Word of God; for if that power be an Ecclesiastical administration, every soul, and so the Christian Magistrate, is to be subject to this Ecclesiastical and Church power; and if so, then to the Church: If Mr. Coleman deny the consequence, I conceive to be subject to the Magistrate, is Rom. 13. to be subject to the power civil, that is, of God. If the Magistracy be an Ecclesiastical ordinance and a vicegerent power of the mediator, as they say it is, then to be subject to the Magistrate, is to be subject to this Church power, and to be subject to the Church. 2. The punitive power of the Magistrate as such, doth not bind and loose on Earth, and open and shut Heaven; for then hoc ipso, because the Magistrate doth judge and punish evil doers, the mans sin should be bound in Heaven; now so the judging and punishing power should take hold of the conscience: But it is certain, the Magistrate as judge may take away the life of a Capital Delinquent, when he knoweth the man repenteth and believeth, and findeth mercy with God; Ergo, this magistratical power is not Ecclesiastical; for if the man to the knowledge of all repent, the Church hath no power to bind his sin on Earth, nor will God bind his sin in Heaven; but yet the Magistrate as a Magistrate is to punish; Ergo, this punishing power is no Ecclesiastical power, nor any part of Church-government.

3. The punitive power of the Magistrate hath influence on men as ill-doers, whether they be within the Church or without the Church, and worketh on men as Members of the Common wealth, whether Christians, or Heathens, Indians, or Americans: But no punitive power of the Church, is or can be extended to those that are without the Church, but Pastors and the Church leaveth them to be judged of God, 1 Cor. 5.12. nor can they be cast out of the visible Church, who were never within it.

4. The punitive power of the Church as such, floweth from Christ as Mediator, Head and King of the Church; because Christ as Head and Mediator, hath appointed a shepherds staffe, discipline, or rebukes, Church-censures, and Excommunication for his sheep, his redeemed ones, family, and people, for whom he is Mediator,
ator, his Scepter and Rod must be congruously and suitably proportioned to his Crown, and Spiritual Royal power: But the punitive power of Magistrates floweth from God the Creator, as the whole world is the family of God; so for the preservation of humane society, the Lord hath been pleased to appoint Magistrates, and the punitive power of them by the sword, to correct ill-doers for the peace, good, and safety of humane societies.

5. All punitive Church power is for edification, 2 Cor. 10. 3. That the mans spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord, 1 Cor. 5. 5. that the party may be gained by private and publike Church rebukes, Mar. 18. 15. If he hear thee, thou hast gained thy Brother, v. 18. If he neglect to hear the Church, let him be so shee as an Heathen, &c. Ergo, if he hear the Church his soul is gained, 2 Thess. 3. 14, 15. 1 Tim. 1. 19. but the intrinsical end of punishing an evil doer, is not the gaining of his soul, but a political civil satisfaction of justice for a wrong done to humane society, that others may fear, and do so no more; the Magistrate in using his sword as a Magistrate, looketh not to this as the intrinsicall end of the sword, to convert a soul, to augment the number of the subjects of Christ's mediatory Kingdom; nor doth he as a Magistrate proportion the measure of the stroke of the sword according to the repentance and godly sorrow of the man who hath sinned; but in justice his eye is not to pity or spare the blasphemer, though as dear to him as a father and friend, Deut. 19. 6, 8, 9, 10. 2 Thess. 3. 9. whether he repent, or not repent; but the Church censure, respecting intrinsically the gaining of the soul, is proportioned to the offenders sorrow for his sin, that be not swallowed with over much sorrow, 2 Cor. 2. 7, 8, 9, 10.

6. This punitive part of Church Government, is neither in name, nor in thing: in Scripture Triglandium denieth that there is any Ecclesiastical, co-active, or compulsive power properly socalled in the Church; there is no violence used by Christ as King of his Church; this shepheard carrieth the Lambs in his bosome, Isai. 40. 11. Hyeronimius said well, The King or Magistrate ruleth over men that are unwilling, he meanceth in punishing them; but the Pastor doth it to men that are willing: And renowned Salmasius this, addeth that of the Apostle Peter to the Elders, Feed the lambs among you, as being of their profession, &c. It is not pena a proper punish-
7. The Magistrate dispenseth no Ecclesiasticall censures as a Magistrate: For 1. He rebuketh not as a Magistrate, for rebukes as rebukes intrinsically tend to the gaining of the soul; so as to receive rebukes willingly, is a Character of a child of God, and to hate it a sign of a wicked man, Eccles. 7.5. Prov. 28.23. and 6.23. and 1.23. c.13.18. c.15.5.10.31.32. Prov. 5.13. and 10.17. and 15.10. and 9.8. and 13.1. so the sword cannot inflict this censure, nor can the Magistrate cast out of the Synagogue or Church; he can banish, which is a local casting out; but not excommunicate, if he be said to be an Ecclesiasticall person exercising punitive power in the Church, because he judgeth and punisheth sins against the Church, 1. This is nothing except he inflict spiritual punishment of rebuking and excommunication, which he cannot do, because he hath not to do with the conscience, or the converting of a sinner. 2. If he be a Church-governour, because he punisheth sins against the Church, but in so far as they disturb the Peace of the State, then Pastors may be civil Governours, and use the sword, which Christ forbiddeth, Luk. 22.26.27. and 12.13.14. because they inflict spiritual punishment, such as publike rebukes on murderers.
The Magistrate and Vicar of Cap. XXVII. Q. 23.

there's parricides, but in a spiritual way, to gain souls to Jesus Christ; and they rebuke murthers, thieves, thought not so committed against the State and Peace of humane societies, but as offensive to God, scandalous to the Church, and destructive to the souls of those who commit such offences: All the punishment Ecclesiasticall which we plead for (though we borrow only the name, it being unproperly so called) is spiritual rebukes; debarring of wicked men from the society of the Saints, and the holy things of God, that they pollute not such pearls. Bullinger is admitted by Erastus as a favourer of this way, and some private Epistles of Bullinger written to Erastus cited, but nothing of the publice writings of Bullinger: It is true, he faith, he is pleased with Erastus his Theor, but that he was not of Erastus his mind wholly, is evinced from these Epistles. 1 Bullinger strove with the Anabaptists of his time, who contended for either a Church of regenerate persons, or none. Bullinger. Dic cum Anabaptistis nostro contendimus hac dore, ut eorum diminus versus Ecclesiam pelle esse, et dicis Ecclesiam, qua excommunicacione hoc careat. 2 He faith, he himself, D. Wolphius, Lavater, Hallerius, Zwinglius, Gualther, never condemned the Church of Geneva; Ergo, they never condemned Presbyterial Government. 3 He faith, it will be for the edification of the Churches of the Palatine, that this excommunication be. Now we know divers there ascribed to the Magistrate plus quas, and said that the tythes belonged jure divino to the Magistrate: The truth is these Divines were too obnoxious to the lust of Christian Magistrates. Calvin, Farel, complain much of the Magistrates usurpation in this.

4. They thought hard to exulcerate the minds of Princes to excommunicate the Magistrate, and longe magis ab alienatos reddere, inferiores gradu confendere, superiores vero inasitos reddere: But was it not an abuse to excommunicate the poor people, and spare the Magistrate?

3. Bullinger would not have the question of excommunication to come in publice; why? cum hoc tempore alia fas, a fide Ecclesiae.

4. He seens to incline that none should be debarred from the Lords Table, that acknowledge their sins, contra se libera omnibus peccatis sine magnoscendi et veniam a Christo petitionibus, we say Amen, so they be truly penitent to the Church, and not such as Paul
Paul speak of, 2 Tim. 3.1, 2, 3, 4, 5. to whom confession of sins before the Church is a manifest form of godliness.

5. Bullinger and Gualther write to the Prince Elector to punish scandalous persons: But with all quanquam arbitramur illust. Principem admonitionem nostram sibi soli reservaturum, qua dundaxat dissidia manueefista in Ecclesia pravenire voilimus: Hence this (tecum sentimus) of Bullinger written to Erastus was; 1. His private opinion, that he desired not to be known to the Churches; therefore Erastus wronged Bullinger, who left his secret letters to be printed. 2. Many learned men in these Churches beside Ana-baptists, and the Palatinate Catechisms were against Erastus.

6. He saith Zwingius was the chief man to have excommunication brought in indutiam supereret. Epist. ad Erastum.

7. He desired Beza not to answer Erastus, for peace cause, and the same he wrote to Erastus.

A learned and holy preacher to the Prince Elector, wrote thus to Bullinger. Quaeuror (fr. m. d. dilecte) quod approbaris Theosis D. Erasti, contra disciplinam Ecclesiae sacram scriptas, quae non tantum impia sunt, sed viam sternunt ad Ateismum; horor et obscuro ut publice teferis se novas illas Theesios improbare. Quod nisi feceris, futurum est ut videaris differtire non tantum a dotula illa vetustate, sed etiam a Zwinglio, et Oecolampadio aliisque, adeoque et cum teipso pugnare.

Bullinger in 1 Cor. 5. Excommunicatio non est exercenda, ut Ana-baptista voluerat, a solo Ecclesia censu, sed a dilectis ad hoc hominibus. Excommunicatio aepud veteres est exclusio a comminione Sacramentorum.

Excommunicatio est supplicium temporale, disciplina externa ad medendum instiuta.

Bullinger in Mat. 18. esse Ethicicum et publicanum significat esse et habere inter fucinorosos, quibus usil neque officij neque sinceri committas.

Idem. Horor ut salutare hoc pharmacum (excommunicatio) e cete Sanctorum poniscit avaritia elimina tum reducatur.

Idem in Mat. 18. finis consilij domini est, (in negotio discipline) ut corrigatur sederati in Ecclesia, et an fur tamur scandala.

Bullinger in 2 Thel. 3. hic habemus abstensionem sen excommunicationem, qua a tribunum societatis et publicorum paucorum usus-fruitu exclusionem (Doe 2)
dimou consummáceres et omnes admonítiónes contemnémétes; aliter eisém
locus, posset interpretari. Ætést be contradictionary to Erasimu his ex-
posítiónes, and way which makedh excommunícatión nonting, and
putcth all Church-discipline, on the point of the Magistrates iword.
I canntothay but that sáying did too litte prævail with Bullinger,
Amicus Socrates, Amicus Plato, sed magis amica veritatis: for Eras-
ium was his intímate and too dext friend, eisém errores amicorum,
et nevi sunt nóbis pergrati.

Bullinger in Mat. 18, in illa: Diē Ecclesiae. Excommunicatio est dis-
cliplina externa sãctorum in Ecclesia conversánium, quâ ex com-
minóne abscíciens et sãctorum, aut commóde aliquíi corrigímus, cor-
centuræ qui scandalisant Ecclesiam—beo particularès Ecclesia de-
ligunt sibi quoque veluti Senatum Colégii mou optimórum virórum
qui juxta Canónum sãctorum disciplinam banc exercéant: What is
this but a Presbytery? Ceterum quâlis fuerit Ethnícorum et publica-
norum reputatio facile est colligere ex Evangelio et Paulo ad Ephe. 2.
Certe alieni sunt a grácia, nihil Communiónis habentes, òne forte
sãctorum.

Bullinger, Ser. 5, decad. 10, pag. 584. Sunt autem dominus pri-
vatim volúnt admonénti et corrípi prævaricantes Ecclesia Minístros,
ita ejusdem admonítiónes et correctiones bonum extendit ad universá
Ecclesiam: Ego, habitéte Eccleías sanctam Presbyterum
senatum, qui delinquentes in Ecclesia diligénter admonéntas, corrípí-
bit graviter, addo et consorsio excludebant Ecclesiastico, òn nihil emen-
dationis expectári posse vidéretur,—1 Cor. 5, decrevi ut üi qui hoc
secum patraví, òc.

Muscultus in loci Commun. de Minístrius verbi, pag. 204, disciplina
Ecclesiástica includit morum correctionem, sum privátum, sum pub-
licum, deinde et judícia Ecclesiástica—bíce quoque de relv non
constríntes Miníster súpte arbitratu, sed éris ad institutionem carum
director, os nihilibiæ súffragia et consensum súa plebíæ, ne quid in-
víta Ecclesia imponatur; denique curábit ut plebís ipsa viros gravei, sí-
mentes Dei ac boni Testimoniis deligas, quorunm cura et vigiláns Eccle-
sia disciplina administratur, et só quid gravíorí momentí accidat
ad Ecclesiam ipsam referatur.

I grant it was the error of that worthy instrument of Reforma-
tion that

he referreth all to the Christian Magistrate: and so he

manía:—pertinent ad illas Ecclesias tamnum qua Christiani—
Cap. XXVII. Q. 23. Officer under the Mediator.

num Magistratum non habem; non potest hic certi quicquam prescri-
bi, sed fidales et prudentes Ministri pro conditione temporum, publici
status et necessitatis Ecclesiae sine diocesanam banc sic attempersim,
ut omnia sint decem, benefic et in adsectionem Ecclesia in Matt. 18.
Habendi sunt pro hominibus prophanis est a Rep. Christianorum alienui,
qui excommunicati sint.

He favors not a little the Erastian way; for he maketh Moses
the institutor of Religion to Aaron, and the Ministers the servants
of the Christian Magistrate, loc. de Magistratu. Weltsangmus Mus-
culum 16 de Magis. pag. 630, quod Magistratum est locorum Ec-
clesiae, hoc constat in his Inferior, sed constat in his Superiores, pag. 631, 632. — Respondes ad illud
die Ecclesia. Ecclesia Dei magistratus pio ac fidelis sum distribuebantur ut ecclesias ab apostolis plamatis usi nonis: Yet he goeth not
with Erastus, for he faith, pag. 634. Naque docet Magistratum, ne-
yque administrat Sacramenta, sed hac faciant Ministri, pag. 628.
Moses primum Catholicum Israelitum Magistratum — omnem in populo Dei
religionem constituit ipsique Aaraoi et Levicarum ordini facienda et
vitanda prescriptis — adeo ut cura instituenda ad moderanda religio-
nias pertineat ad Magistratum, administrando vero ad sacerdotes;
porro si peccaveris, formam prescribit — quomodo procedendum sit cum
impenitentibus.

Lucratu es fratrem; fursus est laboris suis. Die Ecclesia. Tertius
gradus habet provocacionem ad totam ecclesiam b. e. ad consuetudinem
suis vos estis membra; est semper Ecclesia hoc cessit fidelium in
quod verbum Christi et Sacramenta restitue administratur; banc for-
malum poest secuti sunt apostoli, us est 1 Cor. 5. et 2 Cor. 2.6. sit tibi
b. e. quo loqui apertis hostes Christi et apertis pecatores habentur; sic
illum habeto; nihil si tibi cum eo negotiis, separa te ab illo, satis jam
cognovisti hominem, confestit eum induratum et reprobus esse; sic est
authoritas fina in sensu Ecclesia.

Aretius Comment. in 1 Cor. 5. propositio. Hominem Christum pro-
sefii, quod fieri potest, flagitiosus vitare debens. Corinthiis omni
studio laborandum ut incestuosum suo et Ecclesia bono ad tempus
excludant.

Finis excommunicationis alter ut satum sit coram homo in die mortis,
vel in novissimo judicio — alter finis reposis Ecclesiam. Sic omnibus
vitandae est spolia consagro.

In
In Matthew 7. Sanctum canibus non dandum. Vult Christus offendere doctrinam Evangelii et mysteria pietatis non esse Communicanda ingratia et contemnitoriis — persecutoribus et voluntariis hominibus. Gualtherus in Matthew 18. homili 220. Sit tibi velut quispiam Euthicus et quispiam publicanum, id est, hoc judicio agnoce cun non esse civem aut membro germanum Ecclesie, et quia ipse se a societate Ecclesia segregat, dum bonus judicio refragatur, sit tibi Euthici et publicani loco, cum quo nihilo porro consorit habeas, sed Dei judicio illum permisit, qui sanam contumaciem multis minimae finis; but he addeth, banc ordinem observarunt olim Christiani homines dum nulos habere ne Magistra- tus Christianos.

Interdum etiam Satana tradebant tales, quod non ex paucorum arbitrio fiebat, sed cum publico Ecclesia consensui, 1 Cor. 5.

Quod autem hoc omnino ad surrexcommunicationem Anabaptistae detorqueunt nihilum inepte et ridiculii (ut alia omnia) faciunt; nam primo insoleter vendicant quod apostoli datum fuit, et Satana tradere volunt homines excommunicatione sua, quae ne cunicum quidem possum occideresinde etiam in conam invehunt sine Christi instituto et exemplo: To which I must say the Anabaptists were right, and Gualther in an error in this point.

Gualther, in 1 Cor. 5. accusat Ecclesiam propter incectum, quod incectuosum non sine publica toto societate Ecclesiae insaniatiam dixit tolerarum — propter unius hominis fidelis totum Corintheorum Ecclesiam, et imprimis bonus praefetos et doctores (qui hoc aliud est quam Collegium pastorum et Seniorum) tam gravissimam accusat, sed ita illi meretur, quod inde genseiores preeissen bateamus erga eum, quem punire poteramus, us jus libidinem coercere jam pridem debussissent.

Tota Ecclesiae excommunicatas— erant in Ecclesia tunc constituti Seniorum, as borum arbitrio caussam non permitisse apostolum—quoque ergo rem tanti momenti ad paucos referunt, vel etiam sihi soli vindicandae excommunicandi potestatem, i.e. Ecclesiam juris non spoliant, & Tyrannidem affectatii piis insolubilibetem.

Nec enim mibi necessarium videtur, ut Ecclesia Christiana ista ad se trahat, quae principes habent vere Christianos, quorum absou- riscat, morum discipline constitutis & conservari potest, urgent quidem excommunicationem Anabaptista, & quia banc improbamus, nos Ecclesiae impuras habere clamans; sunt etiam aliis qui est principes habeans.
babeant verò Christianos, neque leges definte quibus morum licen-
tia coerctur, ad hoc-tamen senatus Ecclesiasico opus esse asint, qui
in quorumvis mores animadverterat, et cuin principes quoque jussit,
et eos qui scandalum aliquod publicum dederunt, a canone dominica com-
munione accet, et coelum non nisi suo judicio probatas, et præstissi
prius satisfacitioribus publicis ad Ecclesia, societatem et canis um rur-
sus admittas——quasi vero non alia disciplina forma sustini posset,
quam quæ ipsa constituat est. Distingunt illi inter jurisdictionem Eccle-
siasticam et politicam quoad merum disciplinam et scelerum penas, as
distinctio ista ex possidiorum officina deprompta est, in satnio vero
scripturis mus quam habetur.

In Lucam c.13, in illa (quis me constituis judicem) ducet ut singuli
se intra metas (nas continent neque res aggrediantur a sua vocatione
aliena): He speaketh against Anabapists of that time who pre-
ached without a calling.

The Reader may perceive that Bullinger, Gualther, and Muscu-
lus. 1. Do acknowledge, that the place Mas. 18. and 1 Cor. 5. do
clearly prove an Ecclesiastical excommunication, which Erasmi
denied. 2. That Erasmi expoundeth these two places against the
mind of those his friends: And never Divine in the world, Prote-
stant, Papist, Lutheran, never Council, Father, Doctor, Ancient,
or Modern, expounded the place Let him be to shee at a Heathen,
as Erasmi doth. 3. These Divines difference the Magistrate and
the Church, in censures, power, function. Erasmi confoundeth
them, and faith as the Anabapists of old did; against whom, Lu-
ther, Bullinger, Gualther, Lavater, Musculus, Wolfius, Aretius,
Simlerus, disputed, that the civil Magistrate may lawfully dispence
the Word and Sacraments. 4. They never condemned the Disci-
pline of Geneva; Erasmi doth. 5. They acknowledge there was
in the apostolick Church, an Ecclesiastical Senate or Presbytery:
Erasmi faith, this is a devise wanting Scripture. 6. They denied
Excommunication to be exercised by all the Church, as a devise of
the Anabapists: Bullinger faith, 1 Cor. 5. a dicetis ad hoc homini-
bm. Erasmi faith, it must be exercised by the whole Church, if
there be any such thing. 7. Bullinger and Gualther, think that Di-
cipline is necessary in the Church: Erasmi refusest any such thing.

2. Bullinger and Gualther do think, that the Lords Supper,
which is an action of publike thanksgiving and communion, should
not
not be turned into a punishment, which is a use that Christ and his Apostles hath not taught us: But this is easily answered. 1. The pearls and holy things of the Gospel are not turned into another use when Christ hath ordained; because they are denied to dogs and swine as a punishment of their swinish disposition; and if these pearls were given to swine, should they not be turned to another use then is ordained by Christ? Is not the union of members in a Church-body a sweet bound? Is this communion translated to a bastard end, unknown to Christ and the Apostles? because the inconstant man is cast out of that communion? This is as who would say, the Table of the House is a symbol of a sweet communion of all the children of the House; Ergo, the Table is turtled from its native use, and is abused, if a flagitious and wicked man be turned out at the doors and removed from the Table. I think the contrary is true; the Lords Table ordained for children, is converted into an use not known to Christ and his Apostles, when the Table is prepared for dogs and swine; and this argument is against Christ, Matt. 7. as much as against us. 2. By this the excommunicated cast out of the House, is not debarred from the Table of the House. What sense is here? the offender is cast out from amongst the children of the Lords family, and yet is admitted to the Table of the family?

3. These great Divines teach, that in the days of Christ and the Apostles, there was such an ordinance as excommunication, and that the Church who worketh not miracles, for any thing that we read, and received a precept from the Holy Ghost for excommunication, as a moral and perpetual mean to remove scandals, to humble and shame an obstinate offender, to preserve the Church from contagion, and to edifie all, as is clear, Matt. 18.15,16,17,18,19. 1 Cor. 5.1,2,3,4,5,6. 2 Thess. 3.14,15. Rom. 16.17. 2 Cor. 10.8. that the Church (I say) of men must be wiser than Christ, and remove this mean of edification, and substitute the sword of the Magistrate that hath no activity or intrinseical influence for such a supernatural end as edification: this cannot but be a condemning of the lawgiver Christ's wisdom. Whereas Mr. Prince and others say, that by the preaching of the Word, not by Church-discipline, men are converted to Christ, as witness the many thousands of godly people in England where there have been no governor, but
bur: prelatical: I answer, 1. This is to dispute against the
of Christ who ascribed to private rebukes and Church power
the gaining of souls, the caving of the spirit, repentance, and prica.
liation, Mat. 18. 15, 16. 1 Cor. 5. 5, 6. 2 Cor. 2. 6, 7, 8, 9. 2 Thess.
14, 15. Rom. 16. 17. 2 Cor. 10. 8. because preaching is more effectual;
Ergo, is the Discipline not effectual? 2. Consider if thousands
more would not have been converted if Christ's Government had
been set up for which Mr. Cartwright, Mr. Udal, Mr. Dearing,
and the godliest did supplicate the Parliament. 3. Consider if there
bath not been in Scotland as many thousands, comparing the num-
bbers rightly, when the Church was terrible as an Army with Ban-
ners. 4. Consider how the Turgurine Churches and others, for want
of the hedge, have been scandalously wicked. 5. The Magistrate
by punishing drunkenness, or fornication or extortion (for he can-
not take away the life for these) doth not keep the lump of the
whole Church from being leavened and infected with the conta-
gion of such: The Church by removing and casting out such an
one, must do that; and the personal separating from such as walk
inordinately, cannot be an act of the Magistrate, and yet can-
not but be a perpetual and moral mean or ordinance that the
Church is to use, not only when they have not a Christian Magis-
strate, but perpetually; for we are to withdraw from those that
walk inordinately, and are not to be corrupted with having intire
fellowship with wicked men, whether the Church have a Chris-
tian Magistrate or no: I am to gain my brother by rebuking, and
by telling the Church, and to esteem one that heareth not the
Church, as an Heathen, or a Publican, that I may gain him; Whether
there be a Christian or an Heathen Magistrate in the Church, ex-
cept it can be proved, that the Magistrate as the Magistrate, is to gain
souls to God: Yea, Musculus, Bullinger, and Gwaltley, have alike
reason to say, there is no need that we rebuke privately a trespas-
ing brother, and that we forgive him seven times a day, when the
Church hath a Christian Magistrate, as they can say there is no
need of Excommunication: for if the sword can supply the room
of one spiritual ordinance of God, why not of another also? and
the rege will bear us out as well to say, we are not to eschew the
company of a scandalous brother, for shame of him, and for the
danger of being leavened by him, because the Magistrates' sword
may
Excommunication is approved by the Tygurine Fathers, and the Tygurine Fathers are approved by the Tygurine Fathers. They may say what and when to rebuke, and their wisdom may be found in the Word of Wisdom. Excommunication must not be taken lightly or rashly. Therefore, let it be said, 'Only the Word of Wisdom is used for excommunication.'
between the power of the keyes in the Church, and the power of the sword in the Magistrate. To this agreeeth Concessio Svecica, Art.13. and Concessio Bohemica, Saxonica, Basilienfis, Tetrapoliciana.

Amongst our late writers, I should conceive that renowned Salmansius, that rich treasure of Antiquity, can stand as one for all to speak for us in this point. The Emperours (faith he) had of old a suffrage in chosing of Metropolitans, Patriarchs, and Popes, and of convocating General Councils: So as Jerome maketh it a Mark of a General Council, that it was indicted by the Emperour; and there was reason, because, it concerned the consciences of the Magistrate as the Magistrate, what Pastors, Popes, and Doctors there were in their dominions to watch over their souls, and the souls of their subjects. It is true, de falso, Honorius the Emperour did ordain Marcellinus moderator of the conference at Carthage between the Catholicks and the Donatsists, The Emperours added the force of a civil Law to the Councils: So Inuestinian. Constitut. 130. sanxit ut quater conciliorum Canones pro legibus haberentur; Ergo, the Councils had the force of Ecclesiastical Lawes, without the Emperours: But they had not the force of civil Lawes, having civil penalties annexed to them, without the Emperours; Ergo, the confirmation of Councils made by the Emperours, were political and civil confirmations: for the decrees of the Council of Jerusalem, were Ecclesiastical decrees, without the will, Law, and Authority of any Emperour on earth, and laid an Ecclesiastical tye on the Churches, without the Emperour, Alt. 16. 4. 5. So is that of Salmansius to be expounded, as he expoundeth himself. 

Principi est leges de Religione condere, de fide Catholica, de Episcopio, de Clerico, de quibus aliis buis modoque externas postestatem spectant, seque ira in monstrum circumres et personas Ecclesiasticas, eaque secore Christiani Imperatores in Ecclesia sui temporis, hoc enim est directarius seque visum in postestatem. qua principes legum sanctitatis non um generi sibi subditorum consilero debent, sed in universum, omnibus san laicos, quam Ecclesiasticis, quatenus Ecclesia est in Reipub. et Reip. pars, non Respublica Ecclesia.

Now that Emperours appointed time and place of Synods, which were external circumstances, is clear: But that the Emperours nominated the persons, who should come, appointed an Ecclesiastical (P pp 2)
The Testimony of Salmasius touching the Cap. XXVII. Q. 23.

The Synod to moderate, and that they defined the number of Bishops, is denied: Except 1. That they did this in a great schisme, and when the Church could not agree amongst themselves: Or 2. In such a general defection, as was under Arrius, which was an extraordinary case. 3. That the Emperor requested by Letters, that such and such godly Bishops might come to the Synod, not such. But whereas, de facto, he as a Magistrate commanded such to come, and did discharge others under pains to come (except they were other ways incarcerated and known parties, and so could not be judges) is against the liberty of the Church and the freedom of Synods.

So Salmasius, Non situr leges tantum factum de religione ac fidem omnibus observandis, dummodo verbo debino nos contraveniant, poess principecs Christianum vel summus Magistratus, sed etiam suas subditos ad decreta Synodalium observanda, que verbo Dei conformia sunt, obligare, et Cogere: ubiqueque sano imperio opus est parvis agentem ac judicem, aut jurisdictione cogente, et coercere, nihilit habent quod agant verbi Ministeri, neque jus agendi illum, ei securi dorze aut persona Ecclesiastica quœstio sit, aut de religione agatur, sed ad principes aut Magistratus ea vis coactiva et illud jus imperativum et coercitum pertinet.

There is a Law making (unproper I grant, because declarative in Mortal men, constitutive in the head Christ only) touching Faith and Religion which is politick; but it is when there is a constitute Church, subsequent, not antecedent, and in order to bodily co-action by the sword which is due to the Magistrate: Of this Law giving doth Salmasius speak as his words clear, and because bodily and external co-action is not the Churches, therefore the Magistrate as the Magistrate according to Salmasius, hath no proper Ecclesiastick power.

The reciprocation of subordination of Pastors and Magistrates is clearly taught by Salmasius Minister, Ecclesiae principiis Christianum ligare et solvere id est, suspendere et excommunicare aque potest ut alium quem libet de grege per illsa internam potestatem et monstro quot quae deo acceptit. At principecs rursus potest Episcopum per illum suam exteriorem monstro, qua non animam, sed corpus curat, cogere, coercere, ad officium competere, fieri obstrictar, etiam deponere, et abijicere, et eum in punire, vis a quoque si muraret semem suscere,

In appar.

p. 298.

Orere, privare...a principe abjectius Episcopus Ministerij tantum atque officij funtionem amissit, atque exercitium intra limines jurisdiccionis dant a se vel ditiones que principi subjicta est...at non potestatem, quam in ordinacione acceptis, per impositionem manuum, potest eripere princeps, cum nec eam possit dare.

Canst duplex potestas Ecclesiastica, altera interna, externa altera, tam peccant quae utramque principi vel Magistratu civili subjiciunt, quam quae utramque denegant ministero Ecclesiastico. And he proveth that the Pastors have received immediately from Christ, and not from the Magisrate, their internal and external power of governing the Churches.

Josue. Similerni professor Tigartius comment. in Exod. 10. in Mand. 5. Magistratum omnium officium est tollere idola, vi et armis...conciariorum vero ut errorem ostendamus, Idololatriam damnemus, verbi gladiio jutilem, et Magistratum sui officii admoneant in rebus exterius tollendis ut Can. 15- Concil. Carthagin. 5.

Ladaver in Exech. c. 44. Dominus dicit repellendos a ministere interrescifos carne, hoc est, indolentes...sibi darem eos, hoc est, imbutos praxi opinione, collige quanta cura et diligentia requirus a sacerdotibus, conformer enim custodes.

Lavater in Exech. 22. 26. reprehendit in sacerdotes quodsancta sua violentae, non enim tradant quemadmodum ipsa instituaseras. Nam in templo profanabat Idola, sacrificia non legemte offerebantur...an non hodie Sacramenta ab adulteris, ebrios et aleatoribus administrant?

Idem in Exech. 23. 38. et quern immolasse filios idolis. Si adulteria de adulteri stratis surgens recta ad maritum suum veniat, et amorem consilium simule judicium est magnum impudentia...rederentes a valle Hinnom et cultum demonum, tantum re bene gesta, cruentiis manibus templum ingrediuntur cista conscientia oratur.

Ioan. Wolphiinus in Nebendianam vit., c. v. 20. edificatores Ecclesiae nihil agere debere quam quod in mandatis divinitatis datum est.

Idem in Exram., c. 10. hoc enim exemplo V. T. dicimur que facta opus sit in N. T. nempe us crebris synodi in vitam, in doctrinam et mores, in vocacionem Ecclesiastorum inspiciatur.

Hence it is clear that Simler, Lavater, and Wolfphiinus, do clearly 1. Difference between the two powers of the Sword and Church. 2. That the Priests in the Old, and Ministers in the New Testament
mement are not to prophan sacred holy things. 3. That by Assemblies and Synods Church-observances are to be dispensed.

Yes, even Robert. Burhills de primatus Regio contra Bocanum Jesuitam. c. 10. sed neque in exteriore jurisdicctione, aut excommunicationis aut ordinationis potestatem regis facimus, aut cultus divini novas formulas procudendi, aut dispensandi——adde quod nec jus ei tribuimus, leges sua solius auctoritate ferendi que canonum Ecclesiae-asticorum vix obtineant.

The mind of D. Pareus and P. Martyr may be known by what is said, and is cleared in that learned dissertation of Iac. Trig. Nor shall I need to burden the Reader with citations of Fathers, Greek and Latine, Doctors, Councils, with all our Protestant Divines, Luther, Calvin, Beza, Farel, Marlorat, Piscator, Sibbaldus, Junius, Gomaras, Trelcatis, Bucanus, &c. which were easy to do if not needless, and acknowledged by the Adversary. I have also in answering Erastus (I hope) answered all that Mr. Prinne hath said, either in his questions, or vindication; because most of all he hath (I speak it not to diminish or detract from the learning of that reverend man, far less to irritate) is fully to be seen in Eras-\(^{\text{a}}\)s: so that in answering Erastus, I hope, that ingenuous, zealous, and learned Divine will Acquiesce. The Lord establish Jerusalem and make her a peaceable habitation.

FINIS.
AN INTRODUCTION
To the
Doctrine of Scandal.

Whether or no things indifferent can be commanded because indifferent:

Hat ever things are commanded under the tenor of things indifferent, and yet are not indifferent, are not lawful, nor can be in reason commanded: for so should they be of their nature both indifferent, and not indifferent: But humane Ceremonies are such; Ergo, they are not lawful.

Indifferent things Basilius calleth them τῆς τοῦ μονον Nazianz. τὴ τῷ ἡμῶν ἐλεφαντος. So Laertius, and Gellius disdain the same of them. Things indifferent cannot be good, but essentially neither good nor ill, and if they be not good, they cannot be apt to edifie, and so fall not within the compass of things which can be commanded by Rulers.

There is a twofold matter of a Church constitution, the one remote, the other nearer: The remote matter of Church constitutions are things indifferent, to wit, mens actions and the circumstances thereof; and so they are the matter of Gods Laws, for all our actions Physically
Indifferent things are not the matter of Church constitution. Things indifferent cannot be enacted as a Law, except they were indifferent to all, to both weak and wilful; for remaining evil to some they are scandalsous, and cannot be commanded, except rulers would command sinful actions.

The Apostles would make no Laws at all of things indifferent, except in the case of scandal, neither can our Ceremonies be indifferent. 1. Because they are sacred mystical signes teaching us some duties to God. 2. They are worship and means tending to the honour of God, and being used for the honour of an Idol, as they are used by us, they should be the religious honour of an Idol. 3. They are pretences...
indifferent examined.

4. The use of Ceremonies are Moral actions of man, not warrant- ed by God's Word. Ergo, They are unlawful, and so not indifferent. If they are good, because Rulers command it; but, by the contrary, they do lawfully command it, because it is good. The Church's power, is one and the same, in things indifferent, and necessary in matters of Doctrine, Discipline, and Order; for in both, the Church doth not create goodness, but doth by the Light of the Word, or (which is a part of the Word) by nature Light, finde pre-existent goodness in Doctrine, Discipline, and matters of Order. Therefore Will of Authority, as well, hath no power to dispose of the least circumstance of time, place or person; but the Church's power is Ministerial, and determined to what is good, expedient, and convenient.

Obje. Humane Actions according to their specific nature may be indifferent in God's Worship: For example, to pray to God in the morning, or in your Bed, or out of it; in the House, or in the Fields; to Preach the Word in this, or that habit, in a Gown, or in a Cloak; these are actions in their kind different, because they are either commanded, nor forbidden; for that is according to the kind of action good, which is to be commanded of God, that is, unlawful to neglect it, or to do any thing repugnant to it; as to love God and our Neighbour; and that is evil according to its kind, which is forbidden by God's Law, as it is not lawful to do it, or command it in any sort; so it is evil to blaspheme God, to commit adultery. So Forbi.

Anf. In the Field, or in the Bed, Cloathed with Gown or Cloak, when We Pray or Preach, are mere Accidents and Circumstances of praying and preaching, and we grant them to be variable and indifferent; bowheis, they admit of Regulation Moral, and so are not simply indifferent; for to pray in the Fields and Streets, to be seen of men, is vain-glory. But I hope they are not indifferent in your meaning, as are Surplice, Holydays, &c. For you will not say the Church may make Laws that no Prayers be but in the Fields, nor Preaching except the Preacher be cloathed with a Cloak. 2. It is not good Logick to say, 'To pray in House or Field, is an action according to its kind, neither good nor evil; when as it is an individual action, contrived to such a place, House or Field, because Field or House are indifferent in Prayer. To pray is not indifferent according to its kind; because Accidents of Actions are indifferent; it followeth not that the action is indifferent, for then the Doctors Opinion, maketh an Act of loving God, and believing in Christ, indifferent in its kind; for it is as indifferent to love God in the Field, as in the House; and to love him while you are cloathed with a Gown, as with a Cloak. As it is indifferent to pray, in House or Field, cloathed with Gown, or Cloak; so to love God, and the most necessary actions in the World.
be actions according to their nature, neither good, nor evil, but indifferent, which is against the Doctors own Distinction. 3. Place or habit do not constitute Praying, and Preaching in their specific nature; that were a wonder; for their Objects do constitute their nature, and their Objects are God and God's Word; and if they be indifferent according to their nature, it shall be indifferent to pray to God, or to some other thing, possibly an Idol. Nay, if Actions good of their own nature, such as to Pray, or Preach, be made indifferent according to their kinde, because cloathed with indifferent Circumstances of time and place, and habit; then by that same reason, Actions of their own nature evil, as to murder, commit adultery, should also become indifferent, from these Circumstances; then should it be indifferent to kill in House, or Field, and indifferent according to its kinde, which is most absurd.

Object. Howbeit it be objected, that every voluntary action is either honest, or not honest, yet there are some things honest, that are indifferent and free: For there are two kindes of honest things, 1. Some honest and necessary things, as all the duties commanded in Gods Law, the contrary of these pollute a man before God, and they are formally, positively, and inclusively laudable, and commendeth men before God, and are rewarded. This way every voluntary action is not either honest, or unhonest; for there is a middle between these two, to wit, something honest and lawful, but not necessary, but morally free, as Marriage, which commendeth not a man to God, so that he is therefore rewarded, neither doth the contrary, to wit, non-marriage pollute a man before God, or is blame-worthy, because marriage is only negatively honest, Honestum irreprehensibile, honestum exclusivum, & honestum per composibilitatem cum honesto formali & positivo. So marriage is neither positively honest, nor unhonest, but free morally. Neither is marriage necessary by absolute necessity, or necessity that toucheth the action; for men may marry, and not to marry is no sin, onely marrying is necessary by a conditional necessity, 1 Cor. 7, 39. A Widow is free to marry whom the will, but with this condition, That the marry in the Lord; the necessity toucheth not the action, but the manner of the action. And this necessity of the manner or goodnesse of the action of marriage, doth not make the action necessary, but leaveth it as free to men to marry, or not to marry; and so there are some actions according to the specie or nature, that are indifferent, and not unhonest, yet lawful. So Doctor Forbs.

Answ. 1. Marriage hath something in it natural, even before the Fall. It was naturally good, that man should not be alone, and this way, before, and after the Fall, Marriage in the ground that maketh it necessary, which is an aptitude and inclination to procreation, is most necessary, and so now, after the Fall of man, all that burneth and marreth not, despiseth Gods remedy of life, and sineth; and so by necessity of Gods command in the Law of nature, and repeated by the Apostle, 1 Cor. 7, 2, 9. it is necessary in individuo: And although, that which is merely natural in marriage, as the Act of marriage according to the substance, be not formally laudable, and rewarded, because of the naturality thereof, yet
it is not for that free or indifferent. 2. And when the Doctor saith, That marriage is indifferent in its nature, and free; so that there is no necessity of the action, but only of the goodness of the action, he speaketh wonders: For howbeit, marriage be indifferent by a Metaphysical indifferency of contrariableness to such and such persons, because marriage may be in some, without sin, and no marriage may also be in other some, without sin; and so praying is indifferent; it is in some without sin, and not praying is in some also without sin, When the man is necessitated to some other action, either Civil, Natural or Supernatural; yet marriage is not Morally or Theologically indifferent: So as to marry, or not to marry, is a matter of a man’s free choice, and of his own free will not obnoxious to any binding Law, as is kneeling, not kneeling, crossing, not crossing, in the mind of our Adversaries. 1. If it were morally indifferent to marry, or not to marry, Rulers might make Laws either commanding all to marry, or none to marry, or some to marry, some not to marry, which were no small tyranny, and the very doctrine of Devils. 2. The gift of Continency, is a commandment of God, that they marry not, and burning is to some a commandment, obliging them in conscience to marry, else they sin; therefore to marry, or not to marry, is necessary to all men, or then unlawful, and so not indifferent; as our Divines teach against Papists; their Supererogatory Works. The Lords calling of any to suffer for his Truth, is instead of a command of God; though the man might be saved, though be suffer not for the Truth. 3. If there be no necessity in marrying, but only conditional in the manner of marrying, then all mankinde without sin might abstain from marrying, which is most absurd. 4. The place 1 Cor. 7. 39. saith not, that a Widow is under no necessity of marrying, but only under a necessity of well and spiritual marrying. For the libertie that the Widow hath there, is not, that it is indifferent to her to marry, or not to marry; for since our Adversaries teach, That Rulers may make Laws in things indifferent; they might then make a Law that no Widoows shall marry, which were vile tyranny. But the libertie that the Widow hath to marry whom she will, is opposed only to a Law and Obligation Matrimonial, that she was under, while her Husband did live. And the words clearly speaketh onely of this freedom, not of Moral freedom of indifference, from all Law of God necessitating her to marry: The Wife is bound by the Law, as long as her Husband liveth; but if her Husband be dead, she is at liberty to marry whom she will, onely in the Lord. But there are no small odds betwixt libertie to marry this or that man, because the Husband is dead, of which libertie onely the Apostle speaketh; and liberty, and indifference without all restraint of Gods Law.
to marry at all, or not to marry: This latter libertie, the Scripture speaketh not of, only the Doctor allegeth it.

Doctor
Forbs
his thoughts of things

Objec. Kneeling at the Sacrament, howbeit, antecedence and immediately it be not necessary by Gods Law; yet, consequently, and by the mediation of lawful Authority, it is now necessary to us, not by necessity of the thing itself, but by necessity of obedience, order, and peace; and so according to the practice, it is for the time necessary by Gods Law, and cannot be omitted without sin. So Forbes.

Answ. Necessity of obeying the Church can make nothing necessary and good, for the Church commandeth it, because it is necessary and good, and it hath not goodnesse, necessity and aptnesse to edifice from mens will, and the Churches commandment. 2. Ask if no kneeling, now in Scotland laying aside the respect of Authority and Law, be in itself indecent, and unapt to edifice; if not, then the Church hath no more ground and reason for order and decency in our Ceremonies (for what I say of one, holdeth true in all) then there is for the want of Ceremonies; and if that be true, the sole will and lust of Authority maketh our Ceremonies lawful. What can Romish impudence give more to the Man of sin? But if there be unorderliness and indecency in our Ceremonies, then kneeling now must be sin, even laying aside the respect of Humane Laws. 3. It is strange Divinity. That that which is no sin, of it self, cannot be omitted without sin, for the sole will and pleasure of men. Humane Authority then may make it sin, not to rub our Beards, not to claw our Heads, when we come to the Church to hear Gods Word. If Humane Authority can make an indifferent Act lawful, and the omission of it, sinful, they may make all indifferent Acts in the world lawful Acts; they might then make piping, leaping, laughing Acts of Divine Worship, and might make a Decalogue of their own. And if they may make an indifferent Act to be sin, if it be omitted, they may by as good reason, make sinful Acts, as Adulterie, Incest, Murder, Robbery, to be lawful Acts; for if mens inhibiting will be the formal reason of sin, then his commanding will must be the formal reason of obedience: And so Rulers might command Murder, Robbery, Incest, Blasphemy.

Objec. We may perform an individual act coming from deliberate will, and that without sin, and we may omit the same without sin: Whether we practise these indifferent actions, or omit them, we should refer both practice and omission to Gods glory; and thence actions we call indifferent or free, (as indifferent and free is opposed to that which is morally necessary,) which are either necessary to be done, or necessary to be omitted, by necessity of a Divine Law. Howbeit, every action that is not of Faith be sin, Rom. 14. 23. Yet the faith whereby I believe this action is necessary, and must be done, is not necessary to the eschewing of sin. But if I do it, that I do it in Faith, and for Gods glory, is necessary; but the necessity of the goodness of the action doth not make the action necessary; for it were to lay a yoke of continual doubting upon mens conscience, if they should believe every
Widow marry in the Lord, if she please, the marry, but it is indifferent to

an action individual, should be of Faith, and Divinitie.

can be acceptable Faith here dearer

of the heaven.

yea, crossing and kneeling leave them.

objeet. 4.

necessitie

to love

bath from

be at all;

in is at all. If then

Humane Laws commanding no necessitie

Commandment of God, why be at all, be all from mans will: this is in Rulers to command, under the heaviest pain, things that but their will. 5. Neither is it any yoke to mens
their Moral Action by Gods Word, and so to see (according as it is Written) before they venture upon any Action Moral. It is libertie to keep Gods way accurately.

Obj. In general, no particular action is necessary, the goodness whereof that is commended and rewarded of God, may as well be had by the omission of that action, or by an other action, as by the doing of it; but such an action in the individual use is free, and indifferent; but if the goodness necessary cannot be had at all, without that particular action, then the action in the individual use is necessary, although according to its nature, it be possibly indifferent. So to us now to kneel at the Supper, is necessary, that we may obtain the necessity good of due Obedience, and decent Uniformity, and eschew the contempt of Authority, Schism, and Confusion. Forbes.

Answ. 1. By goodness here, the Doctor meaneth, Concomitant and general goodness, which maketh not the action necessary to be done, and so it hath no goodness intrinseca, but is an idle action, and yet it may be done, or not done without sin; and when it is done, it is done upon no other motive, but the meer will and pleasure of the doer: We have hereby the Doctors learning; Such an idle action done in Faith, and done for Gods glory. 2. All our Ceremonies in their use, crossing, kneeling, wearing of Surplice, have no intrinseca goodness, no internal moral equity of Order, Decency, and aptness to Edifice; Wherefore it is necessary they should be done; the doing of them in Faith, and for Gods glory, may be obtained as well by none kneeling, none crossing, none Surplice. This is no small debt to the credit of Peart Assembly; for they saw no goodness in the Articles, but that which as well might have been obtained without them. Hence except the goodness of pleasing King James, they had no more reason for the Ceremonies, then to make an Act that all Ministers shall go to the Foot-Ball, the third day of May. 3. Then the meer pleasure of the King hath made kneeling necessary, and good obedience to the fift Commandment, mens will as will so is the only formal reason of obedience to the ten Commandments, or disobedience. 4. Then we may of Faith, and for Gods glory, refuse the Ceremonies, if it be the Kings will; and in that point, the fift Commandment standeth or falleth at the nod of the Kings Will. Such Mercenary Divinitie become not the lovers of Reformation.

Obj. There is a twofold malice in actions; One that layeth a moral impediment on the act, so that it cannot be performed without sin: So to eschew the malice that is in adultery, we must eschew the act of adultery; this malice polluteh the act, and should hinder the act: There is another malice that polluteh the act, but doth not morally hinder the act, As when one feedeth the poor for vain-glory, vain-glory polluteh the act, but hindereth it not: Vain-glory should be laid aside, and the poor fed. If one kneel at the Supper, thinking it not lawful to kneel before Creatures, his kneeling is evil; but the evil in it doth only pollute the act, and make it sinful, but doth not morally hinder kneeling, because consummation ignor
Doct. Forb's thoughts of things indifferent examined.

How exsuperancy of necessity of goodness is to sway the will of Rulers and people.

Anfw. 1. In such a case as that, where two circumstances, both of three degrees of goodness occurred, Rulers can reasonably tie people to neither, but leave it alternatively, to their liberty; for why should liberty be restrained, where necessity of order, and decency, doth not necessitate the Rulers will? 2. In such a case the Rulers will, as will, should not be the formal cause, why one is enacted rather than another; but the Rulers will be led by a reason from convenience, and so there were a prevalent reason, for one rather than the other. 3. I deny that such a Metaphysic case of two things every way of alike convenience can fall out, as the matter of a grave and weighty Church constitution; for nature's Light, rules of Prudence, Pray, Charity, and Sobriety shall ever find out, and discover an exsuperancy of goodness and convenience, of one above another. 4. Granting there be three degrees of goodness and convenience in fitting, and two degrees of goodness and convenience in kneeling; in this case the object necessitates the Rulers will to command fitting, and refuse kneeling. 1. Because good being the formal object of a reasonable Will, in both Rulers and people; that which partakes more of the nature of Good, is first to be chosen. Ergo, the Rulers will is determined and morally necessitated to a circumstance of three degrees, before a circumstance of two degrees; and we obey for the goodness of the thing commanded, and not for the will of the Rulers. 2. If people obey, and so embrace a circumstance of two degrees, and refuse a convenient circumstance of three degrees; they either make this choice for the goodness and convenience of the Circumstance, or for the less Will of Authority; the former cannot be said, because of two Goods; known to be so, the one of three degrees, and the other of two degrees; the Will cannot reasonably choose the lesser good, because a lesser good known as a lesser good, is evil; and the Will cannot reasonably choose known evil. A lesser good is a good with a defect, and so morally evil; if then Rulers cannot choose evil, they cannot reasonably command others to choose it; if the latter be said, the choice of people is reasonable, and their conscience rejected upon the less Will of Authority; which is flagitious obedience. How are we then hidden, try all things?

Object. In matters plainly determined by Scripture, Rulers are to follow the Word of God; but in matters circumstantial or indifferent, where Scripture speaks neither for the one side, nor for the other, what Rulers thinketh good, is to be followed, there being no evil nor impiety in that which they command.

Anfw. 1. This is to make Rulers in matters of Salvation lyable to the Scriptures of God; but in matters which men call indifferent to make them Popes, and to hang our consciences upon their fleeces, which is most absurd. 1. Because Paul, in matters most indifferent, of days, and months, would not have the Romans to hang upon his judgement, but will rule both their practice, and his own, by the Law of nature. Murther not, Slander not. 2. What Rulers thinketh good is not a rule for Constitutions, and for peoples obedience in matters circumstantial; but the rule of Rulers here is in making Laws, and of people in obeying Laws, is goodness it self, Order, Decency, aptitude to Edifice, in things that they command; for it were strange, if in matters, that they call of situation, not thoughts, but the Word of God should rule and Square Canon-makers, but in matters indifferent, their thoughts should be a Law. 3. Scripture and the Law of nature, and right reason, which is a deduction from Scripture, is able sufficiently in all Canons and Constitutions, to regulate both Rulers and people, and to determine what is convenient in circumstances; and the Lord here is an infallible Judge, speaking in his Word, as he is in all matters, which they call Fundamental; yea, the Scripture shall be imperfect in the duties of the Second Table, if it do not determine what is active scandal, or foul murder, as it doth determine what is Idolatry, what is lawful Worship.
A Dispute touching Scandal and Christian libertie.

Quest. I. Concerning Scandal.
whether or not Ceremonies, and the use of things not necessarie in Gods worship, when they Scandalize, be unlawfull?

Doe the more willingly enter this Dispute, and with reverence to the more learned, shall examine the Doctrine of the late Doctors of Abredene in their Duphys. Because I occasioned their thoughts touching Scandal, by a private dispute of the nature of Scandal, which I undertooke while I was confined in Abredene, with one of the chief Doctors.

Our 10 Argument. Ceremonies and things not necessarie in Gods worship fall against Charitie, by the grievous cryme of Scandal.

The practice of things indifferent, and not necessarie, is then unlawfull, when from thence ariseth the scandall or occasion of the ruine of our Brother.

But from the practice of Ceremonies and things not necessarie ariseth Scandal, and occasion of the ruine of our brother. Ergo, the practice of such is unlawfull. Observe our Argument leaneth on a ground given, but not granted that the Ceremonies be indifferent, though to us they be evil: I prove the Proposition, 1 Rom. 14.14. I know and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that nothing is unclean of it selfe; but to him that esteemeth anything unclean, to him it is unclean. V.15. But if thy brother be grieved (weakened in his Christian race) Now walkest thou uncharitably, destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. 20. For meat destroy not the worke of God. Then for crossing, kneeling, holy dayses, destroy not him for whom Aaaa Christ
Of Scandal.

Christ died, 1 Cor. 8.9. 1 Cor. 10.28. So the brazen Serpent must be removed, when it is a scandalous object of Idolatrie, Ezra 8.22. Ezra for fear of Scandal, will not seek a band of men of the King, lest the King should believe the band of God would not bee with his people, as he had said, Yet a band of men had been more necelarie, then the Ceremonies. So 2 King. 23.10 Josiah is commended for defiling Tophet, to prevent occasion of offering Children to Molech: for this cause God judgeth an house without Battlement, and the sending abroad a roaring Ox to be murther, Deut. 7.28. Exod. 22.18. 29. 33. Exod. 23.7. Deut. 7.3. and Levit. 19.14. Thou shalt not lay a stumbling block before the blind. Marrying with the Canaanites was forbidden, for to the ruine occasioned by that, to the foules of Gods people. I prove the Assumption, 2 Gresser faith, In Ceremonies Calvinists are the apostes of Catholikes. 2. If such a worship had been in the Temple or Synagoge, so as the Jews in the same act might, have worshipped Jehovah, and the Canaanites Baal or Dagon as at one table the Papists may kneele and adore bread, with the Protestant, receiving the Sacrament, it would be a reigning scandal. 3. Atheists have mocked Religion, for the Surplice, and other Masse-oyes. 4. Papists say Protestants are returning to their Mother Church of Rome. 5. We cannot in zeal preach against Popish traditions, and practice Popish Ceremonies. 6. Lascivious carousings, drunkenness, harlotrie, come from oblitering of holy dayes. That this may be more cleare. 1. The nature of a scandal would bee cleared. 2. The Doctrine of the Apostle Paul about Scandal proposed.

A Scandal is a word or action, or the omission of both, inordinately spoken or done, whence we know, or ought to know, the fall of weake, wilfull, or both, is occasioned to those, who are within, or without the Church. 1. It is a word or deed, seen to others. Sinfull thoughts not being seen, are not publikc scandalls, though to the man himselfe they occasion sinne. Hence non-conformitie simply to a thing indifferent, must onely be scandalous, as joyned with contempt, formall contempt in things indifferent, is inward and invisible to men. 2. Omission of words and deeds scandalize. Silence in Preachers, when Gods matters go wrong is scandalous: So Saucers (b). 3. Not every word & deed doth scandalize,
Of Scandal.

dallize. but such as are done unorderly. (c) Sanches faith these words and deeds, _Qua carent restitutione, which want some morall restitution_; or as Aquinas (d) faith, of themselves are inductive to sinne, doth scandalize; or that (e) M. Amor. De Domino Archiep. Spalatens. faith, which is indicative to sinne, or the cause of great evill, or hindereth good, as our faith, zeal, love, &c. that scandalizeth. For though none of these fall out, if the work or word, or omission of either be such, as of it selfe, is apt to scandalize, it is an active scandal. Hence every little scandal is a sinne, either in it selfe, or in the unordainable way of doing it. But what objects are properly scandalous, shall be discussed. 3. When we know such words and deeds doe scandalize, and they be not necessarie to be done, yea, and if wee ought to know; for though the proueness and proclivity of our brethren, or others to sinne, be in some respect, _questio falsi_, yet is it also _questio juris_, a question of Law, the ignorance whereof condemneth, when the things themselves are doubly evil, but not necessary to be done; Hence the practice of a thing indifferent, when there be none that probably can be scandalized, and hath some necessity, is lawful: as Colos. 2. 16. Let no man therefore judge you in meats or drinkinge, &c. yet in case of scandal it is unlawfull to eat. See 1 Cor. 10. 27. Eat whatsoever is set before you asking no question for conscience sake. 28. But of any wine, this is offered in sacrifice, to Idolls, eat not, for his sake who sheweth for conscience sake -- Conscience, I say, not shiene owne, but of others. Therefore practising of things indifferent, or non-practising, are both lawfull, according as persons are present, who may be scandalized, or not scandalized; but this is in things though in nature indifferent, yet in use having some necessity, as eating of meats, but the case is otherwayes in things altogether indifferent, as our Ceremonies are, which are supposed to lay no ty on the conscience, before God, to incline to either side, as they say, to crosse, or not to crosse, laying aside the Commandement of men. For if no-crossing be all's good, as crossing, then though there be non-scandalized, yet because it is such an action in God's worship, as is acknowledged to be indifferent, and hath appearance of adding to God's word and worship, it is inductive to sinne, and scandalous, though none should...
Propositions against Scandal

should hence be atim secundo, ruined, and made to stumble. But if any in Paul's time, as the case was, in the Church of Corinth should eat meats at a table, forbidden in the Law, he not knowing that a Jew was there, this may seeme invincible ignorance, because ignorance of a meer fact, not of a law, if that Jew should be scandalized through his eating, it should seeme to me, to be scandal taken, but not culpably given. 4. It is said in the definition, That these inordinate words or deeds occasioneth the fall of others. 1. Because the will of the scandalized, or his ignorance is the efficacious and neerest cause, why he is scandalized, that is, why he sinne; actions or words are occasions onely, or causes by accident, for none ought to be scandalized, as none ought to sinne, ad peciæsum nulla est obligatio. 2. Because, as to be scandalized is sinne, so to scandalize actively is sinne, though actuall scandal follow not, as Peter scandalized Christ culpably, when he counseleth him not to die for sinnes, though it was impossible that Christ could be scandalized. 5. It is said, (whereby weake or wilfull, within, or without the Church may be scandalized.) For I hope to prove that it is no leffe sinne actively to scandalize the wilfull, and malicious, then the weak, though there be degrees of sinning here, and we must eschew things scandalous for their sake who are without the Church.

For the Second, I set down these Propositions 1. from Rom. 14.

1. Proposition. The weake are not to be thrailed in judgement, or practice in thornie and intricate disputes, in matters indifferent. This is cleare Rom. 14.v.1. Ergo. When people know not mistie distinctions of relative and absolute adoration, of worship, essentiaall or accidentiall, they are not to be here thrailed by a Law to practice Ceremonies humane.

2 Proposition. If a weake one eat herbs, fearing the practice of things forbidden by God's law, he is commended, and his absti-nence praife-worthy, as Rom. 14. v. 2. 3. and he ought not to be judged, and so ought not to be awed by a Law. Then absti-nence and non-conformitie is lawfull in such a case.

3. Proposition. He that eateth, he that eateth not; he that pra-ciseth, he that practiseth not indifferent things, is not to be judged. 1. God hath received the eater. 2. You are not to judge anothe...
another mans servant. It is against the Law of Nations. 3. If
the weake fall, God is able to vasse them. Ergo, if he be not to
be judged, as a contemner of Gods law in things indifferent, saire
lesse should he be judged, by the Church law.

4. Proposit. Obervers of dayes, or non-observers of dayes
should have certaintie of Faith in these indifferent things; Ergo,
the light of the Word should lead Rulers, and People here, v.5.
in things indifferent.

5. Proposit. The observer of indifferent things, as dayes in
that case at Rome, and the non-observers of dayes should not
trouble one another, because both are to observe, and not ob-
serve indifferent things, for Gods glory. 1. Both gives thanks.
2. Both liveth and dieth as Chrits, for Gods glory. 6.7.8.9.
Therefore Gods glory is the end that ruleth the use of Cerem-
onies, as they are indifferent.

Proposit. 6. v.10.11.12. 2 Christian should not condemne a
Jew, nor one brother another, in things indifferent. 1. Because
we are brethren. 2. Because it is Chrits place to judge, and con-
demne. 3. Because every man must give an account for himself.
Ergo, Lawes of Rulers to condemne or punish; are not to be
made in such cases.

Proposit. 7. v.13. When the use of things indifferent is a flum-
bling block and scandall to our brethren, they are against cha-
ritie and unlawfull.

Proposit. 8. v.14. there is a Prolepsis. Meats clean, or not
clean, may be eaten, but all meats are clean; and Paul is per-
swaded of that by Iesus Chrit. Ergo, The Apostle answereth,
1.by denying the major Proposition in two cases, and setteth
downe a distinction. All things are clean in themselves, but they
become unclean, in two cases. 1. If one weake in the faith be-
lieve, that the meat, that he eateth, is against the word of God,
the meat to him is unclean. 2. If he eat before, one that believeth
it is forbidden in Gods Law, to eat such meats, his eating is a
stumbling blockade to the weake. But one might say, It is a taken
Scandall, and not given: for it is lawfull to eat, thy brother
decemeth it unlawfull out of ignorance of Christian libertie, to
say Formalits. Ceremonies be indifferent; if any offend at the use of
them, it is a scandall taken, not given. 0 but Paul forbiddeth to
scandalize, or to eat. A 2 2 3

Hence
Hence the 9. Propos. The use of things indifferent, as Ceremonies, before any Law be made of them, by confession of Formalists, is indifferent, and may be done, and not done, but if they scandalize, Paul proveth by eight arguments they are unlawful. 1. It figheth with Charitie, that for meat, so little a thing, for the knot of a straw, a Ceremonie, thou slay thy brother, for whom Christ died. v. 15. Where these reasons be, 1. It is uncharitable walking. 2. It is murther, slay not him. 3. It is contrary to Christ's love, who died for thy brother. 4. It maketh Religion and Christian libertie, to be evil spoken of, v. 16. 5. From the nature of these things, which are indifferent, these in which the Kingdom of God consisteth not, as Meat and Surplice, crossing, kneeling, &c. when they scandalize, ought to be omitted, as being against righteousness, and being sines of murther. 2. Against Peace, sines of contention, 3. Against joy of the Holy Ghost, making sad, and discouraging thy brother, in his Christian race, and he that serveth God in peace and righteousness, and joy is acceptable v. 18. 6. The use of things indifferent in case of scandal doth not to peace and edification, v. 19. 7. It is a destroying of the works of God v. 20. illustrated by a repeated precept, but the meat is clean; yea, but (faith Paul) it is evil, and so morally unclean to him that eateth with offence, v. 20. 8. Ab equo et bono, we are to doe good, but to eat and drink with the scandalizing of our brother, and to practice Ceremonies is not Good.

Propos. 10. The practicing of things indifferent, or Ceremonies for the very showing of the faith, that we have Christian libertie to practice, or not practice in the case of scandal, is not lawfull, v. 22. Let downe by a precept, Keep the faith of thy Christian libertie (in case of scandal) to thy selfe, and to God.

Propos. 11. In the use of things indifferent, we are to allow our selves, that is to have the approbation of our Conscience, that what we doe is lawfull, v. 22.

Propos. 12. He that practiseth indifferent things, with a doubting conscience, and not in faith, is meth, and is condemned, v. 23.

1 Cor. 6. v. 12 All things (indifferent) are lawfull in themselves, but they are not expedient, if we be brought under the power,
power or band of them by law. Ergo, in the means of wor-
ship, not onely must we see what is lawfull, but also what is
profitable and conducinge to the end. He reasoneth upon a given,
but not granted hypothesis, that Fornication is indifferent, as
the Gentiles taught, as we doe in the matter of Ceremonies.

1 Cor. 7. v. 6. But this I speake by permission, not of Command-
dement. Ergo in things, in which God hath granted us libertie, to
doe, or not to doe, permission hath place, not obliedging necessi-
tie, or penall lawes.

13 Proposition. There cannot be commanding Lawes in things
that are politickly good, or evill, according to the individuall
complexion, temperature, or gifts of singular men, to marry, or
not to marry, cannot be commanded, for where God looth, no
power on earth can bind. v. 33.

1 Cor. 8. v. 7. Paul condemneth them in the use of their liber-
tie. Christian, Howbeit there be not in every man this knowledge,
then that Rulers may make lawes in things indifferent, with-
out scandal, they must remove ignorance. 2. If there be but one
person weak (there is not in every man that knowledge) in
knowledge, a Law obliedging all, in things indifferent cannot
be made.

U. 8. There is a definition of a thing indifferent. It is a thing
that commendeth us not to God, which neither helpeth, nor hinde-
reth pietie, nor maketh a man better, or worse before God. Then
Ceremonies pretended to be for order, decencie, edification, to
stirre up the dull minde to spirituall duties, cannot be things in-
different.

Hence oberserve 1. The materials of worship, as linnen,
cloathes, habites, gestures may be in their physicall considera-
tion indifferent, but as applied by formulistes, they cannot be
indifferent, for in their use, kneeling appropriated to sacramen-
tall bread, linnen appropriated to the body of a Priest, while he
officiateth, cannot be but religious or prophane. 2. If God com-
mand gestures, he commandeth this gesture, hic et nunc. If in
generall, stealing be forbidden, then for Achan, to steal this
Babylonish garment, must be forbidden. 3. If seemeth to
have been after-noon with Henrie Leffy (a) or after cuppes,
when he faith, if Papistes and Professantes be two divers kindes
of

\[\text{(a)}\] Pretended Hen. Leffy, B shop of Dour autho-
ritie of the Church, p. 144.
of worshippers, then their actions of worship must be indifferent, as be their agents, for actions are distinguished by their objects and ends, Papists in kneeling worship their God of bread, we in kneeling at the Sacrament worship the true God. For when a Turk and a Christian doe both worship Dagon, it is the same Idolatrie, though Turcisme and Christianisme be different religions. Though kneeling to an Image, the similitude of God, and that same kneeling to Jehovah, represented in that similitude, Es.4:9. v.8. make one formal object; the Image the material, Jehovah the formal object, yet is it idolatrie. 4. Our circumstances of time and place, cannot properly be called indifferent, for they may be considered two ways. 1 Physically. 2 Religious. Physically. The Commandement injoyning a thing, injoyneth also time and place convenient, he that saith (sbo. shalt not kill) in that same very Commandement said (Cain, thou shalt not kill Abel, in this place of the field, at this time,) so to believe, and to believe in this time and place, falleth both under one, and the same Commandement; And it is true, the lawfulness of worship may be marred by bad circumstanciating of the worship. If one shall pray, when the Pastor doth preach; But circumstances must be convenient, and so commanded, and so not indifferent, but circumstances have no religious respect put on them by God, and therefore in that state have no roome in God's worship.

V.10. If any man see thee, who hast knowledge, sit at meat in the Idol's Temple shalt not the conscience of him that is weake, be emboldened, to eat these things that are offered to Idols. Hence a naked sight of that which is ordinarily exponed to be a communion with an idol, as kneeling religiously to bread is, must be a scandall. 2. The supposed knowledge of one, who faith, an Idol is nothing, but doth exeth his worship to God, when external gestures are used in an idolatrous way, doth not free the practise of such a worship, from scandall.

V.11.12.13. Scandalizing in eating things, otherwise poore and cleane. is a scandalizing of a weake brother, against the price of Christ's blood, &c. 1 Cor.10.

V.16.17.18. Communion in Rites and Cerimonies of a false worship, is a communion with the Idoll, and Satan.
V. 22. Though you keep your hearts to God, yet provoke the Lord to jealousy.

V. 23. Rulers are not to set up their own, in things indifferent.

V. 25. Things sacrificed to Idols, yet in no religious state, are clean meat, and may be eaten. Surplice on a Noblemans porter is no Mass habes, and so not scandalous.

29. 30. In things indifferent, I must abstaine from using my libertie, where I am in danger to be evill spoken of and that our liberty be called licentiousnesse.

Quest. 11.

Whether or no the Ceremonies and things indifferent commanded by humane authority be objects scandalous and what rules are to be observed in eschewing scandals.

Arminians object. That Ceremonies be not recent agents in giving scandal, but men do unprofitly take scandal, whereas innocent Ceremonies give none.

But observe that a scandal is given two ways. 1. Physically. An object be no passion, but it hath an action; so there is no scandal taken, but it is some way given. The Pharisees are scandalized at Christ's preaching. The preached Word had some influence on their corruption to scandalize it, but physically, not morally; but sinful and inordinate actions, scandalize morally by contributing, a moral influence culpably to the scandalizing of others. Hence the question is, wherein standeth this moral and culpable influence.

The objects in Generall from whence commeth scandal be such. 1. Things good. 2. Things sinfull and evill. 3. Things indifferent, inordinatly, or unreasonabally done. 4. Things that have appearance of evil.

A thing good of it selfe is not scandalous, but there be two Good things. 1. Some simply necessary, as to love God, not to swale, not to forswear, these be never scandalous. 2. Some
Good duties positive of affirmative precepts, as not necessarie, 
ye & nunc, may be omitted to eschew scandal. School-men 
move a question. If it be lawfull to omit works commanded 
of God, or of the law of nature to eschew the scandal of our 
brethren? I answer, a naturall commandement to eschew the 
scandalizing of my brother, obliedgeth in some Circumstances, 
but not simply, for it obliedgeth not when there occurreth a 
Commandement naturall of greater obligation, whether it be 
naturall or necessarie, if I cannot decline the transgression of the 
律 of God, in the declining of scandalizing my brother. Cer- 
tainly the Commandement of not scandalizing doth not ob- 
liedge, for I am more obliedged to have a care of my owne sal- 
vation, then of my brothers, and so to prevent my owne sinnes, 
then the sinning of my brother: yet Caesar is paribus, if all other 
things be alike, as (a) Becanus faith. A naturall command, 
such as is, (not to scandalize) that is, (not to commit soule- 
murther) doth oblige more, then a positive Commandement, 
as to heare the Word hie & nunc: I am obliedged hie & nunc, 
to omit hearing of the Word, to keep my brother from killing 
himselfe, and to preserve my brothers temporall life, because 
the Lord will have mercie, and not sacrifice. Though I be not 
obliedged universally to omit the hearing of the Word, and re- 
cieving of the Sacraments, to eschew the scandal of my bro- 
ther. 2. Sinnes publickly committed, are of their owne nature 
culpably scandalous.

3. In things indifferent, from whence ariseth a Scandal 
there be two things. 1. The use of the thing it selfe. 2. The use 
of it, with the non necessitie of existance in it. As the caufey 
stones are not scandalous, if any fall on them, nor the layer of 
the caufey to be blamed therefore, because caufey stones be ne- 
cessarie, but if any lay an huge block in the way, which hath 
no necessarie use there, he who doth so is the cause of the fall; be- 
cause he contributeth to the fall, that which is the occasion, and 
so the cause of the fall, for every occasion is a certaine cause. 
3. Because he contributeth such an occasion as hath no morall 
necessitie of existance, so the brazen Serpent having lost its 
vermute of curing and being adored as God, is formally a scanda- 
lous object, and the Prince suffering that to remaine, when it is
not necessary, and withall occasioneth the idolatry of many, doth culpably scandalize, and so these who for sole will commandeth such things as the worship of God may want, do also scandalize. They object, Christ might have healed on another day, then the Lords. Ergo, the non-necessary maketh not the object formally scandalous, nor doth the contributor thereof culpably scandalize.

Answer. That Christ should cure on the Sabbath, was morally necessary. 1. If it were but from his own will, but man's will cannot make things necessary. 2. It was necessary to shew, that the Son of man was Lord of the Sabbath. 3. That the Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. 4. To shew, that works of mercy are to be preferred to works of Ceremonies, and that God loveth mercy, rather than sacrifice.

When the duty is only possible, and the good less necessary, than the good of non-scandalizing, then we are not, for hope of a possible duty, and less necessary, to doe that from whence a Scandal doth arise. So it was not lawfull for Paul to take Stipend, which should have hindered the promoting of the Gospel, though he might have employed that Stipend upon charitable uses, because that Charity was a duty only possible, and incomparably less necessary, then the promoting of the Gospel. So 1 Cor 6.7. Why suffer ye not rather losse? yet by that suffering losse, they were lesse able for works of Charity, and to provide for their Familie and Children, but the gaine was temporall, and not to be compared with a good name upon Christian religion, which was flander'd by heathen, when they went to law, Christian against Christian, before an Heathen Judge.

The fourth scandalous object, is that which hath appearance of evil. Not every thing is such, for good hath the appearance of evil. (b) Paebodio to elude this, sheweth a number of things which have appearance of evil, but are good, and he nameth among them, Hushaies abiding with Absalom in his conspiracies, which was plain dissimulation, but that properly hath appearance of evil. 1. Qued plurumaj fìs malo fine, as the Schoolemen define it, that which ordinarily is done for an evil end, as
Rules, Considerable

1. That which is good in itself, yet because of the circumstances is exposed to superficial glory, is to pray in the streets, ordinarily exposed to be for this end, to be seen of men. Those who expose that place, 1 Thess. 5. Abstain from all appearance of evil, and be not unwise from that which becometh a vessel of God, of a pure conscience, and of the confidence, and judgment of the doer, only of doctrine reach not the Apostle's mind. For to sit at the Idols' table, bow to an image, and keep the heart to God, are out of all appearance of evil forbidden in the text, yet are they not doctrine, seeming always to the judgment of the practioners. They object, so looks to the heavens and suns. May have appearance of praying to the suns and heavens, for the external facts, no more could be done by a person adoring the sun. Ergo, such appearances cannot be scandalous objects. Answer: Lifting up of the eyes in prayer, are natural adorations, and expressions of the elevation of the heart, required in prayer, Psal. 25. v. 1. and so commonly exposed by all nations, and therefore cannot be appearances of evil. Hence these rules.

II. Hence all be strong, in whose presence I practice, a thing indifferent, yet if it have no necessity, no aptitude to edify, and have only all its goodness from the will of commanders, in practicing, I scandalize. 1. Because the strong are apt to him, and to apt to be scandalized, and the action's idle, and not reasonable, having no other reason, but the mere will of Rulers. 2. If I probably know my practice, shall come to the knowledge of these, who shall be scandalized, I scandalize them in such an action.

III. Rule. Though the practice of things indifferent, having some necessity, be lawful, as 1 Cor. 10. 27. Eat what is set before you, asking no question, for conscience sake. Yet the faith and confidence of things indifferent, is never indifferent, we are never to judge a thing indifferent, necessary, nor a thing necessary, indifferent, and practice in that judgement, so erroneous is it, and not of faith, Rom. 14. v. 22.

III Rule. An universal omission of good, of obeying affirmative precepts, for the eschewing of scandal, cannot be lawful: for it is a necessary for my salvation to obey affirmative pre-
in declining of Scandal.

cepts, though not in all differences of time. In this meaning (a) Augustine said, We are not so abstained from good works, (b) he meaneth a total abstinence for any scandal. And, (c) Sullian good offends not, save a wicked minde. But sometime an obedience to an affirmative precept, hic & nonc pro quocunque scandalo, may be omitted, when we see that from the doing thereof, the ignorant and weak will commit great sinnes. So (c) Aquinas, (d) Bannes. (e) Sancius, for affirmative precepts of the law of nature (f) Bannes) must sometime be omitted, for the offending of scandal, for they do not obliadge, but when, and after such a manner, as is convenient.

V. Rule. To doe any good action, or lawfull, or indifferent, when I probably foresee a scandal will follow, is an active scandal, for I preferre my owne will, to my brothers salvation (g) Antoninus, and (h) Navarræs, and therefore faith (i) Antoninus; A virgin going abroad, without just necessitie, where her beantie shall be a snare to young men, or to goe out upon a necessary cause with a ambitious attire, is an active scandal, her feet abideth not in her house, faith (k) Solomon. And (l) Navarræs, faith. It is to sinn mortally and (m) Silvester faith, If the Popes commandement doe but smell of venial sinn, and if by giving audience thereunto, it be presumed that the state of the Church shall be troubled, or a scandal shall arise, though the commandement goe out under the paine of Excommunication, it is not to bee obeyed. (o) Vasquez, and

...
Rules considerable in decaying Scandal.

(p) Suarez de trip. vir. Theol. disp. 10. De Scandalo.

fed. 4. Res indifterentias vendeare, dote, et alios qui proponere, quando presciatur, alterum sit male usitatum, est scandalum commitere.

(q) Antoninus. p. 107. cap. 4.

§ 4.

(r) Silvester, verbo scandalum q. 2.

(f) Corduba fam. q. 5. fol. 30.

(i) Metiva i. cap. 74. n. 6. ad 3. fol. 677.

(u) Sanchez in Decal. 1. lib. 1. cap. 6. nu. 16.

(p) Suarez, say, to sell, gift, or dispose of any things indifferent, when we foresee they shall abuse them, is to commit the sin of actively scandalizing. Yea, the form of an Idol, though he never adore it, doth highly scandalize and (q) Antoninus (r) Silvester, (f) Corduba, (i) Metiva, (u) the Jesuit Zanches teach, That to contribute to that which we see shall induce any to sin, is to be guilty of scandalizing. And the reasons be these; 1. We are not to preferre our will to the salvation of our brother. 2. Things lesse necessarie, then our brothers salvation, in that case become not necessarie, and so fruitlesse and idle. 3. Charitie infers errei, that we hinder so far as we can, the ruin of our brothers soul, Scandal is spirituall homicide. 4. To contribute any morall help, and influence to our brothers fall, and soul ruine, is to be necessarie to his sinne. Hence Ceremonies and things not necessarie to salvation, may be omitted altogether in their specialities, when the practising of them doth scandalize, and so though kneeling in Gods worshaip cannot well be universally omitted, yet kneeling appropriate to such an act of worship may be omitted, and ought to be omitted, if it scandalize, and Ceremonies which scandalize universally, seeing they are not in their very kinde necessarie to salvation, are to be abolished.

Yet I may add one caution here. To contribute helpe for the doing of that, which of it selfe is necessarie, which I know, an other in respect of humane frailtie, will abuse to sinne is no active scandal. So to lay hands on a qualified Pastor is not sinne, though I foresee through humane frailtie, he will abuse his power in some things to sinne. So, for an Artificer to make swords, though he know some shall abuse them to murthering the innocent, is no scandalous work. I take not on me to prescribe rules for eschewing scandal in all occurrences of providence. The godly learned can see more then I can doe in this matter, where love should be warie to lay a straw in the way of any weake traveller.
Quest. III.

Whether or no we may deny obedience to the laws of our Superiours, for feare of Scandal caus'd to be taken.

His is not my question, but a question of the Doctors of Aberdeen, yet it conduceth for the times, and because one of the learnedest of these Doctors did agitate the question of scandal with me in private, before the writing of that book, I desire liberty to vindicate my selfe, by discussing two chapters of this purpose.

And first the question seemeth to me many ways vaine.
1. They ask about denyall of obedience, which is not proved, but presumed to be obedience. 2. They presume that the Masters, the Lord Prelates of Perth faction are our Superiours, by no law of God, or our Church was ever any superioritie conferred upon them. 3. They say for scandal caus'd to be taken: if they meane that there be no just reason indeed why any should take scandal, they say nothing against us, for we thinke to take scandal, is to sinne, if they know any just reason or cause of sinne, except Satan and mens free-will, we shall be taught of them. If they mean scandalously taken, that is, not culpably given by the practisers of Ceremonies, this is a Chimera, and to us no question, for we are not to deny obedience to lawfull lawes, for eschewing scandal, when obeyers doe give no cause culpably of scandal, they would have formed the question to our reverend and learned Brethren if they had dealt plainly. Whether or no, we may desist from practising Ceremonies, which, setting aside the law of Superiours, are indifferent, when from the practising of them ariseth the ruined of many soules, for whom Christ died. In things necessarie commanded and forbidden of God, we cannot deny obedience, but the matter of the lawes is silenced in the question to deceive the reader.

Dupyers.
Duplyers.

If the Scandal arising from the Articles of Perth come, ex conditione operis, from the very enormitie in those Articles, then are we to forbeare these Articles ever, and not onely while they be tried in a lawfull Assembly for such are either sinne, or have a manifest show of sinne. But if the Scandal arise not from the Articles themselves, but from malice or weaknesse, we deny that we are totally to abstaine from obedience to lawfull Superiours, for eschewing Scandal causfully taken, and we marvell from whence ye have learned this strange and harsh doctrine.

Answ. 1. Your enumeration is weake, for we know no Scandal justly taken, but proceeding from both these, weaknesse or wickednesse of nature, is the neerest cause of all Scandal taken, because it is the cause of all sinne, and to be scandalized is sinne. Also it is here taken from the enormitie of the deed, in that practising of things indifferent, if a scandal taken either weakly or maliciously thence arise, there is enormitie in the deed, yet toall abstinence is not hence concluded, because.

Answ. 2. You define to us, or rather divine, that then there is an irregularitie in the fact that justly scandalizeth, when either the fact is a sinne, or then hath a manifest shew of sinne. And we wonder where you learned this strange Divinitie, for 1 Cor.10:27. Toeat meat as a Feast that you are invited unto, is neither sinne, because v.23, 25. it is lawfull: The earth is the Lords, nor is it such as hath a manifest shew of sinne, as all having sense knoweth. One of your prime Doctors defined to me, thele only have manifest appearance of sinne, Quaplerumg, sunt malle sine, which for the most part are done for an evil end, such as is to lye in bed with another mans wife, to kneele before an Idoll. The former, in the exposition of all is done for adulterie, the latter for Idolatrie. I am sure to eat meats at an Insidels feast, is not of that nature which Diuines furtherly for an evill end, it is ordinarily done to refresh nature, and to Glace it, which hath no manifest shew of sinne, and yet if there be a weake one beside, who faith, that meat is offered
The Doctors of Aberdeen hold, that

1. If information and light given to beware of the scandal of Ceremonies and things indifferent, can make them the lawful object of Church Canons, D. Forbes and other say so. But 1. This is that which Papists say to our Divines, who object that images are pits and snares to Idolatry. This danger (faith (a) Ioannes de Lugo) the Popes Professor at Rome, is easily prevented by the instruction and care of Prelates, who are to teach, that images have no dignity of themselves, but only from the samplers. And so (b) Bellarm. the Jesuit, (c) Vasquez. (d) Elinus. (e) The Council of Magounzine helpeth the matter. Let our Pastours (say they) carefully teach the people, that images are not set up, that we should adore them, but that they should be helps for our memorie. 2. Paul gave strong reasons for lawfulness of days, and meats, that weak Jews should not be scandalized at the eating thereof, yet he would neither pass them in a Church Canon, nor practise them himself, while the whole standeth, 1 Cor. 13. yea, he proveth Rom. 14. by eight strong Arguments, that it was not lawful to practise them. Ergo, he presupposeth that information of Pastours should not take away the scandal of the weak, as Rom. 14. 14. There is nothing unclean of itself. Ergo, it is lawful to eat all meats, 1 Cor. 10. 26. The earth is the Lords, Ergo, eat what is set before you, v. 23. all things are lawful, and yet he saith, eat not, give no offence, if meat offend my brother, I will not eat to the world's end. 1 Cor. 8. 13. 3. This vain argument presupposeth that the want of literal information, is the adequate cause of falling in scandal, a vain reason. Peter actively and culpably scandalized Christ in his carnall counsel, Master, pity thy selfe, Mar. 16. 21. 22. 23. yet Christ was sufficiently enlightened, that he could not be scandalized. But certaine it is, that the will and depraved inclination is the cause why we fall in scandal, even when we know that others who publickly sinne, doth sinne, and that we should not be scandalized. Now no reason in Pastours preaching, or in Church-Canon can take away the inclination, mediaciter instituatur. (d) Elinus, lib. 3. dif. 36. sect. 7. Ecclesia diligenter & doctrina, & operes distinguat inter hominem Deo proprium, & eum qui Divinis ac Deo amicitia humanibus interiurit. (e) Concil. Quintum, cap. 41. Pastores nostri populum accurate mouentes, imagines non ad id propinqui, ut eas adoremus... Sed ut per imagines recordemos.
The Doctors of Aberdeen bold, that
dall, that we disclaim the authority of these laws. 2. The Doctors will have us believe, upon the sole light of their conference, n. 36. that they think the Ceremonies lawful and expedient. But for us, they will not credit us in that, but out of malice we are scandalized, and not out of weakness:

Duplyers n. 39. 4. arg.

Fourthly. We ought not for eschewing scandall causelly taken, to injure or offend any man, by denying to him, what which is due to him, and therefore we ought not, for eschewing scandall causelly taken, to offend and injure our Superiours. The Antecedent is proved, for if a man be excommunicated, shall his wife, children, and servants flee his company, and so deny these duties which they owe to him, for fear that others be scandalized? and if we may not for scandall causelly taken abstaine from these duties, that we owe to private persons, farre lesse may we abstaine from obedience, which we owe to Superiours, &c.

Answer. Against the Law of disputing, you lay downe a ground, which is a principall part of the question that is practising these Ceremonies be obedience due to Superiours, and none practising for a time an injuring of Superiours in their due, though God's affirmative precepts be omitted for a time, as the not hearing the Word, the not receiving the Sacraments, in case of Scandall, God's due is not taken from him. If you will be more zealous for the honour of Prelates and men, then for the honour of God. Answer the Argument your selfe: I am not to reprove a scorner because of the scandall, he shall but trample, as a law, upon any word of reproof; yet the scandall were causelly taken if we should doe so. The good word of God should furnish no just cause to him, yet am I not taking from God his due, and your base word, that this is disobedience to Superiours, not to practice Pearth Ceremonies is not enough to us. 2. Your probation is weak. That children and wife keep company with the Excommunicate father, is a commandement of the law of nature, and God's necessary law, and to deny this to an husband and father is such a sinne, as the eschewing of a scandall can never legitimate, but I hope kneeling to Bread, and Crossing, and Surplice (commanded in our Canons and Service-book) are at
our Rulers may command to lay a Scandal before others.

the best commanded by a positive law, and not commanded in
the law of nature, and so very unlike to natural duties that
wife and children owe to father and husband. 3. I retort this
Argument. We may not wrong men in that which is their due.
Ergo, We may not wrong God in his due, but it is his due;
(Murthred not him for whom Christ died. Practise not Ceremonies
before the weak who shall be scandalized thereby.)

Duplyers 5. a q u. n. 40.

What is the thing be commanded by the Civill Magistrate under
paine of death, and by Ecclesiastical authority under paine of Ex-
communication shall we for feare of scandal causelly taken, which
may be removed by information, or for the scandal of the malici-
ous, abstaine from a thing lawfull and expedient enjoyned by au-
thoritie, and incurre those grievous punishments of death, temporal
and spirittual? We believe your selves, who speak most of scandal,
would be loath to take such a yoke upon you.

Answer. The first part of this Argument is Logick from a
fore skinne; That which we are bidden doe under paine of
death, that we must doe, the just Logick of the King of Babylon,
to prove it is lawfull to worship the Kings golden Image, Dan. 3.
15. I have scarce heard Papists for shame presse to conclude the
equity and lawfulness of a Law, from the penaltie of a Law.
Suffering (as your Jesuits and Arminians teach you,) falleth
not under Free-will, and is not culpably evil, nor is Excom-
munication except you be Papists, death of the soule, when the
cause of Excommunication is not just, and deserveth no censure,
but it may be some of you think (Mr. Sibbald I know doth it)
that Nazarites, and their Gregories said true, that unjust Excom-
munication is valid, and to be feared: but if this argument (as I
see not head nor feet in it) be founded upon the lawfulness and
expedience of Ceremonies commanded, then not to practice
them at all. So first they be lawfull. 2 Expeidient. 3 Comman-
ded by lawfull authority, is sinne, and all sinne is a death of the
soule, and then you may put your Argument from grievous
punishments of body and soule in your pocket, for it is of no use
here, for whether punishment Civill or Ecclesiasticall follow up-
on disobedience to Superiours, it is sinne. 3. That none of us
would
The Doctors of Aberdeen hold, that

would die or be Excommunicated for eschewing Scandal, is no

good argument, though many have suffered as hard as death,
banishment, and proscription of all, and Excommunication al-
do. But the truth is, you might have said; Shall we incure for
scandal the losse of our stipends, and (one faire before the wind;
qualification) for a Bishoprick?

Duplyers 6.arg. pag.64. n.41.

Sixthly, The denying of obedience to the lawfull commandments
of our Superiors is forbidden in the first Commandement, and con-
sequencely it is sinne; Shall we then for a scandal carelessly taken,
deny obedience to our Superiors, and so incure the guiltines of
sinne? To commonly answer to this, that the negative part of
the first Commandement, which forbiddeth the resifting of the power,
Rom. 13.2. is to be understood with the exception of the case of any
scandal taken by others. For if we say (say ye.) that any may, or
will take offence, as the doing of that which is commanded by our
Superiors, we are not holden to obey them 42. But first, we ask,
what warrant ye have to say, that the negative part of the first
Commandement is to be understood with the exception of the case
of Scandal; more than other negative precepts in the second
Table?

Answer 1. To fill the field, an Argument already answered,
is brought again to make the figure of six up. The refusall of the
Ceremonies till they be tryed in a lawfull Assembly, is not for-
bidden in the first Commandement, prove that, and take it with
you. 2. You bring an Answer as commonly given by us, that is
neither ours, commonly, nor rarely, but it is good, build a straw-
castle, and you may soon cast a fire-ball at it, and blow it up.
We never taught that the negative part of the first Command-
ment is to be understood with the exception of the case of any
scandal taken by others. For this includeth all scandals, both
passive and active. Who of ours ever dreamed such a thing, if
Superiours command, what God commandeth before them, doe
we teach that, because others take scandal at that Command,
therefore we are not holden to obey? that is scandal taken, not
given. We reach no such thing. Rulers command to honour
father and mother, if any take offence at this commandement.
and obedience to either the affirmative or negative part of it, we
are not to esteeme that scandall the weight of a feather, the
Commandement obliedgeth. But this we teach, if when the
matter of the Commandement of Rulers is indifferent, as you
plead Ceremonies to be, if from obeying of these any weake or
wicked be scandalized, then the Rulers doe command spirituall
murther, and then their commandement is no commandement,
nor is it the fift Commandement. It is just like this, Thou shalt not
deserue obedience to your Rulers, commanding you to rubbe your
beards when you come to the Church, or to draw a cross in the
side of thy champaign, when one is above a baptized infant for dead, though
many soules, by obedience to those Commandements, be induc'd to
deepe Purgerie; many be made sad, thinking jealous Rulers, love
papist toyes better then the simplicitie of the Gospel. Now such
is the Commandements of Pearch articles, and these suffer no
exceptions, for we judge them no Commandements at all, and
if any such be injoyned upon pretence of any other of the nine
Commandements, we hold them to be impious commande-
ments, and no obedience to be given to them at all. So if ac-
cording to the fift Commandement, and the eyen and eight,
Rulers command to run Carts amongst a multitude of young
Children, whence killing of some might fall out; If they
should command a young man, and a faire virgin to chamber
together, and command Paul in the case he was at Corinth to
take stipend, though it should hinder the progress of the Gos-
pell, as 2 Cor. 9.23, all these were to command culpable scan-
dalls, and were unlawfull, as the Canons of Pearch faction.
3. You say, the negative part of the fift Commandement forbid-
ing the refisting of the power, Rom. 13.2, by us, is to be under-
stood, with exception of the case of scandall taken, whereby
you insinuate, that not to obey the acts of Pearch Assembly, is
a refisting of the power of Rulers, Rom. 13.2. It is ignorantly
spoken, to refist every law of the Rulers, is not to refist his
power, when the lawes are such as commandeth scandall: then
by your own doctrine it is lawfull to flie when a Ruler unjustly
commandeth & persecuteth his subjects, pag. 3. n. 19. And to flie
I am not to refuse subjection to the Lawes of the Ruler, from
wholesome lawes, if we flie, yes, and to flie to, is to refist his lawes,
but I hope it is not to resist the power, for to resist the power, bringeth damnation and guiltiness before God. Rom. 13. 2. But to flee from his legall Citations, is to resist his lawes, but doth not, I hope, bring damnation before God, and smite upon the conscience, as you grant.

Duplyers n. 43.

Men are ready to stumble, and to be scandalized at our refusing obedience to the lawfull Commandements of our Superiors: for they will take occasion by our carriage, to doe that, unto which by nature they be most inclined, to wit, to vilipend Lawes and Authority.

Answer. If any stumble at our non-obedience to Pearth Articles, and thence be induced to vilipend Lawes and Authority, it is a scandal merely taken, no ways given, as is cleare, because they stumble at our obedience to God, in that we refuse to kill one for whom Christ died. 2. It is no ways true, that men are naturally inclined to vilipend Lawes in a matter indifferent, (as you hold Ceremonies to be) from whence ariseth Scandal, yea, we are by nature much bent to extoll and love lawes commanding soul-murther, and all lawes inductive to Poperie, which is but a maffe of carnall propositions of heterodox Divinitie, every way suitable to our flesh. The third exception is answered already, the fourth is to be discussed in the following Chapter.

Quest. IIII.

Whether the Precept of obedience to Superiors, or the precept of eschewing Scandal be more obligatorie?

Duplyers pag. 65. n. 43.

As of all, when a man is pembrortorily urged by his Superiors, to obey their lawfull Commandements, and in the meanes some feareth that if he doe the thing commanded by them, some, through weaknesse, shall be scandalized by his carriage; in this case he is not only in difficultie and strait, but midst the Commandement of men, and the Commandement
answer. 1. The question seems to make a collision of Commandments, as if God could command things contradictoriarwm, and certainly, if the not obeying of several Articles be a scandal, given as you say, it is, I shall undertake to prove, that the practice of these Ceremonies is a scandal given, and so it is not a seeming strait as you say, but a real strait by your doctrine. There be cases wherein, whether Rulers command things, or command the contrary, a passive scandal doth arise, but because a passive scandal, is the same of the scandal taker, and not of Rulers giving, the Church is not to regard it, as Matt., 11. 18. 19. The Jews are scandalized, at Christ's eating and drinking, and are scandalized at John the Baptist's not eating and drinking. But neither Christ, nor John do culpably give scandal. But there can be no such exigence of providence wherein non-practising of your commanded Ceremonies, is a given scandal, and the practising of them is also a given scandal. Because as (a) Barnes, and our owne (b) Amosius saith, There is not such a perplexity. 1. God should have brought a man then in some cases under an absolute necessity, by way of contradiction to sin, to murder his brother, whether he do such a thing, or not. (a) Twenty Jews are scandalized, Rom. 14. Because, 1. 3. You and such meats, which they conceive are for-
The Doctors of Aberdeen hold, that the wil of God's law. And twenty Christians are scandalized, because Paul eateth not such and such meats, then we suppose, and its very casual, for seeing, to be scandalized ariseth from the knowledge or ignorance of the minds, and divers men may have contrary opinions about one thing. Some thinke it unlawfull for Paul to eat, some thinke it unlawfull not to eat. Hence upon the use of a thing indifferent, twenty are scandalized, and upon the non-using of that same indifferent thing, twenty are also scandalized. What shall Paul doe in this strait? I answer, he taketh Rom. 14. 1 Cor. 8. the negative. I will not eat flesh, if meat offend my brother. Then the twenty that are scandalized by the non-practice of the thing indifferent, doe take scandal alone, whereas Paul giveth no scandal actively. Also, the other twenty who are scandalized by Paul his practice of the thing indifferent, are justly scandalized, & it is both a scandal taken, and active, and a scandal given and passive. Some object, but if either of the sides be indifferent, to wit, either to use a thing indifferent, or not to use it. If ten take offence at the use of it, and ten take offence at the non-use of it, there is a necessity of scandalizing either of the sides, for the twenty weake Christians are scandalized at Paul's abstinence from such meats, conceiving that he Judaizeth, whereas the Profession of his Christian libertie in eating would edifie them, and not scandalize them.

Answer. The use of a thing indifferent is not God's lawfull mean of edification. God hath appointed his Word, Workes, the holy and blamelesse profession of his children to edifie, and not the using of actions indifferent, yea, actions indifferent as they are such, and separated from necessitie, and moral reason, are not lawfull, and so the cessation from that action is lawfull and necessarie, and if the use scandalize, non-using of things indifferent, is not indifferent, but necessarie, as non-scandalizing and negative precepts alwayes binding, abstinence, with Paul is necessarie. It is vaine that Psychologie faileth, that Peter was Gal. 2, in danger of a double scandal, for (saith he) he was in danger to scandalize the Gentiles, in refusing their company, as if they had beene no brethren, which was the greater scandal, and in danger to scandalize the Jewes in eating with the Gentiles, which was a lesse.
our Rulers may legittimat the murther of scandall.

But I answer, Paul did not then justify rebuke his Judaizing, Galat. 2. which doth gratifie Baronius, Bellarmine, and Papias, who will have Peter, an Apostle, who could not err. 2. It should follow that Paul rebuked Peter, because that of two evils of sinne, he chose to commit the lesser sinne. Whereas of two evils of sinne, neither is to be chosen. One might then lawfully commit fornication to be free of adultery, and so fornication should be lawful, which is absurd. And Paul should call Gal. 2.14. it upright walking according to the truth of the Gospel to choose a lesser sin. 3. Peter by eating with the Gentiles, should not have scandalized the Jews, but edified them, in shewing the Christian libertie they had in Christ, as is clear, v. 5. To whom we gave no subjection, no not for an hour (by practising Jewish Ceremonies) that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you.

Duplyers pag. 66:

It is certain we are freed from one of these precepts, for God's precepts are not repugnant one to another. To commonly say, the precept of obedience to human authority, must give place to the precept of eschewing Scandal, though it be causally taken, because the command of a Superiour cannot make that fact to be free of scandal, which otherwise would be scandalous. But it is certain, that (laying aside the case of scandal) to deny obedience to the ordinance of our Superiours, injoying and peremptorily requiring of us, things lawful and expedient, is really the sinne of disobedience. We will say, that the scandal of weake brethren, may make that fact or omission, not to be disobedience, which otherwise would be disobedience; because we ought not for the Commandement of man, doe that whereby our weake brother may be offended: and so the precept of obedience bindeth not, when offence of a weake brother may be feared. On the contrary we say, that the lawfull commandement of Superiours, may make that scandal of our weake brethren, not to be imputed unto us, which otherwise would be imputed unto us, as a matter of our guiltinesse. No scandal of weake brethren causely taken, can make that fact, not to be the sinne of disobedience, which otherwise, that is extra casum scandalis, if it were not in the
The Doctors of Aberdeen hold, that the will of

case of scandal, would be the sinne of disobedience.

Answer. 1. This is right downe worke. But 1. I Answer, Both the precepts are not obligatorie, you say true. We commonly say (faith the Doctors) that the precept of obedience to humane authority, must give place to the precept of eschewing scandal, although it be causelie taken. We say not that Commonly, nor at all, if by Scandal causelie taken, you mean scandal passively, onely, taken, and not given, for we are not to regard such scandals. But here the scandal is given in that, we must practice base Ceremonies, indifferent knots of straws for mens pleasure, though from thence many soules for whom Christ died, be destroyed. 2. It is good reason that the precept of obedience to humane authority in things which you call indifferent, and might well be sent away to Rome (were it not the Lord Prelates pleasure to command them, for their owne carnall ends) should yeild and be gone, and lose all obligatorie power, because it is but a positive precept, and 2. affirmative, that obliedgeth not ad semper, as Cross, kneele, weare Surplice. And 3. In a thing indifferent, and that this Divine Commandement of God, (scandalize not) (will not one redeemed by Christ) should stand in force. 1. Because it is a naturall precept. 2. It is negative, and obliedgeth eternally. 3. It is of a necessarie matter, because no man slayer but his life eternal, 1 Th. 3. 15. But our Doctors will have the Commandements positive of men to stand, and the Commandements of God, which are expressly of the law of nature to fall before their Dagon, and to lose all obligatorie power, whereas Gods owne positive law yeildeth, and looth obligatorie power, when Gods naturall Commandement of mercy commeth in competition with it, as is cleare as the noon-day, in David famishing, who eat the Show-bread, which by a positive law, was not lawfull to any save the Priests only, to eat, yet must mans law stand, and Gods law of nature fall, at the pleasure of these Doctors. 3. Wee say justly, you erre in saying it is real disobedience to deny obedience to the ordinance of Superiours, when the matter of their law is indifferent, and when it is scandalous, and obedience cannot be given to it, but by slaying him for whom Christ died, yea to give obedience to Superiours in that case, is real murthering of soules, and real disobedience to God.
God. Yea, and if there be murthering of a weake brother in the fact, it cannot come under the compasse of the matter of an humane law, and the Scandal maketh it no obedience to men, but disobedience to God. 4. You retort bravely, but Popishly, the argument back upon us; But we bring our argument from the law of Nature (Thou shalt not murther, nor scandalize) and we bring it not so much against the obedience to the Commandement of Superiours, as against the law and Commandement of Superiours, and this Argument is against the Ceremonies, as if they had not been commanded, and as they were before the Assembly of Pearth, and therefore the consideration of a lawfull Commandement to take away the scandal, is not to any purpose. And so 5. I may invite Papists, Jesuists, and all the Patrons of the Pope, to thanke you, and kiss your pen, for these words we say that the lawfull Commandement of Superiours (of Prelates commanding things indifferent) may make that scandal of our weake brethren not to be imputed unto us, which otherwise would be imputed unto us, as a (c) Bellarm. matter of our guiltiness. What ever (my brethren) may be contra Barcla. imputed to you otherwise, & before the law of Pearth Assembly cap.31. In bono was made, as the matter of your guiltiness, was your sinne, for nothing can be imputed to Men or Angels, as guiltiness, but sin. (Pope) potestatem faciendi de peccato non peccatum & de non peccato peccatum. But if the Commandements of Prelates may make that not to be imputed to you, which otherwise and before, or without that law of Superiours, would have been imputed as the matter of your guiltiness, then the law of Superiours and Prelates may make that, which without that law, would have been sinned to (d) Bellar. de Romano Pontif. l.4.cap 5. (c) Bellarm. in Recognitionibus. Leguit donec, the Church should be obliged to believe virtue to be vice, and vice to be virtue. But much good doe it you, Masters of Arts. Yet Bellarmine in his recognitions, faith not so much of his great Pope-Prelate, as you say of your little Prelates, for (e) he will not give the foresaid power to the Pope, but in doubt-
some actes, and in all actes of positive lawes about fasting, you give
to Prelates more, to wit, that their commading will, may make
sinees forbidden in the law of nature, to be not imputed, as the
matter of our guiltinesse, and to be no sinees; We cannot want
dispensations and indulgences at home, ere it be long, if happily
we pay well for them.

Yet (f) Bernard will not have the Popes commandeiment to make that which is simply evil to be lawfull. (g) The Popes
pleasure make not things good (faith Tolet) yes, a subject (faith
(b) Alphonse de Castro) may without sinne contemne the law of
the Superiors, judging it to be evil, and contrary to reason.

But I reason thus; It is the incommunicable power of the
Supreme Law-giver to make the killing of Isaac, which other-
wayes would have been imputed to Abraham as a matter of guilt-
inesse, and crueltie, to be no sinne. Ergo, Prelates have not
power to make an act of soul-murther, to be no sinne, to scand-
dalize a weake brother is to destroy him, for whom Christ died,
Rom. 14. v. 15. 1 Cor. 8. v. 1, yes, and by the same law Rulers
may make an act of Adulterie, an act of Chastitie, an act of
lying, an act of truth speaking.

2. If Rulers, even the Apostle Paul, be tyed by the law of
Nature, to Charitie to their brethren, as Rom. 14. 15. Not to slay
him for whom Christ died, not to seekes their owne things, but the
good of their brethren, 1 Cor. 10. 24. Not to eat things sacrificed
to idols, before the weake, v. 29. To doe all for the glory of God,
v. 32. Then is it sinne in the Ruler himselfe to scandalize the
weake. Ergo, Rulers cannot command to others that as obe-
dience, they cannot doe themselves without prodigious
doctrine to God. What Paul forbiddeth in Canonical Scrip-
ture as murther, that he cannot command in Church Canon as
obedience Canonical to Superiours.

3. Prelates shall have immediate Dominion over our con-
sciences to bind us to obedience by doing acts that otherwise
should be imputed to us as the matter of our guiltinesse; and be-
cause the same power that bindeth the conscience, may also
loose, so they may dispense with all the ten Commandements,
and coyne to us a new Decalogue, and a new Gospell. They
may legitimate murthers, paricides, and illegitimate Godlinesse.
our Rulers, may legitimat themurther of Scandall.

and rightewousnesse and sobriettie, by this Divinitie.

4. That must be false (It is better to obey God nor man, A.6. 5.) but to abitone from scandalizing a weake brother, is an act of obedience to the sixt Commandement. Ergo, the contrary cannot be done at the command of Prelates. 6. Gods positive lawes yeildeth (Thou shalt not kill) to wit to the law of nature. Da-vid may eat shew bread, when he is famishing. Ergo, the Prelates lawe farre more must yeild to the sixt Commandement (thou shalt not scandalize, nor kill the soule of him for whom Christ died.) 7. Rulers must all be infallible law-makers. 8. Rulers might command bodilie murther, and it should not be murther, they may command to digge pits in the way of Travellers, to marry with Infidels, to send abroad a goanne Ox, to give knives to little children.

They object. A Master, a father, may command a servant and a son to do that, which if the servant or son refuse to do, their disobedience scandalizeth. And againe, a Master, a Father, may command the contrary, and if they disobey, they scandalize culpably. Ergo, the commanding will of a Master and a Father, and farre more of publick Rulers, may make that to be active scandall, which is no active scandall. A Carpenter may command his servant to remove a tree from the East end of his house, to the West end, and againe, he may for his sole will, to try his servants obedience command him to remove it againe to the East end of his house.

Answer. 1. The Master, Father, Carpenter, command either these things as artificiall agents, from reason of art, and then the question is not touched, for in scandalls men are considered, as morall agents, or they command them as morall agents, and that either for their sole will and pleasure, and so they be idle and unreasonable actions, and cannot be lawfull commandements, and so are they scandalous both to Commanders and obeyers, but they may well command upon just reasons, that which if servants and sons obey they may command the contrary, when now contrary reasons makes it lawfull and expedient, and if servants and sons obey Scandall, but here the change is not from the will and authority of the Commanders, but from
are changed, so that which is an active scandal at some
time,
the contrary of it may be an active scandal at another time,
as
in the case, Rom. 14. To eat meats before the weak, which
they conceive to be forbidden, by God's law, is to flay him for
whom Christ died, and an active scandal, because then the Ce-
remories were mortal and indifferent, nothing essentially con-
stituted an active and a given scandal, but these two; 1. That
it may be left undone, as the author of the course of conformitie,
(a) faith well out of Hierommuws, without hating of the truth
of a sound life, and a sound faith and righteousness. 2. If upon
the practice of a thing indifferent, and not necessarie, any of the
foresaid three ways, we see some shall be scandalized, though
they take scandal upon an unjust ground, it is an active scanda-
dall, as to eat such meats before the weak, Rom. 14. is in an-
other time and case, as Galat. 2. when the Ceremonies are now
deadly, and upon just reasons not necessarie, the practising
(I say) of the same, is an active scandal, and so if any be scanda-

dalized at the eating, Rom. 14. it is scandal both taken, and also
culpably given, and if any be scandalized at the not eating, as
the case is, Galat. 2. That is only a passive scandal, and so not
given, because the times of the expiring of the dutie of Cer-
monies, and the full promulgation of the Gospell, varieth the
case now, and the sole will of Rulers maketh not the change;
So if any offer Incense to the Brazen Serpent, so long as it hath
verue, as God's ordinance to cure the stinged persons, he is scanda-

dalized by a passive scandal only, for God's institution maketh
it now the necessary ordinance of God. And the Magistrates suf-
fering of the Brazen Serpent to remaine now, is no active scanda-
dall, and the passive scandal is only taken away, by information,
and the sound exponing of the right use of a necessary ordi-

cinance of God. But after that the Brazen Serpent loseth its
verue, and is not now an ordinance of God necessarie, if any
burne Incense to it, these who are by authoritie obliged to
remove it, and doth not remove it, they doe morally and culpa-
bly scandalize.

Hence we see it is foolish and vaine, that some say, such as

(c) Hooker of
Ecclef. Politic.,
l.4. pag. 157.
(d) D. Forbes in
Iren. lib.2. c.20.
(n.19.
(c) Sandersons
Sermon, Rom.
14. pag. 22. 23.
(f) Lordes
his defense of
Pearth Assemb.
in Prefut Pay-

Rome
Rome and Corinth: the Church had not past her determination upon eating, and not eating, nor made any Church laws upon these things indifferent, and therefore to eat, or not to eat, were matters of every private man's choice; but it is not the like case with our Ceremonies, for they remain no longer indifferent, but are necessary to us, after that the Church hath now made a commanding law upon them, and so the scandal that ariseth from our due of obedience, to lawful authority, is taken, and not given.

I answer, it is most false, that eating and not eating, in case of scandal was under no law in the Church of Rome and Corinth. For these most indifferent acts in their use, and cloathed with their circumstances, when, where, and before what persons, were under the unalterable law of nature, as (destroy not him, with thy meat for whom Christ died) a law which as the course of conformity faith well, cannot be dispensed with by no power but God's. And Paul proveth by stronger arguments, pag 146. to eat in the case of scandal was not indifferent, but simply evil. Then all the Prelates Canons on earth can afford, as Rom. 14. by eight Arguments, as we have seen, that it fighteth against Charity. v. 15. Now wallkest thou not charitably. 2. It is a destroying of him for whom Christ died, and so murder. 3. Contrary to Christ's love, who died for that weake brother. 4. It maketh Religion and Christian Libertie to be evil spoken of. v. 6. &c. It is a sham then to say, that eating, or not eating, was indifferent, because free from any ty of a Church Canon, being eating before a weake brother, is under the ty of unanswerable Arguments taken from the law of nature, and God's Canons written in the heart, forbidding under the pain of God's anathema, and curse, (heavier then the Church anathema,) that we should, for meat, destroy him for whom Christ died, and so are the Canon-makers, and Lords of Ceremonies under a curse, if they for crossing, kneeling, surplice, destroy him for whom Christ died, or command him to be destroyed, by the practice of Ceremonies. 3. If this be a good reason the Church of Rome, and Corinth might have made such Ceremonies as these.

Norwithstanding the eating of meats, which some suppose to be forbidden by God's law, be a killing of him for whom Christ died, and against Charity, and a reproaching of our Christian libertie,
The Doctors of Aberdeen hold, that the will of bards, ye it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and so us, the Prelates of Rome and Corinth, to command eating of such meats, before weake ones, for whom Christ died. But certainly Paul would never have commanded, in a Canon, that which he writeth in Canonicall Scripture, to be a murthering of him for whom Christ died, and that which he would not practive himself, to the worlds end, so long as it standeth in the case of indifferentie, as he faith of eating of fleshes, conceived by some weake ones to be against Gods law, 1 Cor. 8. v. last. The Pope himselfe would, nor dare in conscience, to practive any of his owne Canons, even though they were yet not Canonically commended or forbidden. Paul would not dare to put a law upon the Romans or Corinthians, to eat, or not to eat meats, before the weake, but commaneth not eating in the case of scandal. 4. Idolatry is ever idolatry, 

faith (a) the course of conformitie (c) and so scandal being sinne it cannot cease to be sinne, because superiours commaneth it. 5. Though Apostolick authoritie being meerly divine, should command that which is in it selfe murther, and was murther, before it be Canonically commanched, (which I think also is a false hypothesis) yet it shall never follow that humane authoritie, or Ecclesiastick authoritie can command scandal, which is spirituall murther. For if Ecclesiastick authoritie may command murther, they may command idolatry, for active scandalizing is as essentially murthering of one for whom Christ died, as to worship an idol, is essentially idolatry. Therefore Master Syderse pretended Bishop of Galloway being straitened with this argument, sayd, Though humane authoritie cannot inwrest the nature of things, or make spirituall murther, to be no murther, yet they can by a Church Canons put the mindes of people in such a change, as now they are not in the hazard to be justly scandalized, for a scandal (saiy the Prelate) is ensration, no reall thing, but a fiction of reason, the nature of it being in the apprehension of the ignorant and blind, who are scandalized, and a law may remove this ignorance, when a giveth light, and sheweth the expediencies of things indifferent. To which I answered, you may, call idolatry, if you please, and all sinnes, fictions of reason, but not only doth scandal given proceed from ignorance and blindness of the apprehension of the partie scandalized, but
our Rulers may legittimat the murther of scandall.

also from the unreasonable practising of a thing, which is no wayes necessarie in the worship of God. The course of (b) con-
(b) Course of formitie faith well, He that denieth that there is any scandall, is conformity.
lke one who could not see the wood, for the trees -- the walking of pag. 143.
Diogenes is meetest for a Leno, who against all reason denieth that there is any motion. We may hence judge what to say of
(c) D. Forbes his Answer to the place, 1 Cor. 9. Who saith that (c) Forbes Iren.
Paul was under no Ecclesiasticall law, n't to take wages, and 1.2. cap. 20. n.6.
therefore in not taking wages, he was not a conmemor of Ecclesiasticall authoritie, but we are under a Church law to practise the
Ceremonies, and yet we refuse them. I answer; If then the Church of Corinth had commanded Paul in their Canons to take
stipend, for preaching, he was obliedged to take stipend, yet he proverth that it was not lawful for him, as the case of scandall
then stood, to take wages, v. 18, he should abuse his power in the
Gospel, and v. 19. 20. 21. he should not have commended all things
to all men to save some, and these things had been sinfully scandalous, if (as the case was then) Paul for a penny of wages,
which he might have wanted, having no familie to provide for,
should have layd a stumbling block before many. And the Do-
ctor (d) faith No humane power can compell a man, to doe that,
which he cannot doe, except inevitabily he give scandall. The Do-
ctor addeth; The Apostle teacheth not that to take stipend was
unlawfull, or of it selfe scandalous. yea he taught it was lawful,
and that they should not be scandalized thereby, because Christ
hath ordained, that he who serveth at the altar, should live upon
the Altar, but you teach that the Ceremonies are unlawfull.
I Answer. 1. In this argument of Scandal, we give, but doe not
grant, that they are not unlawfull, but indifferent. 2. Though
to take wages be lawfull, yet it followeth not, that it is not in
Pauls case at Corinth of it selfe scandalous; for to eat all meates
is lawfull, Rom. 14. and 1 Cor. 10. 23. All things are lawfull, v. 26. The earth is the Lords, yet to eat before the weake, was in
it selfe scandalous, Rom. 14. 15. 16. 17. 1 Cor. 10. 28. 29. 3. It
is a moost weake reason to prove that to take wages was not
scandalous, becaus forsooth the Corinthians should not have been
scandalized: for to be scandalized is to finde, and there is no
reason in finning, ἐστι δέ νοέα ἡμια γνώσει. If this be good,

(d) Forbes, lib. 2, cap. 20. n. 19.
Non potest humane potestas te cogere ad faciendum ille quod facere non potest ab illo, inevitabiliter dationes scandali.
adulterie and murder in David, is not of it selfe scandalous, for as no man hath reason to sinne, so no man hath reason to be scandalized, at Davids sinne. Pauls taking wages at Corinth should have been a sinfull hindering of the Gospels progress, and therefore of it selfe sinfull; and lo of it selfe scandalous. But I return to the Doctors.

Duplyers pag 67.68. n.46 47.

As for that which ye say, that when Scandal may be taken at the doing of the thing commanded, then the thing commanded becometh inexpedient, and so ought not to be obeyed; that ye be not more deceived with this error, we pray you mark, that a thing commanded, by our Superiours, in Church or Policie, may be two ways inexpedient, to wit, either in respect of some particular Persons, who though weakesse, or malice, do stumble at it, or else in respect of the body in general, because it is contrary to Order, Decency and Education. If the thing commanded be inexpedient, the former way, we may indeed, in such a case, for eschewing the Scandal of the weak, forbearing the practice of the thing commanded, Hic, & nunc, in some particular places, and times: providing always we doe this without offence of our Superiours, and without the scandal of others, but we cannot totally forbear practice, for we are to lookke more to the will of the Church may receive, by the thing commanded, and by our obedience to our Superiours, then to some particular persons. 47. But if the thing commanded be in our private judgement inexpedient, the other way, we ought not for that, to deny Obedience to the lawes of the Church; for when the inexpediency of a thing is questionnable, and probable arguments may be brought, pro and contra, concerning the expediency of it, we have sufficient warrant to prattise it, if the Church inact it as expedient. Otherways your way is so dangerous, that there shall never be peace, nor unity in the Church, for men ordinarily are divided in judgement, concerning the expediency of things. Suppose a Synode consisting of one hundred Pastours, three score shall think this particular Ceremony expedient; for the good of the Church, and in respect of plurality of voyces, make an act to be concluded for the establishing of it, shall the remnant forty, who are of the contrary judgement, deny obedience to the acts of the Synode?
our Rulers may legitimat the murder of Scandal.

Answer. 1. This distinction of inexpedient in the matter of indifferent Ceremonies is Popish and vaine, for if the Ceremonie be indifferent, and may be wanted in the worship of God (as these Ceremonies be) if one soule, for whom Christ died, shall be murthred thereby, it isಡe to be judged inexpedient and scandalous in it selfe, and toe cannot fall under the objeay of a Church Canon, as 1 Cor. 8.13. If I mean my brother so stumble (he faith not the whole Church,) I will not eat. Ergo, he cannot command others to eat. 1 Cor. 10.28. But if any man, say to you, this is offered in sacrifice to idols, eat not, he is reprobate, ungodly, for his sake that sinned is. Ergo, if it seem expedient, and to be scandalous to one, let alone to a whole Church, we are totally to forbear it, and Paul would, while the world standeth, 1 Cor. 8.13. forbear it.

2. You will not have us to forbear a thing indifferent, that actively (for the passive scandal, I hope, you regard not, as a scandal) doth scandalize, but with a provisiun that we doe it without offence of Superiours, and without the scandal of others. But I ask, Doctors, what you mean by Offence of Superiours, if you mean without displeasing and inciting our Superiours to anger.

1. You ignorantly confound displeasing and Scandalizing. When a Pastor reprobeth Superiours, as Jeremiah, Elias, and John B. priest, in the good old world did, they did displease Superiours, but not scandalize them; yes, they did edifie their Superiours, while as they did offend them. It is wicked Divinitie, to mean, that we are not to eleche the murthering of a weake brother for whom Christ died, providing we offend not, that is, displease not our Superiours. Will you to please men, displease the God of heaven and commit spiritual homicide? This is worse then Poperie.

But if you mean, that wee are to forbear the thing commanded for sibling the scandal of the weake, providing we doe it without the offence of Superiours, that is without the active scandalizing of Superiours, then your distinction is vaine, for if we scandalize culpably our Superiours by our forbearance, though it be inexpedient to all private persons, we are not to forbear, because in no case can we breake the first Commandement, and scandalize our Superiours.

2. You shall be forced to give a case, wherein we are necessitated by Gods providence,
providence, and that by way of contradiction, whether we for-
beare, or forbear not, to murder either the souls of some
weake ones, or the souls of Superiours, by our forbearance of
the practice of things judged expedient by Superiours, you
make us to murder the souls of Superiours by the non-for-
bearance, or you will have us to murder the souls of weake
brethren, if we practice. This is a wronging of Providence,
and a Manichean tenent, that we can be under such a necessity
of sinning. Yea, there must be two contrary revealed wills in
God, commanding, by forbearing the Ceremonies, not to mur-
ther Superiours, and commanding by not forbearing, not to
murther weak brethren; and so God commandeth both to for-
bear, and also not to forbear. If you say, the weake may be
informed, and then it is a passive scandalonely, and practising
is lawfull at the commandement of Superiours. I answer,
1. Then your distinction hath no use here. 2. I answer. Let the
Superiours, who have more knowledge, be informed, that to
abstaine from a practice, that may murder any one redeemed
by Christ, is Christ’s commandement (I know shal not no mur-
thor.) then it is but a passive scandal, and not an active, or cul-
pably given scandal. Ergo, we are to forbear the thing com-
manded for eschewing of the scandal. (hic & nume)of the weake,
even though with the offence, that is the passive scandal of Su-
periours and others, which is contradictory to the Doctours.
3. If we may forbear obedience to Gods positive Commande-
ments, hic, & nume, for eschewing of Scandal, farre more may
we, hic & nume, not crossle, not kneele, hic & nume, when cro-
ssing and kneeling murthereth one for whom Christ died, even
though it offend our Superiours. Ergo, this provision of the Do-
ctors is vain; and Superiours are unjustly offended; if our non-
murthering of weake brethren offend them, nor are we to care
for the Doctors provision here. 4. No utilitie can truly redound
to the whole Church by practising of an indifferent thing which
culpably occasioneth the murthering of a weake brother. Ex-
cept our Doctors meane, that sinne may edifie the whole
Church. 5. They say, if the things in our private judgement be
inexpedient the second way, that is to the Church, the Church
cannot Command them, except the Church command against
her conscience. 6. If matters in their expediencie be questiona-
ble and probable on both sides, the Churches determination
should end the controversie (faith the Doctors) this is the Do-
ctrine of the Jesuites, (a) Suarez, (b) Thomas Sanchez, and
(c) Gregor. de valent. as I shew before (d) when a thing is pro-
bable, and I be resolved in conscience against neither of the
sides, and see the one side be murthering him, for whom
Christ died, which is against Gods commandement, and know
that humane authoritie commandeth the contrary and am per-
swaded it is indifferent, and a positive commandement of men,
if the Churches determination be here to sway my conscience; to
practise, is to me blind obedience, for humane authoritie. as
it is such, giveth no light. Ergo, it cannot remove my doub-
ing, and beget faith; and also the conscience is so much the
bolder to venture on a sinne, against God, for fear of eschewing
a sinne against men, which is questionable, and in a matter in-
different, this is also the出轨 conscience of Bonaventura a sens.
diff. 39. plus est standum praecpt. Praetati quam conscientia.
7. Our Doctors say, our way is against the peace of the Church:
But I answer, their way is Popish, and against the truth of God,
in commandour consciences to rest upon the wicked will of
men. And their instance of a Synod of a hundred Pastors may
be brought aswell to prove the Synode of Trent is to be obeyed,
as for the present purpose,

Duplyers, pag. 69.

Thee will say this argument is Popish, and leadeth men to acqui-
sence, without tryall, upon the aternation of the Church.
But we answer in matters of faith the truth, whereof may be infalli-
ibly concluded out of the word of God, we ought not, without tryall to
acquiesce unto the Doctors of the Church, and in this respect we
dissent from Papists, who ascribe too much to the authours of
Councils, as if their decrees were infallible. But in matters of Po-
litie, if we be certaine, that in their owne nature, they are indiffe-
rent, and if the expediencie of them only be called in question, feel-
ing no certaine conclusion, concerning their expediencie, can be in-
failibly drawn out of Gods word — we are to acquiesce to the de-
crees of the Church. 1. Because otherwise it is impossible to agree
in one conclusion, in matters of this kind. 2. Disobedience still prove more hurtful than obedience.

Answer 1. This is a wide step, to make all things in Scripture, either matters of faith, or matters indifferent. That there were eight persons in Noah's Ark, and that Sampson slew a thousand with the jaw bone of an ass, are not matters of faith, as matters of faith are contradistinguished, from things indifferent, many are saved, who neither know nor believe many things of this historically veracity in Scripture, yet are they not matters indifferent. But the Doctors are reconcilers with the Belgik Arminians, who deny all the things contradicted between Papists and us, and between us and Arminians, and Anabaptists, at least the most part of them to be fundamental, and that either side may be believed, and holden, without hazard of salvation, and therefore we are to leave to the Churches determination in these without further inquiry. 2. They mean, that in matters contradicted, and in all things indifferent as whether in this, or that fact, we do minister him for whom Christ died; we are to give our faith and conscience over to the Church without further try all. 3. What if we be not persuaded of the indifferency of the things commanded but doubt whether they be commanded or forbidden in the Word, as is now the present case of ceremonies to us, for we cannot be persuaded of their indifferency, and the Doctors' faith they are not matters of faith. Ergo, by their own doctrine their distinction is defective. 4. Scripture is also perfect in resolving us, what is scandal and murmuring of our brother, as what is Idolatry and Blasphemy, and therefore we are not to hang our faith here upon the Churches Canons without further tryall, as you say. 5. That the Scripture is perfect in matters of faith, but imperfect in matters of Policie, that is in matters wherein we may kill him for whom Christ died, is no better then the Papists distinction, who teach us that the Scripture is perfect in the articles of faith, not in traditions, so Scotus (a) faith. True Theologie according to Divine revelation is only of things in Scripture, or which may be deduced out of Scripture. And Savary (b) faith, Things that belong to accidents are left to the Churches determination, but the Scripture implicitly containeth all articles of faith.

(a) Scotus prol. in sent. 3. ad arr. 3.
(b) Savary, De leg. cap. 1.
& de trib. virt. theolog. cap. 1. disj. 5.
our Rulers may legitimat the murder of Scandal.

6. Your fear is vain that we shall have no order nor peace, if Scripture be judge, and not the authoritie of the Church, in matters which you call indifferent, for the Church giveth out Canons concerning things strangled, & blood, which were matters indifferent, and that from the word of God; Act. 15, and that in great unity and peace. God's word maketh unity, and not men's authoritie. 7. Disobedience to Church Canons in case of given Scandal, is neither disobedience nor hurteth at all; it possibly offendeth men who will tyrannize over the Conscience, and if any he induced thereby to sin, it is a Scandal taken, not given. Absintence from murdering a weak brother, is obedience to God, and so no active Scandal.

In the 48 Session, The Duplyers doe but redouble over again the arguements already brought and answered by me divers times to D Robert Baron in private, while he was silenced, and (as I conceived) satisfied. Especially, they say our disobedience to superiors in things lawfull and expedient, is most scandalous to others, and that because we, by nature, are most unwilling to be curbed, and to have our libertie restrained. Therefore Calvin saith, God, that he may allure us to obedience to Superiors, called, superiors, Parents.

I answer. 1. The Doctors are too hasty to call that obedience to Superiors which is in question, We say it is disobedience to the first Commandement, because it is a scandalizing of our brother. Ergo, it is not obedience to the first Commandement to practice indifferent Ceremonies, when they doe scandalize. 2. Our argument is made against the practice of Ceremonies, before they be enacted in a lawfull Assemblie, if they be murthering of the weak, before Peareth, Assemble, the will of Prelates, yea, and all the authoritie of men or Angels, cannot make the practise of them, to be no murther, for mens will cannot make that which is sinne and guiltiness before God, to be no sinne, but due obedience to the first Commandement, though the Doctors expressly say this.

Duplyers, pag 78. Sect. 44.

But we with good warrant and averté, that the precept which forbiddeth the resisting of the civill power, and in generall the do-
That the first Commandment in human positive laws, is not

A most effectual way of obedience to the lawfull commandments of our Superior, is of greater obligation than the precept of not scandalizing. Their first reason I put in forme to them thus. That is of greater obligation which commandeth acts edificative to all, then that which commandeth acts edificative to some only, for the good of all is to be preferred to the good of some particular persons; and we are to have a greater care of the salvation of all, then of some. But the precept of obedience to Superiors is universal, and commandeth the act of edifying all, to wit, obedience to Superiors, and an act to edify the salvation of all to wit, disobedience. But the precept of eschewing the scandal of some, doth but edify some only, and not all. Ego & c.

Ans. 1. It is soon proved by your learning, for the precept of God's law to eschew scandal, to you is no precept, and so of no obligation, when Superiors command to scandalize, so you may prove that snow is whiter then the raven, when as the raven is not whiter at all.

I answer. 2. That precept is of greater obligation that commandeth acts edificative to all, then that which commandeth acts edificative to some. It is true, 2, if it be a lawfull command of God, but the assumption applied to your purpose is most false, the command to obey Prelates, when they command things indifferent, the obedience whereof doth culpably occasion the murdering of him, for whom Christ died, is not a commandement edificative to all, yea, it is a Commandement of acts destructive to the soules of all. This Argument would have some colour, if it were not a vaine begging of the question, for they lay downe as, confess'd, that the practice of Ceremonies, from whence many soules are ruined, is obedience, and obedience to the first Commandement. This is to be proven, and constantly denied by us, because disobedience to the sixth Commandement, and murdering of our brother, cannot be obedience to the first Commandement.

Duplers pag. 72. n. 50. The first Commandement commeth nearer to the nature of pietie and religion contained in the first Table, and the honouring of parents (as your own Amosius saith) by profane anabasts, is called...
more obligatorie then the 6. Commandment forbidding soul-murder. 47

called by the name of religion and piety. 2. It is the ground of obe-
dience (sayth Paterus) to be given to all the rest of the precepts
of the second Table. 1. Because all societies Oeconomick, civil,
and Ecclesiasticke doe consist, and are preserved by the subjection
of inferiors to superiors. 2. Our superiors are set over us, to
the end, we may doe our duty to all others. Hence saith
your wise Amosius; Crones which directly procure the perver-
sation, confusion, and overflou of societies, are more grievous then
the violation of the singular precepts: and Dyonitus Bishop of
Alexandria, writing to Novatus faith, Martyrdom suffered for
obehaving of schisme, is more glorious then Martyrdom for of-
behaving Idolatry.

Answ. You said before matters of Policie are not matters of
faith. Amosius is a Protestant writer in matters of faith, by
grant of all, it is like then you terme Amosius our owne, not
yours, because he wrote against Arminians and Papists, and so
that Arminians and Papists are yours, and Protestant Divines
ours. 2. We grant the precedency and dignitie to the first Com-
mandement above the rest, but your Ceremonies that break the
sixth Commandement shall find no room in the first Com-
mandement. Cause the first Commandement saith thus, if you
can; Notwithstanding, by the crossing, kneeling, surplice, humano
holy dayes occasion the souls murder of him for whom Christ died,
yet the Prelates command the practise of the foresaid Ceremo-
nies as good and expedient for edification, for our Commandement
maketh the murdering of our brethren, to be obedience to the first
Commandement. But if Prelates may command that which
would be otherwise, without, or before the Commandement,
spirituall murdering and scandalizing of our brother, they may
command also, that which would be otherwise without, or be-
fore their command, adulterie against the seventh, and theft aga-
ainst the eighth, and perjury and lying against the ninth
Commandement, and concupiscence against the tenth, for the
sfirst Commandement hath the precedency before the seventh,
eighth, ninth and tenth Commandements, no lisse then before
the sixth, which forbiddeth the killing of our brothers soule.
3. What Amosius and Paterus faith, doe well prove the dignitie
of the first Commandement, above all the Commandements of
the
more obligatory than the 6 Commandments of forbidding soul-murder.

the second Table; but this is not to our purpose, but every commandment of the fifth Commandment; yea, every commandment of the first Table, is not above every commandment of the second Table. The love of God, is more than the love of our neighbour, and the love of God should, and doth, command obedience to all the ten Commandments, Deut. 30, 6, 7, 8, & Deut. 10, 12. Yet every duty and commandment that the love of God requireth of us, as to offer sacrifice, is not for that a greater Commandment then every commandment of the second Table, yea, the taking of a sheepe out of a ditch on the Lords day, commanded in the fifth Commandment, is more then sacrifices commanded in the second Commandment, as our Saviour faith, Mach 12, vii, 11, 12. and though the fifeth Commandment be laid upon us as the fountain and cause, yea to this end, that we should keep all the rest, as Divines say well. Yet it followeth not that every commandment of the fifth Commandment, as when my father commanded me to preach in a linnen Ephod, and to cast a Character with my thumb in the air, as crossing is, shall be of more obligation then this commandment of God (Thou shalt not destroy his soul for whom Christ died). 4. It is false, that denying of obedience to Peoples-Assemblies, commanding indifferent strawes and feathers as (kneele to consecrated Bread; the Image of Christ crucified) doth directly procure the perturbation and confusion of humane societies, as the Doctours faith. There is great difference between subjection to superiors, and obedience to superiors; When private men, as the three Children will not bow to Nebuchadnezzars Image, there is no confusion brought in for that, if they had risen against the King in armes, as Papists doe in Ireland against our King, that is confusion and subverteth directly humane socieites, but to suffer punishment by Superiours, is subjection to superiours, as is cleare, 1 Pet 2, 17, Honour the King. 18. Servants be subject to your Masters with all feare, not only to the good and gentle but also to the froward. 19. For this is thankeso-worthy (this subjection) it a man for conscience toward God, endure greese suffering wrongfully. 5. What Dionysius said of the ill of schisme is for us, for schisme is against love to our brethren, and a rending Christs body. 1 Cor. 13, 3, and a great-
more obligatorie then she is a Con. forbidding soul-murther. 99

ter evil their non-obedience to Prelates, when they command indifferent Ceremonies, occasioning the ruins of him for whose Christ died. To say nothing that the Doctors of Aberdeen are the Schismatics who have now separated from the Church of Scotland, and our Nationall covenant with God.

Dupl.ers pag. 37. n. 51.

Thirdly, these offices or duties, which we owe to others, by way of Justice, are more strictly obligatorie, then those which we owe to them, only by way of charity. But we owe the duties of obedience to our Superiors, by way of justice, and therefore we are bound obligatorie, then the duty of declaring scandalously taken, which is a duty only of charity. 1. The major is a maxim: not only of Scholastics, and of Popish Casuists, but also of our Divines. So Anesius. The major is clear, for the duty of obedience which was due to the publick Laws of the Church and Kingdom is, Justitia legalis, a general law of Justice, and as it is in subjects, it is a verum inculcating them to the obedience of all lames made for the benefit of the Common-wealth, no Aristotelian faith. 2. It is debitum obedientiae, the debt of obedience which we owe to our Superiors, grounded upon the proper right which our Superiors have to exact this right of us, so that they may accuse us of injustice, and confound us, if we performe it not. Debitum justitiae fundatur in proprio jure alterius; and also it is debitum morale, a debt of duties unto which we are tied by moral benefic in Gods commandement. There is a great difference betweene these two debts; As for example, a man owes money to the poore by a moral debt, but to his creditor he oweth them by a legal debt, or debt of justice: and therefore he is more strictly obliged to pay his creditor than to give almes. Such like by moral benefic, and Gods precepts also; a man oweth to his neighbour, a pious carefulness, to imppre sine in him, by admonition, instruction, good example, and by omission even of things lawful, when he seeth that his neighbour in respect of his weakness, will be scandalized by them. But his neighbour hath not such a right to exact these duties of him, neither can he have action against him, for not performing of them, as our lawfull Superiors have for our due obedience?

Aur.1. Here be the white shifts of Mr. Sanderson, Paybodes.

Gggg

Downe
That the fift Command in humane positive laws is not.

Downham, who place Loyaltie above Charitie. We owe to our brother love, but to the Ruler (say they) love and justice. Why doe they not extend Loyaltie to its utmost, even loyalty to the King of kings? whose royall law faith (Thou shalt not Scandalize) (Thou shalt not murder) they draw in loyalty to Rulers who shall die as men, and to their commandement of things indifferent, which God hath not commanded. It is true, these duties which we owe to others by way of justice, are more obligatorie then these which we owe only by way of charitie, ceteris paribus. When duties of the law of Nature, and morall Law, are compared together, then indeed the duties which we owe, both by the tye of Justice and Charitie, are more obligatorie, then the duties that we owe only by the tye of Charitie. As for example; My father is in danger, before my eyes, to be drowned, in one deep water; and before my eyes also, my neighbour and friend is in danger of the like kind; the two eyes and bands of Justice and Charitie, both by the fift and sixth Commandements are more obligatorie, sic & nunc, and doe more strictly oblige, that I run to succour, and preserve the life of my father, then the life of my neighbour, for the obligation to my neighbour, is only charitie, by the obligation of the sixth Commandement, which obligation cealeth, sic & nunc, at this time, when my fathers life is in hazard; and thus farre the Doctors argument goeth for strong, as Schoolemen, Casuists, and Divines teach. But it is not to a purpose for the Doctors; For all offices and duties generally, and universally, of what ever kind, which we owe by way of Justice, are not more obligatorie, then duties which we owe, only by way of Charitie, as when duties of a positive commandement of God, enjoyned by our Superiours, and duties which we owe by charitie only, are compared together, then the Doctors major Proposition is not cleare of it selfe, as they dreame, nor doe Casuists or Ametists, or Divines say with them, but truth, and all our Divines say against them. Let us suppose that the King, and Convocation, and Assembly of Priests and Prophets of Israel make a Canon according to Gods Word. That no man presume to eat new bread, save the Priests only. All men owe obedience to this, both because it is Gods express Law, and by the band
more obligatorie then the 6. Commandment, forbidding foul-mutter.

of Justice, the Elders and Assembly of the Ancients have for-}
bidden it. But if our Doctors argument stand strong, David at
the point and hazard of famishing, for hunger, sinned in eat-
ing shew-bread, yet Christ acquitted him of all sinne, and faith
Matt. iv. 5. he and his followers are therefore blameless. Now
David was under a duty by mercy, and love to his owne life,
and the lives of his followers, to eat shew-bread; and he was
under the band of Justice, by the law of the Ancients of Israel,
and God's law, not to eat. Therefore in some cases, when our
Superiours commandements are only positive Laws, they are
not more obligatorie, then duties of Charite, only commanded
in the law of nature. I cleare it further thus, I see my neigh-
bhour in danger before my eyes of drowning, and my father
commandeth me to goe and labour, or sowe, his famine, in that
time, while I am to preserve the life of my neighbour in pre-
sent danger, to lose his life, in a great water. By the Doctors
maxime, I am under the higher obligatorie eye of Justice, to
obey my father, who commandeth a thing both lawfull and
necessarie, by vertue of the higher Commandement, to wit, the
first of the second Table, then I am obliged by the sixth. Com-
mandement, and of charitie only, to give present succour and
help to my dying neighbour, so I must let my neighbour die in
the waters, to give a dutie of justice to my father, of farre lesse
necessitie. I would not commit my conscience to such Cases,
as are the Doctors of Aberdeen. But if the Doctors would see
with some new light of reason, it is cleare, that not only the eye
of Justice maketh the precept more obligatorie, but also the
weightinesse of the thing commanded; Yea, and if the positive
Commandements of the Lord our God, who of Justice and king-
ly soveraignetie, hath right to make obedience of us, above all
earthly Superiours, doe yeeld and cede as lesse obligatorie, then
commandements of loveonly, that are commanded in the law
of nature. What doe our Doctors clatter and fable to us of a
right of Justice, that mortall Rulers have to command in things
indifferent, from which the destruction of soules doth arise? for
these commandements of Rulers, (kneele religiously before
bread, the viceroygents image of Christ crucified) (keep humane
holy-days) Croffe the aye with your thumb above a baptized
infant.
The fifth Commandement in humane positive law is not

\[\text{\textit{infantifcup}}\text{\textit{cunce}) at best, are but positive Commandements, not warranted by God's word. But shall they be more obligatory by a supposed band of Justice, that Prelates have over us to command, such toy's then this divine law of God and Nature, Rom. 14. For indifferent days, meats, surplics, defray not being for whom Christ died? All the Causetypes, and Schoolemen, Navarra, Sylvestre, Sanchez, Raphael de la Torre, Adornas, Dunias, Thomas, Sozus, Bonaventura, Suarez, Unques, Grego, de Valencia, Albertus, Richardus, Biel, Corduba, Ango-


\[\text{\textit{hus, Adrianus, Alphonsus, Becanno, yea, and all the hoast of our Divinity cry with Scripture, that Mercie and the precepts of Love, and of the Law of nature, are more obligatory then Sacrifice, burnt offerings, and Gods owne positive lawes, yea, and that positive lawes lose their obligatory power, and cease to be lawes, when the lawes of nature and necessarie duties of mercie and love (ca not to marthber our brother) (not to scandalize) standeth in their way. I might wearie the reader here with citations, and bewilder my selfe also, but it is a point of Divintie denied by none at all. 3. What we owe of Justice to our Superioris, is indeed both a morall deurt of obedience, and a deert of justice, and law which Rulers may seke by their place, and ex jure, as Aristotle faith, but this right is limited. Rulers have no right to seke absolute obedience, but only in the Lord, not against charitie. And though the place of Rulers be authoritative, yet their commanding power, as touching the matter of what they injoyne is only Ministerial, and they cannot but in Gods place exact, that which is Gods due, and seeing God himselfe, if he should immediately in his owne person command, he would not urge a positive commandement, farre lest the commandement of light and vaine Ceremonies, against and beyond the precept of love, not to destroy a soule for whom Christ died. Ergo, Superioris under God, who borsew all their right from God, cannot have a higher right then God hath. 4. The comparison of a man who oweth moneys to a Creditor, and oweth moneys to the poore, is close off the way, for he is obliged to pay the Creditor first, but the case here is farre otherwise; The debt of practising indifferent feathers and straws, such as kneeling, crossing, wearing Supliece, is neither like} \]
like the debt owing to the poore, not to the creditour; For na-
tures law, and Gods word, I Cor. 10.18,19. makes the non-
practise, non-murthiering obedience to God, when the practise
of indifferent things, is a soule-stumbling to the weake, and
the practising is but at its best obedience to a positive Law, and
ought to stoope, and goe off the way, and disappeare when na-
tures Law (Murther not) doth come in its way. When the
Doctors put Loyaltie above Charite, they suppose obedience to
commandements commanding scandalizing of soules to be loy-
altie to Superiours, which is questioned, it being treason to the
Soveraigne of heaven and earth, to destroy his Image, it is ta-
ten as loyalty by our Doctors, but not proven to be loyalty,
and so a vaine question here, whether Loyaltie be above Cha-
ritie or not. But I dismis the Doctors till another occasion.
Other things as Popish resects, in their booke are a thousand
times answered by us.

Quest. V.

Whether or not in every indifferent thing are we to eschew
the scandal of all, even of the malicious?

It is knowne that many take offence at tolling of
Bells, at a Ministers gowne while hee preacheth, at
the naming of the dayes of the weeke, after the Hea-
then stile from the seven Planets, as Sunday, the day
of the Sunne; Monday, the day of the Moon, &c. It is true,
Bells are abused by Papists, while as they be consecrated, bap-
tized, used to chace away devils. But these be scandals taken, and
not given, for we read not of scandals culpable in Gods word,
but there be some apparent morall reason in them. 2. The ob-
ject scandalizing hath no necessitie, why it should be. Now
there is a necessitie of Bells to give warning to convocate the
people to God worship, and they are of moere cievill use, and
have no morall influence in the worship, for the same tolling of
bells is, and may be used to convocate the people to a Baron-
court, to heare a declamation, to convocate Souldiers; there is
That it is not lawfull to scandalize

no apparent morall reason why the tolling of a Bell should scandalize, and the toller of the Bell for warning of the bodily and personall convocation of the people, is not a morall agent properly; the action of tolling remaineth within the sphere of an action physical, in lined Physica, non in lined moralis aut religiosa aut Theologica, for so here I must contradistinguish a Physica action from a Religious action. 

2. The tolling of bells have a necessitie of expediencie, I mean necessity in speepe, in the kind, though not in individuo, in the particular, and no particular can be more fit and convenient: people must have some publicke signe for the dyat of meeting, else the worship would be wearisome to those who met long before the time, and it would be scandalous and inconvenient, to others to meet after the publick worship is begun. If any say, tolling of Bells is not necessarie, sounding of Trumpets, beating of Drummes may be cívill signes of convocating people: tolling of bells being so fouly abused by Papists to superstitition, and so being not necessarie ought to be removed. But I answer, beating of Drummes wasteth the necessitie of conveniencie, as in raynie weather it could not be, nor can they give warning so conveniently: blowing of Trumpets might seeme as Jewish, Joel cap. 2. v. 25. as tolling of Bells seemeth Popish, and the degrees of necessitie of conveniencie should swaye the Churches determination in these cases, and this exasperacion of necessitie of conveniencie is in all things, though we cannot see it always. 

3. The inflampt civill gravitie in a Gowne, maketh it necessarie with the necessitie of expediencie, being in it selve a grave habit fit for an Orator who is to perswade. 

3. The names of dayes to signifie cívill times and things, out of a religious state is necessarie now: and the Holy Ghost doth use for cívill signification such termes, as Mars-street to signifie cívill and meere historically such a place. And the Ship whose signe is Castor & Pollux, yet these were heathen names, and most superstitious, and cannot be used in a religious state. I grant, we may not term our Jehovah, Jupiter or Baal; nor Christ, Mercurius, though he be the word of Gods mind to us, for God teacheth us other words and language in his Word. The truth is, that (a) learned noble Lord said well and judiciously, all the indifference (in the world).

(a) Robert Lord Brooke, in a discourse of nature of Episcopacie, cap. 5.
world) both in our understandings, and the darkness thereof—but there is none in the things themselves, or actions, which are still either unlawful or necessary. And this is most true in actions moral and humane. The Church putteth indifferencie on nothing, there a necessitie in respect of our darkness, many be scandalized at things which seeme not necessary to them, yet are they in re, in themselves necessarie. But conformists object, That the very will of the Church, Act. 15. made things indifferente before the act now to become necessarie; if then the Church may take away indifferencie, she may give also. But I answer, The antecedent is most false; Junius, Calvin, Boae, Bullinger, Bretonis, Pomeranus, Marlowe, and the text clearly faith, by the law of Nature these were scandalous. So (b) Origine thinks, to eat blood was scandalous. And (c) Strabo faith, the heathen in their sacrifices dranke blood; Yea, (d) faith Tertullian, the heathen dranke mens blood, and (e) Aquinas faith, they forbade these for a time in the case of scandal, that the ancients Synagogue might be buried with honour; Yea, (f) Ireneeus, (g) Tertullian, and (h) Cyprian will have these drawn to a spirituall sense, that they should abaine from Idolatrie, lib. 2. cap. 13. shedding of blood and fornication; And (i) the Jesuit Lorinius (g) Tertullian de pudicitia, c. 13. faith this was a positive Law, which without the case of scandal, doeth not strictly abolish. (k) Cajetan, Forcimation was forbidden, the other things in the Canon were forbidden to gratifie the Jews. (l) Philippus Gametbans 2. Serbo- in Act. 15. ait, ift faith, they were forbidden to nourish concord betwixt Jew and Gentile for the informitie of the Jews. 2. That the will of the Councell made them not necessary, whereas before the Act they were indifferent, is cleare. 1. It had then beene needlesse to discusse the matter by Scripture. 2. To allege the holy Ghost as author of the Synod; It seemed good to the Holy Ghost, &c. if the bare will of men had made them necessarie.  

But faith (m) Paybodie, Any good thing may become an occasion of scandal by accident, and through our faults, the Word comforteth not occasions of ill by accident, but such only as are
occasions of evil, and in themselves evil things, indifferent are
not in themselves evil.

Ans. All occasions whether ill in themselves or indifferent,
are occasions of sinne by accident, and through our fault, who
abuse them, but all occasions because occasions, and not because
evil are forbidden, when as they are not necessity, and this is
Gods argument to prove that the Jews are not to marry with
the Canaanites, for ( faith the law, they will consume away your
heart, after their Gods, to send abroad a roaring ox, to seek
his food, hath no sinne in it, savor only it may occasion the killing
of men; and the building of houses without battlements,
and the going by the doors of the wahoo, or comming near her
houses, are not of themselves ill, but only forbidden under this
reduplication, because they are occasions of ill: sinnes, as sinnes
are forbidden, and as occasions of sinnes, they are also new
sinnes, having a distinct illegallitie and guiltinesse in them, from
this that they occasion sinne: and Gods law ( as all Divines
beath ) forbiddeth sinne, and all occasions of sinne. Drunken-
nessesse is both forbidden as intemperance, and also as an occasi-
on of lust, and of speaking perversse things, as is evident, Pro.
23. 37. For then the spirit of Gods argument were null to dif-
swade from drunkennessse, as he doth in these words, Thine eye
shall behold strange women, and thine heart shall utter perverse
things. Now we can shew that many wayes Ceremonies occa-
sion sinnes, as they trumpe and doctor a Church for haban
lovers, from Rome, forbidden, Jer. 23. 39. Swarms, Franciscus de
santa clara, Greserus, and other Papists, for they were in love
with the Church of England. 2. They occasion dissention in
Gods house, and are contrary to peace, Ps. 34. 14. 5eb. 13. 19.
Rom. 12. 18. and so to be rejecked. 3. They beare false witnesse
of Poperie, which we disclaimes. 4. They are against the spiri-
tuall worshipping of God, and lead us backe to the carnall com-
mandements, and beggerly rudiments of the law, from the
They are torches in day light, and vaine and uselesse. 5. They
bring us under bondage to men, contrary to the Apostle, Col. 2.
20. and to the ordinances of men, and under the power of things,
I Cor. 6. 12. 6. They are against our Christian libertie. They answer, especially (a) Paybode, and (b) D. Forbes, that Christiane libertie is not restrained by doing, or not doing a thing indifferent, for so there should be no lawes made at all by the Church concerning things indifferent, but Christian libertie not hurt, if the Ceremonies be free to the conscience, and not made necessary. 2. If they be not made necessary to salvation. 3. If they be holde alterable by mans authoritie. Ans. The question is perverted, for we question not if the use of things indifferent lay a bond on Christian libertie, but if the will of authoritie can make a law of things indifferent; when there is no intrinsicall necessitie in the things themselves, when necessitie of edification layeth on a yoke, Christian libertie is not indeed restrained, for God then layeth on a bond. 2 Externall eating of meats, and observing of dayes, is a part of the libertie, wherewith Christ hath made us free, Col. 2. 21. Eat not, nor touch not, taste not, men eat not meat with their minde or conscience, but with the teeth of their body, and to such externall eating, men are dead with Christ, as touching externall observation thereof, and Paul, Gal. 2. 19. as dead to the Law, living to God, and crucified with Christ, is freed from such Judaizing, as Peter fell into, but that Judaizing did not bind Peters conscience, neither was it repute of him, as necessarie to salvation, as he had taught, Act. 10. And the false Apostles pressed Circumcision, not, as tying the conscience, or as necessitie for salvation, but Gal. 6. 12. µου ἐν μὴ—συμμετέχεις, &c. only, that they may not suffer affliction for the cross of Christ, and yet to be circumcised externally without necessitie of conscience before God, crossed directly the libertie wherewith Christ had made them free, Gal. 5. 1. and 1 Cor. 9. Have we not power to lead about a wife, and sister as well as others? Yet if the Prelates at Corinb should have made an a. forbidding Church-men to marry, though they had esteemed not marrying, both free to the conscience, and also not necessarie to salvation, they had laid bands upon Pauls libertie. 3. We see not how the Ceremonies are left free to the conscience, because they are alterable by the Church, for the reason of kneeling to bread, of humane dayes, of Surplice, is morall, not Nationall; there is no reason why prophaning of the Lords Supper, should not be

H h h h eschewed.
That it is not lawful to scandalize

That it is not lawful to scandalize Q.V.

calvin in

inst. 3, c. 19.

sect. 7. c. 19

part libertatis

ut nulla rerum

ex eis non qua

per se sui,

theo-

quem

parat

nunc usus,

nunc

indiferen-

ter licent uti.

c. 3.

c. 32.

c. 33.

c. 17, n. 19, 10

Whitaker,

de pontif. R. m.

q. 7, c. 3, ad 5.

eschewed, in all the world, and at all times, as in Britaine, and

at this time; and Crossing and Surplice doth signifie dedication
to Christ's service, and Pastorall holinesse in all the world, as in
Britaine, and therefore they cannot be nationall rites and alterable,
but must be universal, and at all times, and in all places
doctrinal. 4. The very externall Washings, Feasts, New-

Moones, Offerings, though they should be thought free toward
the conscience, are externall burdens against Christian libertie,
as our Divines, (a) Calvin, (b) Chemnicus, (c) Polanus teacheth,
and (d) Bellarmine answered, the places alluded speaketh
of Jewish servitude. But our Divines especially (e) Junius
and (f) Whitakerus answer Bellarmine, that Paul, Coll. 2.

spake against all Commandements of men, yea, be speaketh
against that worship, which is not a Jewish shadow, whereas
Christ is the body. But they say it is a wide rule, that all things
that may be wanting in God's worship, are to be omitted in the case
of scandal. I answer, there be three sort of things here consid-
derable. 1. Things not commanded of God, as all religious ob-

servances, these are utterly unlawful, when the using of them
scandalizeth. 2. Things that fall under an affirmative precept,
and these cannot be totally omitted, for eschewing scandal: for

whichever God hath commanded is some way necessarie. Ergo,
it some ways, and in some cases, may be done, though offence
be taken at it; but branches, or parts of affirmative precepts
may be omitted, for eschewing of scandal, as such a particular
kneeling in prayer, in such a place: but God's affirmative pre-
cepts leave not off to be always scandalous actively, though
information be given, for where the use, bartsbe, the abuse and
scandal is not taken away by teaching, to teach how Images
should not be abused, make not Images to leave off to be scan-
dalous objects, 3. There be some things of mere civil use, as Bells, Gownes, Pulpits, preaching on Tuesday or Thurs-
day. These be considered two ways. 1 As necessarie with ne-
cessitie of conveniencie simply. 2 With necessitie of convenien-
cie, secundum prevalensiam gradum, as convenient in the high-
eft degree of necessitie, or that morall, maximum quod sive, in the
first degree, what scandalizeth, is to be rejected; in the last re-

spect they oblige, and if any be scandalized thereat, it is taken

and
and not given. It may be the Church sees not always the highest and superlative conveniencies, in these Physicall circumstances, but they oblige not because of the Churches authority, no more then the word of God borroweth authority from the Church, but they have an intrinsically necessitie in themselves, though right reason in the Church see not always this necessitie, therefore that a signe be given for convoying the people that the Preacher officiate in the most grave and convenient habite is necessarie, Jurisdivina, by Gods law, and that tolling of Bells, and a Gowne, a Pulpit bee as particulars most convenient for these ends, the Church Ministerially doth judge, so as the obligatorie power is from the things themselves, not from the will of humane Superiours. No necessitie of peace which is posterior to truth, no necessitie of obedience to authoritie, no necessitie of uniformitie in these externals, simply, and as they are such, are necessitie obliging us to obedience; for things must first in themselves be necessarie, before they can oblige to obedience. I must obey Superiours in these things of convenient necessitie, because they are convenient, and most convenient in themselves, and so intrinsically most necessarie, but they are not necessarily to be done in themselves, because I must obey Superiours, and because I must keep uniformitie with the Church. The will of Superiours doe find in things necessitie, and good of uniformitie, but they doe not make necessitie, nor the good of uniformitie: We should be servants of men, if our obedience were ultimata, resolved, in the mere will of Superiours, in any the least circumstance of worship: and what I say of actions, holdeth in matters of mere custome also.

But Master Sanderson, D. Forbes, M. Payhode, teach that we are not to regard the scandal of the malicious, as of Pharisees. To which I answer, We are to have alike regard, in case of scandal, to wicked and malicious, as to weake and infirme. For we are not to regard the passive scandal of the weake more not of the wicked, for whoever humble at the necessarie ordinances of God, they take a scandal, which is not culpably given. But that we are to regard the active scandal of all, even the most malicious, I demonstrate thus, 1 Rom. 14. 15. Paul proveth that we are not to scandalize our brother, 1. because it
is against charity. 2. Because we are not to destroy him, for whom Christ died: but we owe love to the malicious, even to our enemies, and must not walk uncharitably toward him, as the law of God requireth. 3. A malicious man is one for whom Christ died, very often, as is cleare in Paul before his conversion.

2. 1 Cor. 10. 32. Wherefore give no scandal, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God. 33. Even as I please all men, in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved. Here be many arguments for our purpose, All men; whether weak or wilfull, are either Jews or Gentiles, and none more malicious against Paul, and the Gospell, than the Jews, yet must we take heed that we give them no scandal.

3. If we must please all men, in all things indifferent, Ergo, also malicious men. 4. If we must seek the profit not of our selves, but of all men, and seek to save them, and to seek the salvation even of the malicious, as Christ prayed for his malicious enemies, so must we not scandalize them. 5. I argue from the nature of scandal, scandal is spirituall murder, but the sixt Commandement so biddeth murdering of any man, either weak or wilfull, for no murderer can have life eternall, 1 John 3. 15. Now weakness or malice in the scandalized is accidental to the nature of scandal active, for active scandalizing is to doe inordinately and unreasonably, that which hie & nun may be omitted, from which any is scandalized, either weak or wilfull, to lay a snare to kill a wicked man (except it be, by the authoritie of him, who beareth the sword under God) is murder, no lesse then to kill an innocent man. 6. To scandalize actively, is to be necessarie to the sinne of the partie scandalized, but we may not be necessarie to the sinne of either wilfull, wicked, or weake, for it is against the petitions, that we are taught to pray, Hallowed be thy name, Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done, in earth, as it is in heaven. They love not the comming and enlargement of Christs kingdom, who doe not, what they can to hinder sinne. farre lesse is Gods honour their care, who doe that unnecesarily, by which any may fall in sin. 7. It is against the gentleness, required in Preachers, and by proportion
Q. VI. the most malitious.

proportion required in all, who are with patience to wait upon those who oppose the truth, if God peradventure will give them repentance, to the acknowledgement of the truth. 2 Tim. 3:24.25. 8. It is contrary to the example of Christ, and his Apostles, who as the learned (a) Parker faith, eschewed the actio scan- (a) Parkeronalizing of the malicious, Christ paid tribute, 'iva μὴ σκανδάλισα the crosse, put ζῷον, lest we should scandalize the malicious Pharisees, for it could not but of malice be taken by Pharisees, who sought nothing more then to bring Christ within the compasse of disloyaltie to Cesar.

Quest. VI.
A further consideration of things not necessary, and how they be scandalous objects.

1. Diff.

Some things are necessarie physically, as to eat flesh, of the necessity of things which remove scandal.

and some things are necessarie morally, either becaus of a law of nature, or a positive or divine command. 2. Diff.

The same way, Some things are not necessarie physically, and that either simply, as wee may live simply without some rare meats, that our Land and soyle doth not afford, or in some respect only, as without such and such flesh for-
bidden by the law of God. Or things are not necessary Morally or Theologically, as to eat forbidden meats befor a weake Jew.

3. Diff.

Some things Physically necessarie, as to eat fleshes being apt to nourish my body, may be Morally or Theologically not necessarie, being stumbling blocks to my weak brother.

4. Diff.

Some things may be necessarie, in specie, and that morally, as to heare the Word, so Pray. But, in individuals, clothed with such and such circumstances may be not necessarie, as to goe to heare the Word, when my brothers house is on fire, that hearing is not necessarie, but may be scandalous, and the like we may say of praying on the streets.

H h h h 3.

5. Diff.
Of the Necessity that maketh things  Q. VI.

5. Distinction.

Some things may be necessary. Physically in private, as to eat for health some fishes, which publickly before were not of those, as the case was Rom. 14. 4. Morally not necessary, but scandalous.

6. Distinction.

Some things are not necessary, because of the mere positive will of God. As the temple of Baal, and therefore was to be destroyed, not for the abuse of it, for a house has always some necessary use to man now in the state of sin. And of this kind were the cattell of the Amalakites, which were as necessary of themselves for food, and sacrifice, as other cattell, and the Babylonish garment, and wedge of Gold, to which Achan's slimie hands did cleave, and therefore they were not necessary, but to be abstained from by Saul and the Israelites. Because of the sole positive command of God, other things are not necessary, both because God forbids them and because of the scandal and unlawful consequences, that are possible to fall out, as for God's people to marry with the idolatrous Canaanites, was not necessary, both because God's forbidden will made it not necessary morally, and also because they might draw away God's people to serve their Gods, which was a feasable, and a very possible snare, though some idolatresses being married to the Jews, might have been drawn from their idolatry, and gained to the faith of the God of Israel.

1. Concl. Monuments, or instruments of idolatry, are of two sorts, either such things as have no other use at all, but to command a mere subervient influence in, or unto idolatrous worship, and because these have all their warrant from a mere commandement of man, they are simply not necessary, as the graven image, the idols themselves, all positive observances in God's worship destitute of any command of God, and the use of these in any case must be scandalous, and so unlawful, because, if the Brazen Serpent now losing its primitive divine effect, which was to cure the stunged people, if it be but the passive object of robbing God of his glorie, in that Incense is burnt to it, have no use at all, but to be, as it were, a robbers Den to receive the stolen away glory of God, it must be abolished. It is true things necessary abused in regard of our corruption, are to be purged, and restored to their own use, but if
Q. VI. scandalous, or not scandalous.

they be useless, and of themselves have no fruit, but only, that they are fit to be abused, as useless pittes by the way side, and the Brazen Serpent, and a Razor put in the hand of a child, and images, they are to be removed, both subject and accident, for that they be uneetable of purgation, therefore they are capable only of abolition. It is not enough to say that we may devise a good use for them, as we may use Images to put us in remembrance of God, for we may never devise the use of a thing not necessarie in Religion, when we cannot devise the thing it selfe. But here we cannot devise the thing it selfe. Yea, if we devise the thing it selfe, the thing it selfe be good, and lawfully useful. As the eating of it selfe. flesh, yet if it be useless necessary, for the life, then the edification of my brother. The Apostle excellent rule, Rom. 14. v. 15, must stand as a law discharging my eating. No man for this or that meat which is less necessarie, ought to hinder the salvation of his brother, which is more necessarie, by destroying his brother for meat. For cleare it is, this or that meat, without which I may live, is of faire less necessarie comparatively, then the salvation of one for whom Christ died. True it is also, if my brother be scandalized, and so his soul in hazard, if I eat any at all, in that case, the scandal is more then passive, for though my brothers salvation be of greater consequent and necessarie then my temporal life, yet my total abstinence from meat is a killing of my selfe and heynous murther, and so forbidden in the first Commandement, and so a destroying of my own soule. And eating for conscience sake is necessarie, though eating of this or this meat be not necessary.

But there be other things that are instruments of idolatry and subservient thereunto, in a Common and Physicall influence, as a Temple builded to the honour of a Saint, and for the adoring of Images, and for the reading and opening the words of God in the New and old Testament, though in a corrupt way, these are not properly monuments of Idolatry. Now the house or Church, as such is no monument, nor useless instrument in worship, such as is a Surplice, a humane holy day, for it hath, as such, being a thing of walls and timber, no other, then that very same physicall influence in worshipping either the true God, or a Saint, that it hath in civil use, in our ordinary
ordinarie dwelling, to wit, to fence our bodies, in religious, in naturall, in civill actions, from injuries of heaven, clouds, and sin. The adjuncts of the Church, as Crucifixes, Images, Altars, Ravels, Maffe-clothes, and the like, are properly Monuments, and instruments of Idolatrie, because these are not necessary, as is the materiall house, nor have they any common and physicall influence in the worship, as the Temple hath, yea all the necessitie or influence that they have in the worship, is only religious and humane flowing from the will of men, without either necessitie from our naturall Constitution of body, or any word of Scripture, and therefore they are to be removed upon this ground, because they are unnecesfarie snares to Idolatrie.

Objest. This particular Temple or house builded for Saint Peter, S.Paul, S.Cuthbert is not necessarie for the worship of God, because other houses of as convenient use, and necessitie may be bad, for the worship of God, and this particular house ought to be demolished as Jeth 2 King. 10. 27. destroyed the house of Baaal, and made it a draughts-house, as the Law saith expressly, Deut. 7. 25. The graven images of their gods, shall ye burne with fire. thou shalt not defile the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it unto thee, lest thou be snared therein: for it is an abomination unto the Lord by God. v. 16. Neither shalt thou bring an abomination unto thy house, lest thou be a cursed thing like it, but thou shalt utterly destroy it, and thou shalt utterly abhorre it, for it is a cursed thing. Or at least these Churches may be employed for some other use, then for the worship of God, where they may bee snares.

Ans. 1. We are carefully to distinguishe between a law of Nature, or a perpetuall binding Morall law, which standeth for an eternall rule to us, except the Law-giver himselfe by a supervenient positive law, which serveth but for a time, doth loose us from an obligation thereunto, and a positive temporarie law. God saith in an expresse law, of nature, that obligeth us perpetuallly (The sinne shall not be put to death for the sinne of the father) no Magistrate on earth can lawfully take away the litle of the son, for the sin of the father, for this eternally obligeth. Yet Saul was to destroy the lutting of the childe, of the Amalekites for the sinnes of their fathers; but he had a positive temporarie command of God to warrant his fact. 1 Sam. 15. 2. 3.
none can infer that we are from this law, which was a particular exception, from a Catholic perpetually obliging moral law, that Magistrates are now to take away the lives of the sucking infants of Papists. So, this is perpetually and morally and warranteth us for ever to use all the creatures of God for our use. 1 Tim. 4. 4. Gen. 1, 27, 28, then we may lawfully use Gold, Silver, Houses, all creatures for meats, except some particular positive law, or some providential emergency necessitie forbid us, as the Ceremoniall laws of the Jews forbidding the eating of swines flesh; and some other meats, were no other thing, but Divine positive exceptions from the law of nature and creation, in which God had created swines flesh, and all these other forbidden meats for the use of Man, and so by the same reason, God hath ordain'd Church and houses to fence off us the injuries of Sanna, and Aire, in all our actions civil and religious, except that by a peculiar Precept, he forbid the use of the house of Baal, to the Jews, to be a typicall teachings of God hating of Idols and Idolatry, but not of our demolishing and making useless all houses builded to the honour of Idols and Saints under the New Testament, except we had the like Commandement that the Jews had.

Those who oppose us in this, can no more inhbitue us by any law of God, of the use of a creature granted to us by the law of nature, then they can interdye us of the use of another creature, nor are we more warrant to demolish Temples and material houses which have only a physickall and common use alike in all our actions, Naturall, civill, and Ecclesiasticall or Religious, then of eating swines flesh, or of other meats forbidden in the Ceremonial Law, and to answer to the Argument, this or that material house builded to the honour of Paul and Peter is every way as necessary in the worship of God, as a Temple builded of purpose for the worship of God; though another house may conduct as much for the worshipping of God as this, yet it hath the same very necessary, use, and physickall conveniency, for the serving of God, that any other house hath, which was never builded for the honour of a Saint, which I approve, because no creature of God that is useful to us, by the law of creation, is capable of any moral contagion, to strike an unlawfull

How houses and Temples builded to Saints are not to be demolished.
The necessity that makes things

It is unlawful to us, but from the mere will of God, as the Gold and Silver, and Idol-houses of the false Gods, and Images of Canaan are intrinsically, and by the Law of creation, as pure, and morally clean, as the Gold and Silver and Synagogues of the Jews, and had their Physical and civil necessity, the one, as the other had. But from whence was it that the Jews might make use of their own Silver and Gold, and houses, and not of the houses, or Silver and gold of the heathen Gods and Idols? Certainly this was from God's mere positive will and commands, forbidding the Gold and houses of the Idols of Canaan, and not forbidding the other, the Adversaries can give no other reason; therefore they must give us the same positive Commandments, for not making use of the Gold and Silver, and Temples, of the Popish Idols, and Synagogues under the New Testament, that the Jews had for refusing the Gold and Silver, and demolishing the Temples of the heathenish Idols of Canaan. And if they say, The very command that warranted the Jews to abstain from the use of the heathen Gold and Idol-temples, did warrant us so also from the use of the Gold and Idol Temples of Papists, be it answered, we have no warrant from the Word, but it shall warrant us as well as abstinence from Minions flesh; if it be replied, every creature of God was able to Good, and may be used lawfully; it is answered, so all gold, all silver, all houses serving to fence off the injuries of heaven and aire, are good, and fit for Mans use, and now blessed in Christ under the New Testament, except you say, that it is not lawfull to make use of the Gold and Silver of a Popish Image, nor of trees of the Papists' fields that beareth no fruit, for these also were discharged to the Jews, Deut. 20 v. 19 20; and the reason why they might not cut down the trees, that beareth fruit, was, because these trees were mans life, Deuter. 20 v. 19, whereas trees that beare no fruit were to be cut down, as not so necessarie for mans life. Now this reason is moral and pernicious, and so are houses to fence off the injuries of the clouds in Mans life; except they be forbidden by a positive law of God, and so necessarie as without the use of houses no worshipping of God can be ordinarily; and therefore in the second place, as we use Gold, Silver, Temples, and materiall houses (though abused to Idolatry)
because the Lord hath created them for our use, his law of Creation warranting us to use them, so can we not refrain from the use of them, though abused by Papists, except we have a speciall positive law to warrant us to refrain from the use of these necessarie creatures of God, to usefull for the life of man; For according to the grounds of these against whom we now dispute, the Garments of silke or cloth of Gold, that hath covered Popish Images, the Gold and Silver of the Popish Images, though melted and dissolved into innocent mettall, the Materiall Temples builded to the honour of Saints, are to be cast away and utterly abolished, as unlawfull to be used in any sort, for the Jewses according to the Law, Deut. 7. 19. 20. might make no use of the gold or silver of the Heathen Image, and Achan brought a curse on himselfe, for the simple taking for his use, the wedge of Gold, and the Babylonish Garment. Now we have no law in the New Testament to abandon the use of the creatures, for as Cornelius was not to count that meat unclean, which God had closed, Acts 10. 15. So neither are we to count Silver and Gold, and houses usefull, which God in the Creation made Good, and usefull for our life, and therefore no morall contagion can adhere to to these creatures, as we are utterly to disuse them, as creatures cursed, because they were abused, except it can be proved that the abuse of them hath deprived us of the necessarie use, that they have by the law of Creation, for certaine it is, as the killing of the sucking infants of the Amalekites was typically, and yet not us to kill the young children of Papists, so was the disusing, or not using of Gold, Silver and Houses, abused to Idolatrie, typically.

And before I come to the second Conclusion, An house for the worship of God is amongst the things that are necessarie, by way of disjunction, in specie, not in individuum, that is, a house is necessarie, in its Physical use, to fence off our bodies, the injuries of Sunne, Aire, and heaven, but not this house, for another house may serve the same as conveniently. But some object, That this, or this house, Dedicated superstitiously to the religious honour of a Saint ought to be removed out of the worship of God, 1. because by your owne confession, This individual house so abused is not necessarie. God may well be worshipped, without this.

No Houses, no Temple, no creatures, are now unclean under the New Testament.
This house, though it never had been, in return a natural. 2. From the worshipping of God in so Superstitious a place, many truly godly are so scandalized, that for worshipping God in such Superstitious and Idolatrous places, they have Separated from your Church, conceiving that in so doing you heal the wounds of the Beast. It is true, it may be their weakness, you but do it so, that it were their wickedness, that they are scandalized, yet by your doctrine, in things not necessarie you are not so doing anything by which either she weakens or she wicked may be scandalized: as is clear by the eating of meats, Rom. 14.

This argument may 2. be retorted against those who hold with us the same doctrine of Scandal, for, without eating of Swines flesh my life may be preferred, and a malicious Jew may be, and necessarily is highly scandalized, that I, who possibly am a Jew converted to the Christian faith, do eat Swines flesh before him, for he conceiveth me to be an Apologist from Moses his law, therefore I should abstaine from eating Swines flesh before a Jew, who out of Malice is scandalized, by my doing a thing not necessarie, lic or none. But the conclusion is absurd: nor doe I think that many truly godly of the Strictest Separation doe Humble at our Churches out of wickedness. Many truly Godly and Sincere refuse to come to our Churches, whereas many scandalous, well lustered hypocrites, who know not nothing of the power of godlineesse, but are stitten downe in the Scorner's Chaire are admitted to the Lord's Supper, and as the former cannot be excused, so I pray God, that the latter draw not downe the wrath of God upon both Kingdomes.

2. Things not necessarie which actuely produce scandal must not be only indifferent Physically in their natural use, as This or this house: but they must be indifferent both Physically and Morally, for the Meats spoken of, Rom. 14, at that time, were both wayes indifferent. 2. They were not necessarie but indifferent Physically in an ordinarie providence, both then and now, for ordinarily my life may be preferred, and suffer little losse by not eating Swines flesh, or such meats, in case of extreme necessarie ofstaining; if any could have no other meat, they might eat then as the case was, Rom. 14, because Mercies is better then Sacrifice at alltimes. 2. These things Rom. 14, were indifferent
Theologically or Morally in their owne nature, this is: Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth, for God hath received him. 2. Because v. 17. The kingdom of God is not meat and drink: sure, in Moses his time, to abstaine from such meats, and eat such, as the Lamb of the Passover, the Manna, to drink of the water of the Rock, was worship, and for some part of the kingdom of heaven, but it is not so now, saith Paul. 3. Paul clearly maketh them Morally indifferent. 1 Cor. 8. 8. But meat commendeth us not to God, for neither if we eat, are we better (in moral and before God) neither if we eat not, a worse (Morally, the worse). Now this Temple or House Physically is indifferent, and not necesarie for the worship of God, for men may be defended from the injuries of Sunne and aire. Though this house had never been in remum natura. But this Temple or house though dedicated to a Saint is not Morally indifferent, but Morally necessarie, so as if you remove it from the worship, because abused to Idolatry, and give it in no use in the defending of our bodies from the injuries of the Wind, Rains and Sunne, you Induce, and doe actively scandalize the Jews, and harden them in their Apostasie; and so this house though abused to Idolatry, is not indifferent Morally, as the meats Rom. 14. But the using of it is necessarie and an afftert, of our Christian libertie, as to eat blood, and things strangled, and Swines flesh even before a Jew, so to use all houses for a physical end to defend our bodies from heat and cold, is a part of the libertie wherewith Christ hath made us free. But Ceremonies have no natural and physical use. The crossing of the aire with the Thumbe, the keeping of a day religiously without warrant of the Word, are not taught in the Schoole of Nature, and so are naturally not necessarie as This or this house, though abused to Superstition is, and the Adversaries which say they are Morally indifferent, as good, and as Spiritual Ceremonies in kind and nature, may be devised in their place. But in all this dispute of Scandal, we give, but doe never grant that the Ceremonies are indifferent, wee dispute here that they are scandalous, and so unlawful in their use, upon the principles of Formalists, whereas we judge them in their nature, because they
they have not God, but the will of men or be their father wild author, to be unlawful, and repugnant to Scripture, because not warranted by either command, practice, or promise in Scripture.

2. Conclus. As some things physically necessarie must be abstained from, when the unreasonable using thereof is a stumbling block to our weak brother, in the case of the moral indifference of the thing, as it was in the eating, or not eating of meats once forbidden by God's law, but then indifferent. Rom. 14. 14. 1 Cor. 8. 8. For then it was true (but now commanded as not to God; for murther if we eat we are the better, neither of my one not, and we the worse;) So in the case of physical indifference, but of Moral and Theological necessity, when an Evangelical law of Christian libere was passed a determination upon eating, or not eating; Then to abstain from eating upon a pretended fear of not offending a weak Jew, is actively to lay a stumbling block before a weak Jew, and to harden him in Indiference, and here using of such meats, and the affirmative to use to eat is lawful and necessarie, the thing being now morally necessarie, not morally indifferent, whereas before, the negitive to wit, not to eat was lawfull and necessarie. Hence to eat, Rom. 14. 1 Cor. 8. 8. For a weak Jew, was lawfull and necessarie; for a weak Jew, and that same nature being morally indifferent, and to abstain from eating before a weak Jew. Gal. 1. 14. 15. Gal. 3. 15. 16. Gal. 5. 12. 3. is unlawful and an actibe scandal, because now eating is morally necessarie, and a standing in, and an offering of the libere wherein Christ has made his free. And upon the same ground, for the Jews, when the Ceremonial law stood in vigor, to make use of Bibles, Tripples, for a synagogue, was the worship of the true God, was unlawful and against a Ceremonial Command of God, as was the sacrificing of the animals to the Lord, and the using of the Silver and Gold of the Canaanites idols. Deut. 17. 12. 1 Cor. 8. 5. 5. 12. 15. But when these things forbidden were in the case of moral indifference, as were certain meats, Rom. 14. 1 Cor. 8. 7. and 8. to the Jews not unlawful, by reason of any such Ceremonial Commandment, only by the unprofitable using or
before weak Jews, they were scandalous. But the same sad
hurtles, Silver and Gold now, when we are fully perfected in
hollies, Silver and Gold now, when we are fully perfected in
that hierarch, whereof Christ has made us free. We are to be used
under the God's law, by the ancient law of creation, that now to
abstain from the use of hollies, Gold and Silver, abused to idol-
atic and worshiping of either popish saints or idols, and the
hierarch. And upon this ground to die Churches
are to be used, as the hollies, matured with Christ's". As the
hollies, matured with Christ's
accessarie to that harlotrie, especially seeing Idols formally remaining so are, ex naturæ, for no other end, but for Idolatrie; they have no necessarie physicall use for the life of man; for more, if they be the portraits of the Father, Sonne, or holy Spirit: if they be of stone, or of anything, that cannot be useful for man's life, then must they be defaced and broken, lest we lay the stumbling block of our iniquitie before others. Now, it from any law of the termes, or practice of Moses, and Ezekiel, houses builded to the honour of Saints, Silver and Gold of Idols, were, to be made use of, in their physicall use, in the worship of God, or for our civil use, then were we, upon that ground, to dissolve the stones and timber of such a house, and to bray, and stamp the Silver and Gold into powder, as these holy Rulers did. People here fleeing from Antichrist, full evidently in Tares, and make themselves with the Galatians, debtors to Circumcision, and all the Ceremonies of Moses, which thing we condemn in the Anti-Christ.

Objec. If we must abstain from the use of no creature granted to us, by the law of creation, except we have the warrant of a positive Ceremoniall law for it, then the Romans were not so for beare eating of such and such meats, before a weak Jew, for feare to scandalize him for whom Christ died. But this later is untrue; for by the law of nature, and a perpetual law, Paul would never for meat offend his brother: the law of nature Christ will dictate this to us, without any positive mandate, we are not for a mouth full of meat, the loss whereof is so small, to put the soul of our brother to so incomparable a hazard, as to be lost.

Anf. These meats, Rom. 14, and 1 Cor. 8, 10, were then indifferent, but they are not so now, when the Gospel is fully promulgated, for we may now to abstain from meats forbidden in the Ceremoniall law, for feare to offend a weak Jew, for our abstinence should hinder them in their unbelief, that Christ is not yet come in the flesh. To make Temples and houses dedicated to Saints, as indifferent now as meats we e't, and the argument were concludent. But to demolish Churches, and remove their physicall use now were, as Judas, as to for beare to eat Swines flesh. We are not to deprive our selves of the physicall use of any creature, as of this, or this meat, as thinking we
we are bound by any law of God to forbear the use thereof, and especially we are not to doe it, as conceiving we are under the eye of a law given to the Jews, whereas we are under no such eye, or law, at all. But the disputing of Temples dedicated to Saints, that the Adversaries plead for, Deut. 7, is a total renouncing of all use of them, & the places they allege from the Ceremoniall law doth conclude it: for the Temples, silver and gold of the Idols of Canaan were altogether useless to Israel. It was Achan's sin, that he took the Babylonish garment, and the wedge of Gold; for any use civil or religious, though he should have bestowed these for any religious use, or the relief of the poor and indigent: yea, though it was scandalous to none, he having taken these privately and by stealth, the very taking of them was a curse to him, and the whole Camp of Israel, for the total abandoning of all use whatsoever of these houses, Gold and Silver, which in themselves, and by the law of Creation were physicall, and in regard of that natural use they had from their Creator to supply our necessities, can have its rise from no other total and complete cause, but from the sole positive will of God, discharging his people of the whole use of these creatures at all, as if they had never been created for the use of man, whether their use should be scandalous to others, or not scandalous. But by the law of nature, which, I grant, faith (Thou shalt not scandalize nor murder the soule of him, for whom Christ's body died.) The Romans, Rom. 14. and the Corinthians, 1 Cor. 8 were forbidden the eating of fleshes forbidden in Moses law. But with these two restrictions, they were forbidden not all eating of these meats in private, but only in the presence of a weak Jew, and for the conscience of others, in the case of scandal, 1 Cor. 10 28, 29. (2) They were not by the law of nature that inhibites scandal, forbidden the total use of these meats, in any case, so as they should make these meats utterly useless to themselves, or to any others. As the Jews were forbidden to make use of the Canaanish Idols, Gold and money: And of the Cattle of the Amalekites, either secretly or openly, either in the case of scandal given to others, or not given. And Achan paid deare for his Babylonish garment, and his wedge of Gold, though he took it by theft.
Ob. 2. But the reason of the law, is the soule of the law. Now the reason of the Law, Deut. 7. 25. why God forbade his people to take the Gold or Silver of the graven image, is lest they be ensnared therein. But this reason holdeth under the New Testament, and is moral and perpetual. The very most religious houses dedicated to Saints and Labs, by Papists, is a snare to our soules: if we shall worship God in them, or if we shall name the Church from Cuthbert, Giles, or the like, except we would say, as Papists do, that we are not now, under the New Testament, so much inclined to Idolatry, as the people of the Jews were of old.

And the halfe-reason or incompleat morall ground of the law is not the soule of the law: But you must take in all the reasons, the words of the text are these. Thou shalt not defile the silver and gold that is on them, nor take it to thee; lest thou be ensnared therein: for it is an abomination unto the Lord thy God. v. 26. Neither shalt thou bring an abomination into thine house, lest thou be a cursed thing like it. Now what made that Gold an abomination to the Lord, more then all the gold of the earth? it is of it selfe the good and usefull creature of God, no lesse then all the gold of the earth: nothing made it an abomination to God, but, if we look to the original cause, there was a positive, free command of God forbidding Israel to covet, or use that Gold. The Canaanites themselves, by the law of nature might lawfully have melted that same very Gold, and made use of it, without sinne. 3. It is not a good reason, Such a Law had a morall and perpetual reason. Ergo, the law is selfe is perpetuall and morall. It followeth only: Ergo, the moral of that law is perpetual. For all the Ceremoniall laws had a morall and perpetual reason: As the shadows had a moral substantiall ground in Christ, the bodie of all those lips: but it doth not follow therefore the shadows and Ceremoniall law in the letter must bee perpetual: Very often in the booke of Levitices, there is no reason given of the Ceremoniall laws. But, be ye holy, I am the Lord, that sanctifie you. This is a morall and perpetual reason, that endureth to the end of the world, yet it is no due consequence: therefore all these shadowes and Ceremonies shall endure to the end of the world, The reason is, because it is the sole positive will of God that maketh a temporary concatenation.
tion between not eating blood, and not being cruel, and between sacrificing and being holy, and yet not being cruel is perpetual, not eating blood temporarie. (3) If things indifferent, as the eating of flesh, before a weak Jew, Rom. 14, be a snare to my own soul and to the souls of others: I am to abstain from these and the like. But that I must abstain from the total use of any creature that God has made useful for the life of man, by the law of creation, as Israel was to abstain from the cattell of the Amalakites, and to stamp in powder, and make altogether useless the Gold and Silver of the heathen Idol-Gods, is altogether unlawful, and a very Judaizing, and its to make, as Paul faith, Jesus Christ of no effect.

Object. 3. But at least we are to abstain, for scandal's sake, from worshipping the true God, in these Temples, and houses abused to idolatry. lest we lay a stumbling-block before others, even as the Romans and Corinthians were to abstain from meats, before such meakes Jews, as conceived these meats to be unlawful; seeing the loss of such meats, and abstinence, for a time, was nothing comparable to the loss of one sole for whom Christ died, so the losing of the use of a material house in a religious use, so it be employed to some civil use, and be not totally lost, is nothing comparable to the scandalizing and insnaring of the souls, both of Jews and meake Christians, which will certainly follow, if we use Temples dedicated to Saints, in God worship.

Ans. It is true, the loss of the use of a material Temple, is nothing comparable to active scandal, which is the destroying of any soul. But the refusing to worship God in these material Temples because abused to Idolatry, were not only a diffusing of the creature, without any warrant from God, but an open Judaizing, and an active scandal both to Jews and Christians, though we should employ the houses to civil use, for any external conformity with the Jews, when the thing is not indifferent, in religious acts, such as is the diffusing of the Churches, is Judaizing; for should we now use Circumcision and the Passover with an open, printed and professed intention to signify Christ already come in the flesh, and should make an open declaration against the Jewish intention in these ordinances; we should no less be Judaizing, than Peter, who Galt.
did only practice an external conformity with the Jews, with no Jewish intention, but he was persuaded that Christ was already come in the flesh: yet was he justly rebuked by Paul, for Judaizing. For the loss of an house in a material or physical use of it, I grant it is not comparable to the loss of a Son. But the losing of it on a religious ground, is another thing. When the religious loss of the house is not indifferent, as was the Abstinence from some meats indifferent then, but sinfully scandalous before a weak brother.

Ob. 4. But if the worshipping of the true God in these material temples, be no lesse an ensnaring of us in popish idolatrie, then the using of the Gold and Silver of the Canaanites' idols, then we are to disuse all worshipping of God in these houses, as well as they were: But the former is true, for we may be no lesse ensnared with material houses, then they.

Anf. I deny the major Proposition, for the eating of blood, the taking of both the young bird, and the damne in the nest, was an ensnaring of the Jews to crueltie, through their abuse of the creatures, the use whereof God had made both lawfull and necessary to them in the Creation. The blood was the life of the beast, and the Lord required in us mercy, to our beast's life, whereas the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel, Prov.12:10. yet is it not lawfull for us to devise any way, we please, to keepe us from being ensnared in crueltie, for then upon the same ground, it were unlawfull for us to eat blood, contrary to the express word of God, Rom.14 14. 1 Cor. 10. 25. 26. 1 Tim. 4. 3. 4. God by a positive and Ceremoniall Command hedged in the people of the Jews, from being ensnared in Idolatrie, and, by some Ceremonies, taught them to detest all Idolatrie: but it doth not follow, that we Christians are to inure our hearts, from being ensnared with Idols, and to a detestation of Idolatrie, by these same Ceremonies that they were commanded, for then we were obliged to stamp the Golden and Silver idols, to dust and powder: and to cast the powder into the river, as Moses did the Golden Calfe, Deut. 9 21. and behaved to drinke of that water, Exod. 32. 20. 1 Chron. 15. 16. 2 Kings. 18. 4. so it followeth no ways, though the physickall use of a materiall Temple, should ensnare us to Idolatrie, that we are therefore to disuse that house; except
except we had the same Ceremonyall command to warrant us, that the Jews had, and by this argument, you may bring us backe to observe all the Ceremonies of Moses his law, Because all these Ceremonies were appointed in the wisdome of God, either to keepe us from being insnared in some sinne, and to raile, in our heart, a detestation thereof, or to teach us somewhat of Christ, of whom we be naturally ignorant and forgetfull.

Ob. 5. But at your first reformation of the Church of Scotland, your Reformers, such as M. Knox, and others, demolished most of the fairest Churches in that Land, and for no other reason, but because they had been nests of popish idolatrie.

Anf. That Churches in so farre as their use extendeth, farther then to the commodious propugluation of injuries of Sunne and Asie, be demolished, we can well allow, for these that were demolished by our Reformers of blessed memorie; nor so spacious and inconvenient for hearing the word of God and celebration of the Sacraments, being ordained for Masses, Idols, for blind superstition, that the very length, breadth, height, beauty, and glory of them might redound to the glory of Saints and Idols, that it was reason they should be demolished in so farre as they conducted nothing for the physicall and necessarie end, for which Churches are ordained under the New Testament; And thus farre we allow of the breaking of Images, Crosses, Crucifixes, and all Monuments of Idolatrie, so as the matter of all these, whether Timber, Marble stones, Metall of Gold, Silver, Braffe, or the like to be imploied, for the necessarie use of mans life, but that all their superstitious forme and religious use be utterly abolished. As for the abolishing of Bells abused in time of Popery; because they have a necessarie and physicall use to give warning for the reasonable convening of the people of God, to the publick worship, I see no ground, for it, from Deut. 7. or other places, but we must be necessitate to stamppe to powder the very Metall of Bells, and to render them not only useless in Churches, but any other way tending to the good of mans life.

Objection. But Num. 21. 21. 22: Eccl. I, 19, 19, 20; says that skins, and vessels of wood taken from Midian, though taken as spoile, were purifi-
ed, and the Gold and Silver, brass, iron, c. were purified by fire.

Answer. Bells for the convening of the people, to publick worship not to be abolished, though they have been abused to superstition.
and not made useless, so the Churches dedicated to Mary, Peter, and to Angels, and Saints, are not to be made useless, they may be employed for the poor to dwell in, but they can have no religious use in the worship of God, except we would beat the wounds of the daughter of Babel.

 Ans. I deny not but Churches dedicated to Saints, and in regard of their value and offensive spaciousness unprofitable for hearing the Word, may be employed to civil uses for ordinary dwelling; But I see no ground how this can be according to the places cited by our godly Brethren of the contrary mind except the Churches were first purified, in some Ceremonial way, as God prescribeth that the spoyle of Midian be purified, which our Brethren cannot say, except we would make our selves debtors to the whole Law, for so the law was, Num. 31, and so Paul doth reject Circumcision, Gal. 3. 3. and if it be said the necessity of the poor required that these Temples be not looked in, but employed for the poor, as David in point of necessity eat the Shew-bread. I answer 2. The poor, as the case was, Rom. 14, might eat Swines-flesh, and so enslave him, for whom Christ died, which is absurd, for their necessity might require it. But certaine it is, Davids necessity was laid on him by the first Commandement as an act of mercy in the point of starving, and if any poor Jew were in the like case, I conceive it should have been scandalizing to that Jew to eat Swines-flesh, before another weake Jew. Providential necessity may make that which is a sinfull scandalizing to bee obedience to the first Commandement, but the will of Superiors can make no such providentiall change as the D. of Aberdeene doe dreame. But if the necessity be lesser then the Necessitie in point of starving, it could justifie the poor Jews eating of meats conceived to be against the law of God, as the case was. Rom. 14. But that the Church or house dedicated to a Saint, should have no physicall use in the worship of God, to defend us from the injuries of Sunne and Heaven, and yet have the same use, in common, for the poor to dwell in, wanteth all shadow of reason, for how can it be proven that the same physicall use in the worship is unlawful, and yet out of worship is lawfull? except there intervene some Ceremoniall and religious purging of the
house, by fire or some other way, which were Judaical under the 
New Testament, for the necessity of the poor, is not like the necessity 
of David's eating of Shew-bread: Its certain, that the necessity 
of bringing the creature in a Physical usage, in the worship, must 
have a warrant in Scripture, as well as the using of the same, in the 
same usage, must have the like warrant.

Object 5. But Bells are more hurtful to the souls of God's people, 
who are scandalized by them, then they are useful for the symmone and 
seasonable convening of the people, and therefore they may well be abolished; being less necessary, and necessary only ad melius esse, for the better ordering of the Worship of God, and not simply necessary for the being of the Worship. Now as the Lord our God will have a lesser necessity so ye must any greater, a bodily necessity to give place to a soul-necessity (the soul being more excellent than the body) as is clear in that God would have his people to dispense with the lesser loss of the spoil of the Amalekites of their Idols, gold and silver, that the greater necessity may stand, so wis; their not being allured, nor their teeth put a watering, and their heart to a lifting after the Idols of Canaan; so would he have us to abolish the Saints Temples, the gold of Popish Images, the Bells of those less necessary (seeing the Sun may teach as well as the Bell) for eschewing soul-dangers in laying stumbling blocks, both before our own souls, and others.

Answ. 1. It is denied, that Bells which have a necessary use, 
though only for the better ordering of the worship of God, are 
any active objects of scandal, and the meer passive scandal taken 
at any thing not indifferent, but physically necessary, and so necess-
sary, that without it sinful inconveniences of either weareing in the 
service of God, or sinful neglect should follow, is no sinful scandal 
given, but meerly taken.

2. There be two necessities of things, one natural, and first in 
that regard, another religious, and in that regard secondary; the 
former necessity doth always stand, except God remove it by some 
posterior commandment. Its necessary, that Adam and Eva 
eat of all things that God created for eating. God (I grant) 
may remove this necessity in some, and command either Adam to 
fast for a time, or not to eat of the tree of Knowledge: So say I; 
warning by Bells hath a physical necessity, the use of the Temples 
in worshipping, hath the like necessity, to have Gold and Silver a 
necessity.
necessity. God only, either by a Commandment, or by an exigence of providence that standeth to us (as in the case of a scandal) for a command can remove the physical necessity, and inhibit Israel to use such and such Gold, as have been in use in the Heathen Idols, and may forbid to perform an act of obedience to an affirmative command in the case of scandal, as he may forbid Paul to take wages for Preaching the Gospel, though Paul have some natural necessity of taking wages. But the Church without a higher warrant from God, hath no power to restrain us in the necessary use that God hath given us. Make Bells and Temples as indifferent and unnecessary as some meats were, Rom. 14, and I shall yeeld the Argument.

3. That the Lord our God will have a bodily necessity at the small, so yeeld to a soul-necessity at the greater, is a ground not so sure, but it ought to have been proved, except by a soul-necessity, you mean a necessity of saving the soul, and not sinning against God, and oppose it to a mere bodily necessity, including no sin in it, then I shall grant the Assertion, That the one necessity is greater than the other. But otherwise, Ceteris paribus, other things being alike, I conceive it is contradicted by Jesus Christ's saying, Matt. 17, cited out of Hosea, Chap. 6. I will have mercy, and not sacrifice. And here we must determine the case of scandal to the soul from the exasperation of necessity to the body and life. The case falleth out, David and his followers are at the point of starving for hunger (it may be a question if the present necessity be so great) there being no bread for them, but the Shew-bread, which by a Ceremonial Law of God, onely the Priests should eat. If any of the followers of David out of a groundlesse scrupulosity of conscience should have taken Paul's Argument, Rom. 14, and said to David, I will starve rather, ye I eat this bread; for a divine law forbids me, and if thou eat of it, it shall be a scandal to me, and wilt thou for bread destroy him for whom Christ died? The Apostle Paul would not, for so small a thing, as to eat swines flesh before a weak Jew, in the case, Rom. 14, destroy the soul of one for whom Christ died, by laying before him a stumbling block, by his unreasonable and scandalous eating, I think (if Scripture cannot possibly be contrary to Scripture) this doubt might easily be removed, by answering the case was
not alielc with David in his hunger, and so in a Physicall and
naturall necessity to save his owne temporall life, that by all
probabilitie was in great danger, and these who being in no
such necessity, did eat such meats scandalous, and so destructive
to the soules of weake ones, and having variety of other meats
to keep them from starving, and so a meere necessity of prese-
vning the bodily life, if we compare one affirmative command
of God, with another, may remove that which may be suppos-
ed a soule necessity. And the reason is, because in the doctrine
of scandal, which is more intricate and obscure then every
Divine conceives, God placeth acts of providential necessity as
emergent significations of his approving will, which are so to us,
in place of a divine Commandement of Gods revealed will, and
these providential acts of necessity doe no lesse oblige us to morall
obedience, then any of the expresse written Commandements of God.
I cleare it thus. There is an expresse law. It is sin and unlawfull
for David, or any man, who is not one of the Lords Priests, to eat
show-bread. But God commeth in, and putteth David in such
a posture of divine providence, that if he eat not show bread,
he shall be sinfully guilty of violating a higher morall law of
God, who saith, I will have mercy and not sacrifice. Then Da-
vil shall be cruel to his owne life, and sinne against the first
Commandement. Thou shalt doe no murder. If he eat not, for
not to eat, when you are in a providential condition of starving,
if you may have it, is to kill your selfe, and this providential
condition doth no lesse oblige you to the Morall obedience of the
first Command, then if God in the letter of the Law should
command you to eat. This fact of David was not done by
any extraordinarie impulsion of the Spirit, but by a constant
chanell that Providence ordinarilie runneth in, according to
which I, or any Proffesor must be obliged to preffere a worke
of Mercy to Sacrifice, that is, by which we are to give obedi-
ence to the first Command, which is not to kill, even as with-
out extraordinarie impulsion, I may abstain my selfe from hear-
ing the Word, when I find going to Church may indanger
my life, for non-obedience to affirmatives, in a greater neces-
tie, is ordinarie. And therefore Christian prudence, with which
the Wisdom of God keeps house, Prov. 3. 12. doth determine

A most necessarie rule to be observed in the doctrine of
scandall, that emergent providences of na-

turall necessity are to us in
place of divine commands, in
some cases.
Rules touching the necessity of many things of scandal: And prudence is a virtue commanded in the word of God, for a wise man observes times; and so will he observe all other circumstances, yet there be rules here which standeth always, and they be these. 1. Comparing a physical and merely natural necessity with a moral necessity, if we yield to the physical necessity, and neglect the moral, we sin against God, and may lay a stumbling blocke before others; as to eat such meats, where the loss is small, and the necessity of eating merely physical, and the eating be a scandal to the weak, we sinne and give scandal, the case is clear; Rom. 14. for eating; (the case being indifferent, as it was, Rom. 14.) is a mere physical necessity, and not scandalizing a weak brother, is a moral necessity. 2. Rule, if we compare a greater moral necessity with a lesser moral necessity, the lesser necessity must yield to the greater, a necessity of mercy must yield to a necessity of sacrificing; if David then should not have eaten the shew-bread, in his providential necessity of famine, he should have been guiltie both of active scandalizing the souls of others in killing himselfe, and should have killed himselfe, and the lesser moral necessity ceaseth, and is no necessity, when a greater moral necessity interveneth. 3. Rule, Where there is a physical necessity of the thing, yet not extreme, and a moral necessity of abstaining, we are to abstain; The Jews had a physical necessity of the Babylonish Garments, but not so extreme, in point of perishing through cold, as David had of Shew-bread, in point of serving for famine, therefore Achan should have obeyed the morall necessity of not touching the accursed thing; and neglected the physical necessity, which if it had amounted to the degrees of necessity of mercy, rather then obeying a Ceremoniall Command, such as was (Touch not the accursed spoyle.) Achan might, without sinne or scandal, to himselfe or others, have medled with the spoyle. 4. Rule. That which is necessary, in specie, in the kind, as to goe to Church and heare the Word, so come to the house of God and Worship, may be, in individuo, in a particular exigence of providence, not morally necessary, but the contrascent thereof morally lawfull. David doth lawfully forbear to come to the Lords house, if he knew Saul may kill him, by the way. 5. The things which we are so forbear only for necess-
things scandalous or not scandalous.

sitio of scandal, and upon no other ground, these I may doe in private, if I know they cannot come to the notice of these who shall be scandalized, upon the ground of lecfe physical necessity; as Rom. 14. beleivers, for their necessity ordinarie, and for nourishment, might eat fleshes in private, though before a weak Jew they could not, because the sinne is not in the act of eating, but wholly in the scandal, and in the manner of the unreasonable doing of it. But these things which are morally not necessary, because the substance of the fact is against a law we are to forbear, both in private, because they are against a law, and in publick, before others, for the scandal. as Achan sinned in taking the Babylonish Garment, though in private, and his sinne should have been more scandalous, if he had done it publickly; Now these we are upon no ordinarie necessity to doe, but such as may incroach upon the hazard of the losse of life, in which case an exigence of providence, does stand for a Command of non-murdering, had Saul and his Army been reduced to a danger of starving in a wilderness, and could have no food, except they should kill, and eat the Cattell of the Amalakites, I conceive, The Lords preferring of Merece before Sacrifice, should warrant them to eat of the Amalakites Cattell, yet would this providential necessity be so limited, as it may fall out, that it stand not for a divine Command; for it holdeth in affirmative commands only, and so positive as there must be, yea there can be no sin eligible by such and such a case, as Lot sinned in exposing his daughters to the lust of men, to redeeme abstinence from Sodomis.

Hence it is cleare, we may not doe a lefse, nor counsell another to commit a lefse sinne, to eschew a greater; as the Jesuites wickedly teach. So Tannerus, so Turriana, and others who make a scandalum permittum, a scandal that a Christian may hinder another to fall in, and yet he permitteth him to fall in it. But God hath a prerogative to permit sinfull scandals, men have no such power, when they are obliged to hinder it. The divinitie of others seemeth better to me, who deny that the least veniall should be committed to eschew a greater sinne.

6. Rule. There is a principle obligation, a lefse principle, a least principle. Hence these three degrees issue from love, 1. God, 6. Rule.
2. Our selves. 3. Our Neighbour: The love of God is most principle, and is the measure of the love of our selves: the love of our selves is less principally, then the love of God, and so the obligation lesse. I am to make away, life and all things, yea eternall glory as devided from holinesse, and as it included only happiness, rather ere I sinne against God. The obligation to care for my owne salvation, is more principally, then my obligation to care for the salvation of my Brother: for the love of my selfe is the measure and rule of the love of my Neighbour. Now because the obligation of caring for the soule of my brother is only secondary, in compare of the obligation of caring for my owne salvation, I am not to sinne my selfe, or sinfully to omit any thing that is commanded me in a positive precept, to prevent the sinne of my brother. Yet hence it doth not follow, that a positive Precept is more excellent, then the law of Nature, which is (Thou shalt not murther, nor scandalize him for whom Christ died.) Because though to care for the soule of my brother be of the law of nature simpliciter, yet is a secondary obligation: and may cease and yeeld, to a stronger obligation that tyeth me more principally to care, for my owne soule, for though the Command be positive, yet knowingly to sinne, by a sinfull omission, is no lesse a destroying of my owne soule, and so of the law of nature, in a higher obligation, then the other is.

7. Rule. A scandal may flow from ignorance and corruption, and so be taken, when it also kindly issueth from the sinfull or unseasonable fact of another, and so is also kindly given.
Q. VI. things scandalous or not scandalous.

...mies to the Truth, and were so scandalized at David's murdering of Uriah, and Adulterie, 2 Sam. 12. 14, as they were by him occasioned to blaspheme. Certaine their actual scandal was from their owne corruption. But what? Ergo, it was not also from David's murder and adulterie? and ergo it was a scandal only taken by the enemies, not given by David? Surely it followeth not. You may hence judge of the Rule of Lodo Caspenis, a Capucian. These (faith he) that doe a work of it selfe indifferent, for a weightie cause, and use their owne right, ut uterum tuum jure, are excused from mortall sinne, as those who lese a house to Whores, and publicke Users, that are not strangers, though they may commodiously lett it to others, they doe not cooperate with sinne, because the house is but a place, and extrinsically call and remote to the sinne. So Christians taken by Turkes for danger of their life, (which is a weighty necessitye) may furnish instruments necessarie for warre against Christians because they doe a work indifferent of itselfe, for a just cause: so may a servante convey his Master to a Whore, yea and make the Bed for a Concubine, and open the doore, and if his Master be to clime in at a window, a where he may lift up his foot, or reach him a ladder. Why? the servante (faith he) use his owne right in doing a work of it selfe indifferent, utiux suo jure, faciens opus e se indifferentem, modo non placatui ei pecatum.

...A. But sure, all our jus and right that men have over their houses, and that Captives and servantes have to their Masters and Lords, is justi limitatum, a right ruled, limited, bounded by the word of God, nor is the worke they performe morally indifferent, (physically it is) and Captive Christians, if for danger of their life, they may prepare necessary instruments of warre against Christians, they may kill Christians also: for what power the conquering Lords have over Captives to command them to prepare fire and sword, against the innocent witnesses of Jesus Christ, because they are such, the same jus right have they to command to kill the innocent. But for no cause the mostweighty, can we choose either to shed innocent blood, or to cooperate with the shedding of it, nor, to cooperate with the works of darkness, for it is shamefull that a servante may lawfully cooperate with, and thrust his master in at a window, to go...
Rules touching the Necessitie of

Q. VI.

saw, where the jus or dominion of Masters to command, and
the right of servants to obey is only in the Lord. Yes to kill a
man is Physically indifferent, for that is physically, yea morally
without relation to any law indifferent, which is capable of
lawfulness or unlawfulness, according as it shall bee com-
manded of, or forbidden by God. But for a man to kill his
son, is of it selfe such, certaine, if God command a Judge to
kill his son, it is lawfull for the father to kill his son, if the
Lord forbid Abraham to kill his son, it is unlawfull for Abra-
ham to kill his son. And therefore Cæsar hath no more rea-
son to use the Instance of captives preparing warre against in-
ocent Christians, and of a servant thrusting his Master in at
doore or window to a whore, then of captives killing the innocent,
or of servants breaking a house, and taking away the goods of
a man in the night, or of servants committing whoredome at
the command of their Conquerors or Lords, the one kinde of
action in it selfe is as indifferent and susceptible of morall law-
fulness, and unlawfulness, as the other. And if the Master
doe co-operate to commit harlotrie in climbing in at a window
to a whore, and to robbing, in digging thorow an innocent
mans house in the night, to kill the Master of the house, and to
steale his goods, then the servant that co-operateth in these same
physicall actions, and also diggeth thorow the innocent mans
house and kills himself, is the harlot, and the robber, by co-
operation and participation, no lesse then the Master. The na-
ked relation of a captive, and of a servant, cannot make the cap-
tive and servant innocent, and guiltlesse co-operators, for then to
sinne at the command of any Conqueror and Master, because
I am in the condition of a captive and servant, were lawfull,
though God forbid and inhibite me to doe, what I doe, by the
command of my Master and Conqueror, for in so doing, Utor
meo jure, I use my right as a servant. For God forbidde me in
what relation I be in, servant, or Captive, to sinne, at the com-
mand of any, or for declining any ill of punishment, Though
as weightie as the torment of hell separated from sinfull dispa-
rning and blaspheming of God. Now to co-operate with that
which I know to be a sinne, is to partake in other mens sinnes,
which is forbidden, as a sinne, x Tim. 5.22. Eph. 5.3.N. But to
Q. VI. things scandalous or not scandalous.

Runne with the thiefes, and to helpe an Arch-robbur, Prov. 1. 13. 14. is a consenting to his robberie and bloodshed. And to help any to digge thorow a house, or to climbe in at a window to Incest, Sodome, Buggarrie, to fetch a beast to the Master who rage in the sinne of Beastialitie, or to fetch a young man to the Master or Conqueror to the sinne of abominable Sodomy, knowing the Master and conquerors minde, is to co-operate to Beastialitie and Sodome, is as high a measure of sinfull co-operating in these abominations, as for the servant to helpe up, or lift up his Master, to goe in, at a window to an harlot, for this is a consent to these sinnes, and a consent in the highest degree; so to give a knife to a Master, who seeketh it from his servant, to kill his Father, Mother, Prince, Pastor, is to consent formally to such horrible paricides, and therefore Capensie should have brought instancies in Buggarrie, Sodomy, Parricide, when as he used softer Names of fornication and harlotrie.

8. The non-necessaries, or such things as need not be in the worship of God, which do bring scandal, must be such as are neither necessarie in specie, nor in individuo, in kind, or in spece or nature, or in their individuals and particulars, as the whole Categorie of Mens devises, as

1. Unwritten traditions — not necessary, nor written.
2. Humane mysticall, symbolical signes and Ceremonies — not necessarie, not written.
3. Humane holy days, crossing, kneeling to Elements, Alleluala, Crossing, Surplice, Rochers, &c. — not necessarie, not written.
4. This and this humane holy day, this crossing — not necessarie, not written.

Ceremonies, not so much as necessarie by way of dis-junction, as Surplice is not necessarie by way of dis-junction, for neither is Surplice necessarie, nor any other white or red habit, that hath some mystical religious signification, like unto Surplice. So kneeling to the Elements is neither necessarie, nor any the like religious honouring of them, by prostration before them, or kissing them.
But, the things of the Directorie for the publick worship, as many of them are necessarie, and have express warrant in the Word, as praying, preaching, sacraments, praising, &c. So some things that are non-necessaries in the individual or particular words, or things, yet are they not to be removed in their alternative necessarie, either this or the like, though some be thereby scandalized. Because though they be not necessarie simply, yet are they necessarie by way of disjunction, as that the Minister say, either these, or she like words, for words to that sense are necessarie. So the order that the Directorie prescribes in citing such and such acts of Divine worship is necessarie either this way, or a way as convenient not different from this, for some order of necessity there must be. So the Liturgie or Service Bookes, whatever Job Hall say on the contrary (as it is little that he doth, or can say), though it should contain many things necessarie in species, in the kind, fit for the external publick worshipping of God, yet because these words in Individuo, in their particulars are not necessarie, is to be removed, because though all the matter were good (as much of it is Popish) yet that booke in its structure, frame, style, Grammar, method, and forme is popish, and framed after the model of the Roman Missale, especially performed with the cursed Authority of the Council of Trent, under Pius the fifth, in all the Masses, Rubricks, Epistles, Gospels, &c. is scandalous, and a Directorie in Scripture words is better, and is therefore justly laid aside by the Reverent Assembly, and honourable Court of parliament, because there is scandal in words, in style and language, in divine worship. And these who will abstinence from practising of some things in the Directorie, for feare of scandalizing others, must give reasons from the Word that these things they forbear are neither necessarie simply, nor by way of disjunction. Because as I conceive, things neither necessarie in the same individuals, nor by way of disjunction, are such non-necessaries as are to be removed out of the worship of God, for feare of scandal. And that any such non-necessaries can be found in the Directorie, I do not see as yet.

Ob. The people had the more opinion of Direct in the thing they adored the baser it was. None hath any such opinion of the cross. Ergo.
Ergo, it is no scandalous object. Ans. All our Divines hold, that Heathens of old, and Papists of late, worship Images, as religious memorative signes of God, Hooker with one dath of his Pen, against the Prophets and Scriptures, acquiteth them of Idolatrie, therefore the Crosse may be adored, without any opinion of Diatrie in it.

Obj. Be it true, that crosses were purposely appointed to be adored, yet not so now. The Jews would not admit of the Image of Cesar in the Church, yet they abolished it not, but admitted it in their coynce. The adored cross differeth as farre from this, as the Brazen Serpent that Salomon made to beare up the Cisterne of the Temple, and that which Israel adored in the wilderness, and the Altars that Josiah destroyed, as being worse Instruments of Idolatrie, and that which the Tribe of Reuben erected beyond Jordan. Salomon destroyed not the Temple and Idols framed only of purpose for the worship of forreigne Gods, because they stood now as forlorn, and did no harme. Josiah afterward razed them for some inconveniences, yet God saith both these Kings, in religion, walked straightly.

Ans. 1. Though the Crosse were first framed for no adoration; yet we plead against the images and Crosses of Lutherans as not necessarie, in divine worship, and therefore to be removed, though never adored.

2. The people thinke Baptisme incompleat without the Crosse, Ergo, to them it has the like necessarie, as water.

3. How will Hooker prove never any burnt Incens to the Brazen Serpent, but beleeved it really to be God? that is his dream, beside the Text.

4. By this Lutherans have their desire; for actuall intention that Images be lawfull remembrancers of Christ, without intention of adoration, shall make Images as lawfull teaching Ceremonies, as Hooker will have the signe of the Crosse.

5. We remove not crosse from coynce, no more then the Jews did the image of Cesar. But wee agree with them. Hooker being judge, in Banishing them from the worship.

6. Lutherans might have broken the old, and made a new Brazen Serpent, for a memoriall of the miraculous cure, so...
they had not burnt Incense to it: The remembrance of the old merce should have been as good in the new, as in the old. But certainly the Brazen Serpent was not destroyed as Braze, but in all its religious use. It was not putted, but abolished.

7. If we may make Images and Crosses alike in shape, but dislike in use, in Gods worship, we may bring in Golden Calves to the Temples, and the Image of Dagon, and the Sidonian Gods, and Altars such as Jofiah destroyed, so at their first moulning we impute on them, chaste and innocent religious intentions, and signification, and make them alike in shape, but dislike in use to heathen worship. But sure the Calfe of Egypt, and the Calfe that Aaron made, though like in shape, yet were dislike in use.

8. We read of no new inconveniences that the Images and Temples that Jehovah erected to strange Gods, did in Jofiah's time, which they did not in Ezekiel's time, but that they were Monuments of Idolatry in both; it seems that Hooker would commend Ezekial for not demolishing the Images of Solomons outlandish Gods; But then it was Jofiah's zeal without knowledge, that he demolished them.

2. We then might well suffer the Images of Jupiter, Dagon, Asiaroth, to stand before the people publickly, so they did no harme: and Papists and Lutherans say the Images of Christ and the Saints do no harme, when the Pastors carefully teach the people, that there is no Dictio, nor God-headed dwelling in them. 3. Wee say the signe of the Cross is a meer instrument of Idolatry and Superstition, and what ever good intention, or pious signification was stamped on it, at the first, by mens carnall wisdome and will-zeale, it no more made it good, then if upon the Image of Dagon, you would found the like good intention and pious signification.

9. Though Ezekial was commended by God, it no more followeth his omission in not demolishing Solomons outlandish Idols must be lawful, and a part of his upright walking in all matters of religion, then because David is commended, as walking uprightly in all things, save in the matter of Uriah, that his numbering of the people, his revengefull attempt to destroy Nabat, and all his, must also be a part of Davids walking uprightly before God.
10. Salomon had a warrant for the Brazen Image in the Temple, not to abolish it. But Ezekiel had no warrant not to Abolish the Brazen Serpent, after the people burnt Incense to it, even suppose the People should, upon the exhortation of the Priests, have desisted from burning Incense to it. I see not, if Images may be lawfull Remembrancers to us, so we adore them not. But the Golden Calvus, the Images that Salomon made to outlandish Gods, the Image of Diana, and all the heauen Images that the Word speaketh against should be brought into the Christian Churches, to teach us to flee, and eschew the adoring of these abominations, for we have as great need of Ceremoniall and Historickal remembrancers to teach us to eschew evill, as to admonish us to follow good. But the truth is, except we will be wise then God, we need neither.

Obje. Some things are of their owne nature scandalous, and cannot choose but breed offence as those sinkes of execrable filth which Josiah did turned out: Some things though not by nature generally, and of themselves, are generally turned to evil through a corrupt habit grown, and incurably settled, in the minde of men, without the removal of the thing, as was the worshipping of the Brazen Serpent. But some, as the Crosse though subject either almost, or altogether so as much corruption, are yet curable with more facilitie and ease.

Ans. Objects sinfull and so intrinsically scandalous are to be removed, as the Image of Jupiter, Molech, both because sins, and so not necesarie. Because scandalous, for the truth is, even sins (if we speake accurately) are not scandalous aeternitatis, in regard of our corruption; our sinnes may say the Angels, but they are not properly scandalous to Angels, and therefore every thing actively scandalous, as scandalous is to be removed. 2. How doth Hooker prove that the Vessels made for Baal, are in their own nature more incurable then the signe of the Crosse? You may remove the superstitious intention and Idolatrous use of any vesseil, and turne it to a good use; Yet Josiah burnt them to ashes. The like may be said of the Groves, which he stamped to powder, and cast in the brook Kidron, And of the Chariots of the Sunne, which he burns with fire, and of the bones...
bones of dead men, not any of these, being of their own nature more indifferent, and innocent creatures of God, were of their own nature more scandalous, and more uncurable than the sign of the Cross. The like may be said of Altars, and I pray, are reasonable men, the Priests of the high places of their own nature uncurable are they not capable of repentance, and curable by doctrine? Jer. 23. 20. Josiah slew all the Priests of the high places. 3. Teaching may remove evil customs, otherwise how should the Gospel convert sinners, that are accustomed from the womb to do evil? Jer. 13. 23, Jer. 22. 11. Ephes. 2. 11. 2. 3. 4. Tit. 3. 4. 5. Therefore scandalous objects of the second kind, are no more to be removed, then the Sign of the Cross. 4. It is false, that scandalous objects of the third sort are more easily cured, except they be removed, for no humane prudence, when the signe of the Cross, and the Brazen Serpent are sure, not necessary in God's worship. And when men have, and so still may abuse them to Superstition and Idolatry, can make these being now actively scandalous, to be not actively scandalous, as no art can make a pite to be no pite. Indeed God's ordinances, because necessary, may bee cured, from scandal by teaching. But it is God's only prerogative, by his commanding will to make a thing, not necessary in his worship, to be necessary, and to alter the nature of things, so as his command could have made the Brazen Serpent, to remaine a lawfull teaching signe, and no scandalous object, and only he might have forbidden the burning of Incense to it. The Ancient Ignatius, or any had no warrant to make confession of Christ before enemies and mockers, by gestures or crossing. Paul did it not, Peter commanded the confession to be verball, 1. Pet. 3. 14. 15.

Hooker, 198.

There be many ancient laws, yeu Divine and Apostolike constitutions acknowledged to be good, that the Church hath laid aside. Somethings cannot be removed without danger of greater evils to succeed in their place. Wisedome must give place to necessitie. Seneca. Necessitas, quicquid coegit, defende.

Ans. 2. We know no necessitie to have, nor any danger to want such wares, as Sulpicio, Crossing, bowing to Altars, to elements, which sure the Apostolike Church wanted, both in specie,
Q. VII. 

necessarie to be abolished.

specie, and in individual. The like Papists say for adoring of Images, that Hooker here faith, for Surplice, and the like Scandals. So do the Jesuit Farnesius say, in 22. to 3. dif. 5. de religione. q. 2. dub. 3. Quando dicitur Adorationem imaginum non esse licitam, quia non est scripta. Respo. (inquit) apostolis familiaris Spiritus instinctis quaedam Ecclesis tradiderent. Servanda que non reliquerunt in scriptis — interim hujusmodi Tradiciones est Imaginum Christi adoration.

Quest. VII.

Whether or not to use the indifferent Customs of heathen and Papists, in the worship of God, be scandalous.

Ex are altogether of this mind, that a material Similitude between the true Church and the false, is not scandalous. Because Rome holdeth that there is one God, it followeth not, therefore it is unlawful for us to hold there is one God. 2. There is a formal Similitude, as because the heathen kill their children to Moloch, ergo, the Children of Israel should not die so to the Lord, their God. M. Hooker granteth there should be a dis-similitude between the true Church and Heath, as this, and the Similitude (say they) is unlawful. But 3. all Adversaries draw us to a third dis-similitude between the true Church, and the Papists, and heathenish Church, and this is a mixt Similitude, that we should use indifferent Churches and Customs in Gods worship, as Crossing, now devised days, Surplice &c. which are used by Papists, and Heathens. This say our Adversaries, is not an unlawful Similitude, yea with edification and profit (say they) we may thus farre conforme with them.

2. This conformity doth gaine them, not Scandalize them, say they.
But we hold that this conformitie is unlawfull and a dis
similitude commanded.

1. It is expressly saide Levit. 18. 3. I am the Lord your God,
after the doing of the Land of Egypt, wherein ye dwelt, shal
ye not doe: And after the doing of the Land of Canaan, whi-
scher I bring you, shall ye not doe: Neither shall ye walke in their
ordinances. 4. Ye shall doe my judgements, and keep mine ordina-
ces, to walke therein, I am the Lord your God. Hence if Godbe a
God, in a peculiar manner, in covenant with his Church, then
may not his Church take a rule of worship, and walking from
other prophane Churches and people, such as Egypt, Canaan,
and whorshe Rome. There is an Instance given in things of
their owne nature indifferent, Levit. 19. with the same Argu-
ment. 27. Ye shall not round the corners of your heads; neith
er shall thou marre the corners of thy beard. 28. Ye shall not
make any cuttings in your flesh for the dead, I am the Lord.
Certaine a greater scandal cannot be, then that those who are
in Covenant with God, should borrow signification Ceremonies
of forrowng for the dead, Levit. 19. 19. Ye shall keep my
Statutes: Thou shalt not let thy castell gender with divers kinde.
Thou shalt not sow thy field with mingled seed: Neither shall
a garment mingled of linnen and wooll come upon thee. Hence
there is a cleare opposition made between God's Statutes.
Yee shall keep my Statutes, and the Statutes of Canaan. The
Canaanites might weare Garments of linnen and wooll, and
and sowe mingled seed. But Deut. 26. 9. Thou ( the Israel of
God ) shall not sowe thy Vine, or clove with divers seeds. Why?
left the fruit of the seed which is a half sown, and the fruit
of thy vineyard be defiled. The land of the Nations was not
defiled, though they did sowe. I sowed seed; Ergo, the Lord put-
teeth some peculier Character on his people, by this, to distingui-
sh them from other Nations by giving those lawes to them,
which did not oblige other Nations.

3. Wee make the Papists and the Heathen, that have put
white Garments, in the worship of God, and crossing in the
Sacraments, and the like to be our fathers, whereas we are to
discame them, and not to harden them so, as Israel did Egypt,
who said, Ye cannot serve your God, except ye, our golden Calves, by Gods argument. Levit. 19, Israel, and Canaan, Protestants, and Idolatrous Papists have one God, they have the same external nature.

4. Whatever is a professed way of being infected and snared with the false religion of those who are at our doors, as Egypt and Canaan was to Israel; and Papists to us, must be scandalous conformitie with them, and this argument is clear. Levit. 18:3. Ye shall not, doe after the doings of the Land of Egypt, wherein ye dwell, nor after the doings of the Land of Canaan, whither I bring you; Ergo, the danger is the greater, that we dwell beside Idolaters, and the publick practising of their rites, the more scandalous.

5. Wee sadden the spirits of the Godly, and lay a stumbling-block before the blind and weak, in that wee build Jericho again, and with our tongue we lash, and heal the wound of the daughter of Babel, where as with our teeth we should bite it.

6. Learned and godly Cartwright, the Author of the booke of Disciple; Amenists and others have cited Councils, as Conseil. Braca. 72. decreed, That Christians should not deck their houses with Boy leaves, and greene boughs, that they should not keep the first day of the month, because the Pagans did so. And another Council, Conseil African. c. 27. forbade Christians to celebrate Feasts, on the Birth day of the Martyrs, because Pagans did so. Tertullian would not have Christians so fit after they had prayed, because Pagans did so.

7. The mark and Character of the Beast is an external distinguishing note, of its owne nature, indifferent. Yet to receive it, is a matter of Plagues and wrath from God, Rev. 13, 15:16. To which they reply, These same Ceremonies, because the same, which the heathen used, were not forbidden the Jews. But these things (saith Mr. Hooker) are not indifferent being used as shews of superstition, and hopeless lamentation, for the dead, and in effect, it is they which Paul saith. 1. Thess. 4:13. Sorrow not, which is absent, but weep, for them. 1. Cor. 15:58. Ye are the children of the Lord your God, ye shall not cut your selues, nor make any baldness between your eyes, for the dead; nor it bee
The same Ceremonies in Idolaters, and in the true Church may be judged the same three ways.

Anf. 1. Ceremonies may be either the same: 1. in number, or 2. materially, or 3. formally and Theologically. The first identity and sameness is most proper. And whereas Morton, and M. Burges, would insinuate that God forbade these same Ceremonies in number, it needeth no refutation. God never forbade things, physically, and by way of contradiction, impossible. The same murthering of our brother forbidden to Cain, the same in number, is forbidden in number, and individually to no mortall man, except the Jews had had the same heads, hairs, beards, browses, that the Canaanites had, the same (I mean) in number, this were to make the lawes of God a matter of laughter to men. 2. Where as Hooker would have God to forbid, not the same Ceremonies Materially, or an utter dissimilicide, but the same Ceremonies of the Heathen, with the signification which the Heathen did put on them, contrary to Scripture, as upon the cutting of their flesh, they did impose this signification, that they should sorrow for the dead, as those that have no hope. 1 Thess. 3. we see then 1. all the Ceremonies of the Heathen, as the cutting of the flesh, the killing of their Children to Moloch. So they be formalized, and characterized with a signification according to the word of God, shall be lawfull. Put then Scripturall and lawfull significations, either of faith in Christ already incarnate, or of Christian conversation, as of moderate mourning for the dead, such as was in Abraham, who mourned for Sarah's death, and in our Lord Jesus, who wept for the death of Lazarus; And to the sacrificing of Bullocks, Sheep, Rams, yea, Circumcision and sacrificing of children to Moloch, shall not be condemned as a compliance, and symbolizing with the Jews and Idolaters. Not can any say, that shedding of blood to God, and killing of men must be now forbidden, I answered before. Shedding of blood, with this Scripturall and lawfull signification, and as an indifferent means of the worshiping of God, is no other way forbidden in the first cause, it is not commanded in Scripture. But this is no forbidding
Q. VII. not necessary, not lawful.

at all of worship, or of new positive means of worship; So you 1. make it not a part of the word of God, and necessary worship. 2. So it be materially indifferent, and be inspissed with a lawfull and Scripturall signification, as we suppose it to be. 3. Nor doth the Word any where condemn killing of men as a worship, except that it commandeth it not as a worship, which we say, as it is a breach of the sixt Commandement, it is forbidden as man-slaughter, but not as unlawfull worship. But then how will Morton and Burges justify. Circumcision which they say is lawfull; yet, if it have not a Jewish intention, nor any necessitie or efficacie imposed on it? it is a degree of murther, and why may not, upon the same ground, cutting the flesh for the dead, launcing of the body with knives, the Popish selfe-scourging be lawfull? Now the text signifieth no allowance at all of the rounding of the corners of the head, and the cutting of the body, and how shall Hooker prove that only heathenish and Pagan-rounding of the haire, and cutting of the flesh, as they betoken mourning in a hopelesse manner for the dead were forbidden, 1 Thess. 3. divers of the Pagans, amongst whom is Phocilides and many others taught the resurrection of the dead. They might then sow their land with divers seeds, cut their flesh for the dead, yea, and observe times, be dismoyed as the signs of the heaven, as the heathen. And what ever the Pagans did in their worship, they might doe so to the Lord their God, and doe all the judgements, ordinances, and lawes of Egypt, Canaan, Turkie, of Rome materially, even to the falling downe before Bread, sacrificing of Beasts, cutting of the haire, &c. 3. What Hooker meaneth by a dissimilitude, with the heathen of les pur-
pose, is easily knowne. Only in things wicked and unlawfull (faith he) or Idolatrous, or against the law of God, we are to be dislike to the heathen, because it is said, Tee shall doe my judge-
ments, for he expressly denyeth that there was any danger of in-
fection by reason of nearenesse to the Egyptians, and Canaanites, in these indifferent things, or that they were forbidden, because the Pagans used them, they were unlawfull, though the Pagans had ever used them.

Ans. Tannerus the Jesuite faith, tom. 3. in 22. disp 9. de fide. spe.
Conformity with Idolaters

Spe. q. 6. dub. 9. abstinentium est ab omni species malis propter scandalum. Ratio, quia scandalum tali causa ortur ex vi actionis ipsius, non aliter fuerit quam si mala esset, then though the Nations heathenish rites were not ill, yet being not necessarie to the Jews, and having appearance of ill, in that they are Charact. of the worship of strange Gods, scandal must result from the using heathenish Ceremonies, vi actionis, from the nature of the using of them, as if they were intrinsecally ill. 3. If it were no more but this, they were so much the worse, and more scandalous, that beside that they are intrinsecally evill, yet they are the Statutes of Egypt and Canaan, and not the Statutes of the Lord. So either these words must bee idly set downe, amongst whom ye dwell, and to which the Lord bringeth yow. Or they must adde a degree of wickednesse to the finnes, that they were the finnes of Egypt, and of Canaan, and so they are forbidden, both as finnes, and also for the bare Similitude, as the words imply, for God will not only have them to walke in right judgements, but also in his righteous judgements, because faith hee, (I am the Lord) and ye shall not doe after such and such a way, because such are the doings and ways of Egypt, and Canaan. Ergo, Though all were intrinsecally evill, that are forbidden of this kinde, they partake also of a farther degree of morall evill, in that Egypt, Canaan, and Idolatrous Papists doe these same things to their Idols.

Hooker addeth. Wee must be unlike to Rome, not only in Doctrine, but in Ceremonies and Government, and especially Government not commanded in the Word, for all is Papish, though lawfull and agreeable to the word of God, whatsoever Rome hath received without commandement of Gods word.

 Ans. There is not required properly a conformitie in us with Rome in doctrinals, as if Rome were our Rule, nor is the word of God properly conforme to the Protestant religion, but the Protestant religion must be conforme to the Word. Whitenesse is not properly like to Snow or Milke, but Milke or Snow are like to whitenesse. Nor have we properly a Communion with Papists in doctrine, they are not our patterne, nor wee theirs. 2. We do not plead for a Government in all things to be commanded
manned in the Word, but to be warranted by the Word, either according to command or promise, or moral practice, for the Scripture is our Rule, but 1. not in miraculous things. 2. Not in things temporarie, as Communitie of Goods. 3. Not in things Literally expost, as to cut off our hands and feet. 4. Not in things of Art and Science, as to speake Latine, to demonstrate conclusions of Astronomie. 5. It is not properly our Rule in Circumstances, which are but naturall conveniences of time, place, and person, and such like. But it is our Rule in fundamentalls of salvation. 2. In all morals of both first and second table. 3. In all institutions, and wee conceive the Government of the Church to be a proper institution, to wit, it is a supernaturall ordinance, or helpe above nature to guide the Church to a supernaturall happinesse, nor can the Church be governed by the light of nature, or by the rules of morall Philosophie, or civil prudence or humane lawes, as Cities, Commonwealth, and Kingdomes, are. 4. It is a rule in Circumstantials of worship: because some time some thing, as the Lord day is both worship, and a Circumstantial of worship; but not properly a Circumstance, in all these the Church must fir by the Word of God. 3. What ever is in Rome in physicall or natural circumstancies is not by us judged Popish. But what ever religious observance Symbolical signe, new worship, such as creasing to Bread, Altars, humane Festivals, Surplice, and the like, that are neither things of nature, nor 2. things of prudence and civill policie, nor 3. Miraculous things, nor 4. Things of art and science, nor 5. meere Circumstances, and yet are added to the worship of God, not necessarie in themselves, not warranted by Precept, practice, or promise in the word of God, we take to be devised by the wil of men, and if by Papists, so much the more unlawfull, and may well be termed Popish, as Popish is contradistinguished from that which is found and warranted by the Word, and that which is not thus agreeable to the Word, is repugnant thereunto, and either Popish, or worse, or heathenish.

Hooker. The question is, whether wee may follow Rome in 133. lawes, orders, Rites and Ceremonies, wherein we doe not thinke them blamable.

Nunn 2
Conformity with Idolaters

The worship of God needeth no religious Ceremonies, but what God hath himself prescribed.

An: We never dreamed of such a Question, it is as if one should have formed such a question to debate with Moses, whether we follow Egypt and Canaan in rounding the corners of our head, and casting our flesh for the dead, in sowing our land with mingled seeds, &c. or ought we so to devise others the like, and have no Conformity with them, no not so much as in these? Now Moses gave never leave to Israel to devise either these, or any other the like. The Question supposeth two things for granted, which are plainly false. 1. That if we may refuse Popish Ceremonies as scandalous, because Papists devised them, that therefore the worship of God hath need of other Symbolical and religious signes of the like nature, which we ought to devise. But the worship of God neither needeth these nor any Psalmatories of that kind. 2. It supposeth, we do not think the Rites of Rome blamable, this is a begging of the question, for both we blame them as positive religious Rites beside, and so contrary to the Word, and because Roman, and so in a high degree scandalous.

Hooker. When Reason setteth that all such Ceremonies are not to be abolished, they answer, they do only condemn Ceremonies unprofitable, or Ceremonies in stead whereof as good, or better may be devised, so they cannot get out of the Briars.

Anf. 1. Who answereth so? Hooker should have known, that if the Testament of Christ warrant not Ceremonies, they and all their kind are unprofitable, and to be abolished, whether they lay in the wombe of the mother of fornications, or be bastards of any other Mother. 2. Yea, we condemn all such Ceremonies, because unnecessary, as devised by the will of men, for all necessitie and usefulness of positive, religious, and teaching observances is from the will of God. And when he faith, we condemn none unprofitable Ceremonies, we are not in the briars, for he faith, his owne Ceremonies are unprofitable briars, for we condemn them as unprofitable. Charswright, that godly and learned witness of Jesus Christ, from whom Hooker would bring this answer, faith, Papish Ceremonies...
Ceremonies are not to be used to adorn the worship, when as good or better may be established. But he meant never that as good positive Symbolical rites, without the word of God, can be lawfully devised at all, this should have been proven from Cartwright's words.

But (faith he) we retain these, because we judge them profitable. yeaso good, that if we had either simply taken them clean away, or else removed them, so as to place others in their stead, we had done worse. But who authorized them, so fit judges? the burden of proving them inconvenient lyeth on them.

Ans. 1. It is a proud Reply. We retain Popish Ceremonies, because we judge them profitable, where as the question is not what the Prelates (who must bee called the Church) judge them to be, but what they are, for it is a farre other question, who should sit Judges (though we can prove Christ never made Prelates at all, and so he never made them Judges) and whether the Ceremonies be profitable or not? When Prelates say, we retain Popish Ceremonies, because we judge them profitable, it is to say, We judge Popish Ceremonies to be profitable, because we judge them profitable. For we say to retain them, is to passe a law and a judgement that they are profitable. But our argument is against their judgeing them to be profitable and against their retaining them. Might not Pharisees say as much? We retain the precepts and traditions of men used by our fathers, because we judge them profitable: and who authorized Christ and his Disciples to judge the Church? the burden of proving them inconvenient lyeth on the Disciples. Christ said their Ceremonies were the doctrines of men, and so unlawfull: and the like argument bring wee against the Ceremonies, and so they must be unprofitable. 2. If the Church make, or retaine lawes beside, and without the Word, they are under the burden of proving them to be profitable, for they affirme, and, affirmant inscumbis probatio, for they ought to give another reason, of their lawes, then we judge; We affirme, it is Gods prerogative to say that. 3. If Prelates should doe worse to have clean removed these, or brought others in their place. Then must the Prelatical Church be better then the Apostolike Church, for they neither had
had these, nor any in their stead, except they make us see that Peter and Paul dispensed the Word and Sacraments either with lining Rocheets, and crossing the aire with the Thumbe, or then they adorned Word and Sacraments, with other the like mystical Rocheets, or some merry toys like crossing the aire with the Thumbe, and if not, they did worse then our Prelats, who raise bloody warres in three Kingdomes, for such fooleries, and for an office, which of old, for shame, had no kinned nor house, but mans law, jus humanum, by their owne grant. But that (saith Hooker) wherein the Israelites might not be like to the Egyptians and Canaanites, was such as peradventure as had beene no whit lesse unlawfull, although those Nations had never been, I would know what one thing was in these nations, and is here forbidden, being indifferent in it selfe, yet forbidden only because they used it.

Answ. This is not our argument, I am not to say, the only reason, why the Lord forbade these rites, was because the Egyptians and Canaanites used them. But it is enough for our purpose, that God useth this reason, Ye shall not doe so to the Lord your God. Ye shall not doe after the doings of the Land of Egypt, or of the Canaanites, Deut. 12.30. 31. See that thou inquire not after their Gods, saying how did these Nations serve their God? even so will I doe likewise, Levit. 18. 3. 4. This is enough to prove that it is a strong argument, and Gods argument to prove that a worship, that Heathen useth to their Gods, though in it owne nature indifferent, can not lawfully be given to the Lord. He wanting all warrant in Gods word, because heathens doe so to their Gods, and it is cleare to me, Deut. 12. 2. Ye shall utterly destroy all the places wherein the Nations, which ye posseste, served their Gods upon the high Mountains, and under every greene tree. 3. And you shall breake downe their Altars, and burne their Groves with fire, and ye shall bow downe the Graven Images of their Gods, and destroy the Names of them out of this place. 4. Ye shall not doe so to the Lord your God. 5. But unto the place which the Lord your God shall choose out of all your Tribes, to put his name there, even unto his habitation shall yee seeke, and thither shall.
Q. VII. *in things not necessarie, unlawfull.*

You come. There is nothing more indiffierent, then the place of worship, yet doth the Lord in these words *Tee shall not doe s to the Lord your God, forbid to worship God* in the place, where the Canaanites worshipped their Idols. And this proveth our point that Rites used by heathen indifferent in their owne nature, as, *place, stone-alts, bils,* are not to be used, as positives with a new signification (as our Ceremonies have) to the Lord our God, because Heathens have done so to their Idol-Gods. Wee know the Lord may have, and hath other reasons in the depth of his unsearchable wisdome, why he forbiddeth some things of their owne nature indifferent, then because heathen and wicked men doe so, as he forbade the eating of the tree of knowledge, a thing in it selfe indifferent, not for any such conformity with wicked men. And *Hooker yeeldeth our argument to be concludent, when he saith, Notwithstanding some fawle in the very resemblance with idolaters.* Then notwithstanding all that *Hooker saith on the contrarie, our argument is good. The rest of this subject is more fully and learnedly discoursed by others, and therefore no more of this.* Peace be on the Israel of God, and to the most high Dominion and Glorie.

Amen.

FINIS.